

---

This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google™ books

<https://books.google.com>







Tappan Presbyterian Association  
LIBRARY

Presented by Mrs. Atterbury.

From Library of Rev. John G. Atterbury, D.D.

4729

BS

2340

D64

1756









LIBRARY OF THE  
TARRANT PRESBYTERIAN  
ASSOCIATION

225.7 D6

4728

THE  
**FAMILY EXPOSITOR:**

OR, A

*Paraphrase and Version*

OF THE

**NEW TESTAMENT:**

WITH

**CRITICAL NOTES;**

AND A

*Practical IMPROVEMENT of each Section.*

---

**V O L . VI .**

---

Containing the EPISTLES of,

PAUL the APOSTLE to the HEBREWS,

JAMES,  
I. PETER,  
II. PETER,  
I. JOHN,

II. JOHN,  
III. JOHN,  
JUDE,  
REVELATIONS.

---

By **P. DODDRIDGE, D. D.**

---

— Παντα τα αποστολικά πινοντες, το οσον εφ' ημιν καθεστηκος υδωρ, αυτα τηρησωμεν, και μηδεν των εν αυτοις απισια ταρασσηση της εκειδολας συνηναι των λεγομενων ταραζωμεν. *Origen.*

---

**L O N D O N :**

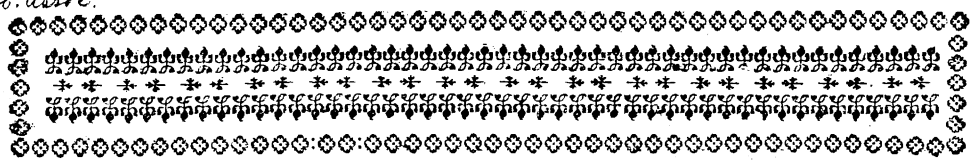
Printed and Sold by J. WAUGH and W. FENNER, at the *Turk's-Head* in *Lombard street*, and J. BUCKLAND, at the *Buck*, in *Pater-noster Row*.

**M.DCC.LVI.**



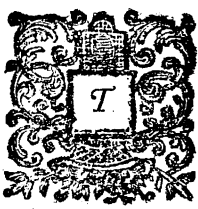
14000000

gift  
Tappan Presb. Assn.  
5-8-33



# ADVERTISEMENT

TO THE  
R E A D E R,  
BY THE  
E D I T O R.



*THE Author of this Work had written upon the Title of that Manuscript Volume, which contained the Epistle to the Romans, the following Direction: "N. B. If I die before this Work is finished, as it is most probable I shall, I desire that it may be transcribed, as far as it goes, by Mr. Orton; and that he would add such Notes, as he shall judge most proper, from my written critical Notes on the Epistles; and that it may be printed by Subscription in one, two or three Volumes, as shall be judged most convenient, and according to the Progress which Providence may permit me to make in it. Jan. 1, 1746-7." — I think it therefore incumbent upon me to inform the Subscribers what Progress the Author had made in this Work, and what*

*what has been done to it since his Death, in Order to remove those Suspicions, which often arise concerning the Authenticity of posthumous Works.*

*When it pleased GOD to put a Period to the Author's Life and Labours, he had finished his Paraphrase and Improvement of the Epistolary Part of the New Testament, and of the Book of the Revelation, and fairly wrote it out in short Hand; and had added the principal Notes, which he intended to publish. At the End of the Manuscript Volume containing the Revelation, he had wrote, "Through the good Hand of GOD upon me, which I desire most thankfully to acknowledge, I ended the first Copy of the Family Expofitor, Dec. 31. 1748, exactly two Years after I began to write upon the Romans; having pursued it during that Time without the Interruption of one single Day; such Health, and such Resolution did it please GOD to give me amidst the various Scenes of Business, Danger and Amusement, through which I passed! May his Grace raise to himself a Monument of Praise from this feeble Effort to explain, illustrate and inforce his Word!" — And under, "I ended my Notes on the Books I had thus paraphrased and improved, August 21. 1749, having daily pursued the Work in like Manner, whether at Home or Abroad." — He had transcribed for the Press the Paraphrase, Improvements and Notes of the two first Volumes, as now published;*  
*the*



*the Paraphrase and Improvements of the Epistle to the Hebrews, and the two first Epistles of John. — The Notes on these three Epistles, together with the Paraphrase, Improvements and Notes on the remaining Epistles and the Revelation, were transcribed from his short Hand Copy, by my own Hand, or under my Inspection by some of his Pupils; and I carefully revised the Transcript several Times, and compared it with his short Hand Copy. — I can assure the Subscribers, that the utmost Caution hath been used, that no one Sentiment of the Author should be suppressed or changed, and only such Expressions varied, as, to avoid Tautology and for the sake of Perspicuity and Accuracy, it might be presumed the Author would have varied, had he transcribed this Part of the Work, and given it his finishing Hand. In the Margin of the short Hand Copy he had wrote Hints of some Alterations to be made in the Phrasology and Length of some Sentences, as well as of Notes he intended to add when he transcribed it for the Press. I have endeavoured to follow these Hints in the best Manner I could; and accordingly a few Notes have been added to vindicate or illustrate his Version or Paraphrase, and References inserted to other Criticks; most of which were taken from his Notes, according to the Direction mentioned above. On the whole, I hope the attentive Reader, who is acquainted with his Style and Spirit, will discover nothing in the latter Part of the Work unsuitable to either; and will join with me in*

*Thankfulness*

*Thankfulness to GOD, who spared his Life, till he had compleated this important and useful Undertaking.*

*There is one Occurrence relating to it, which my own Judgment, and that of many of the Author's Friends, forbid me to conceal, and the rather, because it has been greatly misrepresented. During the Author's Life (in June 1750.) a Fire occasioned by a Wax-Candle being left on his writing Desk, broke out in his Study, and consumed many of his Papers, and Part of one Volume of the short Hand Copy of this Work; but the Light of the Fire being providentially discovered by an opposite Neighbour, who gave an immediate Alarm, it was speedily extinguished. When the Author was informed of the Accident, he seemed most anxious about the Preservation of this Manuscript; and when the Flames were extinguished, to his great Joy and Surprise it appeared, that the Part of this Volume, and that only, which was destroyed, had been transcribed, and the Transcript lay in another Place out of Danger, and all the untranscribed Pages were perfectly legible, and only the Edges of them singed. Being an Eye-witness of the Danger and Deliverance, I record this Account of it, partly for the Satisfaction of the Subscribers with Regard to the exaggerated Report, but chiefly as it seems to denote a particular Care of Providence in preserving this Work, and a favourable Omen, that GOD intends it for*  
*extensive*

*extensive and lasting Usefulness.* Whofo is wife, and will observe *such* Things, even they shall understand the Loving-kindness of the Lord. *Pfalm* cvii. 43.

*In the Name of the Author's Family I heartily thank the Subscribers for their Encouragement of this Work; and the Gentlemen who have kindly superintended the Press; and I pray that it may answer those pious and benevolent Ends, for which it was composed, and is now published.*

Salop, Nov. 21.  
1755.

J. ORTON.







The Family Expofitor:  
OR, A  
P A R A P H R A S E  
ON THE  
E P I S T L E  
OF  
*P A U L* the A P O S T L E  
TO THE  
*H E B R E W S,*  
WITH  
Critical N O T E S and a practical I M P R O V E M E N T  
of each S E C T I O N.

VOL. VI.

A





A

## GENERAL INTRODUCTION

T O T H E

## PARAPHRASE and NOTES

On the EPISTLE to the

*H E B R E W S.*



EARNED Men have been divided in their Opinions concerning the *Author* of this celebrated Epistle. It hath been ascribed to *St. Luke*, to *Barnabas*, and to *Clement of Rome*. But though some considerable Persons have given the Sanction of their Authority to the several Opinions I have mentioned, yet the most prevailing one among the Ancients was, and among the Moderns still is, that *this Epistle* is a genuine Work of *St. Paul*. Among those who believe that *St. Paul* was its Author, there are some indeed who imagine it was written by him in the *Hebrew* or *Syriac* Language, and translated into *Greek* either by *St. Luke* or *Clement*. And it is certain, there was such an ancient Tradition, men-

A 2

tioned

tioned by *Clemens Alexandrinus*, *Eusebius*, and *Jerom*. And there are Arguments in Support of all the particular Hypotheses concerning the Author of the Epistle, the Language in which it was originally written, and the Person who translated it into *Greek*; I say, there are various Arguments in favour of all these different Opinions, taken from Similarity of Stile, the Use of particular Words, and the Manner of Composition. But I apprehend, whoever carefully considers the Observations that have been made by very learned Men, upon the Language of *St. Paul*, of *Luke*, or *Clement*, in Defence of their respective Hypotheses, will conclude that such Arguments are very little to be depended upon, as they frequently are much indebted to a strong Imagination, and in the present Case appear to be urged with equal Plausibility on all Sides.

I have already given my Opinion, that *St. Paul* was the Author of this Epistle; (*Vol. iii. Sect. 60. Note (g).*) and that because the Current of Antiquity, though not the Authority of every individual Father, runs strongly this Way: *Jerom* expressly asserts, that the Epistle to the *Hebrews* had been received as *St. Paul's* by all the *Greek Writers*. And though this Epistle wants one Characteristic of *St. Paul's* other Epistles, the prefixing his Name, and his usual Form of Inscription; for a very obvious Reason, that he might not too early awaken the Prejudices the *Jewish* Converts had conceived against him; yet it might be easy to collect from the Epistle itself some strong Indications that *St. Paul* was its Author.

It is of less Importance in what Language it was originally written, if the Translation were made, (as the Tradition says,) by some Companion and Fellow-labourer of *St. Paul*. Though it should be considered, that the *Presumption* lies on the Side of our present *Greek Copy*, that it is an Original and not a Translation; and therefore the Arguments which induce any to be of a contrary Opinion, should be very strong and convincing. If the Reader should be inclined to examine this Matter more accurately, he may consult *Spanheim's* Dissertation concerning the Author of the Epistle to the *Hebrews*, particularly *Part iii. Chap. 2.* concerning the Language (a); and the learned *Mr. Hallet's Introduction to his Supplement to Mr. Pierce's Paraphrase*; which *Mr. Wolfius* hath translated into *Latin*, and published at the Close of the 4th Volume of his *Curæ Philologicae*, with some of his own Remarks and Strictures in the Margin.

This

(a) *Fred. Spanhem. Op. Tom. 2. pag. 245, &c.*

This Epistle was written to the *Hebrews*, or Converts from *Judaism* to *Christianity*, who inhabited at least some one particular Country, (as may be inferred from the *Apostle's* saying, *Chap. xiii. 19. I beseech you the rather to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner*; and *Verse 23. Know ye that our Brother Timothy is set at Liberty, with whom if he come shortly, I will see you.*) And this Country most probably was *Judea*, where the Converts to *Christianity* from *Judaism* were almost incessantly persecuted by their unbelieving Brethren, who tenaciously adhered to the Constitution and Ceremonies of the *Mosaic Law*, which *Christianity* superseded. Now the manifest Design of *St. Paul* in this Epistle is, “to confirm the *Jewish Christians* in the Faith and Practice of the Gospel of *Christ*, which they might be in Danger of deserting, either through the *Insinuations*, or *Ill-treatment* of their Persecutors.”

It was natural for the zealous Defenders of the *Mosaic Law* to insist upon the divine Authority of *Moses*, the distinguishing Glory and Majesty which attended its first Promulgation by the Ministry of Angels, and the special Privileges with which it invested those who adhered to it. In Answer to all *Arguments* and *Insinuations* of this Kind, the *Apostle* shows,

I. That in all these several Articles, *Christianity* had an infinite Superiority to the *Law*. Which Topick he pursues from *Chap. i. to xi.* Reminding the believing *Hebrews*, That it was a most extraordinary Favour, that God had sent them a Revelation by his own Son, whose Glory was far superior to that of *Angels*; (*Chap. i, throughout*) very naturally inferring from hence the Danger of despising *Christ* on Account of his *Humiliation*, which in perfect Consistence with his Dominion over the World to come, was voluntarily submitted to by him for wise and important Reasons; particularly to deliver us from the Fear of Death, and encourage the Freedom of our Access to God. (*Chap. ii, throughout.*) With the same View he further magnifies *Christ* as superior to *Moses* their great Legislator, and from the Sentence passed on those who rebelled against the Authority of *Moses*, infers the Danger of despising the Promises of the Gospel. (*Chap. iii. 1,—13.*) And as it was natural from hence to call to Mind that Rest in *Canaan*, to which the Authority wherewith *Moses* was invested, was intended to lead them, the *Apostle* cautions them against the Sin of Unbelief, as what would prevent

prevent their entering into Rest: An Expression, which he shows to refer to a nobler State of Rest, than what the Jews enjoyed in *Canaan*, even on their most sacred Days, and in their most prosperous Ages: (*Chap. iii. 14—iv. 11.*) Further enforcing this Caution by awful Views of the Omniscience of God, and animating Representations of the Character of *Christ* as our High-priest, of whose divine Appointment, gracious Administration, and previous Suffering, he goes on to discourse, and promises further Illustrations of so important a Topick: (*Chap. iv. 12, to the End. Chap. v, throughout.*) Declaring that he would advance to sublimer Truths without dwelling upon the first Principles, for the Sake of those who might have apostatized from Christianity; and whose Case he represents as very hopeless. (*Chap. vi. 1,—9.*) And then for the Establishment and Comfort of sincere Believers, he sets before them the Consideration of the Goodness of God, and his Fidelity to his sacred Engagements, the Performance of which is sealed by the Entrance of *Christ* into Heaven as our Forerunner. (*Chap. vi. 9, to the End.*) Further to illustrate the Character of our blessed Lord, the Author and Finisher of our Faith, he enters into a Parallel between *Melchizedec* and *Christ*, as agreeing in Title and Descent; and from Instances in which the *Priest-hood* of *Melchizedec* excelled the *Levitical Priest-hood*, he infers the surpassing Glory of the *Priest-hood* of *Christ* to the *Priest-hood* under the *Law*. (*Chap. vii. 1,—17.*) From these Premises which plainly manifested the Defects of the *Aaronical Priest-hood*, he argues, that it was not only excelled, but vindicated and consummated by that of *Christ*, to which it was introductory and subservient; and by Consequence that the Obligation of the *Law* was henceforth dissolved. (*Chap. vii. 18, to the End.*) He then recapitulates, what he had before demonstrated of the superior Dignity of *Christ* as the High-priest of *Christians*, and further illustrates the distinguished Excellence of that *New-Covenant*, which was foretold by *Jeremiah* as established in him, and plainly enriched with much better Promises than the *Old*: (*Chap. viii, throughout.*) Illustrating further the Doctrine of the *Priest-hood* and *Intercession* of *Christ*, by comparing it to what the *Jewish High-priest* did on the great Day of *Atonement*. (*Chap. ix. 1,—14.*) And having enlarged on the Necessity of shedding *Christ's* Blood, and the Sufficiency of the *Atonement* made by it, (*Chap. ix. 15, to the End.*) and proved the *Legal Ceremonies* could not by any Means purify the Conscience,  
and

and from thence argued the Insufficiency of the *Mosaic Law*, and the Necessity of looking beyond it, (*Chap. x. 1,—13.*) the *Apostle* urges the *Hebrews* to improve the Privileges which such an High-priest and Covenant conferred on them, to the Purpose of a fiducial Approach to God, a constant Attendance on his Worship, and most benevolent Regards to each other. (*Chap. x. 15,—25.*)

The *Apostle* having thus at large obviated the *Insinuations* and *Objections* of the *Jews* to the Gospel of *Christ*, as inferior to the *Mosaic Dispensation*, by showing its transcendent Excellence in a clear and convincing Light, for the Satisfaction and Establishment of the believing *Hebrews*, proceeds

II. To awaken their Attention, and fortify their Minds against the Storm of *Persecution*, which had come, and was further likely to come upon them, for the Sake of the *Christian* Faith. To this End he reminds them of the Extremities they had already endured in Defence of the Gospel, and of the fatal Consequences which would attend their Apostacy: (*Chap. x. 26, to the End.*) Calling to their Remembrance the renowned Examples of Faith and Fortitude, which had been exhibited by holy Men mentioned in the Scriptures of the *Old Testament*, and particularly by *Abel*, *Enoch*, *Noah*, *Abraham* and *Sarah*, (*Chap. i,—16.*) by *Abraham*, *Isaac*, *Jacob*, *Joseph* and *Moses*: (*Chap. xi. 17,—29.*) Concluding his Discourse with glancing on many other illustrious Worthies; and besides those recorded in Scripture, referring also to the Case of several who suffered under the Persecution of *Antiochus Epiphanes*. (*Chap. xi. 30,—xii. 2.*)

And having thus executed his Design in the *Argumentative Part* of the *Epistle*, he *applies* the whole, by exhorting the *Hebrew Christians* to sustain and improve the Afflictions to which they were exposed, and to exert themselves vigorously to promote the united Interests of Peace and Holiness: (*Chap. xii. 3,—14.*) Cautioning them against disparaging the Blessings of the Gospel, and making them a Sacrifice either to any secular Views, or sensual Gratifications; representing the incomparable Excellence of these Blessings, and the wonderful Manner in which they were introduced, which even the Introduction of the *Jewish* Oeconomy, glorious and magnificent as it was, did by no Means equal: (*Chap. xii. 15,—29.*) Exhorting them to Brotherly Affection, Purity, Compassion, Dependence on the divine Care, Stedfastness in the Profession of the Truth, and to a Life of Thankfulness to God and Benevolence to Man, from the

Con-



Consideration of the inestimable Privileges derived to us from *Christ*; which ought always to encourage us resolutely to endure any Infamy and Suffering, which we may meet with in his Cause: (*Chap. xiii. 1,—16.*) Concluding the whole, with recommending to them some particular Regards to their pious Ministers, and intreating their Prayers; adding some Salutations, and a solemn Benediction. (*Chap. xiii. 17, to the End.*)



A PARA-

A

# P A R A P H R A S E

A N D

# N O T E S

O N T H E

## EPISTLE of PAUL the APOSTLE

T O T H E

## H E B R E W S.

### S E C T. I.

*The Apostle reminds the Hebrews to whom he writes, of the great Favour God had done them in sending them a Revelation by his own Son; on whose Glory he expatiates as far superior to that of Angels, intending by this Representation to engage them to embrace and retain the Gospel. Heb. I. throughout.*

HEBREWS I. I.

HEBREWS I. I.

**G**OD, who at sundry Times, and in divers Manners, spake in Time past

**T**HE great and wise GOD (a), who in Sect. I. his wonderful Condescension hath at Heb. I. I. many Times, and in various Manners (b), of

(a) *God who, &c.*] Though St. Paul was the Author of this Epistle, as we have already observed, yet he does not begin it, as he does most of his other Epistles, by prefixing his Name to it; the Reason of which probably was, that those to whom he was now writing were under strong Prejudices against his Name; and he was not willing to alarm those Prejudices at the Beginning of his Letter.

(b) *Many Times, and various Manners.*] The first Word, as some apprehend, refers

- Sect. 1. of old, spoken to the Fathers of the Jewish Nation, by the Prophets whom he hath in successive Ages raised up, and employed as the Messengers of his Will to them, *In these last Days* hath magnified his Mercy in a yet more amazing Manner; for he *hath spoken unto us by the Son (c)*, his only begotten and best beloved Son, whom he hath sent into our World as the Embassador of his Mercy to us; even that illustrious Person, *whom he hath appointed the Heir and Possessor of all Things (d)*. He hath adjusted all Things in such a Manner, as to advance the Purposes of his Glory, and committed the Administration of his Providential Kingdom into his Hands, *by whom*, and in Reference to whose Honour, *he also* created all things, and *constituted the Ages (e)* and Dispensations of the Church and World. I speak of that great Emanuel, whom we have so long been taught to know and adore; *who being the effulgent Ray of [his] Glory, and the express Delineation of his Person (f)*, on whom his Likeness is instamped in living Characters in a Manner which no created Nature can admit, *and upholding the Universe* which he hath made *by the efficacious Word of his Father's Power (g)*, which is ever resident in
- pass unto the Fathers by the Prophets,
- 2 Hath in these last Days spoken unto us by *his Son*, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the Worlds.
- 3 Who being the Brightness of *his Glory*, and the express Image of his Person, and upholding all things by the Word of his Power, when

fers to the *Parcels*, by which God's Will was delivered, in Opposition to a *complete* Revelation; and the last, to the *Manner*, in which it was made known, namely, by Dreams, Visions, Urim, Prophets, Voices, Signs.

(c) *By the Son.*] This is no Argument, that God did not speak by *Christ* before; but only that it was not in so *clear* and *express* a Manner.

(d) *Heir and Possessor.*] *Mr. Pierce* learnedly vindicates the latter of these Interpretations.


(e) *Constituted the Ages.*] The Sentiment, as thus expressed, is a very important one; but if any insist upon rendering *αιωνας*, *the World itself*, I shall not oppose it; for it is certain, that *St. Paul* asserts this Doctrine, *Col. i. 15,—17.* if not here.

(f) *Delineation of his Person.*] That is, saith *Leigh*, answering to the Divine Perfections, as the Impression of the *Wax* does to the Engraving of the *Seal*; — It is observable, that *Philo* calls the *Logos* *χαρακτῆρ καὶ εἰκὼν Θεοῦ*. See *Scot's Christian Life*, Vol. 3. pag. 559.

(g) *Word of his Power.*] Many explain this of the *Father's Power*, which is the Sense

when he had by himself purged our Sins, sat down on the Right-Hand of the Majesty on high.

in him as his own, by Virtue of that intimate though incomprehensible Union which renders them one, (John x. 30.) was nevertheless set forth in the feeble Dress and humble Form of human Flesh, that he might be our atoning Sacrifice. And accordingly *having by himself performed* that great Transaction, which is *the cleansing away of our Sins*, he is now returned to the celestial World from which he descended for this gracious Purpose, and is *sate down on the Right-hand of the Majesty on high* (b), of that glorious and excellent Being who reigns supream in the Heaven of Heavens.

Sect. 1.  
  
 Heb. I. 3.

4 Being made so much better than the Angels, as he hath by Inheritance obtained

To this exalted Redeemer would I now call your Thoughts, of whom I have some very important and sublime Truths to deliver. Consider therefore, my Brethren, what Reverence, what Fidelity, what Zeal you owe to him *who was made* in Exaltation and celestial Glory *as much superior to Angels* (i), *as the Name he has inherited*, and by which through many succeeding Ages he hath been spoken of in the sacred Oracles

4

Sense I have given in the *Paraphrase*. Some Copies read *διτῆς*, which would fully justify our Version. But if the Power of the Father be the Power of *Christ* to be used by him at Pleasure for the Security of his People, it seems to be all that the Establishment of our Faith in him requires.

(b) *Sate down on the Right-hand.*] Some understand this of the *Right-hand of the Shechinah*, in the most honourable Place among Men or Angels; and quote 1 *Pet.* iii. 22. *Eph.* i. 20, 21. supposing there may be some glorious Appearance of the *Father's* Presence in Heaven, as there was upon Earth, which hath properly speaking a *Right* or a *Left Hand*. But this I esteem no Article of Faith. Compare *Chap.* viii. 1.

(i) *Superior to Angels.*] Some have, I think, very precariously imagined, that the *Apostle* in this and the next *Chapter* insists so much on *Christ's* Superiority to Angels, in order to take off the *Jews* from that *Angel-worship* to which they were greatly inclined. But it is evident the *Apostle* does not speak expressly on that Subject. It is more certain therefore, that his Intention was to exalt their Ideas of our blessed Redeemer; as indeed their entertaining high and honourable Conceptions of him would be of great Importance to their holding fast their *Christian* Profession. It is plain the *Jews* considered the *Angels* as concerned in the Promulgation of their *Law*, on which Account they might be the more zealously attached to it, and in this View there was a peculiar Propriety in the *Apostle's* labouring the Argument he is here upon, namely, the Superiority of our blessed Lord to all the *Angelick* Orders.

- Sect. 1. racles, [is] more excellent than theirs. For to which of the Angels hath he ever said, as we know he hath said to the Messiah in that celebrated Prophecy, (Psal. ii. 7.) *Thou art my Son this Day have I begotten thee (k)? And again, (2 Sam. vii. 14.) I will be a Father to him, and he shall be my Son (l)?* For if these Words were immediately spoken of Solomon, it was chiefly as a Type of Christ, the great Son of David, and
- 6 Prince of Peace. But so far is he from speaking of the Angels in Terms expressing equal Dignity, that when he again introduces his first begotten Son into the World, and speaks of him as coming with royal Pomp to take Possession of his Kingdom, he saith, (Psal. xcvi. 7.) *And let all the Angels of God worship him.* And accordingly he did actually demand their Homage to him, as constituted their Lord and Sovereign, not only in Regard to his originally superior Glories, but in Consideration of that Fidelity and Zeal with which he had discharged his important Errand to our World. And concerning the Angels he saith, (Psal. civ. 4.) *he maketh his Angels Winds (m), and his Ministers a Flame of Fire.* He who rules the Winds and the Lightnings, has his Angels under
- 5 For unto which of the Angels said he at any Time, Thou art my Son, this Day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son?
- 6 And again, when he bringeth in the First-begotten into the World, he saith, And let all the Angels of God worship him.
- 7 And of the Angels he saith, Who maketh his Angels Spirits, and his Ministers a Flame of Fire.

(k) *Thou art my Son.*] These Words are taken from *Psal. ii. 7.* And I think it is evident, (as others have observed,) that this, and the rest of the Passages here quoted, must refer to *Christ* in their original Sense, and in the strictest Propriety of Interpretation; otherwise the Argument would be entirely inconclusive; for it might be replied that supposing these Passages to be applicable to *Christ*, they will not prove him to be superior to the Angels, since they originally refer to *David* and others confessedly inferior to those celestial Spirits. — It might be easily proved that this second *Psal. ii.* does originally belong to the *Messiah.* Compare *Acts iv. 25. xiii. 33.*

(l) *He shall be my Son.*] *Mr. Pierce* hath laboured largely to prove, that these Words can in their original and primary Sense refer only to *Christ.*

(m) *He maketh his Angels Winds.*] That is, saith *Mr. Cradock, (Apost. Hist. pag. 363.)* He, the Son, makes use of the Angels as his Ministers, in producing Storms and Lightening according to his Pleasure. But I would not change the Signification of the Pronoun, *He*, which returns here, without absolute Necessity. — The rendering πνευματα, *Winds*, is very agreeable to the Original and the Context.

(n) *Thy*

under equal Command, and employs them with the Strength of Winds and the Rapidity of Lightnings in his Service. Sect. 1. Heb. I. 7.

8 But unto the Son he saith, Thy Throne, O God, is for ever and ever; a Sceptre of Righteousness is the Sceptre of thy Kingdom :

But to the Son [he] speaks in a very different Manner, and [saith] in those memorable Words which have an ultimate Reference to Christ, (Psal. xlv. 6, 7.) Thy Throne, O God, (n) [is] for ever and ever; the Sceptre of thy Kingdom [is] a Sceptre of Righteousness. Thou hast in the most eminent Degree, through the whole of thine Administration, loved Righteousness and hated Iniquity (o), and hast taken the most effectual Method to suppress it; therefore God, thy God and Father, hath anointed thee plentifully with the Oil of Gladness above thy Associates (p) : Thou art exalted to superior Honour, and Happiness; so that none of thy Brethren, none of the Angels whom thou mayest in any Instance or Degree have condescended to join with thyself, and lead in thy Train, can pretend to compare with them in Glory or in Joy. Yea, as divine, thou art fixed on thine eternal Throne, that the whole created World may unite its prostrate Homage before thee. And it is to him who presided, as is well known, over the Jewish Nation, and received the Tribute

9 Thou hast loved Righteousness, and hated Iniquity; therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the Oil of Gladness above thy Fellows.

10 And, Thou, Lord, in the

10 And it is to him who presided, as is well known, over the Jewish Nation, and received the Tribute

(n) Thy Throne, O God &c.] To render this, as some would do, God is thy Throne for ever and ever, that is, God will establish thy Throne, (according to 2 Sam. vii. 13, 14. Psal. lxxxix. 4.) appears to me very unnatural.

(o) Loved Righteousness, hated Iniquity.] It may be objected, that as all the Angels have maintained this Character, consequently this can be no just Reason for preferring Christ to them. But I think the true Answer is, not so much that the Angels are chargeable with Mistakes, though not with Moral Evil, (Job iv. 18, xv. 15.) as Mr. Pierce suggests; but rather that it refers to that unparalleled Instance of the Love of moral Rectitude, which Christ hath given in becoming a Sacrifice for Sin, by his Atonement doing more than hath been ever done by any rational Agent, towards displaying his Love of Righteousness, and Hatred of Iniquity.

(p) Above thy Associates : μετ' αὐτοῖς.] It seems to be intimated here, that as Christ took the special Charge of Judea, Angels were charged with the Government of other Countries; in Reference to which it is that they are called his Fellows or Companions; for, (as others have observed,) if Fellows do not signify Angels, the Quotation is nothing to the Apostle's Purpose.

(q) Fold

Sect. I. Tribute of Praise which they paid to Jehovah their God, that those Words are addressed, (Psal. cii. 26.) *Thou, Lord, from the Beginning hast founded the Earth, and the Heavens are the Works of thy Hands. They, permanent as they seem, shall at length perish and wear out; but thou endurest in undecaying Glory; yea all of them shall grow old like a Garment, And as a Mantle thou shalt fold them up (q), and they shall be changed: Shalt remove them out of their Place, and introduce a new Scene of things, with as much Ease as a Prince lays aside one Robe and puts on another; but thou art ever the same, and thy Years shall not fail through everlasting Ages, nor can thy Perfections admit any possible Diminution.*

- Heb. I. 10.
- 11
- 12
- 13
- 14

the Beginning hast laid the Foundation of the Earth; and the Heavens are the Works of thine Hands.

11 They shall perish, but thou remainest: and they all shall wax old as doth a Garment;

12 And as a Vesture shalt thou fold them up, and they shall be changed: but thou art the same, and thy Years shall not fail.

13 But to which of the Angels said he at any Time, Sit on my Right-hand, until I make thine Enemies thy Footstool?

14 Are they not all ministring Spirits, sent forth to mi-

Throne

(q) *Fold them up.*] For ελιξεις Mr. Pierce would read αλλαξεις, *change them*, agreeable to the Hebrew; and imagines that *Heaven and Earth* here signifies, *Governments*, as indeed the Phrase sometimes may; but I think not in this Place.

minister for them who shall  
be Heirs of Salvation?

Throne of God, and are sent out to attend Sect. 1.  
on those who shall inherit Salvation? and  
always willing to undertake the Offices Heb. I. 14.  
he shall assign them, for the Safety and  
Good of his People? And therefore far  
from thinking of them in any View of  
Comparifon with him, let us humbly adore  
him, for the Benefits which by his Autho-  
rity and Favour we daily receive from these  
benevolent Creatures.

I M P R O V E M E N T.

LET us learn, from this wonderful and delightful Portion of  
Scripture, how we are to conceive of our blessed Redeemer.  
Admirable Contrast of Characters! which might appear to our  
feeble Reason inconsistent, if Faith did not teach us to reconcile  
them. Strange, that the Brightness of his Father's Glory, and the  
Express Image of his Person, by whom he made the Worlds, should  
condescend by himself to purge our Sins! That he, to whom God  
saith, Thou art my Son this Day have I begotten thee; that he, whom  
the Angels are commanded to worship; that he, whose divine Throne  
is for ever and ever; that he, whom the Church hath for successive  
Ages adored as having founded the Earth and formed the Heavens,  
as in his original Perfections and Glories far more immutable than  
they, changing them as a Vesture at his sovereign Pleasure; that this  
great, this illustrious, this divine Person, should have laid aside these  
Robes of celestial Light to array himself in mortal Flesh; not only  
that he might reveal his Father's Will, and speak to us in his Name,  
but that he might redeem us to God by his Blood! What shall we say?  
we will receive the Message he brings us with all humble Thank-  
fulness; we will seek his Favour with most earnest Solicitude; we  
will congratulate his Exaltation with loyal Joy. O triumphant,  
transporting Thought, that Jesus is enthroned above all Heavens,  
that he is anointed with an unequalled Effusion of the Oil of Glad-  
ness: With Angels we will fall down and worship him as our Lord  
and our God. Our Hosannas shall proclaim it that he is set down  
at the Right-hand of the Majesty on high, and that God hath en-  
gaged to make his Enemies his Footstool. — Angels minister before  
him with unwearied Vigour, with inconceivable Speed do they fly  
like Flames of Lightening from one End of the Heaven to the o-  
ther,

Ver. 3.

Ver. 5.

Ver. 6.

Ver. 8.

Ver. 10.

Ver. 11.

Ver. 9.

Ver. 3.

Ver. 13.

Ver. 7.



Seçt. 1. ther, from World to World, to execute his sacred Commands.  
 With Delight do they *minister to those* whom he hath appointed  
 Heirs of Salvation, nor do they neglect the *youngest* or *meanest*. Let  
 us thankfully acknowledge the great Redeemer's Goodness and Care,  
 in every kind Office we receive from *them*. And as our Obligati-  
 ons to him are infinitely superior to theirs, let us emulate their  
 Fidelity, Vigour, and Zeal, in the Steadiness and Chearfulness of  
 our Obedience; till we join them in Services like their own, in  
 that World where they dwell, and to which, if we approve our-  
 selves his faithful Servants, he will 'ere long give them a Charge  
 safely and joyfully to convoy us.

---

## S E C T. II.

*From what has been before said, the Apostle infers the Danger of despising CHRIST on Account of his Humiliation; which in perfect Consistence with his Dominion over the World to come, was voluntarily submitted to by him, for wise and important Reasons; particularly to deliver us from the Fear of Death, and encourage the Freedom of our Access to God. Heb. II. 1, to the End.*

### HEBREWS II. 1.

Seçt. 2. **S**omething we have said in the former  
 Section, concerning the Supreme Digi-  
 nity of our blessed Redeemer. And now  
 give me Leave, before I proceed to other  
 Arguments which will naturally occur, to  
 draw this obvious Consequence from what  
 I have already said: If he be so far superior  
 to Angels, *we ought therefore to yield extra-  
 ordinary Attention to the things which we  
 have heard (a) by his Authority; lest by  
 any*

### HEBREWS II. 1.

**T**herefore we ought to  
 give the more earnest  
 Heed to the Things which  
 we have heard, lest at any  
 Time

(a) *We have heard.*] Nothing can be more evidently weak than the Argument drawn from hence to prove, that *St. Paul* was not the Author of this *Epistle*, because  
 it

*For how shall we escape, if we neglect so great Salvation?*

Time we should let them slip.

2 For if the Word spoken by Angels was stedfast, and every Transgression and Disobedience received a just Recompense of Reward;

3 How shall we escape, if we neglect so great Salvation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him;

4 God also bearing them Witness, both with Signs and Wonders, and with divers Miracles, and Gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to his own Will?

5 For unto the Angels hath he not put in Subjection

any Means we let [them] flow out of our Minds, and lose the Impression they once made upon us.

For if the Mosaick Law, which was the *Word spoken by Angels (b)*, proclaiming it in the Name and Presence of Jehovah from Mount Sinai, was *stedfast and confirmed* by such awful Sanctions, that every Instance of wilful *Transgression and Disobedience received, as its Reward, a correspondent and severe Vengeance*; How shall we have any Room to hope that we shall escape, *neglecting so great and glorious a Salvation* as that which the Gospel sets before us? A Salvation, *which having at its Beginning been spoken by the Lord of Angels himself, was confirmed to us by the certain Report of them that heard [him] preach it with his own Lips*; The blessed God himself *joining his own Divine and Sacred Testimony* with theirs, both by enabling them to perform the most amazing *Signs and Wonders (c)* and various incontestable *Miracles*, and endowing them in a rich Abundance, with *Distributions of the Holy Spirit* in its extraordinary Operations, imparted in different Degrees to different Persons, according to his own Sovereign Will and Pleasure.

And by these wonderful Operations the Superiority of Christ to Angels is farther illustrated; *for to Angels*, even the most exalted of them, *be*, that is, GOD, *hath not subjected the World to come (d)*, nor ever intended

it was not by *hearing* only that he received the Gospel. It is to be considered, that he speaks in the Name of *all* to whom he was writing, as well as his own, to render the Instruction the more unexceptionable and the more forcible. Besides, that to *hear any Thing* signifies in general to be *instructed in it*.

(b) *Angels.*] See Dr. *Whitby's* admirable Note on this Text.

(c) *Signs and Wonders.*] I think it is very needless to enquire curiously into the Difference of each of these Words, when it is so usual by a *Hebraism* to express a great Degree and Variety of Things of any Kind, by heaping together a great many *synonymous* Words.

(d) *To Angels he hath not subjected, &c.*] *Archbishop Tillotson* thinks the Meaning

Sect. 2.  
Heb. II. 2.

3

4

5

Sect. 2. tended that they should preside in the latest and best Dispensation, the Kingdom of the  
 Heb. II. 5. Messiah, which extends not only to Earth but to Heaven, *concerning which we now speak*, as it is the great Business of the Author's Life to promote its Interests. *But a certain [Writer] (e), well known I am persuaded to you Hebrews, somewhere bears his Testimony, saying, (Psal. viii. 4) Oh Lord, what is Man that thou remembrest him, or the Son of Man that thou regardest him!*  
 6  
 7 After which he goes on, in Words that have a most remarkable Correspondence to the

jection the World to come, whereof we speak.

6 But one in a certain Place testified, saying, What is Man, that thou art mindful of him? or the Son of Man, that thou vifitest him?

7 Thou madest him a little

ing of this Scripture is, that GOD did not empower the Angels who delivered the Law, to enforce it with clear and exprefs Promises of a *future State*, as *Christ* had enforced the Gospel. See his *Works, Vol. iii. pag. 136.* *Dr. Barrow* explains it of the *Messiah* making so great an Alteration in the Constitution of Things, that it is represented by a *new Heaven and a new Earth, (Isai. lxxv. 17. & sm.)* on which Account it was called by the *Jews, the World to come*; a Phrase which it is observable *St. Paul* only uses in this *Epistle to the Hebrews*, as being familiar to them. *Barrow's Works, Vol. ii. pag. 202.* Others have argued from this *Text*, that *Angels* were possessed of certain Authority and Power in the World before *Christ* came, of which they were divested upon his Appearance; and of those who have agreed in this general Explication, some, (as *Mr. Pierce,*) have referred the Presidence of *Angels* to their having the Guardianship of *particular Countries*, and others, to some particular Influences of their Counsels in projecting the Schemes, which preceded the Display of the Gospel. But it seems to me, that the simplest, plainest, and most unexceptionable Sense is this, "that God had appointed his Son to preside in the last great Dispensation; which he elsewhere expresses by saying, *he has united all Things under him, as their common Head, Eph. i. 10.*" and this certainly is an Honour to which no *Angel* can pretend. *Dr. Burnet's* Explication of this as referring to the new Heavens and Earth, which he supposes shall succeed the *Conflagration*, in which *Christ* is to reign, (which he also thinks referred to *Isai. ix. 6.*) is so very precarious and improbable an Interpretation, that I think it is hardly worth mentioning. *Burnet's Theory of the Earth, Vol. ii. pag. 392.*

(e) *A certain [Writer] bears his Testimony.*] It has been Matter of much Debate among *Criticks*, whether these Words are to be considered as in their *original* Intent, a Prophecy of the *Messiah*, or a Description of the Dignity and Glory of *human Nature*, to which the *Apostle* alludes; making use of *David's* Language to cloathe his own Ideas, though by an Application very different from his Design. It seems evident to me, that there is nothing in the *8th Psalm* by which, independent upon the *Apostle's* Authority, it could be known to belong to the *Messiah*. On the whole therefore I prefer the *latter* Opinion, though I readily confess, that if the former could be proved, it would establish a *direct* Argument in Words, which must otherwise be only understood as an *Allusion*; but the grand Truth to which they refer, the Exaltation of *Christ* to supreme Dignity, was so expressly asserted by himself, *Mat. xxviii. 18.* and was so fundamental a Doctrine, and so universally received in the *Christian Church*, that it did not seem to stand in Need of such an additional Proof.

(f) *For*

little lower than the angels; thou crownedst him with Glory and Honour, and didst set him over the Works of thy Hands.

8 Thou hast put all Things in Subjection under his Feet. For in that he put all in Subjection under him, he left nothing *that* is not put under him. But now we see not yet all Things put under him.

9 But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the Angels, for the Suffering of Death, crowned with Glory and Honour; that he by the Grace of God should taste Death for every Man.

the Character and Circumstances of the Lord Jesus Christ, both in his humbled and in his exalted State; for he adds, speaking of the Son of Man, *Thou hast made him but a little lower than the Angels; with Glory and Honour hast thou crowned him, and hast constituted him [Lord] over all the visible Works of thine Hands. Thou hast put all Things under his Feet.* This may be interpreted in the widest Extent; *for in putting all Things under him, nothing was left out, [which was] not represented as reduced to Subjection to him. But now we do not as yet see, that all Things are put under him, to whom we refer these Words; but on the contrary, a great Part of the World is as yet unacquainted with him and his Authority. Nevertheless, we see what we may well look upon as Earnest and Security of it; for we see Jesus, who for the few Years he dwelt upon Earth, was made in human Form and State, a little lower than the Angels of God over whom he had an original Right, as their Maker, to preside, exalted to the most conspicuous Dignity in the celestial World: We see him, who was thus humbled for the Suffering of Death (f), that he might be capable of it, and that by the Grace of God to sinful Creatures, he might taste the Bitterness of Death for every Man, who would obediently accept of Life through him, now crowned with a Glory and Honour far superior to what Adam had in the Day in which he was created.*

Sect. 2.  
Heb. II. 7.

8

9

10 For it became him, for

Such hath been the Conduct of God in this great Affair of our Redemption. And the

10

(f) *For the Suffering of Death.*] These Words may seem *ambiguous*, and capable of being referred either to the preceding or following Clause. 'Tis indeed true, that Christ was crowned as a Reward for suffering Death, as the Apostle expressly teaches, *Phil. ii. 8, 9.* But the concluding Words of the Verse, which have plainly a Connection with these, determine them to the former Sense.

Sect. 2. Beauty and Harmony of it will be apparent, in Proportion to the Degree in which it is examined. For though the Jews dream of a temporal Messiah, as a Scheme conducive to the divine Glory, *it well became him (g) for whom [are] all Things, and by whom [are] all Things*, the glorious Being who is the first Cause and last End of all, in Pursuit of the great and important Design he had formed, of *conducting many* whom he is pleased to adopt as his Sons, to the Possession of that Inheritance of Glory he has intended for them, to make and constitute Jesus his first begotten and best beloved Son, *the Leader and Prince of their Salvation*; and to make him *perfect* or completely fit for the full Execution of his Office, by a long Train of various and extreme *Sufferings*, whereby he was, as it were, solemnly consecrated to it.

Heb. II. 10.

- 11 Now in Consequence of this Appointment, Jesus *the great Sanctifier*, who engages and consecrates Men to the Service of God, *and they who are sanctified*, that is, consecrated and introduced to GOD with such Acceptance, *[are] all of one Family*; all the Descendants of Adam, and in a Sense the Seed of Abraham: *For which Cause he is not ashamed to call them* whom he thus redeems and presents to divine Favour, his *Brethren*; Saying, (Psal. xxii. 22, 26.) in the Person of David, when representing the Messiah in his Sufferings and Exaltation, *I will declare thy Name to my Brethren; in the Midst of the Assembly of thy People, the great Assembly, which by way of Eminence shall be called the Church, will I praise.*

for whom *are* all Things, and by whom *are* all Things, in bringing many Sons unto Glory, to make the Captain of their Salvation perfect through Sufferings.

11 For both he that sanctifieth, and they who are sanctified, *are* all of one: for which Cause he is not ashamed to call them Brethren,

12 Saying, I will declare thy Name unto my Brethren, in the Midst of the Church. will I sing Praise unto thee.

(g) *It became him.*] This seems to signify, not only that the Course he took was well *worthy* of GOD, but that *in order to act worthy of himself*, it was expedient he should take *this* Method.

(b) *Depose*

13 And again, I will put my Trust in him. And again, Behold, I, and the Children which God hath given me.

14 Forasmuch then as the Children are Partakers of Flesh and Blood, he also himself likewise took Part of the same: that through Death he might destroy him that had the Power of Death, that is, the Devil :

15 And deliver them who through Fear of Death were all

*I praise thee* for thy gracious Interposition in my Favour. *And again*, speaking as a mortal Man, exposed to such Exercises of Faith in Trials and Difficulties as others were, he says, in a Psalm which represents his Triumph over his Enemies, *I will trust in him*, as other good Men have in all Ages done: *And again*, elsewhere in the Person of Isaiah, (Isai. viii. 18.) *Behold I, and the Children which my God hath given me*, are for Signs and for Wonders. *Seeing then* those whom he represents in one Place and another as *the Children* of the same Family with himself, *are Partakers of human Flesh and Blood, he himself in like Manner participated of them*, and assumed all their sinless Infirmities, *that* thereby becoming capable of those Sufferings to which without such a Union with Flesh he could not have been obnoxious, *he might*, by his own voluntary and meritorious *Death*, abolish and *depose him (h)*, who by divine Permission *had the Empire of Death (i)*, and led it in his Train, when it made its first Invasion on Mankind, *that is, the Devil*, the great Artificer of Mischief and Destruction, at the Beginning the Murderer of the human Race, who still seems to triumph in the Spread of Mortality which is his Work, and who may often by God's righteous Permission be the Executioner of it. But Christ, the great Prince of Mercy and Life, graciously interposed, that he might *deliver those* his miserable Captives, *who through Fear*

Sect. 2.  
Heb. II. 13.

14

15

(h) *Depose him.*] The original Word *καταργησον*, properly signifies to *deprive of all Power*, Rom. vi. 6. When applied to the Law, it signifies *Abolition*. To suppose with *Archbishop Tillotson*, that it chiefly means, that *Christ* might give Mankind the *Hope* of Immortality, when they actually saw *one risen* from the Dead, and ascending to Heaven, is, I think, sinking the Interpretation a great deal too low.

(i) *The Empire of Death.*] Some have inferred from hence, that *the Devil* is the Executioner of the Sentence of Death both on good and bad Men. But I think the Sense in the *Paraphrase* less obnoxious and precarious.

(k) *Faithful*

Sect. 2. *Fear of Death* were, or justly might have been, *all their Life-time obnoxious to Bondage*; having nothing to expect in Consequence of it, if they rightly understood their State, but future Misery: Whereas now, changing their Lord, they have happily changed their Condition, and are, as many as have believed in him, the Heirs of eternal Life.

16 We the sinful Children of Adam, tho' the Heirs of Death, are thus delivered by him; but not the infernal Powers, who were the first Authors of their Seduction: *For truly he took not hold of the Angels, to save them from plunging into the Abyfs of Misery; but he took hold of the Seed of Abraham, and hath made a gracious Provision for the Salvation of all, who shall by true Faith approve themselves the genuine Children of that holy Patriarch.*

17 *From whence, and in Consequence of which Design, it behoved him to be made in all things like unto those whom he condescends to call [his] Brethren; that so he might be a merciful and faithful High-priest (k), in Things [relating] to God, that he might in the most effectual Manner make Atonement for the Sins of the People; which he could not have done if he had not assumed our Nature.*

18 *But now, in Consequence of that, he has not only provided himself with something to offer, but has by the Experience of our Infirmities, contracted that peculiar Kind of Compassion, which nothing else can teach; and in that he hath himself suffered, being tempted and tried with such a Variety of Assaults and Sorrows, he can in the most ready and*

all their Life-time subject to Bondage.

16 For verily he took not on him *the Nature of Angels*; but he took on him the Seed of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all Things it behoved him to be made like unto his Brethren; that he might be a merciful and faithful High-priest, in Things *pertaining to God*, to make Reconciliation for the Sins of the People:

18 For in that he himself hath suffered, being tempted, he

(k) Faithful High-priest.] Mr. Fleming thinks  $\pi\iota\sigma\theta\varsigma$  signifies the same as  $\alpha\lambda\theta\iota\sigma\tau\eta\varsigma$ , one worthy of our Trust and Confidence; but the former implies the latter. Fleming's *Christology*, Vol. 2. pag. 266.

he is able to succour them that are tempted.

and endearing, as well as effectual Manner, Sect. 2.  
*help those that are tempted,* and are making  
 their Way through those Scenes of Diffi-  
 culty, which he passed through with such  
 Fortitude and Honour. Heb. II. 18.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

**E**TERNAL Praise to our *compassionate High-priest*, who put Ver. 18.  
 on our *Infirmities* that he might know how to pity and re-  
*lieve* them! Eternal Praise to *Him, by whom are all Things, and*  
*for whom are all Things*, that he has concerted the merciful Scheme  
 of *bringing many Sons unto Glory*, in a Manner so well *worthy* of Ver. 10.  
 his divine Perfections, and so full of Instruction and Comfort to us;  
 appointing his own Son *the Captain of our Salvation*, and making  
 him *perfect through Sufferings*! Let us daily reflect upon it with  
 Pleasure and Gratitude, that he is *not ashamed to call us his Brethren*, Ver. 11.  
 though so highly exalted above the *Angels of God*; and that *he took* Ver. 16.  
*not hold of the superior Nature of Angels*, which was sunk into A-  
 postacy, Guilt and Ruin, but *took hold on the Seed of Abraham*.  
 How venerable, as well as amiable, is that Condescension with  
 which he made himself a *little lower than the Angels, that by the*  
*Grace of God* which was to owe its highest Honours to his Cross,  
*he might taste Death for every Man*! He hath effected his merciful Ver. 9.  
 Purpose: *By Death he hath deposed* and abolished the tyrannical  
*Prince of Death*, that is, *the Devil*, and *delivered from the Fears*  
*of Death, those who had they known and considered their real Cir-*  
*cumstances, might have been continually in Bondage to it.*

We see our great Enemy *deposed*; we see *Life and Immortality*  
*brought to Light by his Gospel*: Let us see it with Gratitude and  
 Pleasure. And let us learn from all, if we would not charge our-  
 selves with the most inexcusable Guilt, and the basest Ingratitude,  
 if we would not plunge ourselves into the lowest Gulph of Per-  
 dition, *not to neglect so great a Salvation*. Let the Doom, which Ver. 3.  
 the *Law of Moses* passed upon the presumptuous *Transgressor*, Ver. 2.  
 deter us; and let the Grace of the Gospel allure and invite us to at-  
 tend to the *Salvation spoken by the Lord*, and to *take the most ear-* Ver. 1.  
*nest Heed* to it, *lest we let slip that golden Opportunity*, which, if  
 neglected, will never return.

S E C T.



## S E C T. III.

*The Apostle farther takes Occasion to magnify CHRIST, as superior to Moses the great Legislator of the Jews; and begins to caution them from the Sentence passed on the Rebels against the Authority of Moses, of the Danger of despising the Gospel Promises. Heb. III. 1,---13.*

## HEBREWS III. I.

Sect. 3. **I** HAVE just pointed out to you the Son of God, under the endearing Character of a compassionate and faithful High-priest. And *therefore* suffer me to address you my dear and *holy Brethren*, whom he hath brought near to God, and graciously made *Partakers of the Heavenly Calling* (a), by which he animates his People to aspire to the noblest Views and Pursuits; and let me intreat you frequently to direct your Eyes and Hearts to him: *Attentively regard* this gracious Saviour, who hath condescended to become *the Apostle* of God to us, that he might bring us the Messages of his Will, and who is also constituted the *High-priest of our Profession* (b), by whom our Guilt is expiated, and our Happiness secured, even  
*Christ*

Heb. III. 1.

## HEBREWS III. I.

**W** Herefore, holy Brethren, Partakers of the heavenly Calling, consider the Apostle and High-priest of our Profession, Christ Jesus;

(a) *Holy Brethren, Partakers of the heavenly Calling.*] Mr. Pierce thinks when they are called *holy Brethren* by the *Apostle*, it is in Allusion to what was said of their *being sanctified*, Chap. ii. 11. that when he speaks of their *Calling*, he means their being called *his Brethren*; and that when he styles them *Partakers of this Calling*, 'tis to intimate that they do not *ingross* it. But all these Interpretations seem to me more refined than solid. *The Calling* generally signifies *the Call*, that is given us by the *Gospel* to pursue Immortality and Glory.

(b) *Apostle and High-priest.*] Both are properly mentioned, as the *Author* was to shew, that as an *Apostle*, *Christ* was superior to *Moses*; and as an *High-priest*, to *Aaron*. He is called an *Apostle* as sent from *GOD* with full Commission for the important *Affair* he came to transact. That *Apostle* signifies *Messenger* see many Places in the *New Testament*, cited Vol. 1. Sect. 162. Note (e).

(c) *More*

2 Who was faithful to him that appointed him, as also Moses was faithful in all his House.

*Christ Jesus*, so well known to us under this great and honourable Character. Let that illustrious Person be daily familiar to your Minds, even he *who was faithful to him that appointed him* to his Office, as *Moses [was] also faithful for all his House*; according to that Testimony with which God himself was pleased to honour him. (Num. xii. 7.) But I design not by applying these Words, to insinuate, that there is Room for a compleat Comparison between them. On the

Sect. 3.  
Heb. III. 2.

3 For this *Man* was counted worthy of more Glory than Moses, inasmuch as he who hath builded the House, hath more Honour than the House.

contrary, it is very apparent, that as for him of whom I now speak, *he was esteemed worthy of far more Honour than Moses (c), in Proportion to the Degree in which the Builder of a House (d) hath more Honour than the House itself*. For Christ laid the Plan of the Mosaic Dispensation, and Moses who was himself his Creature, evidently acted as his Delegate in the Revelation which he made to the People of Israel; so that whatever Excellences that Dispensation can boast, they reflect an Honour ultimately on the Divine Person from whom he received it. *For every House hath some Builder (e), by whom its several Parts were modelled,*

4 For every House is builded by some Man; but he

4

(c) *More Honour than Moses.*] As it was their Attachment to the Mosaic Law, and the Writings of the *Old Testament*, that hindered so many Jews from embracing *Christianity*, it is with the utmost Propriety of Address that the *Apostle* here undertakes to shew, that *Christ* was superior to *Moses*; and by a necessary Consequence, to the rest of the *Prophets* and sacred Authors, whom they acknowledged to be inferior to this great Prophet.

(d) *Builder of a House.*] Both *Mr. Pyle* and *Dr. Whitby* would render *κατασκευαζων* not to *build*, but to *order* or *govern*, as the Word *House* signifies not a Building, but a *Family*.

(e) *Hath some Builder.*] So I think the Words *κατασκευαζων υπο τινος*, may be rendered, the Word *Man* not being in the *Original*, nor here being properly inserted. *Dr. Calamy* has argued from hence the supreme *Deity* of *Christ*, in Consequence of his being the Creator of all Things. (*Calamy on Trin. pag. 44.*) But *Mr. Pierce* pleads, that if it had been the Intent of the *Apostle* here to assert, that *Christ* was the Creator of all Things, it would have been sufficient to have stopped here, and that what follows would sink the Argument lower; therefore he would translate it as the *Vulgar Latin* does, *The Builder of the House*, that is, the Head and Founder of the Family, *has the greatest Honour of any Person in the House*; and by Consequence they must

Sect. 3. delled, raised and disposed, and every thing well adjusted in it displays the Skill of its Architect and Disposer; now he who built and adjusted all Things [is] God, whose Works of Creation and Providence are worthy their great Author, and proclaim that Power, Wisdom and Goodness, which set him infinitely above the most excellent of Creatures.

Heb. III. 4.

5 And that Christ is incomparably more to be honoured than Moses, appears even from this Consideration, though inferior to the former, that *Moses [was] indeed faithful in all his House, as a Servant*, who was appointed to act in an inferior Oeconomy, for a Testimony of Things afterwards to be mentioned, the Evangelical Design of which we shall in some Measure discuss in the following Parts of this Epistle, according to their Relation and Connection.

6 But Christ was faithful in a far superior Character, even as a Son in his own House (f), that is, over the Church, in which as Heir of all Things he hath not only a Trust and Office, but also a Property, and which is appointed for him to inhabit and preside over; whose House, his chosen and delightful Habitation, we Christians now are, if we strenuously maintain [our] Freedom of Profession (g), and boasting of Hope, stedfast unto the End; if having so glorious an Hope set before us, in which we may justly boast

as

he that built all Things is God.

5 And Moses verily was faithful in all his House as a Servant, for a Testimony of those Things which were to be spoken of after;

6 But Christ as a Son over his own House: whose House are we, if we hold fast the Confidence, and the rejoicing of the Hope firm unto the End.

have the next Honour who are most nearly related to him, So Christ who is his Son must have greater Honour than Moses, who was no more than a Servant.

(f) *In his own House.*] Mr. Pierce brings many Arguments to prove it should be in his House, that is, GOD's, in which Sense the very Words are used and translated before; but as Christ is appointed the Heir of all Things, the Paraphrase cannot I think be contested. Compare Heb. x. 21.

(g) *Our Freedom of Profession.*] Some would render it, *if we hold fast the Confidence, even the rejoicing of our Hope firm unto the End*, supposing it to refer to that Confession which they made at their Baptism with Solemnity and Joy.

(b) My

as our greatest Honour and Happiness, we Sect. 3.  
 resolutely adhere to it, and permit nothing  
 to wrest it out of our Hands. Heb. III. 7.

7 Wherefore, as the Holy Ghost saith, To-day, if ye will hear his Voice,

And to this I am labouring to animate you, by the Representation I have given of the Dignity and Glory of our blessed Saviour. *Therefore, as the Holy Ghost saith, in a Psalm which he dictated to David, (Psal. xcv. 7.) To-day if ye will ever bear his Voice*

8 Harden not your Hearts, as in the Provocation, in the Day of Temptation in the Wilderness :

at all, *Harden not your Hearts any longer ; lest you bring Destruction upon yourselves, as your Predecessors did, in the bitter Provocation which they presumed to offer me in the Day of Temptation in the Wilderness ;*

9 When your Fathers tempted me proved me, and saw my Works forty Years.

*When your unbelieving Fathers tempted me, and proved me, as if they would have made an Experiment how much it was possible for me to bear ; and this, though they saw my Works in such a Variety of Wonders, as passed in the Wilderness in the Course of forty succeeding Years.*

10 Wherefore I was grieved with that Generation, and said, They do alway err in their Hearts ; and they have not known my Ways.

*Therefore I was angry with that perverse Generation, and said they always do and will err in [their] Hearts, through their own Obstinacy and Folly, and they have not known my Ways, nor paid any Regard to the clearest Discoveries of my Will and Design ;*

11 So I sware in my Wrath, They shall not enter into my Rest.

*So that after repeated Abuses of my Patience, and Long-suffering, I sware in my Wrath, and solemnly declared by my own holy and majestick Name, that they should never enter into my Rest (h) ; but that the Carcases of all that came adult out of Egypt, should fall in the Wilderness, and that Generation of Men be totally consumed.*

12 Take Heed, Brethren, left

*How awful a Determination, after all the Hopes which such signal Deliverances had*  
 con-

(h) *My Rest.*] *Canaan* is so called, as they there *reposed* themselves after the Labours of a long War, as well as the Fatigues of a tedious March ; and perhaps as entering upon a Course of stated Worship, it might appear as a Kind of *Sabbath-keeping*.

Sect. 3. curred to inspire! See to it therefore, Brethren, lest there ever be in any of you a wicked Heart of Unbelief, in apostatizing from him who still wears the same omnipotent Terrors, and continues, and will ever continue, *the living and true God*, to whom you profess so great a Regard, and from whom you will indeed revolt, if you give up the

Heb. III. 12.

- 13 Religion of Christ Jesus his Son. You are surrounded with many Temptations to do this; *but exhort one another daily*, while you are under this Dispensation of Grace, *whilst it is called To-day (i)*, and the deserved Judgments of God are suspended, *that no one of you may* by insensible Degrees and artful Insinuations, *be hardened through the Deceitfulness of Sin*, and its fallacious Advantages on the Mind; whereby, if you are not resolutely on your Guard, you may be seduced finally to forfeit the invaluable Blessings, which are so freely offered, and which have so long been set before you.

left there be in any of you an evil Heart of Unbelief, in departing from the living God.

13 But exhort one another daily while it is called, To-day; lest any of you be hardened through the Deceitfulness of Sin.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

- Ver. 1. **W**E are *Partakers of this heavenly Calling*, and to us are the Messages of Mercy addressed: Let us therefore hear with Reverence and Obedience, the Admonitions of the Word of God. Let us behold with Veneration and Delight, the Son of God becoming the *Messenger of his Father's Love*, and the *High-priest of our Christian Profession*. He is the great *Prophet* too, whom God hath raised up unto us *like Moses*, in many Respects; but oh how far superior to him! More compleatly *faithful to him, who hath appointed him; faithful as a Son in his own House*.
- Ver. 2.
- Ver. 6.
- Ver. 4. The World is an Edifice raised by *Christ*: The Church is the *House* in which he delights to reside. Let both be considered in this important View. The divine Perfections of the great Architect are indeed illustriously displayed in the Construction and Constitution.

(i) *Whilst it is called To-day.*] *L'Enfant* thinks this refers to that *Patience* which God still exercises towards a Nation, soon to be overwhelmed with his Judgments.

stitution of this *visible World*. Does the meanest House or Cottage Sect. 3. declare itself to be the Work of some intelligent Agent? And does it not much more evidently appear, that this commodious and magnificent *Structure* must have been planned and reared by proportionable Wisdom, Grandeur and Power?

It is the Work of *Christ*; and let it often be devoutly surveyed and contemplated in this View; and from hence let us infer his Divine Glories, and read in *them* his matchless Condescensions. Let us learn with how much Security and Delight we may commit our immortal Souls to him who *stretched out the Heavens, and laid the Foundations of the Earth*, and shall endure the same when they shall be dissolved and perish. Let us view him also as the Lord of the Church; and consider the *Fabrick of Grace* as raised to his Honour; that in *that* as his *Temple, every one might speak of his Glory*; and let all the Churches, and every Member of each, make it their faithful Care to honour him more and more.

In this View may we *bold fast the Confidence, and rejoicing of our Hope, stedfast unto the End*, and never suffer any one to take our Crown, or terrify, or allure us, from that faithful Subjection of Soul to *Christ*, which his Perfections and our Obligations to him concur to demand. Who of us can say, he is beyond all Danger of being ensnared by *an evil Heart of Unbelief, of being hardened through the Deceitfulness of Sin*? Let us then, in Compliance with so salutary and necessary an Exhortation, redouble our Guard; let us *watch* over ourselves and each other; *exhorting one another daily, while it is called To-day*, and charging our Souls by the awful Authority of the *Living God*, that after having approached so near him, that after having so solemnly professed to devote ourselves to him, nothing ever prevail upon us deliberately and wickedly to depart from Him.

Ver. 6.

Ver. 12.

Ver. 13.

S E C T.

## S E C T. IV.

The Apostle goes on to repeat the Caution he had given against Unbelief, as what would prevent their entering into Rest: An Expression, which he shews to refer to something much nobler than that Rest, which the Jews enjoyed in Canaan, even on their most sacred Days, and in their most prosperous Ages. Heb. III. 14.---IV. 11.

## HEBREWS III. 14.

Sect. 4. **I** give you such Cautions to guard against the Deceitfulness of Sin, and an evil Heart of Unbelief, because I know your highest Interests are concerned; *for we are made Partakers of the Grace and Mercy of Christ, and admitted by him into the Family of God, if we hold fast the Beginning of our Confidence in him as our great Saviour, stedfast unto the End of our Lives, whatever Difficulties and Oppositions may arise.* Let us therefore be strenuous and incessant in this Care; *forasmuch as it is said (a) in the Passage I have quoted above, To-day if ye will hear his Voice, harden not your Hearts, as they did in the Provocation which was offered to God in the Wilderness. For some of them who heard so many divine Messages solemnly declared, and the Law spoken by the very Mouth of GOD himself*

## HEBREWS III. 14.

**F**OR we are made Partakers of Christ, if we hold the Beginning of our Confidence stedfast unto the End;

15 While it is said, To-day, if ye will hear his Voice, harden not your Hearts, as in the Provocation.

16 For some, when they had

(a) *Forasmuch as it is said.*] The Words *εν τω λεγεσθαι* are something ambiguous, and may either signify, *forasmuch as it is said*, or *while it is said*; and if the latter Version be preferred, perhaps this 15th Verse may be connected with the 13th, *Exhort one another daily while it is called To-day, while it is said, To-day if ye will hear his Voice*: As if he had said, The Matter is of so much Importance, that it is not to be neglected so much as for a *single Day*, lest the proper Season should be slipt. But as *αχρις* is, a different Phrase, was used for *while* in the 13th Verse, I judge the rendering I have given most probable, and ventured it, in order to avoid an inconvenient Length, by dividing the Section as I have here done.

(b) *But*



had heard, did provoke: howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

self from Mount Sinai, *provoked [him] to Sect. 4. Indignation; but not all they who came out of Egypt by Moses (b):* There was a Remnant then (c), as there now is, of believing and obedient Souls, to whom the Promise of God shall be accomplished. *And by* 17

17 But with whom he was grieved forty Years? was it not with them that had sinned, whose Carcasses fell in the Wilderness?

*whom was he provoked by a long Succession of Infidelity and Folly for forty Years? [was it] not with those, who well deserved that Displeasure? With those who sinned against him by suspecting his Presence with them, after so many amazing and unparalleled Demonstrations of it, whose Carcasses according to his awful Prediction fell in the Wilderness during those Years of Wandering to which they were justly doomed? And* 18

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his Rest, but to them that believed not?

*was there any thing in this, that looks like a Breach of Promise on the Part of the blessed God? Far from it.—To whom did he swear that they should not enter into his Rest, but unto those who were so obstinate and disobedient, as intirely to forfeit all Claim to his Promise and Favour? And when* 19

19 So we see that they could not enter in because of Unbelief.

*we come to consider the Cause of that Disobedience, we see that it was owing to a secret Infidelity with Regard to the Divine Power, and Goodness, either to preserve them in the Wilderness, or conduct them into Canaan. So that I may say they could not possibly enter into the promised Rest, because of Unbelief: That was upon the whole, the Evil that destroyed them. Let us* IV. 1.

IV. 1. Let us therefore fear,

*there-*

(b) *But not all they who came out of Egypt.] Mr. Pyle gives it a different and remarkable Interpretation, making the former Part of the Verse an Interrogation, Who were they that when they heard, that is, heard the Report of the Spies, (Numb. xiv.) did provoke him? Were they not all that came out of Egypt? And this he supposes is a distinct Argument for Perseverance, taken from the infectious Nature as well as pernicious Consequences of Infidelity and Apostacy. But had this been the Sense, I think  $\epsilon\chi\iota$  would have been used instead of  $\alpha\lambda\lambda' \epsilon$ , especially as by this Means the Correspondence with the 17th Verse would have been more evident.*

(c) *There was a Remnant.] Joshua, Caleb, the Women and Children, and some think, some of the Levites, were not included in the Sentence. Bishop Fell mentions this as an Intimation, that all shall not apostatize in the worst Times.*

(d) *Let*

Sect. I. *therefore* improve so awful a Dispensation of Providence to our own Instruction, and  
 Heb. IV. 1. *fear* (d), *lest a Promise being now left* [unto us] of entering into his most happy and glorious Rest, any of us (e) should even at any Time, so much as seem like to come short  
 2 [of it]. For we are made Partakers of the good Tidings (f) of the promised Rest, as they also were. But the Word of Promise which they heard, did not profit them, as it might otherwise have done, in Matters of the highest Importance, not being duly mixed and attempered with Faith in them that  
 3 heard [it]. For we cordially believing (g) the Gospel, and faithfully retaining it, are so secure of final Happiness, that it may with some Propriety be said, we have already entered into Rest; as he said in the forecited Text, So I swear in my Wrath they should not enter into my Rest. And this may lead us farther to reflect on what is elsewhere said concerning his Works, as they were finished  
 4 from the Foundation of the World (h). For after

fear, lest a Promise being left us of entering into his Rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.

2 For unto us was the Gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the Word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with Faith in them that heard it.

3 For we which have believed do enter into Rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my Wrath, If they shall enter into my Rest: altho' the Works were finished from the Foundation of the World.

4 For he spake in a certain

(d) *Let us therefore fear.*] The Example, as has been often observed, is most suitable, being taken from their own Ancestors, the Evil being the same, namely, Unbelief, the Time resembling it just after the Establishment of a new Constitution, and the Consequence the same, the Exclusion from Rest. The superior Dignity of Christ above Moses, and the superior Excellence of Heaven above Canaan, greatly confirm the Force of the Argument. Pierce on Heb. iii. 12. Note (n).

(e) *Any of us.*] Some Copies read *ἡμῶν*, us, instead of *υμῶν*, you; and their Authority is evidently confirmed by the Connection. See Dr. Mills in loc.

(f) *Partakers of the good Tidings.*] So I chuse to render the Word *εὐηγγελισμένοι*. For, that we have the Gospel, (taking it for the Message by Christ,) at least as well as these People had in the Wilderness, and indeed a great deal more plainly, is so evident, that it may seem but a very low Sense of the Words, and not worthy the Wisdom Gravity of the Apostle to insert it.

(g) *We believing have entered &c.*] Mr. Pierce would render it, *We believing enter into Rest*, that is, Faith is the Way by which Men must expect to enter into whatever Rest God promises in one Age or another; and so it appears necessary that the Word should be mixed with it. This, it must be acknowledged, is a very probable and weighty Sense.

(h) *His Works finished from the Foundation &c.*] Mr. Pierce thinks the Apostle intends to lay in an Answer to an Objection, which might arise against the Caution given, from their being entered into Rest already, that is, into the Land of Canaan, where they celebrated the Sabbath. He therefore shews that the Words could neither extend to the one, or the other of these Rests.

(i) *If*

tain Place of the seventh Day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh Day from all his Works.

5 And in this Place again, If they shall enter into my Rest.

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached, entered not in because of Unbelief:

7 Again, he limiteth a certain Day, saying in David, To day, after so long a Time; as it is said, To Day if ye will hear his Voice, harden not your Hearts.

8 For if Jesus had given them Rest, then would he not afterward have spoken of another Day.

after Moses had given us an Account of the SECT. 4. Creation, *he somewhere saith concerning the seventh [Day] thus,* (Gen. ii. 2. Exod. xxxi. Heb. IV. 4. 17.) *And God rested the seventh Day from all his Works. And in this [Place] which we have quoted, again he saith, [I have sworn] they shall not enter into my Rest.* Now this certainly implies, that when these Words were written, there was a Rest of GOD, from which these Sinners should be excluded, though they actually dwelt in the Land of Canaan, secure under the Protection of David, their victorious Monarch, and enjoyed the Repose of GOD's Sabbaths there.

Seeing then it remaineth that some must enter into it, which is spoken of in this Scripture as a certain Thing, and they to whom the good Tidings of Rest were at first declared, did not enter because of their Unbelief, which you know was threatned with such Punishment; He again determineth a certain Day, marked out within certain Limits and Boundaries, in Reference to which he urges their immediate Attention and Obedience to the Manifestation of the divine Will, saying, in that well known Composition of David, of which we have just been speaking, *This Day*, and that *after so long a Time* as had passed after the Rest of GOD at the Creation mentioned above, *as it is said, This Day, if ye will hear his Voice at all, hardened not your Hearts.* Now it is certain, as I hinted above, the Rest here referred to, is not, and cannot be, interpreted of the Land of Canaan; for if *Joshua (i)*, who introduced them thither, and settled them there, had given them the great and peaceful Rest referred to, he would not so long after that Settlement have spoken, as you see in the Days of David he does, *concerning another Day of* Trial,

VOL. VI.

E

Trial,

(i) If Joshua.] So this Appellative should be rendered; for Inoue, Jesus, is only the Greek Manner of expressing Joshua.

(k) Remaineth

SECT. 4. Trial, and another Day of Rest, into which it was a supposable Case that they might not enter. *Therefore* it is very evident, that

Heb. IV. 9.

*there remaineth a Rest (k) for the People of GOD*; which, when we consider it in Reference to that Sabbatical Rest of which we have been speaking, may properly be called the Celebration of a Sabbath, which, blessed

10 be GOD, will be eternal. It may be thus called with happy Propriety, *for he who hath entered into this, his final and compleat Rest*, of which we now speak, *hath also himself entirely ceased from all the Labours and Fatigues of his Works, as GOD rested from his own* on that first Seventh Day, which, in Commemoration of it, was appointed Sacred

11 to future Ages. *Let us therefore labour with all possible Diligence and Constancy, to enter into that important and eternal Rest, that no one may finally fall into Ruin by the same Example of Disobedience, which hath undone so many Thousands already, and proved so fatal to Israel, in the Instance I have been handling at large.*

9 There remaineth therefore a Rest to the People of GOD.

10 For he that is entered into his Rest, he also hath ceased from his own Works, as GOD did from his.

11 Let us labour therefore to enter into that Rest, lest any Man fall after the same Example of Unbelief.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Chap. iii. 14. **W**HAT can be so desirable as to *partake of Christ*, and all the saving Benefits, which Believers receive in and by him, by Virtue of that Relation, to which he condescends to admit them. Let us seek this Happiness by persevering Faith, and *holding fast the Beginning of our Confidence stedfast unto the End*; bearing still in our Minds the melancholy Example of the Children of *Israel*, who though by such wonderful Interpositions led out of *Egypt*, were doomed by the divine Vengeance *to die in the Wilderness* for their *Unbelief*. That obstructed their Entrance into *Canaan*; nor can we ever hope to partake of the *Land of Promise* above, if we resign that *Faith*, which is the Spring of every other Grace, that is necessary to prepare us for it. Let

Ver. 16.

Ver. 19.

(k) *Remaineth a Rest.*] He here changes the Word *κατάπαυσις* for *σαββατισμός*, to signify its being *entire* and *perfect*, and like a *Sabbath*.

Let us take the Alarm, and exercise that pious *Fear* which so well consists with a cheerful *Hope* in *GOD*, and committing our Souls to his fatherly Care. *We hear the Word of Salvation*; let us pray that it may *profit* us; and for that Purpose, let us be often *realizing* to our Minds its divine Authority, and those invisible Objects which it opens upon us. It speaks of a *Rest remaining for the People of GOD*; and oh! how much nobler a *Rest*, than that of *Canaan*. Our true *Joshua* leads us on, as the Captain of our Salvation. He conquers all our Spiritual Enemies by his invincible Word, and will divide us an *Inheritance*, an everlasting Inheritance, there, if we are *faithful to the Death*. *To Day, after so long a Time*, are we still called to pursue it: Let us therefore give Diligence, that *we may enter*: And let those *Sabbaths*, which are instituted in kind Commemoration of *GOD's having rested on the Seventh Day from his Labours*, and which are intended in some Degree to anticipate the *Heavenly Rest*, be improved for this valuable Purpose. So shall we ere long *Rest from our Works, as GOD from his*, and after the Labours of these few Mortal Days, shall enjoy immortal Tranquility and Repose: We shall pass a perpetual *Sabbath* in those Elevations of pure *Devotion*, which the sublimest Moments of our most sacred and happy Days here, can teach us but imperfectly to conceive.

SECT. 4.  
 Chap. iv. 1.  
 Ver. 9.  
 Ver. 8.  
 Ver. 7.  
 Ver. 10.

S E C T. V.

*The Apostle inforces the Caution he had before given, by awful Views of the Omniscience of GOD, and animating Representations of the Character of Christ, as our High-Priest; of whose divine Appointment, gracious Administration, and previous Suffering, he goes on to discourse, and promises further Illustrations of so important a Topick. Heb. IV. 12, to the End; and V. 1,---14.*

HEBREWS IV. 12.

FOR the Word of GOD is quick and powerful, and

HEBREWS IV. 12.

HAVING warned you against the fatal Example of Unbelief, which we see in God's Israel of old, let me intreat you to

SECT. 5.  
 Heb. IV. 12.

SECT. 5. to dwell upon it, in your most serious and attentive Reflections. For the Word of Heb. IV. 12. GOD (a), which gives you this Account, as well as that glorious Person his essential Word, by whom he manifested himself to Israel in the Wilderness, [is] still *living and efficacious* (b), and *sharper than any two-edged Sword, piercing*, in the acutest Manner that can be imagined, *even to the separating between the Soul and Spirit*, the respective Principles of animal and rational Life, and to the dividing the remotest and most closely connected Parts of the Body; so that it reaches to *the Joints*, and even to *the Marrow* (c) contained in the Bones. And, to speak in less figurative Terms, as he [is] *an exact Discerner of the Thoughts and Intentions of the Heart*, his Word meets with the most secret Purpose, and exerts a divine Authority, in controlling Irregularities and Disorders which no human

13 Eye can penetrate. And it may well be supposed, that it should be so; for *there is no Creature, which is not apparent and manifested in his Presence; but all Things [are] naked and*

and sharper than any two-edged Sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of Soul and Spirit, and of the Joints and Marrow, and and is a Discerner of the Thoughts and Intentions of the Heart.

13 Neither is there any Creature that is not manifested in his Sight: but all Things are naked and opened

(a) *The Word of GOD*] It is greatly debated among Commentators, whether this is to be understood of *Christ*, or of the *Gospel* and Scripture Revelation. I have endeavoured to give a Hint of both Senses in the *Paraphrase*; but, esteeming the latter preferable, have chiefly pointed that out; and I believe any one versed in the Energy of Scripture will think it a very *suitable* and *natural* Sense.

(b) *Living and efficacious.*] *Mr. Pierce* thinks there is an Allusion here to the *Lightning*, by which they fell in the Wilderness, whom he had so often, and so long been speaking of.

(c) *Soul and Spirit, Joints and Marrow.*] There seems in this *Text* an evident Reference to the Doctrine of *two Principles*, called *Soul* and *Spirit*, as the Seats of rational and sensitive Life; to *distinguish* these seems to be spoken of, as an Instance of the greatest Penetration. Some have explained it, as if he had said, he is able at Pleasure to give a *mortal Wound*, as when the Marrow is separated from the Joints, or the Soul from the Spirit, Death ensues. But I rather think the Meaning of the latter Clause is, he can divide the Joints, and divide the Marrow, that is, enter irresistibly into the Soul, and produce perhaps some Sentiment which it would not *willingly* have received; and sometimes discover and punish secret, as well as open Wickedness.

(d) *Naked.*

ed unto the Eyes of him  
with whom we have to do.

*and laid bare (d) before the Eyes of him, to whom we are to give an Account.* He discerns them as the inwards of sacrificed Animals are discerned, when their Bodies are compleatly laid open, and therefore it will be altogether in vain to attempt a Disguise before him. SECT. 5.  
Heb. IV. 13.

14 Seeing then that we have a great High-priest, that is passed into the Heavens, Jesus the Son of GOD, let us hold fast *our* Profession.

Now on this Consideration, and because the all-seeing GOD, who is to be our final Judge, has displayed his Mercy in directing our Eyes to a Saviour, by whose Mediation we are to be delivered from the Fierceness of his deserved Vengeance; let us, I say, by such powerful Considerations be awakened to have Recourse to him, and encouraged to confide in him, and to adhere to his Cause amidst all Opposition. *Having therefore a great High-Priest, who hath passed through the Vail, and entered into the Heavens, that he might there interceed with GOD for us, even Jesus the Son of GOD, let us hold fast [our] Profession of Faith in him, and never suffer the most violent Attack to wrest it from us.* 14.

15 For we have not an High-priest which cannot be touched with the Feeling of our Infirmities; but was in all Points tempted like as we are, yet without Sin.

*For we have not an High-Priest incapable of sympathizing with our Infirmities, but on the contrary, [one who] has a most tender feeling of them, having been himself tried in every Respect, in like Manner [with us, yet] without any Degree of Sin, or any Approach toward it, from which, amidst his severest Trials, he remained perfectly free.* 15.

16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the Throne of Grace, that we may obtain Mercy, and find Grace

*Let us therefore, humbly confiding in his Intercession, approach with Freedom of Speech to the Throne of Grace, to present our Petitions, that we may receive that Mercy which he hath been appointed to* 16.

(d) *Naked and laid bare.*] It has been well observed, that these two Words contain a graceful Allusion to the Custom in *sacrificing*, of flaying off the Skin from the Victim, and cutting it open, whereby all the Vitals and Inwards are exposed to full View; as *γυμνος* signifies *what had no Cover*, and *τετραχλισμενος* *what had no Concealment within*. See *Blackwall's Sacred Classicks*, Vol. i. pag. 231.

(e) *Every.*

SECT. 5. to purchase, and may find Grace from that Throne for our seasonable Assistance, according to our respective Necessities.

Heb. IV. 16.

Heb. V. 1.

I speak of Christ under the Character of the great High-Priest with evident Propriety, to which I hope you will attend; for every High-Priest (e) taken from among Men, as those of the Mosaic Ritual are, is constituted or chose for the Benefit of Men, and set over Things which relate to the Service and Honour of GOD, that he may offer both Gifts and Sacrifices for Sins in an acceptable

- 2 Manner. Being able to proportion his Compassion (f) to those that are ignorant, and wandering from the exact Paths of GOD's Commandments, for whom alone you know, Sin-offerings are provided; because he himself also is incident to Infirmary. And for this Reason it is necessary, that he should offer an appointed expiatory Sacrifice for Sins on his own Account, as well as for the People, and should make Way for their Sin-offering by the Presentation of his own.
- 4 And this is so awful an Office, that no Man, who has any Regard to Duty or Safety, taketh it to himself; but he only wears it, who is called of GOD for that Purpose, as
- 5 Aaron [was]. So Christ also, we well know, did not glorify himself to be made an High-Priest (g); he did not aspire to, or seize upon this exalted Office without a proper Call; but He raised him to this conspicuous

Grace to help in Time of Need.

1 For every High-priest taken from among Men, is ordained for Men in Things pertaining to GOD, that he may offer both Gifts and Sacrifices for Sins:

2 Who can have Compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the Way; for that he himself also is compassed with Infirmary:

3 And by Reason hereof he ought as for the People, so also for himself, to offer for Sins.

4 And no Man taketh this Honour unto himself, but he that is called of GOD, as was Aaron.

5 So also Christ glorified not himself to be made an High-priest; but he that said

Dig-

(e) Every High-Priest.] All the following Discourse is intended to moderate their Regards for the Levitical Priesthood, and to give them more exalted Notions of Christ, that they might be more resolute in adhering to him.

(f) Proportion his Compassion.] So the Word, μετριοπαθην, properly signifies. The Ignorant and Erroneous is here put, by a usual Figure, for those who wander, or sin, through Ignorance; the Case in which Priests, appointed by Men, were to offer Sacrifice for them.

(g) Did not glorify himself, &c.] He did not assume the Mediatorial Office without a divine Authority, nor affect to appear before his Time in the Pomp and Splendor of it.

(b) This



said unto him, Thou art my Son, to Day have I begotten thee.

6 As he saith also in another Place, Thou art a Priest for ever after the Order of Melchisedec.

7 Who in the Days of his Flesh, when he had offered up Prayers and Supplications, with strong Crying and Tears, unto him that was able to save him from Death, and was heard, in that he feared ;

8 Though he were a Son,  
yet

Dignity, *who said unto him*, in the Place SECT. 5: quoted and pleaded above, *Thou art my Son, this Day have I begotten thee (h)*. As also Heb. V. 6. in another [Place], which it will be proper to take very particular Notice of, (Psal. cx. 4.) *He saith to him whom He had called to sit on his Right Hand, Thou [art] a Priest for ever according to the Order of Melchisedec.*

Such a Priest shall we presently see our 7 great Redeemer to have been, even that compassionate Saviour, *who in the Days of his Flesh*, and while he sojourned here amidst the Infirmities and Calamities to which human Nature is obnoxious, being assaulted with the utmost Violence by the Powers of Darkness, offered repeated Prayers and Supplications, which were attended with humble Prostrations, a strong Cry and flowing Tears, to him who was able to save him from Death : And his Supplications were not in vain ; for though his Heavenly Father did not think fit to exert that Power in his total Deliverance ; yet *he was heard in being delivered from that which he particularly feared (i)*, and which threw him into such an Agony in the Garden, that he sweat Drops of Blood. It is indeed a wonderful, but at the same 8 Time, a very instructive Dispensation, and therefore worthy of our deep Consideration and

(h) *This Day have I begotten thee.*] This will by no Means prove, he was not a High-Priest before his Resurrection from the dead ; And indeed if it signifies, that his Priesthood is to be dated only from the Day of his Resurrection, not to mention the other Absurdities of that Supposition, it would, contrary to the Judgment of those who bring it in this View, prove, that Christ was a Priest while he was upon Earth, that is, during the Period between his Resurrection and Ascension.

(i) From *that which he particularly feared.*] So I chose to render and explain the Words ; though Bishop Fell and some others, taking *εὐλαβεία* for a religious Reverence of GOD, (Compare Chap. xii. 28.) interpret it, as if it had been said, that his Piety rendered his Prayer acceptable. Dr. Whitby has said so much to confute this Sense, and establish the rendering in the Paraphrase, that I need not add more, but refer to the Note on Luke xxii. 42. (Vol. ii. pag. 501. Note (h)) for a further Illustration of the general Interpretation here given to this Text.

(k) Learned.

SECT. 5. and Reflection; that *though he were a Son,*  
 Heb. V. 8. *yet he learned Obedience (k) by the Things*  
*which he suffered, and was trained up for*  
 more eminent Services by a Series of painful

9 Discipline. *And being thus consecrated*  
 to GOD (l) by his own Blood, in Virtue of  
 which he was installed in his Priestly Office,  
*he became the Author of Eternal Salvation to*  
*all them that obey him;* to all that practically  
 own his Authority, as well as profess a De-  
 pendence on his Grace; being, as we ob-

10 served before, *Called and denominated of*  
 GOD an High-Priest according to the Order  
 11 of Melchisedec: *Concerning whom,* by the

Way, it is necessary that we before dismiss  
 this Argument, *we speak, having much Dis-*  
*course, and some of it perhaps hard to be*  
*understood;* not so much from the Difficulty  
 of the Thing itself, as *because you are slow*  
*and sluggish of hearing,* and your Minds are  
 not awakened to that Attention to these  
 Things, which might reasonably be expect-  
 ed from you: And especially, as you are  
 much prejudiced against every Thing which  
 may seem to lessen the Glory of the Leviti-  
 cal Priesthood: *For indeed, whereas you*

12 *ought for the Time that you have been under*  
 the Instructions of the Gospel, to have been  
 qualified *to be Teachers* of others, you are  
 so attached to Jewish Ceremonies and Forms,  
 that

yet learned he Obedience  
 by the Things which he suf-  
 fered:

9 And being made perfect,  
 he became the Author of  
 eternal Salvation unto all  
 them that obey him;

10 Called of GOD an  
 High-priest after the Order  
 of Melchisedec.

11 Of whom we have  
 many Things to say, and  
 hard to be uttered; seeing  
 ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when for the  
 Time ye ought to be Teach-  
 ers,

(k) *Learned Obedience.*] He found he must suffer, and by one Degree of Suffering was better fitted for another. As *Christ's* human Soul advanced gradually in Knowledge, so also in the Perfection of Virtue, though always free from any Defilement of Sin; and so his patient and cheerful Submission was improved by every Trial. — But *Dr. Whitby* would render it, he *taught Obedience* to others by it.

(l) *Being made perfect.*] *Archbishop Tillotson* would translate it, *having attained the End of his Race through Sufferings, that is,* past through Sufferings in his Way to consummate Glory. (Compare *John* xix. 30. *Luke* xiii. 32. *Heb.* ii. 10. But *Dr. Jackson* would render it, *being consecrated,* and is large in shewing, how *Christ* might be said to be *consecrated* to his Priestly Office by his Passion. Compare *Chap.* vii. 28. ii. 10. See *Dr. Jackson's Works,* Tom. ii. *Book* ix. pag. 943, &c. and *Dr. Owen* on *Chap.* ii. 10.

(m) *Wora*

ers, ye have Need that one teach you again which be the first Principles of the Oracles of GOD; and are become such as have need of Milk, and not of strong Meat.

that ye have need again that one should lead you back, as it were, to some of the first Principles of Religion, relating to the Ends and Purposes of Christ's Death, and teach you what [are] the first initial Elements of the divine Oracles; so that you seem to be in a State of Infancy as to these Things, and are become Persons who have need of Milk, and not of strong Food, such as suits a manly Age and robust Constitution.

SECT. 5.  
Heb. V. 12.

13 For every one that useth Milk, is unskilful in the Word of Righteousness: for he is a Babe.

For every one who partaketh of Milk, and subsists on that, without being able to digest strong Food, [is] to be considered as unskilful in the Word of Righteousness (m), that is, in the Gospel, which directs us in the true Way to Justification by the Blood and Righteousness of the great Redeemer; for he is yet but an Infant, and a compassionate Regard must be paid to him under this View, in Hope that he may hereafter attain to a superior Stature and more vigorous Age. But strong Food belongs to full-grown Men, who by long Use and Habit, have [their] Senses exercised, so as to be able readily to distinguish between both good and evil; which if they cannot, there may indeed be Danger of being imposed upon by that which would be unwholesome to their Souls; though administred under the Pretence of being fit to nourish them, and adapted to Persons of most eminent Attainments.

13

14 But strong Meat belongeth to them that are of full Age, even those who by Reason of Use have their Senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

14

I M P R O V E M E N T.

MAY we all experience more of the Efficacy of the Divine Word upon our Hearts. May we all be more and more thoughtful of the Account we are to give up of ourselves to GOD; and

Chap. iv. 12.

(m) Word of Righteousness.] This Phrase Mr. Pierce explains by referring to the Passages of the Old Testament, which speak of Justification by Faith, quoted in the Epistle to the Romans and Galatians; which these Hebrews might seem to overlook. L'Enfant explains them much in the same Sense.

SECT. 5. and of that *perfect discerning* which He has, not only of our *Actions*,  
 but the *Secrets of our Hearts*; that we may never go about to con-  
 Chap. iv. 13. ceal any Thing from him, *before whom all Things are naked and open.*

When we confider, how many Evils this *all-penetrating Eye*  
 Ver. 14. hath discerned *there*, let it teach us to rejoice in that *compassionate High-prieft*, who hath undertaken our Cause; which could never succeed in any other Hand. And let it *embolden* our Petitions in humble Expectation, that we shall not only receive that *Mercy* without  
 Ver. 16. which we perish, but *Grace* to strengthen and *help us in* Proportion to all our *Necessities*. And when pressed with Temptations, let it re-  
 Ver. 15. vive us to recollect, that *He was in all Points tempted as we are*, so far as it was consistent with the *perfect Innocence*, which his Office required, and which always gained new Lustre by every Attempt of the Enemy to obscure and pollute it.

Let inferior *Minifters* in GOD'S Sanctuary learn to imitate him;  
 Chap. v. 2. and being themselves *compassed with* so many *Infirmities*, have *Compassion on the Ignorant*, and on them that are out of the Way. And under a Sense of our common Weakness, let us all be earnest in our Applications to the *Throne of Grace* for Help. If *Chrifft* him-  
 Ver. 7. self, *in the Days of his Flesh*, poured out *Supplications with strong Crying and Tears*, let none of us imagine we can be safe in the Neglect of *Prayer*, or that we are ever to despond in any Circumstances, which leave Room for devout Ejaculations to GOD. Still He Lives, who is *able to save from Death*, and who can also *bear us in that which we fear.*

Let us wisely prepare for Afflictions. If *Chrifft*, though a *Son*,  
 Ver. 8. learned *Obedience by Sufferings*, how much more do we need the salutary Lessons they teach. But let no Sufferings prevent our adhering to Him, who being *consecrated* by them to so high an Office, is become the *Author of Salvation, of eternal Salvation*, to his faithful Followers. Let it ever be remembered, that it is *to them that obey him*, that this *Salvation* is promised: May we be found in their Number; and being entered as obedient *Disciples* into his School,  
 Ver. 9. may we become *Proficients* there; not such *Dull* and forgetful Scholars, as need to be led back daily to the *first Elements* and first Principles of the *divine Oracles*, not *Babes in Chrifft*, and *unskilful in the Word of Righteousness*; but such as having our *Senses* spiritually exercised to discern good and evil, may be capable of receiving and dig-  
 Ver. 14. gesting *strong Meat*, and may thereby grow stronger and stronger.

S E C T.

S E C T. VI.

The Apostle declares his Resolution of advancing to sublimer Truths without dwelling farther upon the first Principles, for the Sake of those, who might have apostatized from Christianity; and whose Case he represents as very hopeless. Heb. VI. 1,---9.

HEBREWS VI. 1.

HEBREWS VI. 1.

Therefore leaving the Principles of the Doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto Perfection; not laying again

WE have had Reason to complain, SECT. 6.  
 that too many of you are but in an infant State; yet I know that as I intimated Heb. VI. 1.  
 before, there are some among you, who can bear stronger Food than the State of Babes will admit: To such I would shew some Regard. *Dismissing therefore any farther Discourse on the first Principles [of the Doctrine] of Christ (a), let us be carried on to Perfection, and pursue more eminent Degrees of Improvement in it, and more advanced and elevated Knowledge: not laying again*

(a) *First Principles.*] Mr. Pierce understands all that follows as referring to the Jewish Doctrines, which might be considered as the Elements of the Christian. Repentance from dead Works, that is, from Sin, was a Jewish Doctrine, and he thinks it had a peculiar Reference to that solemn and public Repentance on the Day of Atonement. Faith towards GOD, he considers as without any Regard to the Messiah. The Baptisms he takes for the Jewish Washings, observing that βαπτισμοι in the plural Number is never used in any other Sense. Laying on of Hands, he takes for the Rite that attended Sacrifices; and imagines that the Resurrection of the Dead, and eternal Judgment, are either to be understood as Principles common to Judaism and Christianity, or rather peculiar to the former; in which View the Resurrection of the Dead, refers either to the Resurrection of particular Persons under the Old Testament, in Confirmation of the divine Mission of the Prophets, (which might in the Nature of Things render the Doctrine of Christ's Resurrection more credible to those who believed these,) or the Resurrection of the Jewish People from Egypt, or Deliverance from any other great Extremity. Compare Isai. xxvi. 19. Ezek. xxxvii. 11, 12. And the latter, that is, eternal Judgment, he thinks may be explained of dreadful Judgments inflicted of old, as upon the Sinners of the old World, the Inhabitants of Sodom, &c. I thought it not improper to propose so remarkable an Interpretation, but not seeing any Reason for confining several of the Clauses to so contracted a Sense, I have taken them in a much larger Extent.

F 2

(b) Of

SECT. 6. again the first Foundation of Christianity, by inculcating the well-known Necessity of *Repentance from dead Works*, from the Practices of those who are dead in Sin, and whereby the Soul is defiled, as the Priests of GOD were by the Touch of a dead Body; nor insisting on the Importance of *Faith* in the one living and true GOD, as the universal Lord of all; Nor leading you back to the *Doctrine of Baptisms (b)*, those instituted under the Mosaic Dispensation to inculcate moral Purity on all, who would draw near to GOD with Acceptance; or that appointed by Christ, as the Rite by which we enter into his Church. And we will not now treat of the *Imposition of Hands (c)*, by which the Spirit hath been communicated to those that have embraced the Gospel; and of the *Resurrection of the Dead*, which, though not so clearly and fully revealed, was assuredly believed by the Jewish Church before our Lord's Appearance: and of *eternal Judgment*, when the whole World shall be convened before Christ, and each of its Inhabitants fixed by his final Sentence in an unalterable Eternity.

3 These are indeed important Doctrines, and it will become you constantly to bear them

again the Foundation of Repentance from dead Works, and of Faith towards GOD.

2 Of the Doctrine of Baptisms, and of laying on of Hands, and of Resurrection of the Dead, and of eternal Judgment.

3 And this will we do, if GOD permit.

(b) *Of Baptisms.*] Lord Barrington understands this of the *Baptism of Water*, and the *Effusion of the Holy Spirit*, by which the first Disciples among the Jews, and the first Converts among the devout and idolatrous Gentiles were initiated. He also explains the *laying on of Hands*, as referring to the immediate Communication of *spiritual Gifts* by Means of the *Apostles*. These he thinks were *first Principles*, as *Baptism* was the first Entrance into the Church, and *laying on of Hands*, the great Evidence of it, as *Faith* and *Repentance* are the Substance of *Christianity*, and a *Resurrection and eternal Judgment* the great Motives leading Men to embrace it. *Bar. Misc. Ess. II. pag. 116.*

(c) *The Imposition of Hands.*] This answered such great Purposes in the *Christian Church*, as the appointed Method of communicating important Gifts, that it might well be mentioned among *first Principles*.—But it is by a very precarious Consequence, that any can infer from hence the *universal Obligation* of this Rite, in admitting Persons into full *Church-Membership*, or even to the *Ministry*. See *Pierce's Vindict.* pag. 463.

(d) *Fer.*

them in Mind. But while I am addressing SECT. 6.  
 you at present, it may be more profitable Heb. VI. 3.  
 for me to lead you into some higher Im-  
 provements in Christian Knowledge, and to  
 build some farther divine Instruction upon  
 these sure and solid Foundations. *And this*  
*we will do, if GOD permit*; if GOD may  
 assist us in attempting it, and this Letter  
 reach you, as I trust it will, while you con-  
 tinue your Adherence to the Christian  
 Faith.

4 For it is impossible for  
 those who were once en-  
 lightened, and have tasted  
 of the heavenly Gift, and  
 were made Partakers of the  
 Holy Ghost,

As for those who seem to have forgot 4  
 these sacred Principles, and put the greatest  
 Slight upon them, by renouncing our holy  
 Religion, I give them up as Persons from  
 whom I have no farther Expectations; for  
 [it is] in a Manner impossible (d) to succeed  
 in any charitable Endeavour, with Regard to  
 those who have once been enlightned with the  
 Knowledge of such glorious Truths as are  
 essential to Christianity, and have tasted of  
 the heavenly Gift, which our exalted Re-  
 deemer hath shed down upon us, and have  
 been made Partakers of the Holy Ghost (e) in  
 his miraculous and amazing Communica-  
 tions, *And have tasted by some affection-* 5  
*nate*

5 And have tasted the  
 good

(d) For it is impossible.] This Text has been the Subject of great Debate, which I must not by any Means enter into here. Compare *Limb. Theol.* 5, lxxxiv. 10,—19. *Baxter's Works*, Vol. ii. pag. 305—As to the Phrase *enlightened*, it is certain, the ancient *Fathers* early used it to express *Baptism*. But in this View I much question the Propriety of the Phrase, and think that *Illumination*, as well as *Regeneration*, in the most important and Scriptural Sense of the Words, were regularly to precede the Administration of that Ordinance. And I think that what the *Papists*, and some too ready to follow them, have taught of an extraordinary Illumination following the Administration of the Ordinance of *Baptism*, is very Enthusiastical, and absolutely destitute of Proof.

(e) Heavenly Gift—Partakers of the Holy Ghost.] Though by *heavenly Gift*, *Archbishop Tillotson* (*Vol. ii. pag. 485*) understands *Remission of Sin*, urging *Rom. v. 15,—18.* in Proof of it; and distinguishes it from the Communication of the *Holy Ghost*, and this too, as he ventures to assert, in its sanctifying Power and Influence; I see no Necessity for making such a Distinction, or extending in this Place the Energy of the *Spirit* beyond his *Extraordinary Gifts*: *Bishop Hopkins* quotes *Acts viii. 15.* (which he thinks must include *Simon Magus*), as a Proof, that *unregenerate Men* might receive the *Holy Ghost*. *Hopkins's Works*, pag. 520.

(f) The

SECT. 6. nate Impressions on their Minds, the Efficacy of *the good Word of GOD*, and felt something of *the Powers of the World to come* (f), awakening in them a Conviction of Sin, and some Desires after Holiness, and Resolutions in Favour of it: I say that as for such Persons, *if* after all this, *they* totally *fall away* (g) from Christianity, their Case is in a Manner desperate, and it is impossible *again to renew* the good Impressions made on them, so as to bring them back to *Repentance*, and to recover them to a Sense of Duty; *since they* reject the strongest Evidence that can be conceived, and do, as it were, by this Apostacy and Blasphemy of theirs, so far as in them lies, *crucify to themselves the Son of GOD again* (h), and make an open Example [of him]: By renouncing that divine Doctrine which hath been so gloriously demonstrated to them, they do, in Effect, declare they look

good Word of GOD, and the Powers of the World to come;

6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto Repentance: seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of GOD afresh, and put him to an open Shame.

(f) *The Powers of the World to come.*] This Phrase is ambiguous. Some understand it of those miraculous Powers, with which the Gospel-Age, (called *the World to come* elsewhere, and particularly *Chap. ii. 5.*) should be attended — But if the preceding Clause be explained as above, it will diversify the Sense more, to understand this of *Impressions* made relating to the *Importance* of a *future State*. And as we so often read of *this World* and *the present World*; the invisible State into which we pass by Death, may certainly with great Propriety be expressed by the Phrase of *the World to come*; as indeed that is its common Signification. But if any on the whole think it is more reasonable to interpret this Clause in the former Sense, and so will understand the other Clauses, as explained in the former Part of *Note (e)*, it must be observed that the *Apostle*, in thus giving Judgment upon the Case, if it should happen, does not declare that it actually does.

(g) *If they totally fall away.*] It is certain the Words, *fall away*, must be understood *thus*; or it would prove, contrary to the plainest Fact, that it is impossible to recover *Christians* who have fallen into great and wilful Sins.

(h) *Crucify to themselves, &c.*] Some would interpret it, *so far as in them lies they do it, that is, they pour all the Contempt upon Christ in their Power, and offer all the Injury to him they can; and were he upon Earth, and subject to the Violence he once suffered, they would treat him as his worst Enemies did.* — It seems to me that the *Apostle* here gives up *Apostates*, as hopeless in the general, in order to fortify *Christians* against the great Danger to which they were exposed. But I think it cannot be inferred from hence, that, in Ages where the Evidence of *Christianity* might be less plainly *demonstrative*, those who had fallen into this Crime with Circumstances less aggravated, and professed Repentance, were never to be received to the Peace of the *Church* any more; as the *Donatists* supposed, and on this *Text* founded their inexorably rigorous Discipline.

(i) Dry



look on Jesus as an Impostor who deserved SECT. 6.  
 what he met with; and they seem to ascribe Heb. VI. 6.  
 the miraculous Energy of the Spirit to some  
 diabolical Agency: Which Christ himself  
 represented as the Sin that should never be  
 forgiven. (Compare Mat. xii. 30, 31.)

7 For the Earth which  
 drinketh in the Rain that  
 cometh oft upon it, and  
 bringeth forth Herbs, meet  
 for them by whom it is  
 dressed, receiveth Blessing  
 from GOD:

We will therefore, without any farther 7  
 Efforts for the Recovery of such, leave them  
 to the awful Sentence which he hath pro-  
 nounced upon them. For whereas *the Earth*  
*that drinketh in the Rain, which often cometh*  
*upon it, and produceth Herbage fit for them*  
*by whom it is cultivated, partaketh of the di-*  
*vine Blessing, and wears a pleasant and de-*  
*lightful Face; so shall those Souls, who*  
 improve Gospel-Ordinances and Christian  
 Knowledge, so as to produce the Fruits of  
 Holiness, be favourably accepted of GOD,  
 and feel a divine Joy in themselves. But 8

8 But that which beareth  
 Thorns and Briers, is re-  
 jected, and is nigh unto  
 Cursing; whose End is to  
 be burned.

as *that Ground which bringeth forth only*  
*Thorns and Briers, under the same Cultiva-*  
*tion, and the same refreshing Showers, [is]*  
*rejected* as utterly useless; so likewise shall  
 the unfruitful Soul be deserted by GOD in  
 righteous Displeasure, and is near to that  
 dreadful Hour, when a *Curse* shall come  
 upon it, never to be revoked. And as such  
 a barren Soil, *whose* Case we have been de-  
 scribing, is at last burnt up by the violent  
 Heat of the Sun, and becomes dry Heath (i);  
 so the *End* of such an unhappy Creature  
 [shall be] everlasting *Burning*, in that mise-  
 rable World, where all the Means of Grace,  
 and Influences of the Spirit of GOD shall  
 be for ever withdrawn, and the Soul shall  
 be given up to incurable Wickedness, and  
 eternal Anguish. Such is the Case of 9

9 But, Beloved, we are  
 per-

these wretched Apostates: *But I* will enlarge  
 no farther on this awful Subject; for *we are*  
 per-

(i) Dry Heath] *Heath* is the Emblem of the *curfed Man*. *Jerem. xvii. 5, 6.* See  
*Dr. Whitby in loc.*

SECT. 6. *persuaded* there is Room to hope much *better Things of you, my Beloved Brethren, even Things that accompany Salvation,* and do, as it were, bring it along with them: We have this chearful Expectation concerning you, *though we* think ourselves obliged *thus to speak*; that nothing in our Power may be wanting to guard you against the greatest Danger.

persuaded better Things of you, and Things that accompany Salvation, though we thus speak.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

- Ver. 1, 2. **I**N every Respect, both with Regard to Knowledge and Practice, let us *go on to Perfection*; and if we cannot attain to it, let us rise as near it as we can! For this Purpose, as Christians, let us remember, what *Foundation* has been already laid, of *Repentance and Faith, of Baptism, of a Resurrection, and a future Judgment*; a Judgment, *eternal* in its Consequences, and therefore infinitely important. And let us remember, that as the Building, in its highest Advances, rests upon the *Foundation*, and owes its Stability to its Union with it; so in like Manner does our Progress and Advance in Christian Piety, stand in a near Connection with our retaining *these* Truths, though we by no Means confine ourselves to them..
- Ver. 4. It is by a continual Care to improve in them, that we shall most happily escape the Danger, the dreadful Danger of *Apostacy*, to which we may otherwise be exposed. And Oh! let the *awful Passage* before us be duely attended to in this View! Let us
- Ver. 5. not rest in any *enlightening* we may have received, in any *Taste* we may have had of the *heavenly Gift*, of the *good Word of GOD*, or the *Powers of the World to come*; nor in any Operation of the *Spirit of GOD* upon our Minds, to form them to the most splendid Talents, and qualify us for the most pompous external Services. Men may have all these, and yet *fall away*, and their
- Ver. 6. Guilt become more aggravated: They may injure the *Redeemer* so much the more, in Proportion to all they have known of him; and indeed will be capable of wounding him the deeper by their *Apostacy*, and of *exposing* him to greater Infamy. Let us daily pray to be delivered from so great an Evil! We are not
- Ver. 7. left to be like a *barren Wilderness*; *the Rain* from on high *comes often upon us*, and we enjoy the choicest Cultivation: May we  
*bring*

*But GOD will never forget the Labours of his Saints:* 49

*bring forth Fruits meet for him by whom we are dressed, the genuine Sect. 6.*  
Fruits of practical, vital Religion. So shall we receive a Blessing  
*from GOD, and flourish more and more, till we are transplanted to*  
*the Paradise above.*

But as for those unhappy Creatures, who still continue to bring Ver. 8.  
forth *Briars and Thorns*, let them dread that final *Rejection*, which  
will be the Portion of those, who persist in abusing the divine Good-  
ness; let them dread the *Curse*, the awful, the irrevocable *Curse*,  
to be pronounced on such; let them dread the everlasting *Dearth*,  
with which their Souls shall be parched, when Ordinances, when  
the Workings of the Spirit of GOD, when the common Comforts  
and Supports of this mortal animal Life, shall be no more. Gladly  
do the Ministers of *Christ* entertain *better Hopes* concerning those Ver. 9.  
committed to their Care, while yet there is Room for Hope, tho'  
Faithfulness to GOD and to the Souls of Men obliges them to *speak*  
in the Language of such *Cautions* as these. May divine Grace ap-  
ply it to those who are particularly concerned in it, and plant  
what hath hitherto been a barren and abandoned Desert, with such  
*Fruits of Holiness*, as may transform it into the *Garden of the*  
*Lord.*

---

## S E C T. VII.

*Addressing himself to sincere Believers, the Apostle com-  
forts them with a View of the Goodness of GOD, and  
his Fidelity to those sacred Engagements, into which  
he hath condescended to enter; the Performance of  
which is farther sealed by the Entrance of CHRIST  
into Heaven, as our Fore-runner. Heb. VI. 10, to  
the End.*

HEBREWS VI. 10.

HEBREWS IV. 10.

FOR GOD is not unrighteous, to forget your Work

I just now mentioned my Hopes of your Sect. 7.  
compleat Salvation; and I have Reason *Heb. VI. 10.*  
to entertain such Hopes, as well knowing  
the benevolent and pious Dispositions, which  
many of you have expressed. For GOD

VOL. VI.

G

[is]

50 For when he could swear by no greater, he sware by himself:

Sect. 7. [is] not unrighteous, or unmindful of his gracious Promises, so as to forget your diligent Work and Labour in his Service, animated by a Principle of unfeigned Love, which you have manifested, not only to your Brethren, but to his Name also, in having ministered, and in still ministering, as his Providence gives you Opportunity, to the Necessities of the Saints.

Heb. VI. 10.

I I And we heartily wish that this Temper were as universal, as it is commendable where it prevails; so that every one of you, into whose Hands this Epistle may come, might shew the same Diligence, and exert the same studious Care, in order to establish the full Assurance of your Hope, even unto the End of your christian Course; by which Hope you must still be supported, while in this World: That so on the whole you may not be sluggish and indolent; but Imitators of those, who, through the Exercise of Faith and Long-suffering, do now reap the blessed Fruit of these Graces, and inherit the Promises (a), which God hath made to support and cherish them in the Hearts of his People thro' every Age.

12 And a glorious Confirmation you will find these Promises to be, when you come to compare one spiritual Object with another, and are better skilled in the Method of interpreting the sacred Oracles, on Principles which I am going to lay down. For I may in the first Place lead you to observe, that when God made the great and

13

Work and Labour of Love which ye have shewed toward his Name, in that ye have ministered to the Saints, and do minister.

II And we desire that every one of you do shew the same Diligence, to the full Assurance of Hope unto the End:

12 That ye be not slothful, but Followers of them, who through Faith and Patience inherit the Promises.

13 For when God made Promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, he sware by himself,

com-

(a) Through Faith and Long-suffering inherit the Promises.] Mr. Pierce explains this of the Gentiles, who were converted to Christianity. If it be intended as a Hint to stir up the Jews to Emulation, as he supposes, it is indeed a very obscure one; for comparatively it is a low Sense, in which Christians in this imperfect State can be said to inherit the Promises. I rather think it refers to all good Men, who were departed out of our World, whether in former or later Days, and under whatever Dispensation they died — Taking it in this View it will be, (as several have observed,) an Argument against the Soul's continuing in a State of Sleep during the intermediate Period between Death and the Resurrection.

(b) Mul-

Therefore Abraham, having waited, obtained the Promise: 51

comprehensive Promise to Abraham, (Gen. Sect. 7. xii. 2, 3. and xvii. 1,—6.) on which so much of our Hope as Christians doth also depend; the Promise that he would be a GOD to him, and that all Nations should be blessed in his Seed; seeing he had no greater [a Person] to swear by, he swore by himself, even by the Honours of his own sacred and divine Name; saying, by an audible Voice from Heaven when he repeated the Promise, while Abraham stood with Isaac before that Altar, on which with humble Submission to the divine Appointment, he had just before laid him; (Gen. xxii. 16, 17.) “By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, because thou hast done this Thing, and hast not withheld thy Son, thine only Son, that blessing I will assuredly bless thee, and multiplying I will assuredly multiply thee (b); I will bless and multiply thee remarkably, so as to make thy Seed as the Stars of Heaven, and as the Sand which is upon the Sea-shore.” And thus having waited long in humble Faith and Patience, he obtained in due Time the Accomplishment of the Promise, first in the Birth of Isaac, and then after a much longer Attendance, the Consummation of a better Hope. And we whose Circumstances so happily resemble his in this Respect, may well follow the Example of his Faith, when we survey the Foundation of it. For Men truly swear by a [Being] greater than themselves, to whom

14 Saying, surely, blessing, I will bless thee, and multiplying, I will multiply thee.

15 And so after he had patiently endured, he obtained the Promise.

16 For Men verily swear by the greater: and an Oath for

(b) *Multiplying, I will multiply thee.*] That Part of the Promise to Abraham which immediately follows the Clause here quoted, in Gen. xxii. 17. most certainly relates to the Gentiles; and therefore had the Apostle intended Verse 12. of this Chapter in the Sense in which Mr. Pierce explains it, of the Gentiles converted to Christianity, I cannot think he would have stopped short at, multiplying, I will multiply thee, and omitted what follows, of making his Seed as the Stars of Heaven, and as the Sand on the Sea-shore, and — in thy Seed shall all the Nations of the Earth be blessed.

- Sect. 7. whom they ascribe that Knowledge and Power, which is supposed to render him the Object of their Veneration and Worship; and an Oath, when thus taken for Confirmation, [is] to them an End of all farther Strife and Contention. On which Account the blessed GOD, in humble Condescension to our Infirmities, being willing in the most abundant Manner to manifest to the Heirs of the Promise, the Immutability of his Counsel, and his determinate Resolution of bestowing upon them the Blessings he engaged, interposed with the Solemnity of an Oath, That by two immutable Things, in each of which [it is] impossible for GOD to lie, even his Word and his Oath, we might have strong Consolation, even we who in humble Obedience to the gracious Designs of his Gospel, have fled for Refuge to lay hold on the Hope laid before us, the noble Prize which that Gospel proposes as the great Object of our Ambition and Pursuit:
- 17 I speak of eternal Life, the Hope of which through the divine Goodness we have, and I trust we shall resolutely retain it, as an Anchor of the Soul both secure and stedfast, and as entering into the Place within the Vail, the Holy of Holies, where God dwells, and where we hope to dwell for ever with him. This Anchor will indeed be sufficient to enable us to outride all the Storms of Temptation, being fixed in that glorious, though invisible World, whither Jesus as the Fore-runner is entered for us to take Possession of Glory in our Name, and prepare all Things necessary for our Admittance into it: Even he, [who is] made an High-priest for ever, according to the Order of Melchisedec; as we are going more largely to shew.
- for Confirmation is to them an End of all Strife.
- 17 Wherein GOD willing more abundantly to shew unto the Heirs of Promise the Immutability of his Counsel, confirmed it by an Oath:
- 18 That by two immutable Things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong Consolation, who have fled for Refuge to lay hold upon the Hope set before us:
- 19 Which Hope we have as an Anchor of the Soul, both sure and stedfast, and which entereth into that within the Vail.
- 20 Whither the Fore-runner is for us entered, even Jesus, made an High-priest for ever, after the Order of Melchisedec.

IMPROVE-

I M P R O V E M E N T.

WITH what amazing Condescension doth GOD, by his *A-* Sect. 7.  
*postles* speak of those *Works* and *Labours of Love*, which Ver. 10.  
the Persons who have performed them with the greatest Simplicity of  
Heart, know to be most undeserving of his Regard! How kindly  
hath He made himself a *Debtor* to us, or rather to his own Pro-  
mise and Oath, so that it would indeed be *unrighteous* in him to fail  
those Expectations, which nothing in ourselves could possibly raise!  
Let us then be animated to the greatest *Diligence by a full As-*  
*urance of Hope*. There are those who *inherit the Promises*, of Ver. 11.  
which we are the Heirs, and they have passed to that glorious In-  
heritance by the Exercise of *Faith* and *Patience*. Let us chide our Ver. 12.  
*sluggish* Souls into a more resolute *Imitation* of them. And when  
they are ready to sink into Indolence again, let us again awaken  
them by viewing those *Promises*, and the *Fidelity* of that GOD  
who hath made them, and who hath added by a Condescension  
that can never be sufficiently acknowledged and adored, the Sanc-  
tion of his *Oath* to that of his *Word*. Behold the *strong Consolation* Ver. 13.  
which he hath given. And given to whom? To those *who fly for* V. 16,—18.  
*Refuge to lay hold on the Hope set before them* in the Gospel. Thi-  
ther let us fly as for our Lives, fly, as if we heard the Footsteps  
of the *Avenger of Blood* just behind us, and our Lives depended  
upon the Speed of the present Moment. Happy the Souls that  
have found this Refuge! Whose Faith and *Hope* like a strong and Ver. 19.  
steady *Anchor* hath *entered into Heaven*, hath fixed on that blessed  
*Redeemer* who lives and reigns, who appears as an *Intercessor* for  
his People, and intercedes with such Efficacy and Success, that he  
is also to be regarded as their *Fore-runner*, as gone to *prepare a*  
*Place* for them. Let us constantly retain that View of him; and Ver. 20.  
while we continue exposed to all the Labours and Sorrows of *Mor-*  
*tality*, let us seek our Safety and our Comfort by fixing our *Re-*  
*gards* upon him, waiting continually the Aids of his Grace, till he  
shall see fit to call us to fill the Place he hath provided, and re-  
ceive the Inheritance he hath secured for us.

S E C T.

## S E C T. VIII.

*The Apostle enters into a Parallel between Melchisedec and CHRIST, as agreeing in Title and Descent; and from various Respects, in which the Priesthood of Melchisedec was superior to the Levitical Priesthood, infers also the superior Glory of the Priesthood of CHRIST. Heb. VII. 1,--17.*

## HEBREWS VII. I.

Se<sup>c</sup>t. 8. **I** HAVE again and again mentioned that Scripture, in which the Messiah is spoken of in Prophecy, as made a Priest for ever after the Order of Melchisedec. Now I think, it may be worth our while to dwell a little more intently on the Contemplation of this Subject; and then we shall find that, without straining the Allegory, it holds in a Variety of instructive Particulars: *For this Melchisedec, of whom Moses speaks in that celebrated History, (Gen. xiv. 18, &c.) to which David refers, [was] King of Salem, and Priest of the most high GOD; in both which Offices he was a remarkable Type of our blessed Lord. And it is well known, he was the celebrated and holy Person who met that illustrious Patriarch, our Father Abraham, when returning from the Slaughter of the Kings, who had taken Lot Prisoner, with the King of Sodom, Gomorrah, and the neighbouring Cities of the Plain. And we are expressly told, that he blessed him on this Occasion, that is, he pronounced on Abraham himself a Blessing in the Name of GOD to whom he ministered. To whom also Abraham divided the Tenth (a) of all the Spoils he had brought*

Heb. VII. 1.

## HEBREWS VII. I.

**F**OR this Melchisedec King of Salem, Priest of the most high GOD, who met Abraham returning from the Slaughter of the Kings, and blessed him:

<sup>2</sup> To whom also Abraham gave a tenth Part of all: first

(a) *Abraham divided the Tenth.*] The Objection which Mr. Chubb has brought against



rest being by Interpretation King of Righteousness, and after that also King of Salem, which is King of Peace;

brought back, in Token of his Reverence Sect. 8. to the Office he bore. And indeed when we come to consider his Name and Title according to the Signification of it in the Hebrew Language, we shall find it bear a remarkable Analogy to that of our Lord Jesus Christ: For *first*, his Name Melchisedec, *being interpreted*, signifies that he [*is*] King of Righteousness, or a most righteous Sovereign; *and then*, his Title taken from the Place where he resided and ruled, is, *King of Salem, that is King of Peace*: For it is well known that Salem in the Hebrew Tongue is Peace, as Melech is King, and Tfedec Righteousness.

3 Without Father, without Mother, without Descent,

Now if we come to compare this Melchisedec, this King of Righteousness and Peace, with the Mosaick Priests, we shall find a remarkable Difference in many Respects, in all which there is a Resemblance between him and our Lord. For Instance, whereas, it is necessary the Jewish Priests should all be of the Family of Aaron, and there are several Laws concerning the Descent and Qualities of their Mothers, which must be observed and recorded, in order to make out their Legitimacy, and their consequent Right to serve at the Altar; Melchisedec is, as it were, *without Father*, and *without Mother* (b), neither his Father nor his

3:

against this from Gen. xiv. 23. As if it were Melchisedec who paid Tythes to Abraham and not Abraham to Melchisedec, is really trifling; a Change of Person, without express Notice given of it, being usual in the Sacred Scriptures, and in all Writers, and Languages: Not to observe, that the Version of the *Seventy* in the common Editions, and in that Copy which is printed in the *Polyglot*, instead of *He* expressly reads *Abraham*. But Mr. Chubb's particular Exceptions have been so abundantly answered by the Author of *the Case of Abraham and Melchisedec, Jacob and Esau &c. considered*, published Anno 1746. against Chubb's 4 Dissertations, that I need not particularly enlarge. This may however be a proper Place to observe, that the *Relative* must evidently refer to the remote *Antecedent* in the following Passages, Luk. xvii. 16. Acts xxiii. 23. 2 Kings xviii. 29. Psal. cv. 37. Acts vii. 5. Deut. xxxi. 22, 23. Gen. xiv. 20 &c.

(b) *Without Father, without Mother.*] It has been observed by many, and it is not unfit

Sect. 8. his Mother are mentioned in Scripture; and he is *without Pedigree* (c), or any written Account of his Genealogy, by which it may be traced up to more distant Progenitors of the priestly Order: And herein he answers to Christ, who with Respect to his human Nature, had no Father, nor any Mother with regard to his Divine. Again, as there was a certain Age at which the Jewish Priests entered upon their Ministry in the Tabernacle or Temple, and at which they quitted it, Melchisedec *having neither Beginning of Days, nor End of Life* mentioned in Scripture, *but being* in that Respect as if he were immortal, and therein *made like to the Son of GOD*, who existed before all Worlds, *he remaineth a Priest for ever* (d).

4 Now I doubt not, my Brethren, but that as I proceed in this Argument, *you see* and reflect, *how great a Man* (e) *this Melchisedec* [was], *to whom*, as I hinted above, *even the Patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of all the*

scient, having neither Beginning of Days, nor End of Life; but made like unto the Son of GOD, abideth a Priest continually.

4 Now consider how great this Man was, unto whom even the Patriarch Abraham gave the Tenth of the Spoils.

unfit the Reader should be reminded of it here; that several ancient Writers of Character among the Heathens, speak of Persons being *born of no Father*, or *without a Father*, when they mean only to express by it that their *Father was unknown*. See Harris on the Messiah, Sermon ix. pag. 262. Elfsner likewise (*Observ. Sacr. Vol. ii. pag. 347.*) hath some remarkable Quotations to shew that it was usual among the Greeks, to say of a Person, that he was *απατωρ, μημητωρ*, *without Father, without Mother*, when his Parents were unknown. And accordingly several of the *Fathers* imagine, that this is here asserted of *Melchisedec*, because there is no Mention made of his Parents in the *sacred Scriptures*. But the Reason, in *Elfsner's* Opinion is, that there was no Trace of his Parentage in the *sacerdotal Genealogies*, he being without *Priestly Descent*, *αγενεαλογηστος*, as it immediately follows, *not enrolled among the Priests*.

(c) *Without Pedigree.*] As the *Genealogy* of our Lord is so distinctly delivered both by the Evangelists *Matthew* and *Luke*, there may seem here to be a Failure in the Resemblance; I therefore added the Words which determine it to the Idea of some *priestly* Ancestors, which will render the Propriety very conspicuous, and is agreeable to *Elfsner's* Interpretation mentioned in the *Note* above.

(d) *Remaineth a Priest for ever.*] *Bishop Burnet* would transpose this Clause, *He was a Priest of GOD for ever made like unto the Son of GOD*. I cannot forbear observing, that I think his Interpretation and Illustration of this Scripture, (*4 Disc. p. 69,—71.*) the best I remember to have seen.

(e) *How great a Man.*] This is a severe Stroke upon the *Jews*, not only as it proves the superior Dignity of *Christ* above the *Aaronical* Priesthood, but shews also that *GOD* had of old a People among the *Gentiles*, and that there was a Person among them superior to *Abraham* himself.

(f) *In*

5 And verily they that are of the Sons of Levi, who receive the Office of the Priesthood, have a Commandment to take Tithes of the People according to the Law, that is, of their Brethren, though they come out of the Loins of Abraham :

6 But he whose Descent is not counted from them, received Tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the Promises.

7 And without all Contradiction, the less is blessed of the better.

8 And here Men that die receive Tithes: But there he receiveth them, of whom it is witnessed that he liveth.

9 And as I may so say,  
Levi

the Spoils he had recovered from the King Sect. 8.  
of Shinar and his Allies. And this will  
be farther illustrated by considering, that Heb. VII. 5.  
truly they of the Descendants of Levi who  
receive the Aaronical Priesthood, have ac-  
cording to the Law by which they are con-  
stituted, a Commandment; and in Consequence  
of that, a Right only to tythe the People, that  
is, their Brethren, though indeed coming as  
well as themselves, out of the Loins of A-  
braham: But he, of whom we have 6  
now been speaking, whose Pedigree is not  
reckoned from them, nor had any Relation  
at all to the Abrahamic Family, took Tythes  
of Abraham himself, and even blessed him  
who had received the Promises, so much  
celebrated in your History through every  
Generation. But without all Contradiction 7  
the Inferior is blessed of the Superior,  
rather than the Superior of the Inferior:  
So that while pronouncing this Blessing up-  
on Abraham, Melchisedec evidently act-  
ed in an higher Character, than the Patri-  
arch himself sustained at that Time, and  
in that Circumstance. And again, it 8  
may farther be observed for the Illustra-  
tion of this Argument, that here, under  
the Institution of Moses, Men who die, re-  
ceive Tythes; the Priests of that Dispen-  
sation are mortal Men, like their Brethren;  
but there, in the Case of Melchisedec, he  
[receiveth them] of whom it is only testified  
in Scripture, that he liveth, but of whose  
Death we have no Account; and in that  
Respect he may be said to bear some Re-  
semblance to the ever living and ever bles-  
sed Jesus. And indeed, as one may say (f), 9  
by

(f) As one may say: *ως ενος ζωντος.*] *Elfner* is of Opinion, (*Observ. Sacr. Vol. ii. pag. 350.*) that this should be translated, to say the Truth; alledging, that it is not agreeable to the Respect we owe to the *Apostle's* Character, to suppose, that he inserted those Words as an Apology for an Assertion in itself not strictly just and exact; and he produces some Passages out of the *Classicks* to vindicate this Version. But the Justness of it is largely controverted by *Raphelius. Annot. ex Herod. in loc.*

SECT. 8. *by Abraham and in his Person, even Levi,*  
 who in his Posterity received the Tithes of  
 Heb. VII. 9. the other Descendents of Israel, was him-  
 10 self tithed. For he was yet in the Loins  
 of [his] Father Abraham (g), when Melchi-  
 sedec met him, upon the Occasion I have  
 just been mentioning.

11 Now I introduce all these Reflections, to  
 lead you to consider the Aspect this wears  
 as to the Gospel, and the View it gives of  
 its superior Excellence in Comparison of  
 the Law. And I may reason thus up-  
 on the Premises. *If Perfection had been by*  
*the Levitical Priesthood (h), and no more ex-*  
*cellent Atonement and Intercession than*  
*theirs could be expected, (for you know*  
*that it was under it, that the People received*  
*the Law, that is, it was a Part of the legal*  
*Appointment to which a Multitude of other*  
*Precepts in the Ritual referred, and on which*  
*the Possibility of performing them depend-*  
*ed,) what further Need [was there] that an-*  
*other Priest should arise according to the Or-*  
*der of Melchisedec, and that he should not*  
*be reckoned according to the Order of Aaron.*

12 This will draw after it a long Train of  
 extensive and important Consequences; *for*  
*the Priesthood being changed, there must of*  
*Necessity also be a Change of the Law*; for as  
 I hinted above, all the Ceremonial Law de-  
 pended upon it: And if our Regards be di-  
 rected to another Priest, who is not of the  
 Family of Aaron, there is then an End of  
 the

Levi also who receiveth  
 Tithes, payed Tithes in A-  
 braham.

10 For he was yet in the  
 Loins of his Father, when  
 Melchisedec met him.

11 If therefore Perfection  
 were by the Levitical Priest-  
 hood (for under it the Peo-  
 ple received the Law,) what  
 farther Need *was there* that  
 another Priest should rise af-  
 ter the Order of Melchise-  
 dec, and not be called after  
 the Order of Aaron?

12 For the Priesthood be-  
 ing changed, there is made  
 of Necessity a Change also  
 of the Law.

(g) *In the Loins of Abraham.]* Christ could not be said to be so, because of his  
 extraordinary Descent; otherwise the Argument would, I think, have been inconclu-  
 sive, as it would have been proved that Christ, as well as Levi, paid Tithes in A-  
 braham.

(h) *Now — if Perfection &c.]* Efsner justly observes, (*Observ. Sacr. Vol. ii. pag.*  
 351.) that this is not to be considered as a Consequence flowing *directly* from the Ver-  
 ses immediately preceding, as might be concluded from the rendering of the *Vulgate*,  
 and *Erasmus Schmidius*, and our *Common Translation*; but that it is the Beginning of  
 a new *Paragraph*, or Branch of Discourse; and that *et μεν εν* should be rendered, *but*  
*if*; or, which is much the same, *now if*; in Support of which he produces several Au-  
 thorities.

(i) *Sprung*

13 For he of whom these Things are spoken, pertaineth to another Tribe, of which no Man gave Attendance at the Altar.

14 For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Judah; of which Tribe Moses spake nothing concerning Priesthood.

15 And it is yet far more evident; for that after the Similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another Priest.

16 Who is made, not after the Law of a carnal Commandment, but after the Power of an endless Life.

17 For he testifieth, Thou

the Obligation to the Ritual, which con-  
fin'd all its Precepts to Priests of that Line, and supposed that, as long as it was binding, they would always subsist, and bear Office.

And that is now evidently the Case, for the Person of whom these Things are spoken, belonged to another Tribe, of whom no one appertained to the Jewish Altar, or had any Right to minister at it. For [it is] plain,

that our Lord Jesus Christ, the only true Messiah, foretold by David in the Passage I have been discoursing upon, sprung from Judah (i), of which Tribe Moses spake nothing at all relating to the Priesthood he ordained, so as to reserve any Right of Sacerdotal Ministry to them, more than to any other Tribe in Israel.

And independent on all Genealogical Controversy, which the most ingenious Malice could urge concerning Mary's Family, it is yet more abundantly manifest, from the least Attention to that single Scripture alone which I have so frequently mentioned, that there arises (k) another Priest according to the Similitude of Melchisedec;

Who therefore, we may assure ourselves, is made and constituted not according, or in Regard to the Law of the carnal Commandment, that System of ceremonial Precepts, which contained so many Things of an external, and comparatively of a carnal Nature, and which considered Men as dwelling in mortal Flesh, and so to succeed each other; but according to the undecaying Power of an indissoluble and endless Life (l).

For you

(i) Sprung from Judah.] It may be worth remembering here, that Justin Martyr, Tertullian, and Chrysostom, refer to the Table made at the Taxation, in Proof of this; and it may be considered whether the Apostle does not insinuate the same Reference. See Dr. Barrow's Works, Vol. ii. pag. 188. Undoubtedly he would not have spoken with such Confidence, if it had not been generally allowed.

(k) That there arises.] Dr. Whitby proves by many convincing Authorities, that the Particle *et* sometimes signifies *that*, as it is plain it here does.

(l) Of an endless Life.] Archbishop Tillotson thinks the Gospel is called the Power of

Seçt. 8. you will be careful to remember, what he *Thou art a Priest for ever* after the Order of Melchisedec.  
*testifieth, Thou [art] a Priest for ever according to the Order of Melchisedec;* which  
 Heb.VII.17. implieth all that I have asserted concerning Christ. Let us reflect upon it with Pleasure, that he retains his Priesthood for ever; and therefore is able to give everlasting Efficacy to his Administration, and everlasting Blessings to those, who cast themselves upon its Protection, animated by the glorious Promises which it exhibits.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Chap. vii. 2. **L**ET our Souls adore *the King of Righteousness, and the King of Peace*; submitting to him under the former Title, that we may experience the Peace which he gives, and which none can take away. Let us repose our Confidence in *the Son of GOD, who without Beginning of Days, or End of Life, abideth a Priest for ever; a Priest on a Throne, to confirm the Counsels of eternal Peace* transacted between the Father and himself: (Zach. vi. 13.) To him do *all the Prophets bear Witness, to him did all the Patriarchs* render humble Homage, and his Blessing was that which rendered *Abraham, the Father of the faithful, Blessed indeed.* He sprang from *the Tribe of Judah, and was the Shiloh* that was to come before it ceased to be a Tribe, according to the ancient Oracle of dying *Jacob.* (Gen. xlix. 10.) But the Honours of the *Priesthood* are now transferred to, and centered in him, *not according to the Law of a carnal Commandment, but the superior Power of an endless Life.* Let us rejoice that his Life is *endless*, and that by him *we* may likewise obtain to an endless Life, to an Immortality of Glory.  
 Ver. 3. Ver. 6. Ver. 14. Ver. 15, 16. Ver. 8. **T**he *Priests of the Old Testament, the Ministers of the New, as well as private Believers under both Dispensations, die*; but the eternally prevailing *Priesthood of Jesus* gives us Life in Death, and intitles us to the Hope of that glorious World, where he will put his own Likeness and Splendor upon us, and make us, in our inferior Degrees of *Dignity, immortal Kings and Priests to GOD, even the Father: To him be Glory for ever and ever. Amen.* (Rev. i. 6.)

*an endless Life, to intimate the powerful Influence which the Views of Immortality proposed by it, will have upon the Mind.* (Vol. iii. pag. 407.) I have therefore kept *that Thought a little in View, though I am far from imagining it to be the chief Design of the Expression.*

S E C T.

S E C T. IX.

*From what had been said above, the Apostle argues that the Aaronical Priesthood was not only excelled, but vindicated and consummated by that of Christ; and by Consequence, that the Obligation of the Law was dissolved. Heb. VII. 18, --- to the End.*

HEB. VII. 18.

FOR there is verily a annulling of the Commandment going before, for the Weakness and Unprofitableness thereof.

HEB. VII. 18.

I Have been discoursing largely on the Resemblance between Melchisedec and Christ; and I may fairly argue from hence, not only the superior Dignity and Excellence of Christ, but the Freedom of Jews as well as Christians, from the Obligations of the Ceremonial Law. Let me urge it therefore plainly, that there is an Abolition of the former Commandment in all its Extent of ritual Observances, because of its Weakness and Unprofitableness; for weak and unprofitable it appears to be, in Comparison of that everlasting Priesthood, which I have just now mentioned. *For the Law of Moses made nothing perfect (a), but left in its most essential Institutions, as we shall presently shew, the manifest Traces and Evidences of its own Imperfection; whereas full Provision for our Pardon and Sanctification must be ascribed to the Introduction of a better Hope, by a Dispensation of a far superior Nature, by which we now under the Gospel draw near to GOD, in chearful Dependence upon the efficacious Intercession* of

Sect. 9.  
Heb. VII. 18.

19. For the Law made nothing perfect, but the bringing in of a better Hope did; by the which we draw nigh unto God.

19

(a) *The Law made nothing perfect.*] Mr. Pierce includes these Words in a Parenthesis: As if the Apostle had said, "Since the Law made nothing perfect, it could not make the Priesthood so; it could not remove the Guilt of Sin, or give Strength to obey its Commands."

(b) *Ans.*

Sect. 9. of our ever-living and glorious High-priest :  
 Heb.VII.20. A High-priest evidently superior to any of  
 the Aaronical Line, on many other Accounts,  
 and we may add on this likewise, *inasmuch as*  
 [he was] not [constituted] without the Solemnity  
 of an Oath (b) on the Part of GOD ;  
 intended no Doubt, to shew the great Im-

21 portance of what he was to transact. *For*  
*they indeed are become Priests* by a general  
 Divine Ordination, *without* the Interposition  
 of an Oath at their Investiture ; *but he*, of  
 whom we have been speaking, was set apart  
 to his Office *with an Oath*, *by him who said*  
*unto him, The Lord hath sworn, and he will*  
*not repent, thou [art] a Priest for ever ac-*  
 22 *cording to the Order of Melchizedec.* Now  
 by so much Dignity, as such an Introduction  
 to his Office by the Oath of GOD adds to  
 him, does it appear, that *Jesus* our Lord is  
 preferable to Aaron and his Sons ; from  
 whence it is natural to infer, that he *is the*  
*Surety of a better Covenant (c)* ; or that  
 the Covenant, of which he is the great Gua-  
 rantee between GOD and Man, is more ex-  
 cellent than that, of which Aaron and his Sons  
 might be said to be Sureties in reference to  
 certain Acts, which they were to perform  
 on the Part of the People to GOD, and in  
 the Name of GOD to the People, with which  
 Promises of temporal Pardon and Blessings  
 are connected ; for to them alone did that  
 Covenant extend.

23 *And* again, I may farther observe, that  
*they were many Priests, because they were hin-*  
*dered by Death from continuing* in the perpet-

24 *ual Execution of their Office.* *But he,*  
*because*

20 And in as much as  
 not without an Oath he was  
 made Priest.

21 (For those Priests were  
 made without an Oath :  
 but this with an Oath, by  
 him that said unto him,  
 The Lord swears, and will  
 not repent, Thou art a Priest  
 for ever after the Order of  
 Melchizedec.)

22 By so much was Je-  
 sus made a Surety of a better  
 Testament.

23 And they truly were  
 many Priests, because they  
 were not suffered to conti-  
 nue by Reason of Death :

24 But this Man, because  
 he

(b) *An Oath.*] Which argues the Solemnity and Importance, and also the Immutability of the Action.

(c) *Better Covenant.*] So I render *δραβουν*, and as this is the most common Use of the Word, so here it best suits the Connection.

(d) *Higher*



he continueth ever, hath an unchangeable Priesthood.

*because he abideth for ever, and is risen to a Life of immortal Glory in the Heavens, where he shall reign as long as any can need the Benefit of his Ministrations, bath a Priesthood that never passeth over to another as his Successor.*

Sect. 9.

Heb. VII. 24.

25 Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost, that come unto GOD by him, seeing he ever liveth to make Intercession for them.

*From whence also it appears, that he is able to save to the uttermost, that is, always and compleatly to save, those who humbly approach to GOD by him, as their appointed High-priest, always living to intercede for them in every Circumstance of their respective Lives, through all successive Ages and Generations.*

26 For such an High-priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled; separate from Sinners, and made higher than the Heavens;

Let us pause therefore, and enjoy the Comfort of so glorious a Truth; for the more we reflect upon it, the more Consolation shall we derive from it. Exactly such an High-priest as this, indeed, suited us; his Character most perfectly corresponded to our Circumstances and Necessities, [who was] solemnly set apart to his Office by the highest Authority, and in the Execution of it, intirely holy, harmless in himself, unpolluted by others, separate from all defiling Society of Sinners, though mercifully conversant among them; and to compleat all, a Person of such Dignity of Nature, and so eminently dear to GOD, as to be made higher than the Heavens (d), and all their Inhabitants, far more superior to the noblest of them, than Aaron himself to the meanest Levite who ministred in the Tabernacle.

27 Who needeth not daily, as those High-priests, to offer up Sacrifice first for his own Sins, and then for the

Glorious High-priest indeed! who had not daily Necessity, as those High priests appointed by Moses, first to present Sacrifices for his own Sins, and then for those of the People: Of the former of these he never had

(d) Higher than the Heavens.] Mr. Blackwall (Sacred Classics, Vol. i. pag. 241, 242.) takes notice of this Expression, as very sublime, superior to Homer's Description of Jupiter upon Mount Ida; and perhaps taken from Psal. cxiii. 4, 6.

(e) Beyond

Se<sup>c</sup>t. 9. had any Need, nor could there be any Room  
 Heb. VII. 27. *for it; and this last he did once for all, in offering himself* as a spotless and acceptable  
 28 Sacrifice to GOD. *For the Law, as is well known, constitutes Men High-priests, who have Infirmities of their own, which need Expiation; but the Word of the Oath, which [reaches] beyond the Law (e), and of which I have so largely been speaking, [constitutes] to that Office the only begotten Son of GOD, who is consecrated for ever to the Execution of it, and is the great Substance of what they were only dim and imperfect Shadows.*

the Peoples: for this he did once when he offered up himself.

28 For the Law maketh Men High-priests which have Infirmity; but the Word of the Oath which was since the Law, maketh the Son, who is consecrated for evermore.

### I M P R O V E M E N T.

Chap. vii. 19. **L**ET the Introduction of this better Hope which we receive by *Jesus Christ*, and which bringeth the greatest Perfection of Happiness to those that embrace it, fill our Hearts with Thankfulness to GOD, and with a solicitous Zeal to secure an Interest in it. Let us draw near to GOD under its supporting Influence, and be quickened thereby to purify ourselves from all Pollutions of the Flesh and Spirit, and to perfect Holiness in the Fear of GOD; in firm  
 Ver. 20, 21. Dependence upon that great High-priest, whom he hath constituted with the Solemnity of an Oath, as the great Surety and Guarantee of the better Covenant.

Ver. 22. GOD helps the Frailty of our Nature, by transmitting his Promises to us through the Hands of his Son, and by giving us such a Proof of his gracious Regards, as his Incarnation and Sufferings afford: In which it is certain, that GOD hath already done, what is far more astonishing than any Thing which he hath promised farther to do. And *Jesus* takes his Covenant People under his Care, and graciously engages to watch over them for their Good, and to communicate to them all such Assistances of his Grace, as may be sufficient to induce them to answer their Part of the Engagement.

Ver. 24. He is possessed of an *unchangeable Priesthood*: Let us daily look to him, as knowing, that in Consequence of the *Intercession*, which  
 he

(e) Beyond the Law.] Our Translators render μετὰ τὸν νόμον, since the Law. But μετὰ often signifies beyond. Compare Chap. ix. 3 and many other Places.

*he ever lives to make, he is ever able compleatly to save all that come unto GOD by him.* Let us every Day, and every Hour, have Recourse to him as the *Mediator* of our Approaches to GOD. And let us make the Thoughts of him familiar to our Minds, the Thought of his *Sanctity*, his *Dignity*, and his *Love*: Confiding in that *Sacrifice*, he hath *once for all* offered for his *People*, being above all *Need of sacrificing for himself*. To conclude, while we hear and strengthen our Hearts with such Contemplations as these, let us always consider the Obligation which the Character of our *High-priest* and our Saviour lays upon us to be ourselves *holy, harmless, and undefiled*, and to maintain a *Separation from Sinners*, so far as the Duties of Life, in the present Circumstances of the World, may admit.

Sect. 9.  
Ver. 25.

Ver. 27.

S E C T. X.

*The Apostle briefly recapitulates what he had before demonstrated of the superior Dignity of Christ as the High-priest of Christians, and farther illustrates the distinguished Excellence of that New Covenant, which was foretold by Jeremiah as established in him, and plainly enriched with much better Promises than the Old.* Heb. VIII. 1, to the End.

HEBREWS VIII. 1.

**N**OW of the Things which we have spoken, *this is the Sum*: We have such an High-priest, who is set on the Right Hand of the Throne of the Majesty in the Heavens;

HEBREWS VIII. 1.

**N**OW the chief Article of the Things which *have been spoken*, in the preceding Parts of this Discourse, [*is this*]; that we *have such a great and illustrious High-priest* as hath been described, made after the Order of Melchisedec, and by the Oath of GOD himself invested with immortal Honours; *who* having on Earth performed all that was necessary, by Way of Preparation, *hath now sat down at the Right Hand of the majestick Throne in the Heavens*, (compare Chap. i. 3. Note (b) ) exalted by the Divine Authority to rule over all Things, for the Glory

Sect. 10.  
Heb. VIII. 1.

Sect. 10. Glory of God, and the Good of his People.

And we are ever to regard him under his  
 Heb. VIII. 2. Priestly, as well as his Royal Character, as  
*a Minister of holy Things, and of the true  
 Tabernacle which not Man, but the Lord  
 himself, hath pitched*; a Sanctuary infinitely  
 superior to any which human Hands could  
 be concerned in rearing, and proportionable  
 to the boundless Wisdom, Power and Mag-  
 nificence of God.

3 For every High-priest, who ministers there,  
*is constituted to offer Gifts and Sacrifices*;  
 therefore [it was] necessary that this Man also,  
 even the glorious Person of whom I speak,

4 *should have something to present.* But we  
 may observe by the Way, that if he were  
 always to continue on Earth, he could not,  
 in any Consistence with the Jewish Institu-  
 tions, have been a Priest (a), to offi-  
 ciate at the Temple of God in Jerusalem;  
 as there are already a certain Order of Priests  
 there, who offer the Gifts of the People ac-  
 cording to the Law, and it is expressly settled,  
 that none of any other Family should have  
 Access to these Services; nor would it have  
 been agreeable to the divine Schemes, that  
 Jesus should, by extraordinary Dispensation,  
 have interfered with their peculiar Func-  
 tions.

5 These he left intirely to those  
 Priests, who perform divine Service to an Oe-  
 conomy, which contains only the Example  
 and Shadow of celestial Things (b): as Moses  
 was

2 A Minister of the San-  
 ctuary, and of the true Ta-  
 bernacle, which the Lord  
 pitched, and not Man.

3 For every High-priest  
 is ordained to offer Gifts  
 and Sacrifices: wherefore it  
 is of Necessity that this Man  
 have somewhat also to offer.

4 For if he were on Earth,  
 he should not be a Priest,  
 seeing that there are Priests  
 that offer Gifts according  
 to the Law:

5 Who serve unto the  
 Example and Shadow of  
 heavenly Things, as Moses  
 was

(a) *He could not have been a Priest.*] From hence hath the great Argument been  
 taken against Christ's performing any Sacerdotal Acts upon Earth: and consequently,  
 against the Reasonableness of considering his Death as a Sacrifice, though the Scrip-  
 ture expressly declares it was so. But it is evident the Sense of the Words given in  
 the Paraphrase, which undermines all such Arguments, can alone be maintained as  
 the true one; since it is plain, that under the Jewish Oeconomy, though none but a  
 Priest ever ministred as such in the Tabernacle; yet Sacrifices were offered by special  
 divine Appointment by some, (as by Prophets &c.) who were not of that Order; and  
 being so offered, were accordingly accepted.

(b) *The Example &c. υποδειγμα των πνευματων.*] Dr. Sykes would explain it, the Co-  
 p<sup>y</sup>

was admonished of GOD when he was about to make the Tabernacle. For see (saith he) that thou make all Things according to the Pattern shewed to thee in the Mount.

was charged by the Oracle, when he was about Sect. 10. to finish the Tabernacle: For see, saith he, [that] thou make all Things according to the Heb. VIII. 5. Model shewn thee upon the Mountain; lest an Error, which may seem to thee small, should be more material than thou art aware. (Exod. xxv. 40.) Now this Exactness was required in special Regard to the typical Representations couched under these Ordinances, the Particulars of which Moses himself did not perfectly understand.

6 But now hath he obtained a more excellent Ministry, by how much also he is the Mediator of a better Covenant, which was established upon better Promises.

But He, that is, 6 Christ, hath now much nobler Services allotted to him in that heavenly Sanctuary, inasmuch as he is the Mediator even of a better Covenant, than that in which the Jewish High-priest mediated; which was established upon better Promises, than those of the Mosaick Law: For they only referred to the Blessings of a temporal Canaan, to be enjoyed by the People, while they continued obedient to its Precepts, which placed them under such a special Providence, as the Nature of that Dispensation absolutely required, and made them a Spectacle to the whole World.

7 For if that first Covenant had been faultless, then should no Place have been sought for the second.

This superior Excellence of that Economy which our Lord introduces, might 7 indeed have been concluded from its being exhibited after the Mosaick: For, as we know GOD never alters but for the better, if that first [Covenant] had been esteemed so faultless, as to have no remaining Deficiency, there would have been no Place sought for a second; yet we in Fact see this Inti-

8 For finding Fault with them,

mation of an Exception taken to it: For 8 finding

py of what Moses saw in the Mount: As if he had said, the former was but a Copy of the latter, and no more to be compared with it than the Shadow to the Substance. See Sykes on Christianity, pag. 184. Pierce in loc. I rather take it in the Sense generally given, for the Adumbration or Sketch of heavenly Blessings. Dr. Barrow, (Vol. ii. pag. 205.) renders it by a very expressive Word, the Subindication.

Sect. 10. *finding Fault with them (c)*, that is, with the Jews, to whom he was addressing, *he saith* by the Prophet Jeremiah, in that celebrated Text which undoubtedly refers to the Gospel Dispensation, (Jer. xxxi. 31.) *Behold, the Days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new Covenant with the House of Israel, and with the House of Judah.*

them, he saith, Behold, the Days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new Covenant with the House of Israel, and with the House of Judah :

- 9 And he expressly mentions the superior Excellence of the Covenant there referred to, when compared with that which was transacted on Mount Sinai. For he adds there, the Transaction shall *not be according to the Covenant which I made with their Fathers, in the Day when I took them by the Hand to lead them out of the Land of Egypt*; (as you well know it was while the great Work of conducting them to Canaan was yet imperfect, that the Law of Moses was given;) *because they continued not in my Covenant, and I disregarded them (d), saith the Lord.*
- 10 *For this [is] the Covenant that I will make with the House of Israel after those Days; that is, in the Times of the Messiah, saith the*

9 Not according to the Covenant that I made with their Fathers, in the Day when I took them by the Hand to lead them out of the Land of Egypt; because they continued not in my Covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

10 For this is the Covenant that I will make with the House of Israel after those Days, saith the Lord; I will

(c) *Finding Fault with them.*] This is translated by Grotius and others, *finding Fault, he saith to them*, and understood of *finding Fault with the former Covenant*. But that Covenant was certainly wise, and good, and adapted to the Purpose for which it was designed and appointed. It seems therefore much more proper to understand it, *finding Fault with the Jews*, (as GOD evidently does in the Words preceding those here quoted, Jer. xxxi. 29, 30.) for using the Proverb against which he expresses so much Displeasure in Ezek. xviii. 2. And in the Words themselves he also finds Fault with them for *breaking this Covenant*, though he had with so much tender Care brought them out of the Land of Egypt. Raphelius in loc. translates the Words under Consideration, (μεμφομενος γαρ αυτοις λεγει,) *finding Fault with them he saith*; agreeably to our common Translation; and justifies this Version by the Authority of Chrysostom, a Greek Father, and by two Passages from Herodotus, where μεμφομενος is used with a Dative Case after it.

(d) *I disregarded them.*] The Quotation here is according to the *Seventy*; and by no Means agreeable to the *Hebrew*, which reads it as we do, *though I was a Husband to them, saith the Lord*. Mr. Pierce thinks the *Seventy Interpreters* in their Copy, either read געלת' or בהלת', instead of בעלת', in either of which there is only the Variation of a single Letter, and this will justify the Translation here given. Dr. Pocock maintains that the Word is capable of such a Translation, as it now stands in the *Original*. So that they seem to agree, that our *English Version* of the *Text* in Question should be altered.

(e) *For*

I will put my Laws into their Mind, and write them in their Hearts: and I will be to them a GOD, and they shall be to me a People.

*the Lord; I will give my Laws to their Soul, Sect. 10. and I will inscribe them upon their Hearts,* Heb. VIII. 10. in more lasting Characters than those in which I wrote the Commandments on the Tables of Stone; and I will be unto them for a GOD, and they shall be to me for a People: I will answer all the Import of that high Relation to them, and they shall persist in their Obedience to me. *And they* II:

11 And they shall not teach every Man his Neighbour, and every Man his Brother, saying, Know the Lord: For all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

*shall no more have need to teach every Man his Neighbour, and every Man his Brother, saying, Know the Lord; for they shall all know me, from the least of them, even to the greatest of them.* They shall have a much more certain and effectual Teaching, than they can derive one from another. *For* 12:

12 For I will be merciful to their Unrighteousness, and their Sins and their Iniquities will I remember no more.

*I will be merciful to their unrighteous Deeds (e),* various and aggravated as they are; *and their Sins and their Iniquities,* of what Kind soever, *I will remember no more,* so as to bring them into Judgment; but will pardon the most heinous Offences, which were incapable of Expiation under the former Covenant.

13 In that he saith, A new Covenant, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old, is ready to vanish away.

Now I would observe in the Close of this Argument, that *when he saith, a New [Covenant] shall be made, he hath in Effect made the first Old,* he hath, as it were, spoken of it as antiquated: *Now that which is antiquated, and fallen into old Age,* cannot be expected to live long. And so in like Manner [*is*] that old Covenant of Moses just ready to disappear. Divine Providence will put such a Period to it ere long, as shall be remarkable in the Eyes of the whole World; so that the grand Apparatus which:

(e) For I will be merciful.] Some would render, *οτι, and thereupon,* that is, upon their being thus taught by me; or *so that,* which Signification it is certain, that *οτι,* sometimes hath; but here it may signify, that because GOD had purposed to extend his pardoning Mercy to to them, he thus taught them by his Spirit; and therefore I have rendered it *For.*

Se<sup>c</sup>t. 10. which now preserves its visible Form and  
 ~~~~~ Lustre, shall be known no more.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

- Ver. 6. **A**DORED be that Grace, which hath constituted and revealed this *everlasting Covenant, well ordered in all Things and sure; established on such Promises, as are, of all that can be conceived, most valuable to sinful Creatures; and especially on that, without which no other Declaration could impart any Comfort to such,*
- Ver. 12. *I will be merciful to their Unrighteousnesses, and their Sins and their Iniquities I will remember no more.* With this is connected that other Promise, so comprehensive of every Thing that is truly valuable,
- Ver. 10. *I will be a GOD unto them, and they shall be unto me a People. Happy indeed the People that are in such a Case; yea, happy the People whose GOD is the Lord, who are taught by him to know him under that Character, taught by that Energy of his Spirit, which gives his Law to their Mind, and inscribes it on their Heart.* There may we ever retain it engraven in living and durable Characters, as a Law of Love, which may make Obedience to every Precept easy.
- Ver. 1. In this Connection let us look with Pleasure to that *High-priest, who is sat down on the Throne of the Majesty in the Heavens,* and presides over all for the Good of his People, that *Minister of the true Tabernacle which the Lord, not Man, hath pitched;* ever maintaining an humble Dependence on the *Sacrifice* he hath offered: A Sacrifice better than any of the *Aaronical Priests* could present, in Proportion to the Degree in which the *Covenant,* of which He is the *Mediator,* is nobler than theirs. The *first Covenant,* wisely allayed with such a Mixture of Imperfection, as was suitable to its being introductory to the *second,* is now *vani<sup>s</sup>hed,* to make Way for this second and better Dispensation: To this let us therefore adhere, and so doing cheerfully expect all the invaluable Blessings it imparts.
- Ver. 13.

S E C T.



S E C T. XI.

The Apostle illustrates the Doctrine of the Priesthood and Intercession of CHRIST, by comparing it to what the Jewish High-priest did on the great Day of Atonement. Heb. IX. 1, — 14.

HEBREWS IX. 1.

THEN verily the first covenant had also Ordinances of divine Service, and a worldly sanctuary.

HEBREWS IX. 1.

HOW reasonable it is to expect, that the former Covenant of which I have been speaking, should give Way to another and a nobler, you may easily apprehend from surveying it, and considering in Comparison with it, the great Things which the Gospel teaches us concerning Christ, and to which I would now call your Contemplations. *The first Tabernacle (a)*, you will therefore recollect, had certain ceremonial Ordinances of divine Service, and a worldly Sanctuary: A Sanctuary made of such Materials, as this Earth of ours could furnish out, and the Centre of a Ritual, which contained many Institutions comparatively low and carnal. *For the first Part of the Tabernacle was prepared of Boards and Curtains, Pillars and Coverings, which constituted a little Apartment as a Kind of Antichamber to the Oracle; in which*

Sect. 11.  
Heb. IX. 1.

2 For there was a Tabernacle made, the first wherein

(a) *The first Tabernacle.*] Mr. Pierce thinks this is to be considered as connected with Chap. viii. 6. and that all which intervenes is a Digression, though a very pertinent and useful one, relating to the Meliority of the Covenant established under that better Priest. But I can see no Necessity for this, since it may well be connected with the Words immediately preceding: As if he had said, and because that Covenant was intended but for a little while, therefore there was a great deal of external Ceremony in it, fit for the puerile Disposition of the Persons to whom it was given. Our Translators strangely supply the Word Covenant instead of Tabernacle, whereas most Copies read σκηνη, Tabernacle, and that undoubtedly suits the Connection best. — The Word we render Ordinances is δικαιωματα, Justifications, or Ways of becoming righteous.

(b) The

Sect. 11. *which* there [was] the Candlestick of pure Gold with its seven Lamps, and the Table of Shew-bread as it was called, and the setting on the twelve Loaves upon it, which were always to stand before the Lord; and this Apartment is called the Holy Place, in which also the golden Altar of Incense stood. And beyond the second Vail was that Apartment of the Tabernacle, which was called the Holy of Holies, or the most holy of all, where God was pleased to keep his special Residence, and which was as his Presence Chamber; Having the golden Censer (b), in which the High-priest used to burn Incense on the great Day of Atonement, and the Ark of the Covenant so covered over on every Side with Gold, that it appeared as if it had been one Mass of that precious Metal: In which Apartment, in or very near the Ark (c), [was] the golden Pot, containing the Manna that remained incorruptible through so many Ages, and the Rod of Aaron that blossomed, and the two Tables of the Covenant on which the ten Commandments were inscribed by the Finger of God. And over it were the Cherubs of Glory (d), shadowing with their Wings that golden Cover of the Ark, which was called the Mercy Seat, or Propitiatory, as to it Propitiations were referred, and where God was pleased to appear in a visible Symbol of his propitious and gracious Presence.

wherein was the Candlestick, and the Table, and the Shew-bread; which is called the Sanctuary.

3 And after the second Vail, the Tabernacle which is called the holiest of all:

4 Which had the golden Censer, and the Ark of the Covenant overlaid round about with Gold, wherein was the golden Pot that had Manna and Aaron's Rod that budded, and the Tables of the Covenant;

5 And over it the Cherubs of Glory shadowing the Mercy-seat: of which we

(b) *The golden Censer.*] It hath been queried, why the golden Altar was not mentioned; and some are of Opinion that it may be comprehended in the Word *Σουμιάριον*, which we render Censer.

(c) *In which: εν η.*] I say, in or near which, as many good Commentators think the Words *εν η* may be taken in that Latitude, to reconcile it with 1 Kings viii. 9. where it is said, that there was nothing in the Ark save the two Tables of Stone. Or perhaps *εν η*, in which, may refer to *σκηνη*, the Tabernacle, rather than to *κιβωτος*, the Ark, as probably Aaron's Rod, which is here said to be in the same Place, could not lie in the Ark.

(d) *Cherubs of Glory.*] That is, the Cherubs that waited upon the Shechinah, or sensible Glory of the Deity.

(e) Refer-

we cannot now speak particularly.

6 Now when these Things were thus ordained, the Priests went always into the first Tabernacle, accomplishing the Service of God.

7 But into the second went the High-priest alone once every Year not without Blood, which he offered for himself, and for the Errors of the People.

8 The Holy Ghost this signifying, that the Way into the holiest of all was not yet made manifest, while as the first Tabernacle was yet standing.

9 Which was a Figure for the Time then present, in

Presence. These were all important Things in the Mosaick Tabernacle, *concerning which there is not now [Room] to speak particularly.* And these Things being thus prepared and adjusted, both in the holy and most holy Place, the ordinary Priests went continually into the first Apartment of the Tabernacle, performing [their] daily Services, by trimming the Lamps, and burning Incense upon the holy Altar, changing the Loaves on the sacred Table every Sabbath, and sprinkling the Blood of the Victims before the Vail. But into the second Apartment only the High-priest [went] once a Year, and that not without the Blood of the Sin-offering, which he offered first for himself, and then [for] the Sins of Ignorance committed by the People, to which Sort of Offences alone, and not to those presumptuously committed, the Efficacy of the Atonements extended.

Such was the Ritual of Moses; the holy Spirit, by whom it was prescribed, signifying, by this Difficulty of Entrance, and the Necessity of the Incense Cloud, and the atoning Blood, that the Way into the holiest Place, that is, into God's immediate Presence, was not yet made manifest, while the first Tabernacle had its Continuance, and retained its Station and Use, or in other Words, while the Jewish Oeconomy lasted; Which far from being the grand and ultimate Scheme, [is] only a Kind of allegorical Figure and Parable, referring to the glorious Displays of the present Time (e): in which

(e) Referring to the present Time.] We render it, for the Time then present. But the Words, εις τον καιρον του ενεσκησια, may certainly bear the Rendering which I have given them; and I would understand it not merely as if he had said, that this Similitude of Comparison may be properly used in this present Time, as to the Temple at Jerusalem, which has its Holy of Holies, as the Mosaick Tabernacle had; but that the Constitution before described, was a figurative Representation of the Christian Dispensation, which at the Time when the Apostle wrote, was displayed in all its Glory.

Sect. 11. *which* nevertheless, there is hitherto a Continuance of the Temple Service; so that  
 Heb. IX. 9. *Gifts and Sacrifices are still offered, which yet in the Nature of Things, are not able to make the Person who performs the Service, perfect with Respect to the Conscience; as they refer not to the real Expiation of Guilt, but only to averting some temporal Evils (f), which the Law denounced on Transgressors.*

10 For this the Mosaick Dispensation was insufficient, which in the Peculiarities of it related, not to the Views of another Life, nor the sublimest Means of preparing the Soul for it; [*but consisted*] only (g) in the Distinction between different Kind of *Meats*, clean or unclean; and *Drinks*, some of which were allowed, and others denied to Priests in some Circumstances, and to Nazarites in others; and indifferent Baptisms, or *Washings* either of the whole Body, or a Part of it in Water, as different Occasions demanded; and in a Variety of other *Ordinances* relating to the Purification of the *Flesh*, which were to continue in Force only till the Time of Reformation, when Things should be put into a better Situation by the Appearance of the Messiah himself in his

11 Church. But Christ having now appeared,

in which were offered both Gifts and Sacrifices, that could not make him that did the Service perfect, as pertaining to the Conscience,

10 Which stood only in Meats, and Drinks, and divers Washings, and carnal Ordinances imposed on them until the Time of Reformation.

11 But Christ being come an

(f) Averting some temporal Evils.] This in a few Words expresses what I take to be of the greatest Importance for understanding the *Mosaick Sacrifices*; which is, that they were never intended to *expiate* Offences to such a Degree, as to deliver the Sinner from the final Judgment of GOD in another World; but merely to make his Peace with the Government under which he then was, and to furnish him with a Pardon, pleadable against any Prosecution, which might be commenced against him in their Courts of Justice, or any Exclusion from the Privilege of drawing near to GOD, as one externally at Peace with him, in the Solemnities of his Temple Worship. And I must desire the Reader to examine, and digest this Explication, that I may not be under the Necessity of repeating it for the Illustration of what is to follow.

(g) [*Consisted*] only.] The Construction of the Greek is perplexed: I have given the Version that seemed to me most natural; but Mr. Pierce would connect the two Verses thus, *He who worshipped—with Meats and Drinks*; and reads *δικαιομασια* instead of *δικαιομασι*, in Conformity with the *Alexandrian* and other *Manuscripts*; supplying *ανω νω*: which were corporeal Ordinances, imposed till the Time of Reformation, that is, the Appearance of the Messiah.

(b) Entered

an High-priest of good Things to come, by a greater and more perfect Tabernacle, not made with Hands, that is to say, not of this Building;

12 Neither by the Blood of Goats and Calves, but by his own Blood he entered in once into the holy Place, having obtained eternal Redemption for us.

13 For if the Blood of Bulls, and Goats, and the Ashes of an Heifer sprinkling the Unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the Flesh:

ed, and being become an High-priest of those Sect. II. good Things which were then future, and which the Church through preceding Ages Heb. IX. II. expected as to come, the Obligation of these Things would of course soon be superseded. Accordingly he performed his Ministry in a greater and more perfect Tabernacle above, not made with human Hands, that is, not making any Part of this lower Creation. Neither doth he expiate the Guilt of his People by presenting before GOD the Blood of Goats, and of Calves, and of young Bulls, which were the noblest Sacrifices the High-priest presented in the Day of Atonement; but it is by the Efficacy of his own Blood, which he continually pleads before the Father, that he hath entered once for all into the holy Place above (b), having obtained [for us] by his perfect Sacrifice, that eternal Redemption and Salvation, of which all the Remissions and all the Benefits procured by the Ministration of the Aaronical Priesthood, were but very imperfect Figures.

And certainly a little Reflection may convince us of this; for if the Blood of Bulls and of Goats, of which I have just been speaking, when presented to GOD with the appointed Circumstances on the Day of general Expiation; and in Cases of personal Pollution, the Ashes of the red Heifer, burnt with Hyssop, Scarlet Wool, and other Ingredients, being mingled with Water, and sprinkled on the Persons who were ceremonially unclean, sanctifieth to the cleansing of the Flesh, and hath so much Efficacy in Consequence of the divine Institution, as to reconcile

(b) Entered once.] Hence Bishop Pearson infers, that Christ ascended only once for all into Heaven, and not again and again, as the Socinians pretended. Pearson on the Creed, pag. 109.

Sect. 11. concile GOD to the whole Jewish People in the former Instance, and in the other, to introduce Persons to the Liberty of approaching him in his Sanctuary, which would otherwise have been denied them;

14 How much more efficacious shall the Blood of Christ (i) be, even of that divine Saviour, who by the Aids of the eternal Spirit (k), supporting the Infirmities of his human Nature, and animating him to the Exercise of all those Virtues and Graces which shed such a Lustre around all the Infamy of his Cross, offered himself, as a most spotless and acceptable Sacrifice to God? How much more, I say, shall that Blood of his avail to cleanse your Conscience from the Pollutions ye have contracted by your dead unprofitable and sinful Works; that ye may freely approach, and serve the living GOD with Acceptance? How surely shall it appease that Consciousness of Guilt, which might otherwise be so painful to us, and introduce us to present our Homage in the Divine Presence, with the Hope of the most favourable Regard?

14 How much more shall the Blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without Spot to GOD, purge your Conscience from dead Works to serve the living GOD?

(i) *How much more shall the Blood of Christ.*] The Argument in these Words seems to consist in this: It was merely by an arbitrary Appointment, that Blood and Ashes, which in themselves are rather defiling, should be the Methods of Purification; but a Death, like that of our blessed Lord has in itself a proper and mighty Energy to promote the Purification of the Soul.

(k) *Eternal Spirit.*] Many have understood this of the Deity in general, or the divine Nature of Christ. But since the Words may in a very good and consistent Sense be referred to the Spirit, I could not acquiesce in any other Interpretation. Bishop Fell considers them in the same Light, and pertinently mentions Christ's being conceived, proclaimed, anointed for working Miracles, and at last voluntarily laying down, and taking up, his Life by this Spirit. And I have the Pleasure to find Dr. Owen, (on the Spirit, pag. 143. See also his Exposition on the Place.) expressing himself to the same Purpose; mentioning also, agreeable to the Paraphrase, that by this Spirit Christ was strengthened in the Exercise of that admirable Faith, Submission, Charity and Zeal, which he shewed in his dying Moments. — But when this Spirit is called eternal, I can never think with Dr. Patrick, (on Numb. xix. 4.) that it refers to the durable Nature of the Ashes used for Purification under the Law; nor with Mr. Hallet, (Notes and Discourses, Vol. 1. pag. 36.) that it is opposed to the Spirit of Brutes, or relates to the eternal Redemption purchased by Christ. It seems a plain Testimony to the Eternity, and consequently the Deity of the holy Spirit.

IMPROVE-

I M P R O V E M E N T.

THE whole Progress of the *Apostle's* Argument will lead us to reflect on the Reason we have for Thankfulness, whose Eyes are directed, not to an *Earthly Sanctuary* and its Furniture, splendid indeed, yet comparatively dark, mutable, and perishing; but to the *holiest of all*, the Way to which is now clearly manifested. What Matter of solid and everlasting Joy, that whereas those *Gifts and Sacrifices* were *incapable of making those perfect*, who presented them or attended upon them, and the *Ordinances* of that *Sanctuary* consisted only in *Meats and Drinks and corporeal Purifications and Ceremonies*; we by Faith behold an *High-priest* of a better and more *perfect Tabernacle*, an *High-priest* who hath wrought out *eternal Redemption*, and *entered once for all* into *Heaven* for us! *Eternal Redemption!* who hath duly considered its glorious Import? To him, and only to him, who hath attentively considered it is the Name of the *Redeemer* sufficiently dear. But oh, what short of the Possession of it, can teach us its true Value! What, but to view that *Temple of God* above, where through his Intercession we hope to be made *Pillars*, and from thence, to look down upon that Abyss of Misery and Destruction, from which nothing but his *Blood* was sufficient to ransom us!

Sect. 11.

Ver. 1, 2.

Ver. 9.

Ver. 10.

Ver. 11.

Ver. 12.

Let that Blood, which is our Redemption, be our *Confidence*. We know there was no real Efficacy in that of *Bulls*, or of *Goats*, or in the *Asbes of an Heifer sprinkling the unclean*. All that these Things could do was to purify *the Flesh*, and to restore Men to an external Communion with God in the *Jewish Sanctuary*. But the *Blood of Christ* can *purify the Conscience*, and restore its Peace when troubled, when tortured with a Sense of Guilt, contracted by *dead Works*, which render us unfit for, and incapable of divine Converse. To that Blood therefore let us look: Let the Death of *Christ* be remembered, as the great *spotless Sacrifice* by which we *draw nigh unto God*; and let those Virtues and Graces which were displayed in it, under the Influences of that *eternal Spirit*, which was *given unto him without Measure*, concur with that Benevolence which subjected him to it for our Sakes, to recommend him to our humblest Veneration and our warmest Affection.

Ver. 13.

Ver. 14.

To conclude, since it is so expressly said, that *the Holy Ghost signified* in some Degree the great and important *Doctrines of the Gospel* by the Constitution of the *Jewish Ritual*; let us think of that Ritual,

Ver. 8.

SeCT. II. Ritual, whatever Obscurity may attend it in Part, with a becoming Esteem; and peruse it with a View to that great *Antitype*, who is in every Sense *the End of the Law for Righteousness*, to every one who believeth; to him, who by fulfilling it hath given it a Glory, much brighter than that which was reflected upon it from the Face of *Moses*, or the most splendid Magnificence of *Solomon's Temple*.

## S E C T. XII.

*The Apostle discourses, by Way of Digression, on the Necessity of shedding Christ's Blood, and the Sufficiency of the Atonement made by it. Heb. IX. 15, to the End.*

## HEBREWS IX. 15.

SeCT. 12.  
Heb. IX. 15.

I Have just mentioned the Offering, which Christ made of himself to GOD by the eternal Spirit; and it is a Subject so delightful and so important, that I must dilate upon it a little more largely. Attend to it therefore, that *he is in this Respect*, and for this Purpose, *the Mediator of a new and better Covenant (a)*, far preferable to that of *Moses*; *that Death being undergone, for the Redemption and Expiation of Transgressions against the former Covenant*, and which could not be removed by it, *they who are called to the Engagements and Benefits of this, might receive the Promise of an eternal Inheritance*, to which that of *Sinai* had no im-

## HEBREWS IX. 15.

AND for this Cause he is the Mediator of the New Testament, that by Means of Death, for the Redemption of the Transgressions *that were* under the first Testament, they which are called might receive the Promise of eternal Inheritance.

(a) *Mediator of a new Covenant.*] This is the only Place in the *New Testament*, where *διασώζων* can be supposed to signify a *Testament*, or *Will*, rather than a *Covenant*. But the *Mediator of a Testament* is a very improper Expression; and one cannot suppose the *Apostle* would play on the Ambiguity of the Word; I therefore think with *Mr. Pierce*, that it is better here to retain the usual Translation of it. — *Redemption* in the next Clause plainly signifies *purchasing* the Pardon.

(b) Imme-



immediate Reference (b); its Promises only Sect. 12. relating to an Inheritance in Canaan, and to those temporal Enjoyments, which were there conferred upon those, who were obedient to the Divine Law: I say, it is in

16 For where a Testament is, there must also of Necessity be the Death of the Testator.

Consequence of his undergoing Death, that he effectually secures these Blessings to us by his Covenant; for where a Covenant [is], answerable to that which typified this of what I now speak, it necessarily imports the Death of that by which the Covenant is confirmed (c): For you know that sacrificial

17 For a Testament is of Force after Men are dead: Otherwise it is of no Strength at all, whilst the Testator liveth.

Rites have ever attended the most celebrated Covenants, which GOD hath made with Men; so that, I may say, a Covenant [is] confirmed over the Dead, so that it does not avail, nor has any Force at all while that by which it is confirmed, liveth. From whence,

18 Whereupon, neither the first Testament was dedicated without Blood.

and on which Principle, we may observe, neither was the first [Covenant], of which we have been speaking, I mean that of Moses, originally transacted without the Blood of an appointed Sacrifice. For

19 For when Moses had spoken every Precept to all the People according to the Law,

when every Command was spoken and delivered according to the Law, by Moses, to all the People, it is expressly said, that taking the

(b) Immediate Reference.] For the Proof of this I must refer my Readers to what my learned Friend Dr. Warburton has written, I think, irrefragably on this Subject, in his elaborate and ingenious Volumes on the Divine Legation of Moses.

(c) By which the Covenant is confirmed.] Mr. Pierce would render it, of that Sacrifice which is appointed by GOD to pacify; and he brings a remarkable Instance from Appian, where *διαδεμνος* signifies Pacifier. He saith the Scope of the Writer requires that it should be so translated here; and accordingly in the next Verse he renders it, The Pacifier can do nothing, as long as he liveth. But I think if *διαδεμνος* be rendered, that by which it is confirmed, the Argument will be clearer. Yet I confess considerable Difficulties attend both these Interpretations; though the Connection with what follows appears easier upon that which I have given. The Reader will do well, if he consult Dr. Whitby upon this Passage, who assigns and vindicates an Interpretation much the same with that which is proposed in this Version and Paraphrase. — The Phrase *αναφαν οπεδαι*, which I have rendered, necessarily imports, is very strong; the Death must be produced, it must not only be effected, but also made apparent. *Elfner* hath shewn, (*Observ. Vol. ii. pag. 361.*) that the Word *οπεδαι* is used in a forensic Sense, for what is produced, and proved, or made apparent in a Court of Judicature.

(d) Scar-

SeCt. 12. *the Blood of Calves and Goats mingled with Water, and dipping into it a Piece of Scarlet Wool, and a Bunch of Hyssop (d), he sprinkled the Book itself, which contained the Covenant, and all the People, who were*  
 Heb. IX. 19. *to enter into it; Saying at the same Time, This [is] the Blood of the Covenant, which GOD hath commanded with Respect to you, appointing you to declare your Consent to the Terms of it, as you desire divine*  
 20 *Favour and Acceptance. And the Tabernacle, and all the Vessels of divine Service with which it was furnished, he also sprinkled with the same Blood of the Sacrifices.*  
 21 *And indeed almost all Things were under the Law purified by Blood in their first Consecration; and it was by Blood that they were cleansed from Pollution, whether general or special. And if any Transgression had been committed through Ignorance or Surprise, yet so solicitous was the blessed GOD to maintain the Honour of his Law, and the Decorum of his Administration, that in Case of such Offences, without shedding of Blood, where an Animal Sacrifice could be procured, there was no Forgiveness of Sin (e).*

Law, he took the Blood of Calves and of Goats, with Water, and Scarlet Wool, and Hyssop, and sprinkled both the Book and all the People,

20 Saying, This is the Blood of the Testament which GOD hath enjoined unto you.

21 Moreover, he sprinkled likewise with Blood both the Tabernacle, and all the Vessels of the Ministry.

22 And almost all Things are by the Law purged with Blood; and without shedding of Blood there is no Remission.

[It

(d) *Scarlet Wool, and Hyssop.*] It is certain that *Moses*, in his Account of this Transaction, (*Lev. xvi.*) does not mention all these Circumstances. Probably *St. Paul* received them from Tradition. Ceremonies of a similar Kind are prescribed, *Lev. xiv. 4,—6. 49,—52.* as in *cleansing the Leper*. And it is highly probable, that the sprinkling the *Blood* of the *Sin-offering* might be done in this Method. The Blood was mixed with Water, to preserve it from coagulating; and perhaps to this the Mixture of *Sacramental Wine* with Water, which pretty soon prevailed in the *primitive Church*, might have some intended Reference. It is the Opinion of *Dr. Owen*, that the Ceremony here referred to; was constantly performed on the *Day of Atonement*. But it is certain it is not expressly prescribed in the Account given us of the *Ritual* of that Day.

(e) *No Forgiveness.*] I look upon this as a certain Proof, that the *Sin-offerings* were not merely Tokens of *Friendship restored* between GOD and the Offender; but that the Blood was looked upon as the *Consideration*, on which the Pardon was granted, being an Acknowledgment on the Part of the Offerer that he had *deserved Death*, if GOD had been strict to mark Offences.

(f) *The*

23 It was therefore necessary that the Patterns of Things in the Heavens should be purified with these ; but the heavenly Things themselves with better Sacrifices than these.

[It was] therefore necessary, according to Sect. 12. the Divine Appointment, that the Tabernacle, and those Instruments and Utensils belonging to it, which were the Copies or Imitations of Things in the Heavens, should be purified by the Blood of these animal Victims ; but the celestial Things themselves, with more excellent Sacrifices than they (f), even with the sacred Blood of Christ himself, which these Offerings were designed to typify.

Heb. IX. 23.

24 For Christ is not entered into the holy Places made with Hands, which are the Figures of the true ; but into Heaven itself, now to appear in the Presence of God for us :

And the Expedience of this appears from the Method, which GOD hath in Fact taken ; for it is plain, that Christ is not entered into an earthly Tabernacle, or holy Places made with Hands, though adorned with ever so much Art and Expence ; [which] at best [were] but the Figures, or imperfect Copies, of the true ; - but he is entered into Heaven itself, now to appear in the Presence of GOD for us, as our great High-priest and ever-glorious and powerful Intercessor.

24.

25 Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the High-priest entereth into the holy Place, every Year with Blood of others :

Not that it was necessary he should offer himself frequently, as the High-priest entered into the most holy Place yearly, on the Day of Atonement, with the Blood of others, that is, of Bulls and Goats ; for then, as the Jewish Sacrifice was often repeated, so it would have been necessary for him often to have suffered in many successive Periods, from the Foundation of the World, in order to the Salvation of good Men in their several Ages and Generations ; which we know he did not. But now once for all, at the

25.

26.

26 (For then must he often have suffered since the Foundation of the World ) but now once in the End of the

(f) The celestial Things themselves with more excellent Sacrifices.] It may perhaps seem strange, that celestial Things should be spoken of as needing to be purified and cleansed. But it is to be considered, that as the sacred Dwelling and the Vessels were esteemed to be polluted by the Israelites, who in various Degrees had Access to them ; so Heaven would have been, as it were, polluted by the Entrance of such Sinners as we into it, had not the Blood of Christ intervened. This I think much more natural, than with Bishop Fell, to explain it of some Pollutions contracted by the Sin of the Angels.

Sec̄t. 12. Conclusion of the Ages (g), he hath been made  
 Heb. IX. 26. manifest for the abolishing of Sin, and wiping  
 out its dreadful Score, by the Sacrifice of  
 himself, that he might purchase the Pardon  
 of it, and effectually teach Men to subdue  
 it (b), when they see such a Ransom paid for  
 their forfeited Lives. And just as with  
 Respect to the common Lot of Mankind,  
 it is appointed to all Men once to die, and af-  
 ter that the Judgment is ordained, which  
 fixes them in an unalterable State, without  
 any farther Revolution of Life and Death ;  
 27 So Christ passed through one Death, no more  
 to be subject to the Possibility of it, and  
 having once been offered, as the Scape-goat  
 on the great Day of Expiation, to bear the  
 Punishment due to the Sins of many, even  
 of all his believing People, and to carry a-  
 way, as it were, the Guilt of them, into the  
 Land of Oblivion, he shall the second Time  
 appear to preside in that Judgment, which  
 Men are to undergo. And then he shall  
 come like the High-priest (i) in his richest  
 Dress, when the grand Act of Expiation  
 was over, without any Thing that wears the  
 Marks of Humiliation or Abasement, or re-  
 fembles

the World, hath he appear-  
 ed to put away Sin by the  
 Sacrifice of himself.

27 And as it is appointed  
 unto Men once to die, but  
 after this the Judgment :

28 So Christ was once  
 offered to bear the Sins of  
 many ; and unto them that  
 look for him shall he appear  
 the second Time, without  
 Sin unto Salvation.

(g) Conclusion of the Ages.] So συνέλευσις των αιωνων is most exactly rendered ; mean-  
 ing the last of the Dispensations GOD ever intended to give Mankind. See Vol. ii.  
 Sect. 160, Note (d).

(b) Purchase the Pardon of it, and teach Men to subdue it.] Dr. Harris (in his  
 Discourses on the principal Representations of the Messiah, pag. 252.) explains εις αδε-  
 τησιν αμαρτιας, for the abolishing of Sin, of wiping out a Score, so that it should be no  
 longer αειτιονα. But I think it extends to every Method of abolishing Sin, or put-  
 ting it away, and may include, besides the Satisfaction made to the Divine Justice, the  
 subduing it also in our own Hearts.

(i) Like the High-priest.] I doubt not but there is indeed, as Limborch supposes,  
 an Allusion here to the High-priest coming out to bless the People, who were waiting  
 for him in the Temple, when the great Day of Atonement was over and as he then  
 appeared in his golden Garments, whereas before he had officiated in the plain Dress  
 of a common Priest ; and as the Trumpet of the Jubilee, on that Year sounded to  
 proclaim the Commencement of that happy Period ; there is not perhaps an Image,  
 that can enter into the Mind of Man, more suitable to convey the grand Idea which  
 the Apostle intended to convey by it, than this would be to a Jew, who well knew  
 the grand Solemnity to which it referred.

(k) With-

resembles the Form in which he came to Sect. 12.  
 make an Atonement for Sin (k). And while he brings with him everlasting Terror to all that despise and reject him; he shall manifest himself to those who have waited for him, to compleat their eternal Salvation (l), and conduct them in their entire Persons, to those Regions of Glory, which he hath prepared for them. Heb. IX. 28.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

WE are Heirs of an *eternal Inheritance*, and we owe all our Expectations of it to the *Mediator* of that *better Covenant*, who at the Expence of his own *Blood*, procured *Redemption* from the Guilt and Condemnation of *those Transgressions*, which have been committed under the *first Covenant*: What Praise do we owe to that voluntary *Victim*, who made his *Blood* the *Seal* of that better Covenant? Oh, that as all the *Vessels* of the *Sanctuary*, and all the *People* were sprinkled with the *Blood of the Sacrifices*, on that Day when *Moses* entered them into solemn *Covenant* with *GOD*; so our Souls and all our Services might be under the *Sprinkling of the Blood of Jesus*! By the Efficacy of that were the *heavenly Places sanctified* and prepared for us; by that our Way into them is opened: Let us be daily looking up to the *Lord Jesus Christ*, as gone to appear in the *Presence of GOD* for us, and entered into Heaven with his own

*Blood*

(k) *Without Sin.*] Mr. Fleming supposes, this refers to *Christ's* having, in that great Day, the Glory of the *Shechinah* upon him, of which the Splendor of the richest Habits *Aaron* and his Sons wore, was but a faint Shadow; and that it farther alludes to the stripping *Adam* of that Glory which he contracted from his first Interview with the *Shechinah*, as soon as he had sinned. In Consequence of which *Christ*, appearing in the Days of his *Flesh*, like one of us, without this Glory, might be said to come as *with Sin*, or, as it is expressed, *Rom. viii. 3. in the Likeness of sinful Flesh.* *Flem. Christology, Vol. ii. pag. 301.*

(l) *To Salvation: εις σωτηριαν.*] *Wolfius* is of Opinion, that these Words should be connected with those immediately preceding, as expressing the *View* with which they waited for their returning Saviour, namely, that they might obtain *compleat Salvation*. But, with *Grotius*, I think it preferable to connect them in this Manner, *οφθισεται — εις σωτηριαν, he shall appear — to Salvation.* And certainly this is much more natural, than with *Beza* and *Erasmus Schmidius*, to refer it to so remote a Clause, as *εις το πολλων ανευνηκεν αμαρτιας* to bear the *Sins* of many, in order to their Salvation. See *Wolfii Curæ Philologicæ in loc.*

**Sect. 12.** *Blood.* May his Death be as efficacious to subdue the Power of Sin *in our Hearts*, as it is to expiate our *Guilt* before GOD. Then may we look forward with Pleasure to the great Solemnities of *Death* **Ver. 27, 28.** and *Judgment*, and expect that faithful Redeemer, who though he is to come no more as a *Sacrifice for Sin*, will then *appear for the compleat Salvation* of all, who have obediently received him under that Character, and *waited for him*, according to his Word.

**Ver. 27.** In the mean Time, that we may be engaged thus to apply to him, and improve our Knowledge of him to the great Purposes intended; may we live in the continual Views of *Death*, as what is indispensably *appointed to Men*; and remember, that it is our certain inevitable Doom. May we also consider it, as standing in a most certain Connection with *Judgment*; assuring ourselves, that whatever the Period of Time between the one and the other may be, there is no Room for a *Change* in our Character, or State. Let therefore the Thoughts of *Judgment*, and its awful eternal Consequences stir us up to a diligent Preparation for *Death*. Let it engage us to make an immediate Application to *Christ* as the great Saviour, with intire Submission to his *Princely Authority*; for if that be disregarded, how shall we meet him as our *Judge*! For when he *appears the second Time for the Salvation* of his People, he will execute righteous Vengeance on his *Enemies*; and that Vengeance can never appear *so terrible*, as when considered as coming from the Mouth of *him*, who was once *manifested to take away Sin by the Sacrifice of himself*.

---

### S E C T. XIII.

*The Apostle returns from his Digression to prove, that the Legal Ceremonies could not by any Means purify the Conscience; and from thence argues the Insufficiency of the Mosaic Law, and the Necessity of looking beyond it. Heb. X. 1,--15.*

**Sect. 13.** **Y**OU see that it is the Design of all this Discourse, to raise your Minds from the Mosaic Law to the Gospel: And it is an important Design, which the dearer you are **F**OR the Law having a Shadow of good Things to

to come, and not the very Image of the Things, can never with those Sacrifices which they offered Year by Year continually, make the Comers thereunto perfect.

are to me, the more earnestly I must pursue. For the Law having, as it were, only a Shadow, or imperfect Sketch, of future good Things, and not the compleat Delineation, or the very Image of the Things [themselves] (a), could by no Means, even by those Sacrifices of Atonement which they always offer yearly (b), and are the most solemn, which belong to the whole Hebrew Ritual, perfect those who come [unto them], so as to remove the moral Guilt of their Offences, and bring them into a State of Reconciliation with God, and to that settled Peace of Conscience, which results from a Sense of his Favour. And indeed the very Circumstance of their yearly Repetition is a Proof of this; for otherwise, that is, could they have made such a compleat Reconciliation, they would have ceased to be offered (c) any more, at least by the same Persons: Because they who had performed that Service, being once purified by it, would have had no more Consciousness of Sin; but have enjoyed the Efficacy of that Atonement to the last Moment of their Lives, on applying to it

Sect. 13.  
Heb. X. 1.

2 For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the Worshippers once purged, should have had no more Conscience of Sins.

2

on

(a) Shadow and Image: *σκιαν, εικονα.*] Here is an Allusion, I apprehend, to the different State of a *Painting*, when the first Sketch only is drawn, and when the Piece is finished; or to the first Sketch of a *Painting*, when compared with what is yet more expressive than even the compleatest *Painting*, an exact *Image*. I cannot be of Opinion, with Mr. Pierce, that *εικων*, *Image*, here signifies the *Original*, from whence the Delineation, or Draught, is made. It is a very unusual Sense of the Word; nor can I think, *Rom. i. 23.* sufficient to justify and support it. Besides, even under the *Gospel*, we have not the heavenly Blessings themselves, but only a clearer Representation or Revelation of them.

(b) Sacrifices which they always offer yearly.] The Sacrifices offered on the Day of Atonement, being by far the most solemn of any of the expiatory Kind, among the Jews, are mentioned here with the utmost Propriety. And this Interpretation seems to supersede the Necessity of following Mr. Pierce's Translation, who would, by transposing the Points, render it, *The Law having only a Shadow of good Things to come—yearly, can never with the same Sacrifices, which they continually offer, make the Comers thereunto perfect.*

(c) They would have ceased to be offered.] This Reading is more easy and natural than that which our Translators have followed; while they have placed this in the Margin. It is supported by many Copies, and adopted by the Vulgate and Syriac Version.

(d) Looks

Sect. 13. on any future Occasion ; as we Christians  
 Heb. X. 3. do, by renewed Acts of Faith on our great  
 Sacrifice, if through the Frailty of human  
 Nature we are so unhappy as to fall into  
 Sin. *But in them, [there is] of Course,*  
 as it were, *a yearly Commemoration of Sins,*  
 by a yearly Presentation of the atoning  
 Blood of new Sacrifices in the most holy  
 Place : which shews that their Efficacy is so  
 far from extending, as that of the true Ex-  
 piation does, to all Nations, Times, and  
 Places, that it only looks back upon the  
 Year compleated (*d*), and hath no Influence,  
 even with Regard to those Persons who are  
 actually present in the Temple, on any  
 Thing future.

3 But in those *Sacrifices*  
*there is* a Remembrance a-  
 gain made of Sins every  
 Year.

4 And indeed the Reason of this is plain ;  
 for [*it is*] in the Nature of Things, *impossible*  
*that the Blood of Bulls and of Goats should,*  
 on the whole, *take away Sins,* or make a  
 real Atonement to GOD as the great Gover-  
 nor of the World, for the moral Guilt of  
 any Transgression ; though it may by di-  
 vine Appointment put a Stop to any farther  
 Prosecution which might proceed in Jewish  
 Courts, or any such extraordinary Judg-  
 ment, as the peculiar State of Things a-  
 mong that People might otherwise require.

4 For *it is* not possible  
 that the Blood of Bulls and  
 of Goats should take away  
 Sins.

5 *Therefore when* the Messiah is described in  
 David, as *making his Entrance into the*  
*World, he saith,* in those well-known Words,  
 (Psal. xl. 7.) “ *Sacrifice and Offering thou*  
 “ *wouldest not [accept], but a Body hast thou*  
 “ *pro-*

5 Wherefore, when he  
 cometh into the World, he  
 saith, Sacrifice and Offering  
 thou wouldest not, but a  
 Body hast thou prepared  
 me :

(*d*) Looks back upon the Year compleated.] I am surprized that *Diodate* should  
 imagine this must have been expressly revealed to the *Apostle* : I think it sufficiently  
 appears from the Tenor of the *Mosaick Law* ; for if the Expiation was to be offered  
 yearly for the whole People, it must include the Expiation of Sins remaining *unatoned*  
 to the Time of its Offering ; and if it were to be *repeated* the next Year, it could  
 reach no further. — But still it must be remembered, that this only referred to those  
*temporal* Punishments which *GOD*, as the *King of Israel*, might have inflicted upon the  
 whole People, if by a Neglect of this *Annual Atonement*, they had in Effect broke  
 their *Covenant*, and thrown a Contempt upon his Institution.

(*e*) *A Body*



6 In Burnt-offerings and Sacrifices for Sin thou hast had no Pleasure:

“ provided me (e), in which I may render Sect. 13.  
 “ thee a more acceptable Service: In Heb. X. 6.

“ whole Burnt-offerings and Sin-offerings  
 “ thou hadst no Complacency, when consider-  
 “ ed in this View, and in Reference to this  
 “ great Event. Then I said, with the 7

7 Then said I, Lo, I come (in the Volume of the Book it is written of me) to do thy Will, O GOD.

“ most chearful Consent: Behold, I come;  
 “ in the Volume of the Book (f), which con-  
 “ tains the ancient Prophecies, it is written  
 “ of me, that I should accomplish this Ser-  
 “ vice, and I delight to do thy Will, O my  
 “ GOD; for thy Law in all its Branches is  
 “ within my Heart.” Having in Effect 8

8 Above, when he said, Sacrifice, and Offering, and Burnt-offerings, and Offering for Sin thou wouldst not, neither hadst Pleasure therein (which are offered by the Law):

said above, As for Sacrifice and Offering, whether they were Burnt-offerings, or Sacrifices for Sin, thou didst not desire [them], or take Pleasure [in them], which comprehends the most material and considerable of those Things which were offered to GOD under the Law; Then he said, Behold, I 9

9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy Will, O GOD. He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second.

come to do thy Will, O GOD. So that you see, he taketh away the first, that is, Burnt-offerings and Sacrifices, that he may establish the

(e) A Body hast thou provided me.] After having deliberately considered the various Interpretations which have been given of this Text, I find none so probable as that of Mr. Pierce, who supposes that the original Reading of the Hebrew which the Seventy follow, instead of אֲנִי was אֲנִי נָהָה; and that כָּרָה sometimes signifies to procure, as well as to dig; and then their Version will be justified, and the Apostle's following it easily accounted for. Next to this is the Solution of the ingenious and learned Mr. Saurin, who supposes the Seventy chose to explain the Phrase of boring the Ear, by that of preparing the Body for Service, as better known to those for whom the Version was intended; and therefore preferred also by the Apostle, who, though he directs this Epistle to the Hebrews, to whom the other Custom might be known, intended it for general Use. Saurin's Serm. Vol. xi. pag. 17,—23. The Interpretation given by Elfner, (Observ. Vol. ii. pag. 362.) is much to the same Purpose with this of Mr. Saurin.

(f) Volume of the Book.] That is, in the Pentateuch, the only Book containing Prophecies of Christ written before David's Time. As if he had said, I rejoice, that I am registered in thy Book as thy Servant. This is the Sense of Bishop Fell. On the whole, I think the Apostle so plainly argues from this Text, that it proves the Psalm, to which he refers to be a literal Prophecy of the Messiah; and consequently the twelfth Verse of it, which affords the only material Argument against this Interpretation, must either be explained of those Iniquities, which, though not properly Christ's own, were laid upon him; or rather, those Calamities which he bore for the Expiation of Sin.

Sect. 13. *the second*, that is, doing GOD's Will; pointing therein to that great Act of Obedience, by which the Pardon of Sin was to be secured, and the divine Honour most effectually promoted.

Heb. X. 9.

10 *In the Execution of which Will we are sanctified*, cleansed from our Sins, and recommended to the Divine Acceptance, even *by the offering up the Body of our Lord Jesus Christ once for all*, as an atoning Sacrifice.

11 *And this agrees with what I observed above*, to be the Property of a true and effectual Atonement. For *indeed every Priest of the Mosaick Law standeth daily ministering, and offering the same Sacrifices often, which*, as appears from that very Circumstance of the Repetition of them, *can never avail to take*

12 *away the Guilt of Sins; But He*, that is, our Lord Jesus Christ, *having offered one ever efficacious Sacrifice for the Sins of all who shall believe in him, and obey him, hath for ever sat down at the Right Hand of GOD*; never more to stand and minister in such a Manner as he has done, but answering the great Character drawn in the Prophet, (Zach. vi. 13.) of a Priest on a Throne, where royal Dignity, and certain Con-

13 *quest are added to his other Glories; For the rest, waiting only till the appointed Time come*, in which according to the Promise we have been contemplating, *all his Enemies shall be made the Footstool of his Feet.*

14 *For by that one Offering up of himself, concerning which we have been speaking, he hath for ever perfected them that are sanctified by it, and on whom its Blood is, as it were, sprinkled, and hath rendered all Believers perfectly acceptable to GOD, and made effectual Provision for raising them to a State of compleat Holiness, Felicity, and Glory.*

10 By the which Will we are sanctified, through the Offering of the Body of Jesus Christ once for all.

11 And every Priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same Sacrifices, which can never take away Sins:

12 But this Man, after he had offered one Sacrifice for Sins, for ever sat down on the Right Hand of GOD;

13 From henceforth expecting till his Enemies be made his Footstool.

14 For by one Offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.

IMPROVE-

I M P R O V E M E N T.

SINCE the *Shadows* are now fled away, and the *Substance* is come; since the most substantial Blessings are bestowed by the *Gospel*; let us celebrate the Praises of *him*, by whom we have received them; of him, who so chearfully presented himself a spotless Sacrifice to GOD for us. In the *Body* which GOD had prepared for him, he fulfilled all Righteousness, and made a most perfect Atonement: In that he, once for all, made full Expiation for the Sins of his People, having no Sin of his own to expiate: And Oh! with what grateful Emotions of Heart should we commemorate his Love; reflecting, that when all other Sacrifices would have been vain, he should so readily cry out, *Lo, I come, I delight to do thy Will, O GOD*; when that Will of his Heavenly Father was, that his Body should be offered in so painful and so tragical a Manner! With such Readiness let us too concur in every Intimation of the Divine good Pleasure: Let us, like the Blessed Man whom David described, not only fear the Lord, but delight greatly in his Commandments, (Psal. cxii. 1.) and labour that the Law of GOD may be inscribed on our Hearts, and the Characters grow larger and deeper there. This shall please GOD better than the most costly Sacrifices, even of his own Ritual; better than any whole Burnt-offering, and Sin-offering, though it were an Ox, or a Bullock, which hath Horns and Hoofs. Psal. lxix. 31.

Ver. 1.

Ver. 5.

Ver. 7.

Ver. 8.

May we be so sanctified through the Sacrifice of Christ, according to the Will of GOD, that we may approach the Divine Being with Acceptance. And may we daily be looking to Jesus as sat down at his Father's Right Hand, where he waits till his Enemies are made his Footstool. Let us likewise expect that great Event in full Assurance of Faith. Let our Affections be there where Jesus sits; and let us live in chearful Confidence, that the Saviour, in whose Cause we are engaged, will finally appear triumphant over all his Enemies, and ours. Amen.

Ver. 10.

Ver. 12, 13.

## S E C T. XIV.

The Apostle urges Christians to improve the Privileges which such an High-priest and Covenant gave them, to the Purposes of a Judicial Approach to GOD, a constant Attendance on his Worship, and a benevolent Love to each other. Heb. X. 15,---25.

## HEBREWS X. 15.

Sect. 14. **I** Have spoken of Christ, as having by one Offering of himself for ever perfected those that are sanctified : And this is a Representation very agreeable to the Word of GOD ; for *even the Holy Ghost testifieth to us (a)* in that Passage (Jerem. xxxi. 33 &c.) which I have quoted above, *after having before*  
 16 *said, This [is] the Covenant, which I will make with them after those Days, saith the Lord ; I will give my Laws to be written on their Hearts ; I will also inscribe them upon their Minds : My Holy Spirit shall work in them cordial Dispositions humbly to*  
 17 *practise and obey them : He adds in Consequence of this, their Sins and their Transgressions, how many and aggravated soever they may have been, I will never re-*  
 18 *member any more. But where [there is] such an entire Remission of these, as this great Amnesty, this universal Pardon implies, which wipes out the very Remembrance of all Offences, [there is] no more Room for any Sacrifice for Sin, which implies that they are remembered, and remain to be expiated.*

## HEBREWS X. 15.

*Whereof* the Holy Ghost also is a Witness to us : for after that he had said before,

16 This is the Covenant that I will make with them after those Days, saith the Lord ; I will put my Laws into their Hearts, and in their Minds will I write them :

17 And their Sins and Iniquities will I remember no more.

18 Now, where Remission of these is, there is no more Offering for Sin.

This

(a) *Testifieth to us.*] Or, as it might be rendered, *bears Witness with us*, that is, *assents to*, and confirms by his Testimony what I have said ; in which Sense the Original Word is used, as *Raphelius* hath shown, by several *Greek Classicks*.

(b) *New* :

19 Having therefore, Brethren, Boldness to enter into the Holiest by the Blood of Jesus,

20 By a new and living Way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the Vail, that is to say, his Flesh;

21 And having an High-priest, over the House of God:

22 Let us draw near with a true Heart, in full Assurance of Faith, having our

This therefore, my dear Brethren, is now Sect. 13.  
 our happy Case; and let us endeavour to Heb. X. 19.  
 enjoy, and improve it aright. Having such  
 Liberty to enter into the holy Places by the Ef-  
 ficacy of this atoning Blood of Jesus; 20  
 [Having that] new-discovered and ever-living  
 Way (b), which he hath consecrated for us,  
 through the Vail (c), that is, by Means of  
 his Flesh, or of that human Nature in which  
 he hath veiled his divine Glories, and to  
 which it ever becomes us to pay a Regard  
 in our Access to GOD; And [having] 21  
 also such a great and glorious Priest  
 over the House of GOD, who most faith-  
 fully manages his Father's Concerns, and  
 bears a most tender Regard to ours; Let 22  
 us not stand at a Distance, as if GOD were  
 inaccessible; but, on the contrary, let us  
 draw near with a sincere and affectionate  
 Heart, in the full Assurance of Faith, sup-  
 ported by such Considerations as these, which  
 may well embolden us, (conscious as we  
 are of our own Unworthiness,) to make our  
 Approach unto him in the most chearful  
 Expectation of his Blessing. Only let us  
 take Care that this Approach be made in  
 a regular and proper Manner, as ever  
 we desire to meet with divine Favour  
 and Acceptance; particularly, as the Wa-  
 ter

(b) *New and living Way.*] Dr. Owen illustrates this by observing, that the Blood of other Sacrifices was to be used immediately upon its Effusion; for if it were cold and congealed, it was of no Use to be offered or sprinkled: But the Blood of Christ is, as it were, always warm, having the same Spirit of Life and Sanctification moving in it. So that the Way of Approach by it is said to be ζῶσα και προσφατος, living, yet, (putting it for Christ who is the Way,) always, as it were, newly slain. See Owen on the Spirit, pag. 386.

(c) *The Vail.*] It is well known, that the Vail was a Curtain separating the holy from the most holy Place. The Priest could not pass to the Sanctuary, unless he passed through it; so Christ could not pass into Heaven as our High-priest, till he had taken human Flesh in his Way; and till it had been, as it were, put aside by Death. And I cannot forbear thinking, that it may further refer to the Shechinah being veiled by this Curtain, which bore so remarkable an Analogy to the divine Glory of Christ, as veiled by assuming human Nature.

Sect. 14. ter of Purification was to be sprinkled on the Israelites, to cleanse them from any Pollutions they might have contracted, so let us see to it that we come, *having our Hearts sprinkled from an evil Conscience*, free from all allowed Guilt and indulged Sin. *And this is indeed our Case*, if we are true Christians: Our Hearts are thus sprinkled by the purifying and cleansing Blood of Jesus, as well as *our Bodies in Baptism washed with pure Water (d)*, intended to repre-

- 23 sent our being cleansed from Sin. *And since we have received such Benefits by the Gospel which we have embraced, let us hold fast the Profession of [our] Hope (e)*, without ever giving Way to the Pressure and Agitation of any Temptation, or *wavering* in a Case where we have such certain and indubitable Evidence; *for we know that whatever Storms and Tempests may arise, he [is] assuredly faithful who hath promised*; he will stand by to defend us, and to make us more than Conquerors over all. *And let us consider each other*, and reflect seriously on the Circumstances in which we and our Brethren are situated, that we may judge, what Influence we can have over them for their Advantage, and may endeavour accordingly to *provoke*, and stimulate them on to the Exercise of sincere *Love*, and to a Readiness to all *good Works*, by our Exhortations, and especially by our Example, and by such a Conduct towards them as may engage the Return

our Hearts sprinkled from an evil Conscience, and our Bodies washed with pure Water

23 Let us hold fast the Profession of our Faith without wavering (for he is faithful that promised.)

24 And let us consider one another to provoke unto Love, and to good Works:

(d) *Bodies washed with pure Water.*] Mr. Pierce would make this the Beginning of another Sentence; and *having our Bodies washed with pure Water*, that is, "having been solemnly devoted to GOD in *Baptism*, let us answer the Engagements of that holy Ordinance by *holding fast the Profession of our Faith &c.* considering that *he is faithful* to the Engagements he was pleased to seal unto us by it." But I think the Sense will be very easy and intelligible, if it be connected with the preceding Words, as referring to the Custom of *washing* their Bodies in clean Water, before they went to worship at the *Temple*, especially upon their solemn Days.

(e) *Profession of [our] Hope.*] Instead of *ελπιδος*, *Hope*, our Translators read *πιστως*, *Faith*, upon the Authority only of a single *Manuscript*. See Dr. Mills in loc.

(f) *Asser-*

25 Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the Manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as we see the Day approaching.

Return of their Affection, and the Exer- Sect. 14.  
tion of their Zeal for the general Good: ~~~~~  
*Not deserting the assembling ourselves toge- Heb. X. 25.*  
*ther (f)*, for the solemn Purposes of publick  
Worship, *as the Manner of some now [is]*,  
in order to decline that Reproach and Per-  
secution which the Attendance on such As-  
semblies may draw after it; *but exhorting*  
and comforting [*one another*] as much as we  
can; *and this so much the rather, as ye see*  
*the Day approaching (g)*, that awful Day,  
in which we must appear before the Tribu-  
nal of GOD, and that Day of Vengeance up-  
on the Jewish Nation, which Christ hath  
described as so terrible an Emblem of it.  
And let none, who would not share with  
the Enemies of Christ in the Destruction,  
which shall be poured out upon them, a-  
bandon his People now, and basely betray  
that Cause and Interest, by which none  
shall on the whole be Losers, whatever they  
may for the present suffer on its Account.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

**W**HAT can be more desirable than to *approach to GOD!* Ver. 22.  
what more effectually encourage that Approach, than  
the Consideration which the *Apostle* here urges: *The new and liv-*  
*ing Way, which this great High-priest hath consecrated!* Let us then Ver. 19, 20  
see

(f) *Assembling ourselves together.*] Mr. Pierce is of Opinion, that when the *Apostle* adds, *as the Manner of some is*, he intends to blame the Conduct of the *Jews*, who, on Account of their old Prejudices against the *Gentile* Converts, absented themselves from the Assemblies into which they were admitted; and perhaps also to censure a similar Behaviour in the *Gentile* Converts arising from Prejudices they had newly contracted against the *Jews*. And he imagines this, in some Measure, is intimated by the Use of the Word, *επισυναγωγη*. (Compare 2 *Thess.* ii. 1.) But I think the Account given of the Ground of this Caution in the *Paraphrase*, is on the whole much more certain.

(g) *Day approaching.*] They knew that the Day of *Christ's* final Judgment, being certainly future, came nearer and nearer. And from what *Christ* had said concerning the Destruction of *Jerusalem*, as to happen in the Lives of some who had been present with him about thirty Years before the Date of this *Epistle*, (compare *Mat.* xvi. 28.) they might infer that *that* was now *near*, though they should not have been able to trace it up into its Causes, or to calculate the exact Time.

- Ver. 22. see to it that we thus approach in the Way of his own Appointment. But if we desire Acceptance, let us attend to the Strength of our *Faith*, and the *Purity* of our *Consciences*; that inward Purity, without which our *baptismal* Washing will stand us in little stead. To establish us in a Resolution of retaining the *Profession of our Faith and Hope*, amidst all the Attempts that may be made to wrest it out of our Hands; let us often reflect on the Importance of those *Promises* we have received, and the infallible
- Ver. 23. *Fidelity* of that *GOD*, who hath condescended to enter himself into such Engagements. Let the *Community* of that blessed Hope which these sacred Engagements afford, unite us in the Bonds of the most affectionate *Love*. Instead of watching over each other
- Ver. 24. for evil, *let us consider one another's* Circumstances with the most friendly and compassionate Eye. And whatever we behold of Necessity or Distress, let us immediately be instigated and quickened kindly to attempt Relief and Assistance; that *every one* may be, as it were in a Confederacy against the Evil, by which *any one* may be attacked.

- Ver. 25. Much will this benevolent Disposition be promoted, by a diligent Attendance on the *Ordinances* of religious Worship; and much is it to be lamented, that it is the *Manner of so many* to forsake them, even the *Assemblies* which are honoured with the Promise of the divine Presence; a Promise, to the Accomplishment of which *thousands* can bear Testimony. Let us guard against so ungrateful and pernicious a Neglect; and set ourselves to promote as far as possible, *mutual Edification*; and so much the rather, as we see the *Day* approaching; that solemn Day, when all our Opportunities in this World being come to a Period, we must render up an Account of all. It is a Day, in which *GOD* will bring every Work into Judgment, and every secret Thing, whether it be good or evil: Let us therefore give all Diligence to prepare ourselves for it; and remember, how happily the *Ordinances* of public Worship are calculated to promote that Preparation.

S E C T.



S E C T. XV.

The Apostle inforces his Exhortation steadily to adhere to their Christian Faith, by reminding them of the Extremities they had endured in its Defence, and of the fatal Consequences of Apostacy. Heb. X. 26, to the End.

HEB. X. 26.

FOR if we sin wilfully after that we have received the Knowledge of the Truth, there remaineth no more Sacrifice for Sins,

HEBREWS X. 26.

I HAVE urged you to a Seadiness and Sect. 15. Courage in the Profession of the Christian Faith, and have cautioned you against neglecting those Acts of publick Worship by which it is professed, on any Consideration whatsoever. And I must continue to include the Caution with the greatest Seriousness: for if we sin wilfully (a) and presumptuously by apostatizing, after having received the Knowledge of the Truth with such incontestable Evidence and Power, there remaineth yet no more Sacrifice for Sin (b); nor is it possible to find any Atonement that shall be efficacious, after having thus ungratefully and wickedly disowned that which God had appointed. But on the contrary, all that remaineth is a certain fearful Expectation of the Judgment of God, and of his fiery Indignation, which is just ready to devour the Adversaries of his Gospel, and shall, in a very little Time be poured out upon them in all its Terrors.

Heb. X. 26.

27 But a certain fearful looking for of Judgment, and fiery Indignation, which shall devour the Adversaries.

This

(a) If we sin wilfully.] The Emphasis of the Apostle's Argument must lead us to interpret this of Apostacy from Christianity. But as Diodate well observes, it might perhaps be expressed in this more general Manner, to intimate how carefully we ought to guard against every Degree of wilful Sin, lest it should lead to that dreadful Conclusion.

(b) No more Sacrifice for Sin.] This plainly intimates, as Dr. Bates (Harm. pag. 293.) well observes, that God will not pardon Sin without some Sacrifice, or Satisfaction; else the Argument would be inconclusive.

(a) Sect.

Sect. 15. This we might easily infer from the Nature of Things, even though we had not been so expressly warned of it in the Word of GOD. For if *any one*, of whatever Order and Dignity, *who set at nought the Law of Moses (c)* by any presumptuous Transgression of it, tho' that Transgression might in itself seem ever so small, *died without Mercy on [the Evidence of] two or three Witnesses*, and was excluded any Benefit from those Sin-offerings, which were appointed for Offences of Ignorance and Inconsideration ;

28 *Of how much severer Punishment do ye suppose, he shall be counted worthy, who hath not merely insulted a faithful Servant, but even trampled upon (d) the Son of GOD, and who hath not only slighted the Method of Reconciliation and Purification which GOD hath appointed for lower Purposes, but hath accounted the sacred Blood of the Covenant by which he was sanctified (e) and solemnly set apart to the Service of GOD, a common or an unclean Thing, like the Blood of a Malefactor justly executed for his Crimes ?*

28 He that despised Moses Law died without Mercy under two or three Witnesses :

29 Of how much sorer Punishment suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath troden under Foot the Son of GOD, and hath counted the Blood of the Covenant, wherewith he was

(c) *Set at nought the Law of Moses.*] This evidently alludes to that very important Precept, Numbers xv. 30, 31. which doomed to *certain Death* every one who offended with an *high Hand* ; that is, who was guilty of any *wilful*, deliberate and presumptuous Sin, whether in Matters great or small ; though a Plea of Ignorance or Inconsideration was allowed where the Rebellion and Presumption was not made apparent by any *Overt-act*. And this was the Foundation of the *Sin-offering*, which was in some Degree analogous to the smaller Punishment inflicted among us, for a Crime, in other Circumstances, *Capital*, where *Benefit of Clergy* is sought and admitted.

(d) *Trampled upon.*] As it appears to me, that this is a Description of a Case that could *only* occur, where what was properly *the Sin against the Holy Ghost* was committed, that is, ascribing the Miracles wrought by his Power to *Magick*, and the Operation of *Dæmons*, I have paraphrased these Words agreeable to that Principle.

(e) *By which he was sanctified.*] As it could not on any Principles be certainly inferred, that every one who thus *apostatized* from *Christianity*, had been truly *renewed* ; I think it very apparent, that this *Sanctification* must only refer to his being *externally set apart*, or consecrated to GOD ; though I will not certainly say, how far it may, as *Bishop Hoadley* has thought, refer to the *Sacramental Wine* representing *the Blood of the Covenant*. *Hoadley on Episc. pag. 453.* Some have interpreted it, of the *Blood* whereby *Christ* was *sanctified*, or dedicated by GOD as a *High-priest*. Comp. *John x. 36. xvii. 19.* But the former Sense seems to me more natural.

(f) *The*

was sanctified, an unholy Thing, and hath done Despight unto the Spirit of Grace?

Crimes? Now this he certainly doth who rejects the Gospel; which cannot possibly be done without the greatest imaginable Outrage to the Memory of its divine Author, who, had he not indeed been the extraordinary Person he professed himself to be, would deservedly have been reckoned among the most detestable of Impostors. And such an Offence is in present Circumstances the more aggravated, as it is plain, that he who commits it, has offered the most contemptuous Injury to the Spirit of Grace, by whose miraculous and saving Operations the Truth of the Gospel is demonstrated, to such a Degree, that the highest Blasphemy against him must virtually be expected by such a Conduct, as we here suppose.

Sect. 15.  
Heb. X. 29.

30 For we know him that hath said, Vengeance *belongeth* unto me, I will recompense saith the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge his People.

Avoid therefore all Approaches to this with the most solicitous Care; for the divine Justice is not to be trifled with; as we know him that hath said, (Deut. xxxii. 35, 36.) *Vengeance [belongeth] to me; I will render Recompence, saith the Lord: And again, the Lord will judge his People (f);* and if he vindicate and avenge the Injury done to them, he will much more severely animadvert upon those, which are offered to his Spirit, and his Son. Now surely you must immediately be sensible, that *[it is] dreadful indeed to fall into the Hands of the living GOD*; who living for ever, can for ever punish, in what Degree he pleases, the wretched Creatures, who have made themselves the Objects of his final Displeasure.

30

31

31 *It is a fearful Thing to fall into the Hands of the living GOD.*

But

(f) *The Lord will judge his People &c.*] The Connection seems plainly to require this Interpretation; and it agrees very well with the Purpose for which it is here introduced. Very few Commentators have considered it in this View; yet since I wrote this, I find Mr. Cradock (*Apost. Hist. pag. 387.*) gives it the same Sense. And Raphelius, (*Annot. in loc.*) hath produced a Passage from *Xenophon*, in which the original Word *κρίνει*, will judge, is used to signify vindicating, or pronouncing Sentence in Favour of.

Sect. 15.

Heb. X. 32.

But I humbly hope, you will be delivered from so terrible a Ruin: and that you may, I will lead back your Thoughts to former Events, which if duly considered, may be very instructive, and may prove the Means of establishing you in your Resolution of adhering to the Gospel. And I must particularly urge you to *call to Remembrance the former Days, in which having been enlightened (g) with the Knowledge of Christianity, and solemnly engaged in the Profession of it by Baptism, you endured a great Contest of Sufferings (b), struggling and contending as for your Lives, or what*

33 indeed was much more valuable; *Partly, as ye were made a publick Spectacle both by Reproaches and Afflictions, like Men exposed on a Theatre as infamous; and partly, as ye were made Partakers with those who were so treated, and most affectionately appeared in the Defence of the Divine Cause, at the greatest Hazard, as well as Expence.*

34 And indeed I have Reason to speak this upon my own Knowledge; *for ye sympathized with me in my Bonds; and ye took the Plunder of your Goods, not only with Patience, but with Joy; knowing in yourselves, that you have upon the Security of the Gospel Promises, a far better and an enduring Substance in the Heavens, where eternal Riches and Felicity await you, when all the*

32 But call to Remembrance the former Days, in which after ye were illuminated, ye endured a great Fight of Afflictions.

33 Partly while ye were made a Gazing-stock, both by Reproaches and Afflictions; and partly whilst ye became Companions of them that were so used.

34 For ye had Compassion of me in my Bonds, and took joyfully the spoiling of your Goods, knowing in yourselves, that ye have in Heaven a better and enduring Substance.

(g) *Having been enlightened.*] By some this is understood of *Baptism*; and it is certain the *Fathers* use the Phrase in that Sense. But I see no Reason from *Scripture* for limiting it to that Interpretation; or supposing, as *Diodate* himself does, there was any Efficacy in *Baptism* to enlighten, any more than to regenerate. Though as it was indeed the Ordinance, by which Persons were solemnly entered into the List of those, who were in the main, and in the Judgment of Charity *enlightened* and *regenerated*, my Respect for the Opinion of so many eminent Persons ancient and modern, has determined me to hint at the Sense they have generally given to it, in the *Paraphrase*.

(b) *A great Contest.*] This is the emphatical Signification of the Word *αδλαιοι*, which gives a View of their *Courage* and *Bravery* very proper for his Purpose, while he was thus commending and animating them.

(i) *Yet*

the Possessions of Earth are lost, and all its Sorrows come to a perpetual Period. Sect. 15.

35 Cast not away therefore your Confidence, which hath great Recompence of Reward.

Let the Remembrance of these Things *therefore*, animate you to persist in such heroic Resolutions; and *cast not away that Confidence of yours*, and that free and courageous Profession of it, *which hath so great and glorious a Recompence* entailed upon it; even that of eternal Life and Happiness, which the Divine Goodness will bestow, as a gracious *Reward* on all, who thus maintain it. Heb. X. 35.

36 For ye have Need of Patience; that after ye have done the Will of GOD, ye might receive the Promise.

It will indeed be necessary, that in order to secure it, you should take up a firm and vigorous Resolution; *for ye have still Need of continued Patience, that having done the Will of GOD* during this short State of Probation here, *ye may receive*, and inherit *the Promise* of Life and Salvation, to which ye have already expressed such a firm Regard. 36

37 For yet a little while, and he that shall come will come, and will not tarry.

And I hope you will still go on to maintain the glorious Cause; *for it is but yet a very little Time (i)*, and as GOD declared by the Prophet Habakkuk, though he supposes he might for a while tarry, (Hab. ii. 3.) *he that cometh*, he that is known by that illustrious Title of the Comer, even the Lord Jesus Christ himself, on whom our Eyes and our Hopes are fixed, *will come* to the Rescue of his People, and *he will not delay* beyond the Period, which his Wisdom and Faithfulness have marked out. He will come and open those important Scenes, which shall not only conclude our Labours and Sufferings, but abundantly repay them all. But in the mean Time, *as it is there added, the Just shall live by his Faith*, so we are assured by the repeated Testimony of the Word of GOD, that the 37

38 Now the Just shall live by Faith; but if any

But in the mean Time, *as it is there added, the Just shall live by his Faith*, so we are assured by the repeated Testimony of the Word of GOD, that the 38

(i) *Yet a little Time.*] Some would render it, *a little, a very little Time.*— It has been observed, that *ερχομενος*, *the Comer*, is a Title given to the *Messiah*, Mat. xi. 3.

Sect. 15. the truly good Man shall by firm Faith in the divine Perfections, Promises and Grace, obtain Justification and Comfort, Life and Happiness. *Yet if he draw back (k), my Soul, saith the same divine Oracle, shall have no Complacency in him: A total Apostacy would expose even the best of Men to the divine Displeasure and Abhorrence; as former Experiences of Religion would render the Guilt of such Apostacy more aggravated.* 39 *But blessed be God, we have a chearful Hope of being preserved from so terrible a State; for we are not of them that draw back to such dreadful Destruction, but of them that go on amidst all Opposition still to believe; and sustained by divine Grace will persevere in that happy Way, to the Preservation and compleat Salvation of the Soul.*

*any Man draw back, my Soul shall have no Pleasure in him.*

39 *But we are not of them who draw back unto Perdition; but of them that believe, to the saving of the Soul.*

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Ver. 26. **W**E see the dreadful Consequences of *sinning wilfully, after we have received the Knowledge of the Truth*: How diligently should we guard against every, even the least Appearance of it. Should we fall into so great an Evil, there would *remain no more Sacrifice for Sin*: And oh how dreadful, to lose our Part in that great Sacrifice, and be consigned over to *a certain fearful Expectation of Wrath, and fiery Indignation!* But blessed be GOD, it is not yet our Case. It is not every wilful Sin, which thus seals up the wretched Soul to Condemnation; for who then could *hope* for Heaven? or who in the utter Despair of Heaven, could *enjoy* this World? May we not say, who could *endure* it?

Ver. 29. If we would avoid this dreadful Doom, let us guard against every Approach toward any Thing which might be interpreted *treading under Foot the Son of GOD, or doing Despight unto the Spirit of Grace*. On the contrary, let us ever retain the most reverent Affection

(k) *Yet if he draw back.*] We render the Phrase in *Habakkuk, lifted up*. And it is observable, that the Alteration of a *single Letter* changes the Reading into this Sense, in which the *Seventy* have taken it:— The original Word *υποσημιαι* properly signifies *to sneak or to sink away*. *Acts xx. 20. Galat. ii. 12.*

fection for the Son of GOD, and ever cherish the Influences of the Spirit. So shall we avoid the threatned Vengeance, and escape that infinitely dreadful Thing, *the falling into the Hands of the Living GOD.* Sect. 15. Ver. 31.

To have experienced in any Degree the Power and Efficacy of Religion, is the great Preservative against *Apostacy*. They who have already, like those believing *Hebrews*, made great *Sacrifices* to their *Conscience*, ought to feel the Force of the Obligation. The Struggles through which they have already passed, the *Combats* they have already maintained, should have a powerful Influence on their future Resolution, that they may not stain the Lustre of their former Victories. Ver. 32.

If such Trials be appointed for us, may our *Faith* be proportionably strengthened; that we may *take joyfully* not only the *Spoiling of our Goods*, but the Torture of our Bodies; *knowing that we have in Heaven a better and a more enduring Substance* than worldly Wealth, and a far more glorious Abode than these Tabernacles of Clay. Let the *Recompense of Reward* be kept continually in our View; that thereby that *Patience* may be supported, of which we ever stand in such evident *Need*, that *after we have done the Will of GOD we may go to inherit the Promises.* Ver. 34. Ver. 36.

Let the certain and speedy Approach of *him that is to come*, daily comfort us, and confirm the Faith by which we live; and let us still pour out our fervent Supplications before GOD, that we may not *draw back*, which if we do, it will be infinitely fatal. Then instead of *beholding us with Complacency*, *GOD's Soul will abhor us*; and that Abhorrence will be proportionable to our violated Engagements, and dishonoured Profession. *Perdition* pursues our Retreat. Let every Consideration therefore, of Honour, of Gratitude, of Interest, and of Safety, concur to urge us on, and to support the Steadiness of our Faith, till we receive the glorious Crown of it, in *the compleat Salvation of our Souls.* Ver. 37. Ver. 38. Ver. 39.

S E C T.

## S E C T. XVI.

*The Apostle enters on a Discourse, in which he proposes to the Hebrews illustrious Examples of Faith, which had appeared in holy Men mentioned in their Scriptures, and particularly in Abel, Enoch, Noah; and Abraham and Sarah. Heb. XI. 1,---16.*

## HEBREWS XI. 1.

Sect. 16. **I** Have spoken of the Faith by which the the Just shall live; and that I may excite you to cultivate that blessed Principle more and more, let me now enter into a more distinct Consideration of it, and set before your Eyes, O ye believing Hebrews, some glorious Examples of it, with which your sacred History abounds. To consider it then in its Nature; *Faith is the confident Expectation (a) of Things hoped for, upon the Security of the divine Promise, and the powerful Conviction (b) of Things which are not seen, but of whose Certainty and Importance there is such a full Persuasion, that they act upon the Mind, in a great Measure, as if they were present.*

Heb. XI. 1.

2 To this I would excite you, by Considerations peculiarly suited to your own Case, as the Children of the Patriarchs; *for by it the illustrious Elders obtained an [honourable] Testi-*

## HEBREWS XI. 1.

**N**OW Faith is the Substance of Things hoped for, the Evidence of Things not seen.

2 For by it the Elders obtained a good Report.

(a) *Confident Expectation.*] Compare 2 Cor. ix. 4. Heb. iii. 14. where the Word, *υποσαςις*, is used in this Sense; and *Raphelius* hath confirmed it by some pertinent Quotations from *Polybius*.

(b) *The powerful Conviction of Things not seen:* ελεγχος των βλεπομενων.] *Ελεγχος*, it hath been observed by many learned Men, and particularly by *Raphelius in loc.* is a strict *Proof* or *Demonstration*; that is, saith *Mr Hallet*, such a Kind of Reason and Argument, as both *convinces* the Understanding, and *engages* a Man to act according to that Conviction. Accordingly I have rendered it by the Word *Conviction*, which I think properly expresses the *Apostle's* Meaning.

(c) *That*



Testimony to their Character, and it lay at Sect. 16. the Root of many of the most glorious Things they have ever done. Heb. XI. 2.

3 Through Faith we understand that the Worlds were framed by the Word of GOD, so that Things which are seen were not made of Things which do appear.

By Faith we understand that the Worlds were adjusted by the Word of GOD (c), and the several Revolutions of them directed by the Operations of his secret Providence, as the whole Universe was at first created by his Power, Wisdom, and Goodness, and the Things which are seen, were not made of Things which do appear (d): It is certain, no visible Cause could produce these Things, which would be in Effect to suppose them to have produced themselves; we therefore by Faith refer them to a divine invisible Original.

4 By Faith Abel offered unto GOD a more excellent Sacri-

And this happy and sublime Principle hath wrought even from the Beginning of the World, and animated good Men to Actions most pleasing to GOD, and honourable to themselves. It was, for Instance, by Faith that Abel offered to GOD a greater and

(c) That the Worlds were adjusted by the Word of GOD.] As the original Word is *αιωνες*, I was once inclined to have rendered it, the various Ages of the World were adjusted; and I have included this Sense in the Paraphrase. But it does not so evidently appear, that the Consequence, relating to Things not being made by those that appear, could be deduced from that Principle; I therefore conclude upon the whole, that this is an Instance where *αιων* signifies World; as it is often translated in the New Testament. Bishop Pearson would translate it, were made of Things that do not appear, that is, made out of nothing, without any præ-existent Matter, before GOD created the Worlds. Pearson on the Creed, pag. 58.

(d) As — the Things which are seen, were not made of Things which do appear: *εις το μη εν φαινομενον, κ. τ. λ.*] Our Translators have rendered this Clause, So that the Things which are seen &c. But this does not seem to be sufficiently agreeable either to the Original, or to the Design of the Apostle; which was not to deduce the Sentiment contained in the latter Clause as an Inference from the former; but rather to establish the Position in the first Part of the Verse, by the Principle laid down in the latter. Accordingly I have given it this Turn in the Paraphrase; and have taken the Liberty to translate *εις το &c.* as, which clearly expresses, I apprehend, the Apostle's Intention. The Construction of Rom. iv. 16. is somewhat similar to this; Therefore it is of Faith, that it might be of Grace, *δια τω εν πιστει ουκ κατα χαριν*, that is, "that it might appear to be of Grace, as we have already proved it is." The Apostle's Intention was, by the latter Clause as an incontestable Principle to establish what he now wanted to prove, namely, that Justification was by Faith; and this he does from the Consideration of its being by Grace. It may be proper to consult Mr. Hallett on Heb. xi. 3. Note (q), who refers to Eph. i. 12. and 1 Cor. x. 6. where the Apostle's Words *εις το &c.* cannot signify any thing but to the Intent that.

(e) A greater

Sect. 16. and more acceptable *Sacrifice than Cain (e)*; *by Means of which he obtained a Testimony,* Heb. XI. 4. *that he was righteous, GOD, by the visible Tokens of his Favour, bearing Witness to his Gifts, which he presented on the Altar; and by it he being dead, yet speaketh (f)*; and recommends to us in all Ages that Regard to the great Atonement, which he expressed by bringing an Animal Sacrifice, while Cain contented himself with the vegetable Products of the Ground. And though Abel became the early Victim of Cain's Rage, yet that Circumstance, in Conjunction with the Declaration he received of the divine Acceptance and Favour, is very instructive, in that it affords so powerful an Evidence of a future State.

5 *By Faith* the celebrated Patriarch *Enoch was, in a miraculous Manner, translated from among Men; so that he should not see Death; and he was not found (g)* any longer among the Inhabitants of this lower World, *because GOD had translated him to the celestial Regions, in a Manner before altogether unexampled, nor ever since equalled among Mortals, but in the single Instance* of

Sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained Witness, that he was righteous, GOD testifying of his Gifts: And by it he being dead, yet speaketh.

5 By Faith Enoch was translated that he should not see Death; and was not found, because GOD had translated him: For before his

(e) *A greater and more excellent Sacrifice.*] A late ingenious Writer, *Mr. Kennicott,* (in his *Two Dissertations on the Tree of Life, and the Oblations of Cain and Abel, pag. 197.*) has inferred from the Word *πλεονα θυσιαν,* which may be rendered a *greater or fuller Sacrifice,* that *Cain* contented himself with presenting only the *Mincha,* or Bread-offering, without a *Victim*; whereas *Abel* sacrificed both, and by presenting a *Lamb,* shewed his Faith in the great Sacrifice of the *Lamb of GOD.* — After all that has been offered to the contrary, I must think that the *divine Original of Sacrifices* is strongly insinuated in this Place.

(f) *Dead, yet speaketh.*] Some would render it, *And for this they say he died,* that is, there is a Tradition that he was massacred by *Cain,* in a Dispute about the Recompence of a *future Life,* which Faith proposes. *Saurin's Sermons, Vol. ix. pag. 54.* I rather think it refers to the *Testimony* borne, as it were, to a *future State* by his Story, as he was so excellent a Person, and visibly approved by *GOD,* yet left to suffer by the Cruelty of his wicked Brother. Some would render *λαλειται,* *he is spoken of* to this Day, as a Person of most eminent Piety and Goodness.

(g) *Was not found.*] The Circumstances of his *Translation* are not mentioned; but some have thought this intimates he was *privately* translated, and sought for, as *Elijah* afterwards was, 2 *Kings* ii. 17.

(b) *Ap-*

his Translation he had this Testimony, that he pleased GOD.

of Elijah. And GOD thus translated him, Sect. 16. not only because he had a Regard for his Character, but because he would by such an Interposition, give a visible and very important Lesson to others, to seek and secure his Favour by the Exercise of such a Disposition. For before his Translation, he obtained Witness that he pleased GOD; preceding Tokens were given of GOD's favourable Regards to him; and that Character is expressed by the sacred Historian, when it is said, (Gen. v. 24.) that Enoch walked with GOD; that is, he maintained, a constant Regard to him, and received the Indication of his Favour; so that there subsisted a holy Intercourse and Friendship between GOD and Enoch.

Heb. XI. 5.

6 But without Faith it is impossible to please him: For he that cometh to GOD, must believe that he is, and that he is a Rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

But without a sincere Faith, as the great Principle of Action, [it is] absolutely impossible to please [him]; for he who approacheth to GOD, and pretends to walk with him (b), must as the Foundation of that Intercourse, firmly believe that he exists, and [that] he is the Rewarder of them that diligently seek him, and will bestow some peculiar and important Blessings upon them. For where there are no such Expectations as these, the Soul cannot be animated to the Labours and Struggles of a truly religious Life.

6

7 By Faith Noah, being warned of GOD of Things not seen as yet, moved with Fear,

By Faith the Patriarch Noah, the second common Ancestor of Mankind, being admonished by a divine Oracle, concerning Things which were not yet seen, and Things of

7

(b) Approacheth to GOD, and pretends to walk with him.] Raphelius hath shewn, that the original Word προσερχομενον is applied in the Greek Classics, to coming to GOD by Prayer; and it is used in Chap. x. 1, 22. and xii. 22, 23. for approaching to God in any Act of divine Worship. He therefore justly observes, that it may here be taken in a larger Sense, and refer to that steady Course of Piety and Virtue, which is implied in pleasing GOD, or walking with him, as in the former Verse Enoch is said to have done, and which in the preceding Clause, it is declared to be impossible for any one to do without Faith.

Sect. 16. of such a Nature, that no one had ever seen or heard of any Thing parallel to them, the Dissolution of the World by a Flood, and the Destruction of all its Inhabitants, believed and revered the awful Threatning. And *being impressed with* a pious and, in that Connection, most rational *Fear* of the divine Judgments, with immense Labour and Cost, amidst all the Insults of prophane and wicked Men ; *prepared an Ark*, which GOD taught him to build, *for the Salvation of his House* and Family ; *by Means of which he condemned the unbelieving World* (i), by bearing a publick and convincing Testimony against them. *And thus he became Heir of the Righteousness which is obtained by Faith* (k) : He was pronounced by GOD a righteous Person, though his Character was not absolutely free from Imperfections, and became by divine Grace intitled to the Promise of eternal Life, of which his temporal Deliverance, though so amazing, was only an Emblem.

8 *By Faith*, that illustrious Patriarch *Abraham*, from whom you justly esteem it a peculiar Honour and Happiness to be descended, *being called by the GOD of Glory*, who appeared to him, *to go out*, from his Father's House and native Land, *to a distant Place*, which GOD promised that *he should afterwards receive for an Inheritance*, obeyed without disputing or murmuring, *and went out*, though *he knew not at all whither he was going*, or to which Part of the World he was to steer his Course, humbly resigning

Fear, prepared an Ark to the saving of his House ; by the which he condemned the World, and became Heir of the Righteousness which is by Faith.

8 By Faith Abraham when he was called to go out into a Place which he should after receive for an Inheritance, obeyed ; and he went out, not knowing whither he went.

(i) *Condemned the World.*] 'Tis plain that here, as in many other Places, a Person is said to *condemn* those against whom he furnishes out Matter of Accusation, in which View *Titus* iii. 11. may be understood. See the *Note* there.

(k) *Heir of the Righteousness.*] *Bishop Cumberland* observes, that *Noah* is the first, to whom the Name of *righteous Man* is applied in Scripture. *Cumb. Orig. Gent.* pag. 418.

(l) *With*

9 By Faith he sojourned in the Land of Promise, as in a strange Country, dwelling in Tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the Heirs with him of the same Promise.

10 For he looked for a City which hath Foundations, whose Builder and Maker is GOD.

11 Through Faith also Sarai herself received Strength to conceive Seed, and was delivered of a Child when she was past Age, because she

ing himself to divine Providence to mark Sect. 16. out his Journey and his Abode. By

*Faith, he sojourned all the Remainder of his Days in the Land of Promise, when he knew it to be so, as [in] a strange Country, without having any Property there, unless it was that of a Sepulchre towards the Close of his Life; dwelling in Tents, easily moved from one Place to another, some Part of the Time with Isaac and Jacob (1); who, in their Succession, were Heirs with him of the same Promise, and Depositories of it, yet led the same Kind of wandering Life.* But

Heb. XI. 9.

10

he passed from Place to Place with Cheerfulness; for he expected at length to be led on to a City, and that not such a one as he had left in his native Land, or such as he saw in Canaan, or even in Egypt, grand and populous as some of their Buildings were; the Object of his joyful and confident Expectation, was that City, which alone hath firm and immoveable Foundations, in Comparison with which they were but like a frail Tabernacle; a City, of which GOD [is] the Builder and Former, who drew and executed the grand Plan, and laid out upon it all the richest Ornaments, which might raise it to a Magnificence, worthy of his own Abode, and the Inheritance of his beloved Children.

*By Faith, Sarai herself, notwithstanding some Mixture of Suspicion, at length, as the worthy Consort of such an Husband, and worthy Mother of such an Offspring, received Strength for the Conception of Seed, and brought forth a Child beyond the due Time of Age for such a Purpose, when she was ninety*

11

(1) *With Isaac and Jacob.*] It is plain, from the Account of the Lives of these Patriarchs, that Jacob was born fifteen Years before Abraham died; and the Oracle given to Isaac before the Birth of his Children, would sufficiently intimate to Abraham, that he was the Heir of the Promise.

Sect. 16. ninety Years old, and in the Course of Nature absolutely incapable of being a Mother; *because she accounted him who had promised, to be the faithful and Almighty GOD, who who could with infinite Ease accomplish an Event, which then seemed to be, and indeed*

she judged him faithful who had promised.

Heb. XI. 11.

12 was, unparalleled. *Therefore by this mighty Principle of Faith in her, and in Abraham, there sprang even from one Father, and he in this Respect, as it were, dead, [a Posterity] in Multitude as the Stars of the Heaven, and as the Sand upon the Sea-shore innumerable (m); according to that divine Promise, which carried its Efficacy into so many remoter Ages, and retains it even to this Day.*

12 Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the Stars of the Sky in Multitude, and as the Sand which is by the Sea-shore innumerable.

13 Now *all these* worthy and excellent Persons, of whom I have here been speaking, *died in Faith, not having received the Blessings exhibited in the Promises; but having seen them afar off, and having been fully persuaded [of them], and embraced [them] with the most cordial Affection, and greatest Ardor of Mind, and having, through the whole Course of their Lives, confessed that they were Strangers and Sojourners on Earth; as we know that these holy Patriarchs, and some of their most eminent Descendents did.* (Gen. xxiii. 4. xlvii. 9. 1 Chron. xxix. 15.

13 These all died in Faith, not having received the Promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were Strangers and Pilgrims on the Earth.

14 Psa. xxxix. 12. cxix. 19, 54.) *For they who say such Things as these, and speak of themselves as Strangers and Pilgrims, plainly*


14 For they that say such Things, declare plainly that they seek a Country.

(m) *In Multitude as the Stars of Heaven &c.] Mr. Hallett observes here a great Propriety in the Apostle's saying, that they should be in Multitude as the Stars of Heaven, and as the Sand on the Sea-shore innumerable; there being an Impossibility of numbering the latter, whereas the former, since they have been reduced into Constellations, have been numbered with a considerable Degree of Exactness. See Hallett in loc. where he endeavours to account, consistently with this Observation, for Psa. cxlvii. 4. He telleth the Number of the Stars, and calleth them all by their Names, as if this were the peculiar Prerogative of God.*

(n) *Better*

15 And truly, if they had been mindful of that *Country*, from whence they came out, they might have had Opportunity to have returned:

16 But now they desire a better *Country*, that is, an heavenly: Wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their GOD: For he hath prepared for them a City.

plainly express that they seek a *Country* (n), Sect. 16. different from that in which they dwell, 

when they use such Language. *And as* Heb. XI. 15.

for these excellent Men, if indeed they had been mindful of that *Country* from which they came out, they might sure have had an Opportunity of returning to it; for they were a considerable Body, and they might have marched back without the Probability of meeting with any Resistance, and might have expected a Subsistence among the Relations of their Family, who were themselves in a prosperous State, and often expressed on proper Occasions, their Regard to these their illustrious Kinsmen.

Now therefore it appears, that they were desirous of a better, that is, an heavenly [*Country*] (o); for there was no earthly *Country*, which they seem to have been pursuing. And indeed this is the great Excellence of their Character, to be governed by such Views; therefore GOD determined to bestow this happy Land upon them, and he is not ashamed to be called their GOD, in such a peculiar Manner as he has assumed the Title, because he hath prepared them such a City as they sought; whereas if he had done nothing more for them, than he did here upon Earth, it would have been beneath his Dignity to have professed that Relation; as the Title naturally imports some Thing great and excellent, far beyond what these Patriarchs received, and indeed what any can possibly receive, in this mortal and transitory Life.

(n) *Seek a Country*: πατριδα.] The original Word is very emphatical; it signifies, as it were, a native *Country*, or a *Country* in which their *Father* dwelt, and is opposed to that in which they were *Strangers* and *Pilgrims*.

(o) *Better Country, that is, an heavenly.*] The Argument, according to the Turn I have given it, is much the same with that which our Lord urges; *Mat.* xxii. 32.

IMPROVE.



## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Ver. 6. **L**ET the many glorious *Examples of Faith*, which are here set before us, animate our Souls to Imitation, and excite in us a generous Desire of acting upon that noble and sublime Principle, *without which it is impossible to please GOD*. And oh, may what we call *our Faith* be not merely a speculative and ineffectual Assent to the Truth, even of the most weighty Propositions; but a *firm Persuasion* of their Certainty, and a deep Conviction of their

Ver. 1. Importance; that we also may *obtain a good Report*.

Ver. 2.

Ver. 3. May we believe in GOD, as the *Former* and Support of universal Nature, as most assuredly *existing*, and as most bountifully *rewarding all that seek him with Sincerity and Diligence*. So shall

Ver. 6. our *Sacrifices* be acceptable to him, as those of *Abel* were, while

Ver. 4. with him we look to that great Sacrifice and *Atonement*, of which his Victim was the appointed Representation. Like *Enoch* we shall

Ver. 5. then be animated to *walk with GOD*, and favoured with divine Intercourse and Communications. And though we cannot expect a *Translation* like his, which should exempt us from the common Lot of Mortality, we shall be secure of Admission into the *Paradise of GOD* above, and in due Time shall ascend to it in our

Ver. 7. compleat Persons. We shall then, like *Noah*, find our Safety in the midst of a dissolving World, and while Sinners are condemned, be found *the Heirs of Righteousness*.

Ver. 8. While we wait for this Happiness, let us endeavour to approve ourselves the genuine *Children of Abraham, the Father of the Faithful*. Ever attentive to the *Divine Call*, may we in *Obedience* to it, be willing *to go forth, though we do not particularly know whither*; and with an Intrepidity like his, may we even be ready to exchange *Worlds*, at the Command of GOD, ignorant as we are of what lies beyond the Grave; thinking it enough, that we know it is a Land, which GOD hath promised as the Inheritance of his Children. It is indeed *a City that hath Foundations*, in Comparison of which all the most magnificent and established Buildings of the Children of Men are but mean and moveable *Tents*.

Ver. 10.

Ver. 16. GOD boasts in the Title of its *Builder and Maker*, having formed and fashioned it for the highest Displays of his Glory, and his Love; and in Reference to it *he is not ashamed to be called our GOD*; for by bestowing it upon us, he answers *all* which that high and glorious *Title* might import. May we ever desire this



as our *better Country*, and live as its Citizens ought; *confessing ourselves*, in Reference to it, to be *Pilgrims and Strangers upon the Earth*. And though we here receive not the Accomplishment of the Promises, may we keep our Eyes on the *Objects* they exhibit, how distant soever they may seem; and being *persuaded of them*, may we *embrace them*; embrace them even with our dying Arms, and breath out our prepared and willing Spirits, in full Assurance that we are going to receive and possess them.

S E C T. XVII.

*The Apostle further dilates upon Examples and Instances of Faith in Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Joseph, and Moses. Heb. XI. 17,---29.*

HEBREWS XI. 17.

BY Faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the Promises, offered up his only begotten Son:

HEBREWS XI. 17.

I Have already mentioned some glorious Instances of the Faith of Abraham, our illustrious Progenitor; but I should be far from doing Justice to my Subject, if I were not to add another, the most celebrated of all. You will remember therefore, that it was *by Faith* that *Abraham* was supported, *when he was tried*, in that most severe Instance, and at the divine Command offered his Son, his only Son, *Isaac* whom he loved; *yea, he who had received the Promises*, which terminated not only in his Seed, but in Isaac by Name, *offered his only begotten [Son]*, in whom they so centred, that they must necessarily have failed if he had perished without any Offspring. So that nothing seemed more difficult, on Principles of common Reason, than the Reconciliation of the Promise with the Command. Even when he was destined to the Altar, *concerning whom it was said, In Isaac shall thy Seed be called;* (Gen. xxi. 12.)

Sect. 17.

Heb. XI. 17.

18 Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall thy Seed be called:

18

yet

Sect. 17. yet his triumphant Faith surmounted even such an Obstacle, and it was as wise and rational as it was pious and heroick;

Heb. XI. 19. Reasoning within himself as he did, *that GOD was able even to raise [him] from the Dead (a)*; and consequently that he could have brought Isaac to Life again, if he had really expired under the Sacrificial Knife, and been reduced to Ashes: *From whence he received him even in a Figure (b)*. For as his Production was a Miracle, raising him, as it were, from the dead Bodies of those, who in a Course of Nature had no Hope of Children; so he was in another Sense raised from the Dead, when GOD gave him back to Abraham in the Mount, in that awful Transaction, in which was so significant a Representation of Christ's Day, (John viii. 56) and of the Method which GOD took for our Redemption, in the Sacrifice of his only-begotten Son.

20 By Faith, in a Revelation which he then received from GOD, under that superior Direction, *Isaac* when advanced in Age blessed his two Children, *Jacob and Esau (c)*, and uttered some remarkable Oracles concerning Things long to come, and of such a Nature, that

19 Accounting that GOD was able to raise him up, even from the dead; from whence also he received him in a Figure.

20 By Faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning Things to come.

(a) Reasoning that GOD was able even to raise him.] Archbishop Tillotson justly observes, that his Faith was in this Respect the more admirable, as, so far as we can learn, there never had been one single Instance of a Resurrection from the dead *in, or before, the Days of Abraham.*

(b) In a Figure: εν παραβολη.] Some think this implies, that his Birth was a Kind of Resurrection from the dead. But the learned Dr. Warburton contends earnestly for it, that εν παραβολη intimates that the whole Transaction was *parabolical* or *typical* of the Method, GOD would take for the Salvation of Men. The learned Wolfius is of the same Opinion, (*Curæ Philolog. Vol. iv. pag. 762.*) and observes, in Support of it, that the Greek Word παραβολη answers to the Hebrew כּוּשֵׁל, and is so used by the Seventy; and that the Hebrews are wont to say כּוּשֵׁל, *in or by a Parable or Figure*, when they would express a *typical Representation*. He imagines this Interpretation to be the more probable, because the Apostle hath put a Mark of Emphasis upon εν παραβολη by prefixing και to it, *even in a Figure.*

(c) Blessed Jacob.] He was persuaded that GOD would one Way or another make good his Promises to them, though he could not certainly tell *how*, and was mistaken in the Person.

(d) War-

that no human Foresight could possibly reach them. Sect. 19.

21 By Faith Jacob when he was a dying, blessed both the Sons of Joseph; and worshipped leaning upon the Top of his Staff.

By Faith Jacob, when dying, blessed each of the Sons of Joseph, in full Dependence on the Divine Promise of an Inheritance in Canaan; appointing these his Grand-Children, Tribes in Israel; foretelling the Superiority of Ephraim the younger, to Manasseh the elder; and in thankful Acknowledgment of that divine Goodness, which he had so long experienced, at the same Time worshipped (d), bowing down upon the Top of his Staff, with which he supported himself as he sat on the Side of his Bed (e). Heb. XI. 21.

22 By Faith Joseph when he died, made mention of the departing of the Children of Israel; and gave Commandment concerning his Bones.

Again, it was by Faith that Joseph, when dying, mentioned the Departure of the Children of Israel out of Egypt, as a Fact which should certainly come to pass, though at a long Distance of Time; and then in Token of his intire Dependence upon it, and Expectation of the Inheritance they would then possess, he gave a Charge concerning the carrying his Bones with them, to be interred in the Sepulchre of his Fathers in Canaan. 22

23 By Faith Moses when he

The Case of our illustrious Law-giver will also furnish us with farther glorious Examples 23

(d) *Worshipped.*] He thought it so great a Privilege to be buried in the Land of Canaan, that he bowed his Head, in Token of Thankfulness for it; which was another Demonstration of Faith in GOD's Promise. Gen. xlvii. 30, 31.

(e) *On the Top of his Staff,* as he sat on the Side of his Bed.] In the Passage referred to Gen. xlvii. 31. it is said according to our English Version, Israel bowed himself upon his Bed's Head. The Apostle says, he worshipped upon the Top of his Staff; and this agrees with the Greek and Syriac Translation; and Wolfius adds, that the Seventy always render the Hebrew Word מטה, a Staff. Mr. Hallett therefore, in a learned Note upon this Place, is of Opinion that the Hebrew Word signifies either a Bed or a Staff, and that our English Translators too implicitly followed the Modern Jews, and supposed it here to signify a Bed, in Opposition to the Authority of the Seventy and of the Apostle. The Passages may possibly be reconciled, if there be any Occasion for it, by the Circumstance mentioned in the Paraphrase, as it is not likely that Jacob was now in Bed, (see Gen. xlvii. 29.) but he might very probably be sitting on the Side of it. His leaning on the Top of his Staff shews that he was very old and feeble; and this Circumstance, saith Mr. Hallett, is very pertinently mentioned by the Apostle, to intimate that feeble as he was, he would worship GOD in the best Manner he was able.

Sect. 17. amplex of that, which was in him a Kind  
 Heb. XI. 23. of hereditary Virtue; for it was by *Faith*,  
 that *Moses* when he was just born, was hidden  
 three Months, by his pious Parents in their  
 own House; because they saw [he was] a  
 graceful Child, who seemed by his Aspect  
 to promise something uncommon. And  
 they therefore determined, if possible, to  
 preserve his Life, and feared not the Com-  
 mandment of the King, requiring all Israeli-  
 tish Parents, on Pain of Death, to give up  
 their Male-Children, that they might be  
 thrown into the River.

he was born, was hid three  
 Months of his Parents, be-  
 cause they saw he was a pro-  
 der Child; and they were  
 not afraid of the King's  
 Commandment.

- 24 By *Faith* this *Moses*, when he was grown  
 up (f) to Maturity of Age, and become  
 great in the Dignities and Preferments of  
 the Egyptian Court, on full Consideration  
 of all that could be pleaded in Favour of se-  
 cular Views, deliberately refused to be any  
 longer called, as he had before been, the Son  
 of Pharaoh's Daughter, but boldly professed  
 himself an Israelite, and interposed to vin-  
 dicate his Brethren from their Oppression:
- 25 Choosing much rather to partake with the  
 People of GOD in their Affliction, than to  
 enjoy the temporary and transient Pleasures of  
 Sin, which he might have expected, had  
 he continued in that magnificent, but cor-  
 rupt Court. Esteeming the Reproach of  
 Christ,

24 By Faith Moses, when  
 he was come to Years, re-  
 fused to be called the Son of  
 Pharaoh's Daughter;

25 Choosing rather to suf-  
 fer Affliction with the Peo-  
 ple of GOD, than to enjoy  
 the Pleasures of Sin for a  
 Season;

26 Esteeming the Re-  
 proach

(f) Grown up.] Some would more literally render it *grown great*; that is, a *great Man* in Power and Dignity. But the Version I have preferred is justified by *Erasmus Schmidius*, and by the learned *Bos*, who, in Support of it, cites a remarkable Passage from *Homer*: (*Exercit. Philolog. pag. 252.*) And it appears by the Account of *Stephen, Acts xii. 23* that *Moses* was now forty Years old. I have given a Hint of both Interpretation in the *Paraphrase*. — Some are of Opinion, that this Passage refers to the Story which *Josephus* tells us, of his trampling on the Crown when a Boy; and that it is as if the *Apostle* had said, "He did not do it as a *puerile* Action, and when he "understood not the Value of Things; but when he knew all the Worth it could "be supposed to have." See *Tillotson's Works, Vol. ii. pag. 20.* — If *Josephus's* Account be right, *Pharaoh's* Daughter had no Son of her own, and adopted him, with some View to make him Successor to the Crown; but I do not apprehend the Laws of *Egypt* would have permitted that, as he was of *foreign* Birth.

(g) *Reproach*

proach of Christ greater Riches than the Treasures of Egypt: For he had Respect unto the Recompence of the Reward.

Christ (g), the Infamy that he might meet Sect. 17. with in acknowledging himself one of the Israelites, whom Christ had been pleased to take under his special Protection, and whom God had acknowledged for his anointed People, *greater Riches than all the Treasures in Egypt*, though so opulent a Kingdom: For he directed his Regards to the Recompence of Reward (b), which he expected to receive in the invisible and eternal World, and to possess, when Princes should have quitted their Thrones, and all the Pride of Monarchs be laid low. It was also by Faith, that he left Egypt in that resolute and heroick Manner; not fearing the Wrath of the King (i), when he charged him on Pain of Death, to see his Face no more; but before he went, boldly predicted the Destruction of the first-born, which was to follow all the dreadful Judgments already executed: For he was inwardly strengthened to this Dignity and Steadiness of Conduct, as seeing him who is the great invisible Being, ever present to the Eye of the believing Mind,

Heb. IX. 26.

27 By Faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the Wrath of the King: For he endured as seeing him who is invisible.

27

(g) *Reproach of Christ.*] There are some who understand this of the Reproach of Israel, God's anointed People, and so would render it, *the Reproach of the Anointea*; but I rather apprehend, considering the Sense in which this Name is every where else used by the Apostle, that it refers to the Relation in which Christ stood to Israel, as his peculiar People; so that Reproach borne on their Account was borne for him. (Compare 1 Cor. x. 9.) and Mr. Fleming, (*Christology*, Vol. i. pag. 169.) urges this as an Argument for Christ's Existence before the Time of Moses. Du Mont supposes that the Israelites expected Deliverance by the Messiah, and that the Egyptians insulted them on that Account; and it is certain, Reproach borne on the Account of Christ, may be, and is called the *Reproach of Christ*. Compare Heb. xiii. 13. Du Mont's Serm. pag. 151,—155. And for the Illustration of this he quotes, and by this Key explains, Psal. lxxxix. 50,—52.

(b) *Recompence of Reward.*] That Reward could not be temporal Grandeur, which he might have had with much greater Security and Advantage in Egypt; nor the Possession of Canaan, which he never saw. It must therefore be the eternal Inheritance, which was discovered to him by the Principle, here so largely described and recommended.

(i) *Fearing the Wrath of the King.*] As it is so expressly said, (*Exod. ii. 14, 15.*) that when he first quitted Egypt, and went to sojourn in Midian, he was afraid; I apprehend the Assertion of the Apostle, that he did not fear the Wrath of the King, refers to the Instance mentioned in the Paraphrase.

Sect. 17. Mind, and whose Presence and Friendship is of such infinite Importance, that he who  
 Heb. XI. 27. fixes his Regards on him, will never, by any Consideration, be influenced to offend him, nor much impressed with the Fear of any Thing that would tempt him to do this.

28 By Faith that GOD would assuredly send his Angel on the vindictive Design foretold, and spare the Houses properly distinguished, *he celebrated the Passover, and the pouring forth the Blood of the Lamb, which he sprinkled on the Lintels, and the Posts of the Doors, as the Mark of committing those who dwell under such Roofs to the Divine Protection; that he who destroyed the first-born might not touch them, under the Security of that peaceful Sign: An Emblem of the Safety we expect by Means of the Blood of Jesus, the true and great Passover, who is sacrificed for us.*

29 Again, by Faith operating in Moses, and in its Degree in them likewise, *they passed over the Red-sea (k) sedately, as if they had marched on dry Land, while its Waters by the divine Command divided, and left the Channel bare to them, so that they completed their March through it, and arrived safely on the opposite Shore; which the Egyptians making an insolent and rash Attempt to do, were all drowned, and sunk like Lead in the mighty Waters, which returned upon them with irresistible Violence.*

28 Through Faith he kept the Passover, and the sprinkling of Blood, lest he that destroyed the first-born, should touch them.

29 By Faith they passed through the Red-sea, as by dry Land: Which the Egyptians assaying to do, were drowned.

(k) *By Faith they passed.* Mr. Saurin observes, with his usual Delicacy, that since it very evidently appears, that of those who passed through the Sea, there were *some* with whom GOD was not well pleased, 1 Cor. x. 5. we cannot infer, that *all* the Persons afterwards mentioned by Name, as Instances of Faith, were, on the whole, in such a State of Acceptance with him, as to be entitled to his *everlasting Favour.* Saurin's Sermon. Vol. ix. pag. 47.

IMPROVE-

I M P R O V E M E N T.

LET these glorious Instances of *Faith* be preserved in our *Memory*, and have their due Influence upon our *Hearts*. When GOD calls us to resign our dearest Comforts, let us think of that *heroick Act of Faith*, by which *Abraham offered up Isaac*, and seem'd in him to sacrifice *all the Promises*, as well as his Son. Yet he therein acted a Part the most strictly *rational*; as rightly concluding, that GOD could with infinite Ease call him *back to Life* again, and make a Person, who had poured forth all his Blood on the Altar, and been reduced to Ashes there, *the Father of many Nations*. Let dying Parents commit their Children to the Care of the ever-living GOD, like *Jacob*; and *worship him, who hath fed them all their Lives long*, and who will never forsake those that put their Trust in Him. Let those who are called to glorify GOD, by opposing the unjust Commands of great and powerful Men, remember the *Parents of Moses*, and remember their illustrious *Child*. Does he now repent that wonderful *Choice* that he made at an *adult Age*? Does he now wish, that he had been called *the Son of Pharaoh's Daughter*, rather than the *Servant of GOD, faithful in all his House*? Does he wish, that he had secured the *Treasures of Egypt*, and the *temporary Pleasures of Sin*, and declined that *Reproach of Christ*, which has ended in eternal Glory? Our Hearts, our Consciences will soon answer: Let us then, like him, *have Respect unto the Recompence of Reward*. Let us endeavour more frequently to direct our Regards to GOD, and live *as seeing Him who is invisible*.

Ver. 17.

Ver. 19.

Ver. 20.

Ver. 21.

Ver. 23.

Ver. 24.

Ver. 25.

Ver. 26.

Ver. 27.

Ver. 28.

Ver. 29.

And while our Faith is thus viewing him, let us look with Pleasure to *the Blood of Sprinkling*, which places under his Protection; which introduces us to his Favour; which secures us from the *destroying Angel*. He will lead us on safely to his *Heavenly Canaan*; if we fall not by *Unbelief*. He will open our Passage *through Seas* of Difficulty; he will send down upon us every suitable Supply, and would much sooner command the *Skies* to rain down *Bread*, or the *flinty Rock* to melt into *Streams of Water*, than desert his People in the *Wilderness*. Let all his Wonders of Power, and of Love, to *Israel* of old, animate our Faith; and let them all quicken our Obedience; and under a Sense of our own Weakness, and the Importance of this leading, this princely Grace, let us daily pray; *Lord, increase our Faith*.

S E C T.

## S E C T. XVIII.

*The Apostle concludes his Discourse on Faith, by hinting at many other glorious Instances of it, and besides several recorded in Scripture, refers also to the Case of those who suffered under the Persecution of Antiochus Epiphanes. Heb. XI. 30, --- XII. 2.*

HEBREWS XI. 30.

Sect. 18.  
Heb. XI. 30.

I Have mentioned the Faith, which our Forefathers exercised on the miraculous Power of GOD to lead them out of Egypt, and through the Red-sea; and I must farther observe, that they continued under the Influence of the same Principle, when they came into the promised Land: For it was *by Faith* in those who marched round the strongly fortified *Walls of Jericho*, following the Ark, and who at the appointed Signal blew the Trumpets of Rams-horns and shouted, that, contrary to all sensible Appearances of Possibility, they *fell down*, smitten by the Hand of GOD, without any human Force, *having been only surrounded seven Days* in solemn Silence, according to the divine Command; how absurd a Spectacle soever their Procession might appear to the besieged. It was *by Faith*, and in Consequence of it, that *Rahab the Harlot did not perish with the Infidels* of that City among whom she dwelt; *having received the Spies* hospitably and dismissed them *in Peace*, when an Alarm was taken by her Fellow-citizens, and they searched for them to destroy them. She therefore hazarded her own Life to preserve theirs, believing them to be the Servants of the Almighty Jehovah, and assuring herself that he could protect her in her

HEBREWS XI. 30.

BY Faith the Walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about seven Days.

31 By Faith the Harlot Rahab perished not with them that believed not, when she had received the Spies with Peace.



her Efforts for their Security, and could make Sect. 18.  
 them the Means of delivering her and her Family; which was accordingly the Case. Heb. XI. 31.

32 And what shall I more say? For the Time would fail me to tell of Gideon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae, of David also, and Samuel, and of the Prophets:

And what shall I say farther upon this copious, this inexhaustible Subject? For the Time would fail me, if I should attempt to discourse at large concerning Gideon, who with so small a Band of Men cut off so many Thousands of the Midianites; and Barak, who freed Israel from the Oppression of Jabin, and routed Sisera his General; and Samson, who slew so many Thousands of the Philistines with the Jaw-bone of an Ass, and performed so many other astonishing Achievements: I might also speak of the Victory of Jephtha over the Ammonites, and the heroick Acts of David, in his Combat with Goliath, and his other frequent Encounters with the Enemies of God, and his Israel; and even of Samuel, who though his Character seemed more pacifick, as a Prophet and a Judge, yet led on the Armies of the Lord on a remarkable Occasion, to an illustrious Victory. I might also enlarge on the celebrated Histories of Elijah, Elisha, and others of the Prophets, particularly Daniel, and the three young Worthies, whose magnanimous History he hath particularly recorded. I will not dwell on the History of those Heroes, who have transmitted their Names to our Age, and shall transmit them to all who are to come, with such distinguished Honour; but shall content myself with observing, that it was by the Exercise of this great Principle, that they were raised to those sublime Degrees of Reputation and Glory. It was by Faith that some of them, after many a painful Struggle, subdued the Kingdoms of those Princes which had oppressed God's Israel; others of them wrought

33 Who through Faith subdued Kingdoms, wrought Right-

33

Sect. 18. wrought Righteousness (a), and carried their Obedience to GOD, and their Zeal for his Law to the most extraordinary Degrees; others of them obtained Promises of the most unexpected Events in their Favour, which were exactly and circumstantially performed; others stopped the Mouths of Lions, which came roaring against them, as if they would have devoured them in a Moment, or into whose Dens they were thrown.

righteousness, obtained Promises, stopped the Mouths of Lions,

34 Nay as to some of them we are expressly told, that they quenched the Violence of the Fire, when they were actually thrown into the Furnace; others of them escaped the Edge of the Sword (b), when it was just lifted up to destroy them: they were strengthened in the midst of Weakness (c), and many of them became so valiant in Battle, that they repelled the Armies of the Aliens, or foreign Enemies, when they encamped against them.

34 Quenched the Violence of Fire, escaped the Edge of the Sword, out of Weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in Fight, turned to Flight the Armies of the Aliens.

35 There are also recorded in the prophetick Writings other Instances, in which Women received their dead [Children] by a Resurrection from the Dead; which till these Examples, had never been known, or heard of. (Compare 1 Kings xvii. 22, 23. 2 Kings iv. 36, 37.) And the credible Records of succeeding Ages inform us of the Triumphs of Faith in a still more glorious Degree; in which several others, and particularly seven Children, and one pious and holy Mother, were tortured (d) in the most

35 Women received their Dead raised to Life again: and others were tortured, not

(a) Wrought Righteousness.] Some have interpreted this not only of their leading Lives exemplary for Holiness, but administering Justice to others. But I do not know that the Phrase has ever that Signification.

(b) Edge of the Sword.] Probably this may refer to the Deliverance of David from the Sword of Saul, and of Elijah, and Micajah, from that of Abab.

(c) Strengthened in Weakness.] Some refer this to their being recovered from Sickness by Faith and Prayer, as Hezekiah, Job, and David were.

(d) Were tortured.] The original Word signifies a peculiar Sort of Torture, which was called that of the Tympanum, or Drum, when they were extended in the most violent

not accepting Deliverance; that they might obtain a better Resurrection.

most inhuman Manner, to compel them to Sect. 18.  
renounce their Religion, and commit Idola-  
try; but endured all with invincible Forti-  
tude, *not accepting Deliverance (e)*, when  
it was offered them, nor even Riches and  
Preferments added to the Proposal, *that they*  
*might obtain a better Resurrection (f)*, than  
their Persecutors could offer them, when  
they seemed more than half dead; even a  
Resurrection to the Enjoyment of an ever-  
lasting Kingdom in the Heavens. *And* 36  
*others*, in the same glorious Cause, *received*  
*the Trial of cruel Mockings and Scourg-*  
*ings (g)*; but neither the Derision, nor the  
Pain, could prevail upon them to desert  
their Profession. *Yea*, they proved *also* the  
utmost Force of Bonds and Imprisonment, in  
which many of them languished for tedious  
Months

36 And others had Trial of cruel Mockings, and Scourgings, yea moreover of Bonds and Imprisonment.

violent Manner, and then beaten with Clubs, which must give exquisite Pain, when all the Parts were on such a Stretch. See *Wolffius, Curæ Philolog. in loc.*

(e) *Not excepting Deliverance.*] Probably the Apostle here refers to 2 *Mac.* viii. 11. 14. 23. 29. where there is an evident Reference to a *Resurrection*; which plainly shews it then to have been assuredly believed among the *Jews*. *Dr. Scott* thinks it was revealed to them by *Daniel*, and *Ezekiel*, in order to prepare them for those severe Trials, which they were afterwards to undergo for the Sake of their Religion. *Scott's Christian Life, Vol. 5. pag. 208.* But it may be justly debated, how far the Passages referred to, could afford certain Proof of a Resurrection. It is observable, that *Josephus*, being probably ashamed to avow a Hope which the *Heathens* had so much derided, suppressed this Circumstance, and only hints at some Expectation of a *future State*.

(f) *Better Resurrection.*] *Dr. Owen* understands this, as if the *Apostle* had meant, *The better Resurrection*, that is, the Resurrection which is better than the *Resurrection of the Wicked*. But it is observed by *Jacobus Capellus*, that most probably, in that Case, the Article would have been prefixed, *της κρείττονος αναστασεως*. The Opinion of *Crellius* and *Dr. Hammond* is, that the Word, *better*, is to be understood as opposed to a *present Remission of their Torments*; and this Sense I have adopted in the *Paraphrase*; supposing it bears a Respect to the Deliverance which they would not accept, mentioned in the Words immediately preceding. *Mr. Hallett* is exceeding clear, that the Opposition lies between the Resurrection to *eternal Life* which these Martyrs expected, and the Resurrection of the dead Children to *Life in this World*, mentioned in the first Clause of the Verse.

(g) *Scourgings.*] *Jeremiah* was buffeted, *Jer.* xx. 2. and some think, scourged too, *Chap. xxxvii. 15.* But *Scourging* was so frequent a Punishment, both alone, and before a capital Execution, (Compare *Dr. Lardner's Credibility of the Gospel History, Vol. i. Book 1. Chap. 8. §. 13.* and *Dr. Scott on Matthew xxvii. 26.*) that it is probable, it was inflicted on many other pious Persons on Account of their Religion.

Sect. 18. Months and Years, under all the ill Usage  
 which commonly attends such Confinements.

Heb. XI. 37. And others were brought out from their Bonds to the most infamous and painful Executions; and *they were* some of them stoned, and others *sawn afunder* (b), they were *tempted* (i) by unheard of Cruelties on the one Hand, as well as the Offers of immediate Deliverance on the other, and at length *slain with the Sword*; they *wandred about*, cloathed in the meanest Manner, and sometimes, when their former Habits were worn out, only *in Sheepskins* (k) and *in Goat-skins*, being destitute of the common Accommodations of Life, *afflicted* and even *tormented*, sometimes by the Fury of their Enemies, and at other Times, by the Rigour of the Seasons. And though these were Persons of the most amiable and venerable Characters, of whom the World was not worthy that they should inhabit it; they *wandered in Desarts, and in Mountains, and in Dens, and Holes of the Earth*, that they might hide themselves, if possible, from the Rage of their Persecutors, who often, like Dogs hunting for their Prey, followed them even into these last Retreats, solitary and inhospitable as they were.

37 They were stoned, they were sawn afunder, were tempted, were slain with the Sword: they wandered about in Sheep-skins, and Goat-skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented:

38 (Of whom the World was not worthy) they wandered in desarts and in mountains, and in Dens and Caves of the Earth.

And

(b) *Sawn afunder.*] Dr. Prideaux, (*Connect. Vol. i. pag. 29.*) and many others, suppose the *Apostle* might here refer to the Tradition among the Jews, that the Prophet *Isaiab* was *sawn afunder* at the Command of *Manasseh*. *Calmet* understands by this Expression, *being torn in Pieces*, as it were, under a *threshing Instrument*, consisting of wooden Rollers, full of sharp Iron Teeth like a *Harrow*. Compare *Isai. xli. 15. xxviii. 27. 2 Sam. xii. 31. Calmet's Diss. Vol. ii. No. v. pag. 134, 135.*

(i) *Tempted.*] Some suppose a Mistake in the Reading, and that it should be *επυρωθησαν*, they were *seared* with a red hot Iron, or *burnt alive*; which undoubtedly would give a still stronger Sense. The learned *Albert*, (*Observat. Philolog. pag. 436.*) supposes, that instead of *επειραθησαν*, the *Apostle* wrote *εσπειραθησαν*, which expressed their being *squeezed to Death by Ropes* or *Cords* twisted, and drawn tight about the Body; or at least, *their being strangled*.

(k) *Sheepskins: μινλωσαι.*] The *Seventy*, in the Case of *Elijah*, translate the Word which we render *Mantle*, by *μινλωσιν*, a *Sheepskin*. That *Sheepskins* and *Goatskins*, or at least the Skins of some Animals, were frequently worn by the ancient Prophets seems to be intimated, *Zach. xiii. 4.*

(l) *That*

39 And these all having obtained a good Report through Faith, received not the Promise:

*And all these Heroes in different Ages, Sect. 18.* were supported under their respective Trials, severe and extream as they were, by the Exercise of a firm and lively Faith, in the Fidelity of GOD, and the invisible Rewards and Glories of a future State: And it was by this, that *having obtained a good Report*, they persevered to the End. But they *did not receive the full Accomplishment of the Promise* made to their Fathers, nor have they yet arrived to the full and compleat Enjoyment of that Glory, which Faith taught them to expect: GOD *having*, according to the Counsels of his infinite Wisdom, *provided something still better for us*, in the Gospel Revelation; that so the Beauty of his Conduct and Administration might be so much the more apparent; and *that they, without us, might not be made perfect (1)*; but all might end with the greatest Dignity and Propriety, in bringing all his Children together, to the full Consummation of their Hopes in Christ Jesus his Son, at the Time of his final and triumphant Appearance.

Heb. XI. 39.

40 GOD having provided some better Thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect.

40

XII. 1 Wherefore, seeing we also are compassed about

In the mean Time we may consider this glorious and triumphant Assembly, as looking down from the peaceful and blessed State at which many of them are already arrived, and observing the Manner in which we endeavour to follow them. And let the Thought animate us in a becoming Manner.

Heb. XII. 1.

*Being*

(1) *That they, without us, might not be made perfect.*] It is debated, whether this refers to the most perfect State of the Church on Earth, and so expresses a Decorum in the Conduct of Providence, in gradually improving the Church of GOD; or to the Glory of the future State. I have given in the Paraphrase what seemed to me the most noble and important Sense. — The learned Wolfius, (*Curæ Philolog. Vol. iv. pag. 774.*) mentions with Approbation the Exposition of Alexander More, to this Effect, that the Promise which these Worthies did not receive, related to the first personal Appearance of the Messiah: That the better Thing which GOD hath provided for us, is the Promise of Christ's second Appearance, that they might then be made perfect, but not without us, though we have received the Accomplishment of the first Promise without them.

Q 2

(m) *Being*

Se<sup>c</sup>t. 18. Being therefore, as we are, encompassed (m) with so great a Cloud of Witnesses (n), who  
 Heb. XII. 1 furround us on every Side in a vast innumerable Assembly, the Spectators of our Trial, let us lay aside every incumbering Weight, and especially the Sin, which in present Circumstances has the greatest Advantage [against us] (o), I mean, a Disposition to relinquish, or dissemble the Gospel, for Fear of Sufferings; [and] let us run with Patience and Perseverance, the Race which is set before us, resolutely persisting in it, how long and painful soever it may be. Looking off from every Object which would interrupt us in our Career, and fixing our Eyes upon Jesus, the Leader and Finisher of [our] Faith (p), who

about with so great a Cloud of Witnesses, let us lay aside every Weight, and the Sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with Patience the Race that is set before us.

2 Looking unto Jesus the Author and Finisher of our Faith; who for the Joy who

(m) *Being therefore encompassed &c. let us.*] Our Translators have rendered this, *Wherefore seeing we also*; connecting και with ημεις, whereas it should be joined with τοιγαρων, and considered as a Kind of *Expletive*.

(n) *Cloud of Witnesses.*] Cappellus thinks, this Expression is an Allusion to vast Numbers of Birds flying together like a Cloud, *Isai. lx. 8.* The Word *Witnesses* certainly alludes to the *Olympic Race*, where Persons were appointed to stand at the *Mark*, to observe who first came thither, and give Evidence in Favour of the *Conqueror*; upon whom therefore a *Crown* was bestowed according to their Testimony. The Allusion in *laying aside every Incumbrance*, is too evident to need further Illustration. See the next Note.

(o) *In present Circumstances has the greatest Advantage:* αμαρτιαν ευπεριστατον.] This (as some imagine) may signify a Sin which sits easily about us; which is explained of the *Vanity of the World*, that seems to be Matter of comparatively little Danger, yet may be a fatal Entanglement to us; as light Garments may to those, who run a Race, when they are blown about by the Wind. Others would render it, *The well circumstanced Sin*, in Opposition to what is απεριστατος, without any recommending Circumstance, or bare of Ornament. Thus it is illustrated by Dunlop, *Vol. i. Serm. xiii. pag. 309,—316.*

(p) *The Author and Finisher of our Faith.*] It must be confessed the Word [our] is not in the Original; but the Faith of which Christ is the Author and Finisher must be the Faith of Christians; and when he is said to be the Author and Finisher of our Faith, it must signify not only that he was an illustrious Example of it, but that, as our Leader, he brings us to it, and carries us on in the Exercise of it, till we attain the compleat Felicity, to which it was intended to introduce us.—The Word, looking, αποσπες, properly signifies our taking off our Regard from other Things, that we may fix them upon Christ.—Mr. Dunlop thinks Christ is called the Author and Finisher of Faith in Allusion to the Judges of the Games, who set Laws before the Contenders whereby they were to govern themselves, and then adjudged the Crowns to the Conquerors. Thus, says that excellent Writer, he eases us of our Burdens, animates our Faintness, retards the Progress of our Enemies, and at length will with his own Hand fit upon our Heads that beautiful Diadem, which he hath purchased with his own Blood.

(q) For

that was set before him, endured the Cross, despising the Shame, and is set down at the Right-hand of the Throne of GOD.

who called us out to this strenuous, yet glorious, Enterprize; who animates us by his Example, and supports us by his Grace, till the Season comes, in which he shall bestow upon us the promised Crown. He indeed is the most illustrious Example of all, *who for the Joy and Glory that was set before him (q)*, in the View of honouring his Heavenly Father, and procuring the Salvation of Men, and so passing to such exalted Honour and Felicity, *endured* all the Agonies of *the Cross*, *despising the Shame* of so ignominious an Execution. And accordingly, now the Infamy, the Pain and the Humiliation are ceased for ever, he is ascended to that World, where alone such consummate Goodness could receive its proper Reward. And there he *is set down* in conspicuous and peerless Majesty, *at the Right Hand of the glorious and exalted Throne of GOD*, there to live and reign in immortal Felicity and Dignity. And among all the illustrious Examples of Faith, by whom you may be animated and edified, there is none comparable to him.

Sect. 18.  
Heb. XII. 2.

### I M P R O V E M E N T.

**I**S it possible we should read those animated Periods, without feeling our Hearts glow with a sacred Ambition, of acting as becomes those who have heard such Tidings, and beheld such Examples! If the Triumphs of Faith in *Rahab*, and *Gideon*, and *Barak*, and *Samson*, and *Jeptba*, cannot move us, nor even those of *David*, and

Ver. 31, 32.

(q) *For the Joy that was set before him.*] Some would render it, *Instead of the Joy that lay before him*, meaning the Honour and Happiness he might have enjoyed in the present World. But *προκειμενης* has so evident a Reference to *Verse 1.* that I cannot by any means acquiesce in that Interpretation. Besides, the Word *αυτη* may well signify, *set against that Joy*, and then the Meaning will be, that he despised the Shame of the Cross, in *Comparison* of the Joy set before him. Nor can we imagine any Love more disinterested than that, which should make his recovering Sinners to GOD and Happiness, the great Joy of his Heart, and, in Subserviency to the Divine Glory, the grand Motive of his Actions and Sufferings.

- Sect. 18. of *Samuel*; if we are insensible of the material Prowess, which they exerted in firm Dependance on the *Lord GOD of Hosts*; let us behold other Combats, in which they who seemed *weaker*, became yet more gloriously victorious. Let us remember, not only the
- Ver. 33. *Mouths of Lions stopped*, but the *Violence of Fire quenched*, when the faithful Servants of *GOD* were thrown into it. Yea, let us be-
- Ver. 34. hold those who endured its unquenched Violence, and turned all those painful and terrible Sensations, into an heroic Occasion of expressing the superior Ardor of their *Love to GOD*, and the Stedfastness of their *Faith* in him. Let us remember those *Youths*, and
- Ver. 35. *Children*, and *Women*, among the rest of these Worthies, indeed among the worthiest of them, who were *tortured not accepting Deliverance, that they might obtain a better Resurrection*.
- In vain were all the Terrors of persecuting Rage and Cruelty, opposed to these Triumphs. They submitted to *Imprisonment*, and
- Ver. 36. *Banishment*, how dear soever Liberty, and their native Country, might be; they quitted their commodious Habitations for *Rocks* and
- Ver. 37. *Caves*, and their comfortable Apparel, for *Sheep-skins* and *Goat-skins*. And when *Desarts* and *Dens* could no longer shelter their Wretchedness, but they were seized by their blood-thirsty Enemies, they beheld, and endured, undismayed, the most horrid Instruments of
- Ver. 38. *Death*. When the piercing *Sword* entered their Vitals, when overwhelming *Stones* dashed them in Pieces, when the torturing *Saw* was tearing out their very Entrails, there was a Principle within superior to all these, which nothing could *pierce*, which nothing could *rend away*, which nothing could *overwhelm*. *GOD* hath done an Honour to our Nature in raising up such illustrious Persons, of
- Ver. 37. *whom the World was not worthy*, and whose distinguished Worth could never have been manifested in the Eyes of their Fellow-Creatures, had it not been called out to such rigorous Trials. Well might they rejoice on any Terms in their Dismission from a State of Existence, so far beneath the Elevation of their Views. And though their *Names* may be perished from among Men, and the distinct *History* of each lost in the Crowds of countless Multitudes, yet are they all in *Remembrance before GOD*; and the *Death* of each of *his Saints*, in such Circumstances, peculiarly *precious in his Sight*. They are now bathing in those Rivers of Delight, which flow thro' the celestial Paradise, and waiting the full Consummation of
- Ver. 38. their Hope in that *better Resurrection*, in the Views of which they suffered so bravely. In the mean Time, they *look down*, as it were, from the Battlements of Heaven upon *our Combats*, upon *our*
- Ver. 40. *Race*.



Race. Oh, let them not see us basely shrinking back, or loitering! Let us *lay aside every Weight*; let us, especially, guard against *the Sin which most easily besets us*. And to establish all our Fortitude, and to awaken all our Ardor, let us look to an Object brighter and nobler than all these, even to the *Son of GOD*, the *Sun of Righteousness*, shining in high Pre eminence above all this *Cloud*, and as it were gilding it by the Reflection of his effulgent Rays. Let us look to *Jesus*, who leads us on; to *Jesus*, who will compleat the Triumph of our *Faith*, and set the *Crown* on the Head of every one who *overcometh*! Let us daily think, what *Agony*, what *Ignominy*, he endured for us; and let every Consideration of noble Ambition, of Duty, and of Gratitude, fire our Souls, and add Wings to our Zeal: So shall we at length share in *his Joy*, and sit down victorious *with him on his Throne*, as he hath also overcome, and is set down with the Father on his Throne.

Sect. 18.  
Chap. XII. 1.

Ver. 2.

S E C T. XIX.

*The Apostle animates the believing Hebrews to bear and improve the Afflictions, to which they were exposed, and to exert themselves vigorously to promote the united Interest of Peace and Holiness. Heb. XII. 3,—14.*

HEBREWS XII. 3.

FOR consider him that endured such Contradiction of Sinners against himself,

HEBREWS XII. 3.

IN order to encourage you, my dear Sect. 19. Brethren, in your Christian Course, I have directed you, and I must again direct you, to the Lord Jesus Christ: For what can be more important, than to consider him (a), who with patient Fortitude endured such obstinate and perverse Contradiction of ungrateful Sinners against himself. Think how

Heb. XII. 3.

(a) Consider him: αναλογισαθε.] The original Word is very emphatical; and as Erasmus Schmidius observes, is a Metaphor taken from Arithmetical and Geometrical Proportions. So that it signifies the great Accuracy and Exactness with which they should consider the Author and Finisher of their Faith, and especially the Analogy between his Case, and their own.

(b) Resisted

- Sect. 19. how great and illustrious a Person he was, and what severe Things he suffered; *that* himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your Minds.
- Heb. XII. 3. *you may not grow weary in your Christian Course, nor faint in your Minds, when called to share in some Degree of his Trials.*
- 4 And indeed you will be inexcusable, if you should desert his Cause, on Account of any such Trials, as you have yet endured; for *you have not as yet undergone the severest Proofs of your Integrity, nor resisted unto Blood, striving against Sin (b), as he did,*
- 5 *who made his Life a Sacrifice to Duty. And ye seem to have forgotten the Exhortation (c) of the Word of GOD, which speaketh to you, as to his Sons, (Prov. iii. 11, 12.) saying, My Son, despise not the chastening of the Lord, as if it were a small Matter; nor faint and sink, when thou art rebuked by him; but avoid the Extrems of proud Insensibility,*
- 6 *and intire Dejection. For whom the Lord loveth, he correcteth, and scourgeth, with seeming Severity, every Son whom he receiveth (d) to peculiar Favour. It is evident therefore, that if ye endure chastening, GOD dealeth with you, as wise and affectionate Parents deal with their beloved Sons; for what Son is there whom the Father chasteneth not?*
- 4 Ye have not yet resisted unto Blood, striving against Sin.
- 5 And ye have forgotten the Exhortation, which speaketh unto you as unto Children, My Son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him.
- 6 For whom the Lord loveth, he chasteneth, and scourgeth every Son whom he receiveth.
- 7 If ye endure chastening, GOD dealeth with you as with Sons: For what Son is he whom the Father chasteneth not?

(b) *Resisted unto Blood.*] It has been justly observed by several *Commentators*, that there are many *Agonistical* Terms in this Context. In the Phrase before us there seems to be an Allusion to the *Pugiles*, or *Boxers*, who fought erect, with their Hands stretched out, and were often besmeared with Blood. *Mr. Saurin* justly observes in his beautiful Illustration of this *Text*, (*Serm. ix. pag. 90.*) that sometimes Men were killed by the Blows of the *Cestus*. See also *Dr. Whitby in loc.*

(c) *Ye have forgotten the Exhortation.*] *Beza*, and some others, choose to read this Clause with an Interrogation, *Have ye forgotten the Exhortation?*

(d) *Whom the Lord loveth, he correcteth, and scourgeth every Son whom he receiveth.*] There seems to be a beautiful Gradation in these Words. To *receive* signifies here to have a particular Regard for. Compare *Isai. xlii. 1.* in the *Seventy*. The Passage is quoted from *Prov. iii. 11, 12.* and the last Clause of the *Apostle's* Citation, which is, *And scourgeth every Son whom he receiveth*, is by our *English* Version, and the old *Latin*, there rendered, *even as a Father the Son in whom he delighteth*. And this is agreeable to the *modern Pointing*. But without any Change in the *Hebrew* Letters, the Clause may be translated as it is by the *Apostle*, agreeably to the Rendering of the *Seventy*, and some other *ancient Versions*. See *Mr. Hallett in loc.*

(e) *Bastards.*]

8 But if ye be without Chastisement, whereof all are Partakers, then are ye Bastards, and not Sons.

not, more or less? There are scarce any Children, who do not sometimes need Correction, and no wise and good Parent, who will always forbear it. Sect. 19.  
Heb. XII. 8.

*But if ye are without Chastisement, of which all the genuine Children are Partakers, then are ye treated as Men often treat Bastards (e), about whose Education they are often careless, as being ashamed of them, and looking upon them as a Scandal to their Families; and not as they treat their legitimate Sons, whom they intend to make their Heirs, and concerning whom they are solicitous, that they may be happy themselves, and a Credit and Comfort to the Family they stand related to; which a Child left to himself, without Correction, is by no means like to prove.*

9 Furthermore, we have had Fathers of our Flesh, which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in Subjection unto the Father of Spirits, and live?

*Now if (f) when we had Fathers of our Flesh, who corrected us, we gave [them] Reverence (g), and submitted patiently and quietly to their Discipline, shall we not much rather, on the justest Principles of filial Duty, be in Subjection to the great Father of our Spirits, by whom that nobler Part of our Nature was produced, in the Production of which our earthly Parents had no Share? And indeed we know this to be necessary, if we desire*

(e) *Bastards.*] In those dissolute Ages there were among the *Heathen* many base-born Children. And it is highly probable, that as for such, their Education, (like that of *Jeptba*, whose fatal Error might perhaps be owing to it,) was much neglected, so as to come almost into a *Proverb*.

(f) *Now if.*] Instead of *εἰ*, the *Syriac Version* seems to have read *εἰ δὲ*, *but if*. This Reading is followed by *Curcellæus*; *Beza* expresses some Approbation of it. — The learned *Albert*, and *Raphelius*, consider the Clause as a smart and animated Interrogation, and produce various Passages to show, that this is the Force of the *Greek Particle εἰ*.

(g) *When we had Fathers of our Flesh, — we gave them Reverence.*] It had indeed been more literally rendered, *We had Fathers of our Flesh, who corrected us, and we gave them Reverence*: Which some consider as a *Hebraism*, as if he had said, *Who corrected us that we might give them Reverence*. But it seems more natural to understand the Particle, *καὶ*, as connecting the two Clauses, *We had Fathers of our Flesh, and we gave them Reverence*. In which View the Version I have given fully expresses the *Apostle's Design*.

Sect. 19. desire to *live* (*b*), since Rebellion against him will be infinitely fatal, and expose us to a dreadful and capital Punishment.

Heb. XII. 10. But not to insist on Considerations of Terror; let us attend to those of a more ingenuous Nature, and particularly those which arise from the Reason of Things, and a View of what will on the whole be most conducive to our own truest Advantage. As for our earthly Parents, they indeed for a few Days (*i*), while we were in a State of Infancy and Childhood, corrected [us] as they thought good, and there might sometimes be a Mixture of Weakness and arbitrary Passion in their Chastisements; but we are sure this can never be the Case with Respect to our Heavenly Father. Oh, far from that: If he take the Rod into his Hand, it is for our Advantage, and that we may be Partakers of his Holiness; which is indeed the greatest Dignity, Beauty, and Glory of the rational Nature, and what most immediately tends to the Happiness of

II Time and Eternity. Now it is true, that all Chastening for the present seems not be [Matter] of Joy, but of Grief: 'Tis painful to the Flesh, and human Nature would rather desire to be excused from it: But afterwards it yieldeth the peaceful Fruit of Righteousness (*k*), to those that are in a suitable

10 For they verily for a few Days chastened us after their own Pleasure; but he for our Profit, that we might be Partakers of his Holiness.

11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless, afterward it yieldeth the peaceable Fruit of Righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.

(*b*) *And live.*] This awful, yet tender Insinuation of the terrible Consequences of Rebellion against the Father of Spirits, (in which there is an Allusion to the capital Punishment to be inflicted on a disobedient Child. Deut. xxi. 18, &c.) is very remarkable; and an Instance of the Apostle's forcible Manner of suggesting the most weighty Thought, sometimes in an oblique Manner, and in very few Words. Comp. Rom. xii. ult. 1 Tim. iv. 16. Tit. ii. 15. Phil. i. 29. Heb. xii. 28. And many Passages to be found in all his Writings.

(*i*) *For a few Days.*] This is to be applied both to our Earthly Parents, and our heavenly Father, and it contains a beautiful and comfortable Intimation, that this whole Life, when compared with our future Being, is but as a few Days: Indeed infinitely less than the Days of Childhood to those of the longest Life of Man upon Earth.

(*k*) *Peaceful Fruit of Righteousness.*] Possibly alluding to the Crowns of Olive, given to the Victor in the Olympic Games, which was also an Emblem of Peace. The learned

able Manner exercised therewith (l). It Sect. 19. produces and improves those Virtues which afford Peace and Joy to the Mind, and like a nobler Crown, than that which many endure so much to obtain, richly rewards the most strenuous Labour, and most afflictive Struggle. Heb. XII. 11.

12 Wherefore lift up the Hands which hang down, and the feeble Knees.

Therefore rally your languid Spirits, lift up the Hands that hang down (m), that they may exert themselves in this glorious Combat, and strengthen the feeble tottering Knees, that they may hold out to the End of this important Race. 12

13 And make straight Paths for your Feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the Way, but let it rather be healed.

And by the proper Exercise of Discipline in your Christian Societies, and by all the other Offices of true and faithful Friendship, make strait Paths for your Feet. Regulate Matters so, that the Way of Duty may be as obvious and easy as possible, that the infirm, the lame, and the decrepit, may not by Discouragements and Temptations, be turned out of the Way, or thrown down, but that every such feeble Traveller in the Way to Sion, may rather be healed; recovered from Falls or Weakness, and strengthened to a Course of more strenuous and persevering Piety. 13

And

learned Bos would translate the Word, εὐνοῦρον, pleasant, joyful, it being usual to express Pleasure and Happiness by Peace. Wolfius is of Opinion, that the Expression refers to that Peace with GOD, which we obtain by Faith. See Curæ Philolog. Vol. iv. pag. 783.

(l) Exercised thereby.] Not only corrected, but instructed and edified; setting themselves to search out the proper Lessons, which afflictive Dispensations are intended to teach.

(m) Lift up the Hands that hang down.] The Connection of these Words in Isa. xxxv. 3, from whence they are borrowed, leads us to understand them of Assistance given to others. But this must by necessary Consequence suppose a Care to exert ourselves with Vigor and Resolution. 'Tis certain that these are likewise Agonistic Phrases. By the following Expression, make strait Paths for your Feet, some understand ordering their Lives so that others might be directed and encouraged by their Example. Diadate gives it a singular Sense, as if it had been said, By your voluntary and cheerful Obedience make the Rules of the Gospel seem easy. I have in the Paraphrase endeavoured to unite both the Views to ourselves, and others, as it is certain one could not be intended, as exclusive of the other.

Sect. 19. And while the jarring Interests of this World so often occasion scandalous Contentions between Men, and even between Christians, let it be your faithful and zealous Cares to *pursue Peace with all Men*, even when it may seem to flee from you. And at the same Time remember, whatever the Consequence may be, to cultivate universal *Holiness*, in all its Branches; *without which*, how ready soever Men may be to flatter themselves with vain Expectations, *no Man shall see the Lord*. For it is his unalterable Decree, for ever to exclude those Souls, in which Sin reigns, from that Sight of him in the celestial World, for which their Tempers and Dispositions render them altogether unfit, even to a Degree of utter Incapacity.

14 Follow Peace with all Men, and Holiness, without which no Man shall see the Lord:

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

IN what clearer Words can those Exhortations of the *Apostle* be expressed: By what more powerful Motives can they be enforced! Behold, the whole of our Duty comprehended in one Word: To *follow after Peace and Holiness*: Behold the most awful Engagements suggested, that *no Man*, whatever his Profession, or Hope, or Confidence may be, can possibly *see the Lord without it!* What a Solitude should it awaken to cultivate *Holiness* in ourselves, to promote it in *others*, and to remove every *Obstruction* as much as possible. “Awaken our Spirits, O Lord, by thy good Spirit, that the most *languid Hands*, and *feeble Knees*, may be *strengthened* and “confirmed.” And that they may be strengthened, let us look to our great *Leader*, to him who passed thro’ so many Years, in the Midst of the most violent Opposition, the most perverse *Contradiction*. Surely we might see enough to animate us to maintain the Combat, even till we left the last Drop of our Blood in the Place, when we *strive against Sin*, against his Enemies, and ours, to deliver us from the Power of which, he assumed Flesh and Blood, and died.

He, the *best beloved Son*, was distinguished by his *Father's* Chastisement, tho’ there was not the least Degree of Failing in him, to deserve

deserve it. But *the Chastisement of our Peace was upon him.* And Sect. 19.  
 shall we who have merited to be chastised with *Scorpions*, mourn at  
 the *Rod*? Let this *Scripture* be attentively reviewed, and laid up  
 in our Mind, to dispose us to the most exemplary *Patience* under  
 Affliction; and to guard against the opposite and dangerous Ex-  
 tremes, of *despising divine Corrections*, or *fainting under them.* Ver. 5.  
 Would we wish to be excused from the *Tokens* of God's *paternal*  
 Love? Would we wish to be neglected, as if we were *Bastards*, Ver. 8.  
 rather than cultivated with the Discipline of beloved *Children*?  
 Were we submissive to our *earthly Parents*, and shall we rebel a-  
 gainst our *Father in Heaven*? Shall we not be in *Subjection to the* Ver. 9.  
*Father of our Spirits*, and live? May our Souls remember the un-  
 answerable Argument and the awful Motive to this Subjection.  
 In what would Opposition end, but in *Death*? And how unrea-  
 sonable would that Opposition be? Is *GOD* in these later Ages of  
 the World become an *arbitrary* and *tyrannical* Being, that his Pro-  
 ceedings should now be suspected, and censured? Is he no longer Ver. 10.  
 concerned for the *Profit* and Advantage of his Children? Or is it  
 no longer desirable to be *Partaker of his Holiness*? of that *Holiness*,  
 which is to fit us to see and enjoy him for ever? *Lord*, should  
 each of us say, I bless thee, that thou hast made me Partaker of  
 thy providential *Bounties*, of thy *Gospel*, of thy *Grace*, in any De-  
 gree: But, oh, *my Soul* longs to be *Partaker of thine Holiness*, to  
 bear thine Image more compleatly, as the great Glory and Bless-  
 edness of my Nature. For this therefore would I submit to Ver. 11.  
 thy *Corrections*, tho' for the present ever so *grievous*, and wait those  
*peaceable Fruits of Righteousness* which will be so rich an Equiva-  
 lent for all.

S E C T.

## S E C T. XX.

The Apostle solemnly cautions them against despising the Blessings of the Gospel, and sacrificing them to any secular Views, or animal Gratifications; and enforces the Caution by representing the incomparable Excellence of those Blessings, and the wonderful Manner in which they were introduced, which even the Introduction of the Jewish Oeconomy, glorious as that was, did by no Means equal. Heb. XII. 15,—29.

## HEBREWS XII. 15.

Sect. 20.  
Heb. XII. 15.

I Have been earnestly exhorting you to cultivate Holiness, in your own Hearts and Lives; and I must farther press it upon you, that you endeavour to maintain a friendly and brotherly Inspection over each other. *Look to it* therefore, with the greatest Attention and Care, for yourselves and one another, *lest any one*, by Apostasy from the Christian Religion, *fall short of the Grace of GOD*, under the Day of Grace and Dispensation of the Gospel; *lest any Root of Bitterness (a)* and Poyson, *springing up* unheeded, *occasion Trouble* to the Society in general, *and by it*, before you are aware, *many be* disturbed and *defiled*, through the Contagion of so bad an Example: *Lest there [be,]* for Instance, *any Fornicator*, who should abuse the Liberty of the Gospel into an Occasion of gratifying his fleshly Lusts, *or any other voluptuous and profane Person (b)*, who should

## HEBREWS XII. 15.

LOOKING diligently, lest any Man fail of the Grace of GOD; lest any Root of Bitterness springing up, trouble you, and thereby many be defiled:

16 Lest there be any Fornicator, or profane Person, as

(a) *Root of Bitterness and Poyson.*] The Word *אש*, which is used, *Deut. xxix. 18.* properly signifies an *infectious Kind of Plant*, which by its Influence *taints* other Vegetables which grow near it.

(b) *Profane Person.*] *Esau* is called a *profane Person*, because as a *prophetic Blessing* went along with the *Birthright*, there was a *profane Contempt* of it in the infamous Bargain



as Esau, who for one Morfel of Meat sold his Birth-right.

should put an open Contempt upon spiritual Sect. 20. Blessings, sacrificing them to the Hope of some present Indulgence; as Esau, who for <sup>Heb. XII. 16.</sup> so mean a Thing as one Meal, gave away his Birthright (c), even all the peculiar and religious Honours, as well as Revenues of his Primogeniture.

17 For ye know how that afterward, when he would have inherited the Blessing, he was rejected: for he found no Place of Repentance, tho' he sought it carefully with Tears.

For ye know, that when afterwards he would gladly have inherited the Blessing, which was its most valuable Attendant, he was rejected (d), for when he would have persuaded Isaac his Father to have revoked and transferred that which he had just before pronounced upon his Brother Jacob, he found no Room for Repentance (e), no Possibility of changing his Father's Mind, by all his Submissions and Entreaties; though he sought it earnestly, and even with Tears, yet still Isaac persisted in what he had done, and said, "I have blessed him, yea, and he shall be blessed." Gen. xxvii. 33.

18 For ye are not come unto the Mount that might be

The inestimable Privileges and Prerogatives, which the Gospel brings along with it, so superior to the Mosaick Law, add great Weight to these Exhortations and Cautions; for ye, who are profelyted to Christianity, are not come to Sinai again, to to the awful Mountain, which was the Object of Touch (f), though the Touch of it were pro-

Bargain here referred to. And as an immoderate Eagerness in the Gratification of Appetite, would naturally imply a Contempt of spiritual and divine Blessings, to be sacrificed to such Gratifications, it was properly expressed by *Profaneness*.

(c) For one Meal gave away his Birthright.] That seems the just rendering of *αλι βρωσεως μιας απεδото τα πρωτογονια αυτης*. Dr. Barrow, I think, would render it, for one little eating Bout; but that seemed not sufficiently grave.

(d) He was rejected.] From comparing the Blessing of Jacob and Esau, Gen. xxvii. 28, 29, 39, 40. it will appear that there must be something spiritual in the Blessing of Jacob; else Esau would not have been said to be rejected, considering what he obtained. See Dr. Goodwin's Works, vol. i. pag. 43.

(e) No Room for Repentance.] We render it no Place for Repentance. The Meaning of this undoubtedly is not, that he would have repented, and could not; but that there was no Room for his Repentance, it would not be regarded, or, in other Words; that his Father's Mind could not be changed.

(f) Mountain, which was the Object of Touch: *ορει Ἰνδαρωμενω*.] Dr. Wall in his Note upon this Place declares himself inclined, if he had the Authority of any Manuscript:

Sect. 20. prohibited on so high a Penalty; and to the burning Fire that surrounded it, and the thick Cloud, and Darkness, and dreadful Tempest, which were the tremendous Signals of GOD's

Heb. XII. 18.

- 19 Descent upon it; And to the Sound of the Trumpet, which at length waxed exceeding loud; (Exod. xix. 18, 19.) and the Voice of distinct Words, spoken with a Sound which reached all the Thousands of Israel, and with which they who heard, were so powerfully affected, that they entreated the Word might not be continued, or carried on any farther to them; but that the Remainder of what the Lord had to say to them, might be delivered by the Mediation of Moses:
- 20 For they were not able to endure that Charge which was pronounced; so that there seemed little Room for the Caution given, and that with so much Severity, that it was added, If so much as a Beast touch the Mountain, it shall be stoned, or struck through with a Dart, if it escape immediate Death from the Tempest and the Lightening. (Exod. xix.
- 21 12, 13.) And the Appearance was so dreadful, [that] Moses himself, who was happy in such unparalleled Degrees of the Divine Favour, and accustomed to converse with GOD in so intimate a Manner, when urged by the People to act as their Mediator in this awful Transaction, said, though I consent to undertake the Charge, I do nevertheless exceedingly fear and tremble (g).

But

be touched, and that burned with Fire, nor unto Blackness, and Darkness, and Tempest.

19 And the Sound of a Trumpet, and the Voice of Words, which Voice they that heard, intreated that the Word should not be spoken to them any more :


20 (For they could not endure that which was commanded, And if so much as a Beast touch the Mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a Dart.

21 And so terrible was the Sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake.)

manuscript or Version to support him, to read \* ἄνθρωπον, which might not be touched, referring to the Prohibition in Exod. xix. 13. and which the Apostle mentions in the very next Verse. But there is no Necessity at all for this Alteration. For it is not intimated by the Expression, that the Mountain might lawfully be touched, but that, as I have translated it, it was the Object of Touch, which indeed is implied in the very Prohibition itself. And in thus characterizing Mount Sinai, it was his Intention, to intimate that it was an earthly Mountain, not like Mount Sion, the City of the living GOD, the heavenly Jerusalem.

(g) Moses said.] This Circumstance is not recorded in the Mosaic History. Some imagine, that the Apostle received it by divine Revelation; and others resolve it into a Tradition.

22 But ye are come unto Mount Sion, and unto the City of the living GOD, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable Company of Angels,

*But ye, my Dear Brethren, are so happy as Sect. 20. to be come to a Dispensation, the Reverse of*  *all these Terrors, even to the mild and gentle Discoveries, which GOD makes of his Presence on Mount Sion (b); and to the holy and joyous Solemnities, which grace the City of the living GOD situated there, even the heavenly Jerusalem, his sacred and everlasting Abode; and to Myriads of surrounding Angels, whom it is impossible to Number: Ye are come to the great general* 23 *Assembly (i), and Church of the first-born (k), the Priests of GOD, who are written in Heaven, whose Names are registered among the Inhabitants of the Place, the Denizens of that City, and Ministers of GOD's Temple there. Above all, it is to be remembered, that ye are come to GOD, the supreme Judge of all, from whose Sentence there can be no Appeal; and to the Spirits of the Righteous, whose Guilt being intirely expiated*

23 To the general Assembly and Church of the first-born which are written in Heaven, and to GOD the Judge of all, and to the Spirits of just Men made perfect.

*Tradition, the Truth of which his Inspiration enabled him to distinguish. — Mr. Calvin supposes Moses spoke these Words in the Name of the People.*

(b) *Mount Sion.*] There seems to be throughout this whole Period a Reference to the Manifestation GOD made of himself upon *Mount Sion*, as being milder than that upon *Mount Sinai*. And the heavenly Society with which Christians are incorporated is considered as resembling the former, (that is, *Mount Sion*;) in those Circumstances, in which it was more amiable than the latter. *Sion* was the *City of GOD*. In the Temple, which stood there, *Cherubim* were the Ornaments of the Walls, both in the *holy*, and *most holy*, Place, to signify the Presence of *Angels*. There was a *general Assembly* and Congregation of the *Priests*, which were substituted instead of the *first-born*, of whose *Names Catalogues* were kept. There was *GOD*, as the supreme *Judge* of Controversies giving forth his Oracles. The *High-priest* was the *Mediator* between *GOD* and *Israel*, (compare *Luke* i. 8,—10.) and the *Blood of Sprinkling* was daily used.

(i) *The general Assembly: συναγωγή.*] The learned *Albert* shows, (*Observ. Philolog. pag. 441.*) that this Word properly signifies a stated Convention upon some joyful and festival Occasion; particularly that it is applied to the Concourse at the *Olympic Games*. In which View it expresses a very lively and elegant Opposition to the Case of the *Israelites*, who were struck with a general *Terror*, when they were convened before *Mount Sinai*.

(k) *First-born.*] *Saints* are called the *first-born*, because, under the Law, the first-born were peculiarly appropriated to *GOD*, and *Heirs* of a double Honour and Inheritance.

Sect. 20. ated, they are *made perfect* (l) and compleat  
 Heb. XII. 23. both in Holiness and Happiness, so far as  
 may consist with the separate State, in which  
 they are joyfully waiting the Appearance of  
 their Lord.

24 To this Society you are related, *and ye shall shortly arrive at that World, where it holds its supream Residence; since you have happily drawn near to Jesus, the Mediator of the New and better Covenant, far exceeding that established with Israel of old, by the Mediation of Moses; and to the Blood of Sprinkling, which speaketh better Things than [the Blood of] Abel* (m); crying for Pardon; whereas his cried aloud for Vengeance.

25 And since this is the Nature of the Dispensation under which ye are now brought, let me solemnly charge it upon you, to see to it, that ye *rejeēt not him that speaketh* to you, with these Circumstances of Endearment, as well as solemnity: *For if they escaped not capital Punishment, who rejeēted him that, by divine Inspiration, gave forth Oracles on Earth* (n), how much more [shall] we

24 And to Jesus the Mediator of the new Covenant, and to the Blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better Things than *that of Abel*.

25 See that ye refuse not him that speaketh: For if they escaped not who refused him that spake on Earth, much more shall not we

(l) *Just Men made perfect.*] Justified before GOD, sanctified in their Natures, and holy in their Lives. Dr. Watts thinks the Apostle here uses the Expression *just*, or *righteous*, to intimate that he included the Patriarchs, or Jewish Saints; and that there was a peculiar Propriety in doing it as he is writing to the Hebrews. *Watts's Death and Heaven, pag. 72.* — Mr. Baxter urges this as a Proof of the distinct Existence of the Soul in a separate State.

(m) [*Blood of*] *Abel.*] By this some understand the *Blood of Sacrifices* in general; called the *Blood of Abel*, because he is the first of whose Animal Sacrifices we read. But there is a Harshness in that Expression not easily paralleled; I should therefore rather understand it of the *Blood of Abel himself*, as referring to the gentle and gracious Character of *Christ*, and the Blessings, instead of Vengeance, drawn down by his Blood. — There is certainly some *Transposition* of what one would have thought the most natural Order here; but it must be ascribed to the rapturous Manner in which *St. Paul* conceived of these Things, and his *Fulness* of Matter when he touched upon them.

(n) *Him that gave forth Oracles on Earth.*] This is generally expounded of *Moses*. Mr. Pierce refers it to GOD; since it is said, *his Voice there shook the Earth*, which, he saith, must be the Voice of GOD. And the Argument of the *Apostle*, according to him, is taken from the different Manner of speaking; his speaking *on Earth* being accompanied with *earthly Signs*, &c. whereas his speaking *from Heaven* means speaking

we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from Heaven:

we [not be able to escape,] if we turn away from him [that speaketh to us] from his Throne in the Heavens? If all Indignities done to Moses, a mortal Man, when speaking by divine Authority, were so severely avenged; how much more, those offered to the Lord Jesus, who condescended to come down from Heaven, and lay aside the Glories in which he there dwelt, to undertake the Office of our Law-giver, and our Mediator!

Sect. 20.  
Heb. XII. 25.

26 Whose Voice then shook the Earth: but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the Earth only, but also Heaven.

And indeed the Lord Jesus Christ, by whom God has now spoken to us, is the Person that presided in that great Solemnity of giving the Law; to which we have been referring. It was he, whose Voice then shook the Earth, and whose Spirit inspired the Prophets; but now he hath promised, saying by one of them, (Hag. ii. 6.) Behold, yet once more I make so thorough a Reformation, that I may be said to shake not the Earth only, but also the Heaven (o). For it is in such Language, that he hath chosen to represent the Change of the Mosaick Oeconomy, for that of the Gospel. And it is evident, that this [Expression], yet once more, or for the last Time, not only signifies the Removal and Change of the Things there said

26

27

to

27 And this Word, Yet once more signifieth the removing of those Things that are shaken, as of Things that

ing by Christ, coming down from Heaven, and declaring heavenly Things, (John iii. 12, 31, 32. 1 Pet. i. 12.) more glorious than the Law, (2 Cor. iii. 6,—11.) But it may be objected, that God spoke to them from Heaven, when he gave the Law at Mount Sinai, and that the Words, whose Voice, may refer to the latter Clause, him that speaketh from Heaven. Yet even on this Supposition, he that speaketh from Heaven, must, I think, be GOD, since it is said, that his Voice shook the Earth. ver. 26.

(o) Shake not the Earth only, but also the Heaven.] This shaking must refer to the Alterations made in the Constitution of Religion, and be considered not as introductory to, but consequent upon, the Coming of the Messiah. Many think this refers to the new Heavens and Earth, or the State of Glory to be at length introduced. Grotius explains it of the extraordinary Phenomena in the Heavens, and on the Earth, at the Birth, Death and Resurrection of Christ, and Mission of the Spirit, as in Part an Accomplishment of this Prophecy. But there would be great Room to debate, how far these were more extraordinary, than the Commotions on giving the Mosaic Law. I therefore chose to adhere to the other, as the most probable Interpretation.

Sect. 20. to be *shaken* (*p*), that is, of the Ordinances  
 of Moses, as of Things which were made  
 Heb. XII. 27. and constituted only for a Time (*q*); but

that are made, that those  
 Things which cannot be  
 shaken may remain.

28 Son. *As therefore we have received such an unshaken Kingdom, which shall never be removed to make Way for any different Establishment, and which gives us the Assurance of a Reign in eternal Glory, let us see to it, that we have Grace whereby we may serve GOD, from whom we receive it, in an acceptable Manner.* As that Grace is so freely offered to us (*r*), let us not be so wanting to ourselves, as to fall short of it. And while we feel our Hearts inspired with all that Gratitude and Confidence, which suits the Genius of so merciful a Dispensation, let them be attempted with a becoming Mixture

28 Wherefore, we receiving a Kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have Grace, whereby we may serve GOD acceptably, with

(*p*) *Of the Things shaken: σαλευομενων.*] The original Word is very elegant and expressive; it being, as the learned *Bos* observes, (*Exercitat. Philolog. pag. 259.*) a Metaphor taken from Ships at Anchor, which though they are secured from being driven away, yet are in a fluctuating Condition, and tossed up and down, within a certain Compass, by the Force of the Wind and Waves.

(*q*) *As of Things made and constituted only for a Time.*] *Bos* imagines that there is in the Original a Mistake of the Transcribers, and for *ωσπεποιημενων*, as of Things which were made, he would read *ωσπεποιημενων*, as of Things shattered and worn out, namely, by being tossed and shaken, and therefore wanting to be changed and repaired. And thus he supposes there is a Continuation of the Metaphor, which is mentioned in the Note above. But conjectural Emendations, supported by the Authority of not a single Manuscript, are not to be admitted without evident Necessity. *Mr. Pierce* justly remarks, that *ποιεω* is frequently used for appointing or constituting, as in *Chap. iii. 2. Mark iii. 14.* and many other Places; and that *ωσπεποιημενων*, being a Participle of the Preterperfect Tense, ought not to have been translated, Things which are made, as in our English Version, but Things which were, or had been made, or constituted and appointed, for a Time; and I have rendered and explained it accordingly.

(*r*) *As Grace is so freely offered.*] This is strongly intimated in the Words of the Exhortation; else there could be no Room for it. And this oblique Intimation, in which it is, as it were, taken for granted, that we may certainly have Grace, if we take proper Methods for obtaining it, appears to me peculiarly affecting.

with Reverence and godly Fear.

ture of *Reverence and pious Fear*; that we may not, by an unworthy Abuse of the Gospel, deprive ourselves of its invaluable Blessings, and sin beyond all Possibility of farther Remedy. For though our GOD manifests himself in the Beams of such mild Majesty, he [is] still possessed of that tremendous Power, which was so awfully displayed at Mount Sinai, and will break forth as a *consuming Fire* against all those that presumptuously violate his Laws, and despise his Gospel. (Deut. iv. 23, 24.)

Sect. 20.  
Heb. XII. 28.

29 For our GOD is a consuming Fire.

29

I M P R O V E M E N T.

THE Glories of the eternal JEHOVAH are indeed inconceivable, and immutable. Still he is possessed of all that awful Majesty, which he displayed on *Mount Sinai*, and able in a Moment, as a *devouring Fire*, to consume the Transgressors of his Law. But though he kindly reminds us of this dreadful Scene, he does not limit and confine our Views to it: He appears to us, not on *that Mountain*, which was involved in *Blackness*, and *Darkness*, in *Tempest*, and *Fire*; but calls us to the milder Glories of *Mount Zion*. Yet even there might our Consciousness of Guilt cause us to fear. How should we appear in *the City of the Living GOD*, or presume to mingle ourselves with *the general Assembly and Church of the first-born*? How should we hope for a Place among *Myriads of Angels*, and the *perfected Spirits of the Just*, in the Presence of *GOD, the Judge of all*, if it were not for the Refuge and Support, which we find in *Jesus the Mediator of the new Covenant*, and in *the Blood of Sprinkling, which speaketh better Things than the Blood of Abel*? But being thus encouraged, let us draw near with humble Boldness, though with *Reverence and godly Fear*; while we hear the *Voice that once shook the Earth*, speaking to us in Accents of Love, and promising a *Kingdom that cannot be moved*. That Kingdom do we in some Degree receive now, and we hope for the full Possession hereafter. It shall indeed be obtained, if we learn so to value it, as in the Expectation of it, to *serve GOD acceptably*, in the Improvement of that *Grace*, which awaits us, to make us equal to his Service: Only let us see to it, that we do not, by our own Criminal Negligence, *fail of that Grace*: That we do not *profanely*, and foolishly

Ver. 29.

Ver. 18.

Ver. 22.

Ver. 23.

Ver. 24.

Ver. 26.

Ver. 28.

Ver. 15.

Sect. 20. foolishly follow the Example of that wretched *Esau*, who stands recorded with so much Infamy, as having *for one sorry Meal sold his Birthright*, with all its sacred Privileges. How many Sons of *Abraham*, having followed him, have found, as he did, the Impossibility of retrieving so fatal a Bargain; found, as he did, that there was *no Place for Repentance, though they may have sought it carefully with Tears*; with an Anguish of Heart, which none can conceive, but they who know what final and everlasting Despair means! May God preserve all his Churches from such *Roots of Bitterness*, as alas! have too often *sprung up* among them! And since there is so much Danger, that *many may be defiled* by them, let those that have a real Concern for their Honour and Safety, be looking round, with a proper Solicitude, to guard against the first Appearance of what may be so fatal to their Honour, their Purity, and their Peace.

## S E C T. XXI.

*The Apostle exhorts Christians to brotherly Love, Purity, Compassion, Dependence on the Divine Care, Stedfastness in the Profession of the Truth, and to a Life of Thankfulness to GOD, and Benevolence to Man, from a Consideration of the inestimable Priveleges derived to us from CHRIST, which ought always to encourage us boldly to endure any Infamy and Suffering, which we may meet in his Cause. Heb. XIII. 1,—16.*

## HEBREWS XIII. 1.

Sect. 21. **I** Shall conclude my present Address to you, with some practical Exhortations. And one of the most comprehensive and important I can give you, is this: *Let brotherly Love always continue (a) among you.* And remem-

## HEBREWS XIII. 1.

**L**ET brotherly Love continue.

(a) *Let brotherly Love continue.*] *Diodate* thinks this Exhortation was peculiarly suitable to converted *Jews*, as the *Prejudices* against their *Gentile Brethren* were in many of them so strong, that they were ready to disown them with Abhorrence.

(b) *Enter-*



remember not only the common Obligations Sect. 21. of Benevolence, by which all human Creatures are connected with each other, but those peculiar Engagements, which the Christian Profession lays you under, to study the Good of those, who by Faith in the Gospel are all the Children of one Father, and Heirs of one glorious Inheritance.

Heb. XIII. 1.

2 Be not forgetful to entertain Strangers: for there-by some have entertained Angels unawares.

This should certainly engage you to relieve and accommodate such, as are in Necessity, and especially your Christian Brethren in their Travels from Place to Place, often undertaken for the Service of their great Master.

2:

*Be not, therefore, forgetful of Hospitality; for some have, by the Practice of it, entertained Angels, as common Strangers, without knowing it (b);* and have found the Hospitalities of many former Years abundantly rewarded by one such favourable Visit. And thus you know not, but they who come to you under a very mean Appearance, may be as Messengers from GOD to you, and the Instruments of bestowing some extraordinary Favours from him.

3:

3 Remember them that are in Bonds, as bound with them; and them which suffer Adversity, as being yourselves also in the Body.

You see many of your Brethren suffering for Conscience sake, and some thrown into Prison; *remember them* therefore especially, *who are in such Bonds, as if you were yourselves bound with them, [and] them that suffer any Kind of Ill-treatment in such a Case, as being yourselves also*

(b) *Entertained Angels unawares.*] It is possible that from the Story of Abraham and Lot, who had the Honour of entertaining *Angels*, under the Form of ordinary Travellers, some Tradition might reach the *Indian Bramins*, who tell their People that the *GODS* sometimes descend in the Form of poor indigent *Persons*; and that when any of the Children of Men relieve them, they repay the Charity with vast Advantage. See *Millar's Propagation of Christianity*, vol. ii. pag. 217. I can lay no Stress upon *Mr. Pierce's* Reasoning against our supposing that *Christ* was one of those *Angels*, that then the *Apostle* would have urged the Argument in a stronger View, by observing that they had *entertained Christ himself*; (see his *Notes on Chap. i. ver. 2.* and *Mr. Hallet* on this *Verse*.) For the *Apostles* were under no Obligation, on all Occasions, to use the *strongest* Argument that could possibly be thought of; and as there might perhaps be some Room to debate this Matter, it was great Prudence to build an Argument upon a *Principle*, in which all that believe the Authority of *Scripture* must agree.

(c) *Mar-*

Sect. 21. *also in the same Body with them, and so obliged to a tender Sympathy; not now to insist on your sharing the same common Infirmities of human Nature with them all, which should engage you to carry your Compassion to Strangers, and even to Enemies.*

Heb XIII. 3.

4 I know that some, who pretend to more than ordinary Chastity, say many reproachful Things of a conjugal Life; but I assure you they are much to blame; for *Marriage [is] to be held honourable in all (c), and the proper Use of the Marriage-Bed is to be esteemed as undefiled; since none can imagine, that GOD would make an Action in itself morally evil, absolutely necessary for the Support of the human Race in future Generations. But as for Whoremongers and Adulterers, who either despise, or pollute it, GOD will undoubtedly judge them, however they may escape human Punishment.*

4 Marriage is honourable in all, and the Bed undefiled: But Whoremongers and Adulterers GOD will judge.

5 [*Let your*] *Conversation [be] free from every Degree of Covetousness, and [be] contented with such Things as ye have (d), without eagerly or impatiently desiring what divine Providence may see fit to withhold. And though being so slenderly provided for, as most of you are, it may seem very probable you should soon come to want, even the Necessaries of Life, especially after the late Ravages you have suffered from your Enemies, who*

5 *Let your Conversation be without Covetousness; and be content with such Things as ye have: For he hath*

(c) *Marriage is honourable.*] Some Criticks, and (especially the *popish Writers*, to avoid the Argument which naturally arises from hence against *forbidding Marriage to the Clergy*;) would render it, *Let Marriage be honourable in all, and let the Bed be undefiled.* But the Connection of the latter Clause introduced by the Particle *but* is sufficient to vindicate our *Version*, unless we should be disposed, with the *Vulgate*, to prefer the Authority of the *Alexandrian* and *Clermont* Copies, which instead of δε, read γαρ, *For Whoremongers and Adulterers GOD will judge.*

(d) *Content with such Things as ye have.*] *Phocylides* makes use of the very Words of the *Apostle* in a Precept of this Kind, Αρκεισαι ταπεισι. But what the Age of that Writer was, I fear, it is impossible to ascertain. There are other *Passages* however in his *Excellent Moral Poems*, which makes it probable he was acquainted with the *New Testament*, as well as the *Old*, from whence he has taken so many *pious* and *humane Precepts.*

(e) *We*

hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.

who have plundered your Goods ; (Chap. Sect. 21. x. 34), be not anxiously solicitous about that ; *for he* who hath all the Stores of Nature at his Command, and who owns the Relation of a Father to us, *hath* graciously said, (Josh. i. 5.) *I will not, I will not leave thee, I will never, never, never forsake thee.*

Heb. XIII. 5.

6 So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my Helper, and I will not fear what Man shall do unto me.

And tho' these emphatical Words were at first spoken to Joshua, yet it was not under a personal Character only, but considering him in his Relation to the Israel of GOD, and as acting for its Support ; *so that* all GOD's People, as his Love to them is in all Ages the same, may take a just Encouragement from it, and *we* in particular *may take Courage to say (e), The Lord [is] my Helper, and I will not fear what Man shall do unto me :* Thus comforting ourselves, not only in the seeming Uncertainty of future Supplies, but in the midst of the greatest Dangers, and when threatened by our Enemies with the severest Sufferings.

7 Remember them which have the Rule over you, who have spoken unto you the Word of GOD: whose Faith

And let me now urge you to *remember* those dear and venerable Persons, *who having* formerly *presided over you (f)* in holy Things, *have spoken to you the Word of GOD,* whose Course is now finished. Tho' all your Intercourse with them is for the present cut off, do not however forget their Instruc-

(e) *We may take Courage to say &c.]* This Application of a particular Promise to such general Purposes, opens a noble Hint for the Improvement of the Old Testament, upon this great and solid Principle, that GOD who is *no Respector of Persons*, intends, that Expressions of his Favor to *this* or *that* eminently good Man, should be used for the Encouragement of *all others* of the like Character. The Emphasis of the Original is so well known, that I shall not insist upon it.

(f) *Presided over you.]* Bishop Lloyd, (*Funeral Sermon for Bishop Wilkins, pag, 7, 8.*) thinks this may refer to *James the Apostle*, and to *James*, commonly called the *first Bishop of Jerusalem*; both of which had been put to Death there before this Epistle was written. — Our English Version here is very far from being justifiable, *Remember them which have the Rule over you*; whereas they were now *dead*. It should have been, *Who have presided, or had the Rule, over you*; or as I have rendered the two Clauses in Connection, *Who having presided over you, have spoken to you the Word of GOD.*

Sect. 21. Instructions, and their Examples; but be mindful of that *Faith* which they taught, and which they exercised. And let it be your great Care to *imitate* them, *considering the End of their Conversation*. Reflect on the happy Manner in which they quitted Life, on that Support which they found, in their latest Moments, from the Truths they had taught you, and on that heroick Resolution with which some of them were animated to meet even Martyrdom itself in that sacred Cause: And let the Remembrance of these Things engage you stedfastly to retain their Faith, and courageously to follow their Steps. And remember for your farther Encouragement, that tho' the most faithful Ministers of the Gospel die; yet as that sacred Dispensation still continues immutable, so *Jesus Christ*, the great Guardian of those who faithfully adhere to it, in the Tenor of his Declarations, as well as in the Glories of his divine Nature, [*is*] *the same (g) Yesterday, To-day, and for ever*; and therefore can well support you, by whomsoever you may be forsaken. And let this be a powerful Engagement to adhere to his Gospel, and to preserve it uncorrupted. In this View, see to it, that *ye be not carried about by various and foreign Doctrines*, disagreeing with each other, and with the great Standard of Truth in the Divine Revelation. Many are zealous for such, and particularly Judaizing Teachers; but remember, [*it is*] *a good Thing that the Heart be established in an Adherence to the Grace of the Gospel, and not zealous in those*:

Faith follow, considering the End of their Conversation.

8 Jesus Christ the same Yesterday, and To-day, and for ever.

9 Be not carried about with diverse and strange Doctrines: For *it is* a good Thing that the Heart be established with Grace, not with

(g) *Christ the same.*] I think this makes a much nobler Sense, if explained of the Immutability of *Christ's Power and Grace*, than if merely understood of his *Doctrine*; tho I have given a Hint of the latter Sense, out of Regard to some great *Expositors*, who have urged *Acts* v. 42. *2 Cor.* iv. 5. *1 Cor.* i. 24. as Instances in which *Christ* signifies not his *Person*, but his *Word*.

(h) *Wise*

Meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein.

those Distinctions between various Kind of Sect. 21. Meats, and reposing its Confidence in those ritual Observances, which some are ready to lay so much Strefs upon; but by which they, who have been most conversant [in them] and regarded them with the greatest Exactness, have not profited, so as to make any real Attainment in Religion, by all that Scrupulosity and Mortification. They

Heb. XIII. 9.

10

10 We have an Altar whereof they have no Right to eat, which serve the Tabernacle.

boast indeed of many of their Privileges, in which they think themselves superior to us; but it is infinitely more than a Balance to all, that we have an Altar of a spiritual Nature, even that dignified by the Sacrifice of the Son of GOD, of which they have no Authority to eat, who attend divine Service in the Tabernacle. For it is well known,

11

11 For the Bodies of those Beasts whose Blood is brought into the Sanctuary by the High-priest for Sin, are burnt without the Camp.

that the Bodies of those Animals, whose Blood [being offered] for Sin, is carried (b) by the High-priest into the Holy Place, are according to the Appointment of the Law, as instituted in the Wilderness, to be burnt without the Camp, and afterwards without the City of Jerusalem; no Part of them being eaten by the Priests. Now methinks

12

12 Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the People with his own Blood, suffered without the Gate.

there is something in this Circumstance, which may suggest to us Matter of pious and comfortable Meditation, when we compare it with what we know of the great High-priest of our Profession. We may therefore methinks say, that Jesus also, that under his grand sacerdotal Character he might sanctify the People, not by animal Victims, but by his own Blood, which he offered up as a Sin-offering for us, to atone our Guilt, and consecrate us to God, suffered not within the Walls of the Temple,

or

(b) Whose Blood — is carried &c.] An Argument has been drawn from these Words, as from some other Passages that occur, to prove that the Temple was standing, when this Epistle was written.

Sect. 21. or the City, but upon Mount Calvary,  
 which you well know lies *without the Gate*

Heb. XIII. of Jerusalem. And this Consideration,

13. as it suggests our leaving the Jewish Sacrifices, so it should undoubtedly engage us willingly to suffer all Extremities in his Cause. *Let us therefore break through every Attachment, and go out, as it were, unto him without the Camp, bearing our Part in his Reproach.* If our Fidelity to him require, as it very possibly may, that we should submit to Excommunication, Infamy, and Persecution, let us acquiesce and find an Equivalent in this Thought, that we are hereby rendered more conformable to

14. Christ. And let us submit to this so much the more cheerfully, considering how trivial the Interests of this mortal Life are, when compared with those, which relate to Eternity; *for it is most certain, that we have here no abiding City; in which View, I spoke of our sojourning here, as an Incampment in moveable Tabernacles or Tents. But, blessed be GOD, we are animated with the cheerful Hope and Expectation of better Blessings, and seek one to come; a splendid and secure Abode, where it will be our everlasting Business to admire and adore its great Founder and Sovereign, and to worship in his celestial Temple.*

15. In the mean Time, Jesus is there under the Character of our great High-priest, who ever lives to perform that important Office for us, to which he is every Way equal; *by him therefore let us always offer the Sacrifice of Praise (i) to GOD, that is, the Fruit of [our] Lips, giving Thanks to his glorious Name.*

16. *But while we present this verbal Tribute, let us*

13. Let us go forth therefore unto him without the Camp, bearing his Reproach.

14. For here have we no continuing City, but we seek one to come.

15. By him therefore let us offer the Sacrifice of Praise to GOD continually, that is, the Fruit of our Lips, giving Thanks to his Name.

16. But to do good, and to

(i) *Sacrifice of Praise.*] To suppose that this refers to the *Eucharist*, and the following Verse to *charitable Collections* made at the Celebration of that Ordinance, seems very *fanatical*.

to communicate, forget not:  
for with such Sacrifices GOD  
is well pleased.

us remember, that another yet more substantial, is required. *Be not forgetful of doing all the good you possibly can, in your respective Stations, and of communicating liberally and chearfully of your Substance, to those that are in Necessity; for GOD is well pleased with such Sacrifices; which were always more pleasing to him than any Victim, which, in the Neglect of these, could be brought to his Altar.*

Sect. 21.  
Heb XIII.  
16.

I M P R O V E M E N T.

**T**HOSE other *expensive* Sacrifices which the *Mosaic Law* required, are now entirely abrogated. Let us consider this, as an additional Engagement upon us, to abound more and more in those of unfeigned *Benevolence*, and real *Charity*; rejoicing, that the GOD of our Lives, who gives us all, will condescend to have *any Regard* to them. And let our Brethren in *Christ* be remembered with that distinguishing Affection, which suits the Relation in which we stand to them; and in whatever Bonds of Affliction they may be bound, let us endeavour to make their Fetters fit lighter upon them, by every thing which our compassionate Assistance can do for that Purpose; *considering ourselves as in the Body.*

Ver. 16.  
Ver. 1, 2.  
Ver. 3.

That we may be ready to all such kind Offices, let us endeavour to overcome *the Love of Money, which is the Root of all Evil.* Let us learn, (and oh, that Divine Grace may effectually teach us!) to moderate our Desires, *to be contented* with what Providence allots us, whether more or less; and to *trust in GOD*, as to the Supply of our future Wants. Well may we not only *trust*, but even *boast* in him, when we consider, in how endearing a Manner he hath declared, with such reiterated Assurances, that *he will never, never, never leave us; that he will not, yea, he will not forsake us.* Surely, the Language of the most chearful and couragious *Faith* well corresponds to that of so gracious, and Soul-reviving a Promise. Let *Faith* then put a *Reality* into it, or rather glory in that certain Reality, which there cannot but be in every Promise; especially as *Jesus Christ*, in whom this, and *all the Promises*, are confirmed to us, in *the same Yesterday, To-day, and for ever.*

Ver. 5.  
Ver. 6.  
Ver. 8.

And let this Thought support us under those *Breaches*, which may be made on the Church by *Death.* *Christ* ever lives to guard and

Ver. 7.  
and

- Sect. 21. and protect it, and to maintain those great Truths, which in every Age have been the Joy and Confidence of his People. Let our Attachment to him, therefore, be preserved inviolable, and the Purity of our Souls unspotted. And let us never fear to share in his *Reproach*, in whose Glory we have such a Security of sharing; but cheerfully go as it were, *out of the Camp* to him, who suffered *Crucifixion* for us *without the Gates* of the City. Were we called to endure *Martyrdom* for his Sake, he would only lead us out of a mean and precarious *Tabernacle*; for *we have here no continuing City*; but then he will conduct us, if we are faithful to him, to a *City* so durable, that its *Foundations* are represented by *Rocks* of solid *Gems*, so glorious, that its *Pavements* are described as *Gold*, and its *Gates* as *Pearl*. May our Faith be daily beholding it as near; and may we feel every Day more of its *attractive* Influence, to render us superior to all that Earth can promise, and to all it can threaten, while we are passing thither. Under his Guardianship, let us daily *be offering the Sacrifice of Praise, the Fruit of our Lips, giving Thanks to his Name*, as well knowing, that while we are on our Journey to the *New Jerusalem*, no Mountain can be so steep and rugged, no Valley so deep and gloomy, as not to admit of the *Songs of Sion*.

## S E C T. XXII.

*The Apostle concludes with recommending to them some particular Regards to their pious Ministers, and intreats their Prayers; adding some Salutations, and a solemn Benediction. Heb. XIII. 17, to the End.*

HEBREWS XIII. 17.

HEBREWS XIII. 17.

Sect. 22.  
Heb. XIII.

17.

I Have been urging you to an affectionate Remembrance of those, who were once your Teachers, but are now dismissed from their Labours, and received to those Reward. And I must on the same Principles, press upon you a due Regard to those faithful Ministers, who still survive. *Obey them;*

OBEY them that have the Rule over you, and submit



submit yourselves: for they watch for your Souls, as they that must give Account: that they may do it with Joy, and not with Grief: for that is unprofitable for you.

them, therefore, who preside over you (a), in Sect. 22. those Rules and Directions, which they are authorized by Christ to give you, and submit yourselves [to them] with a becoming Respect; even tho' their Office should sometimes oblige them to make such Addresses to you, as may for the present be disagreeable. For they are solemnly appointed to watch for your Souls (b), for their everlasting Safety and Happiness. And well knowing that the Trust is of infinite Importance, they would execute it, as those that must render an awful and strict Account of their Office, and of the Fidelity with which they have discharged it. Behave towards them therefore, while they are pursuing the several Duties of it, in such a Manner, that they may do it with Joy, and not with inward Groaning (c), under Discouragements arising from your unkind Treatment, or from such other Irregularities of your Conduct, as may require them to interpose by any Methods of Severity; for that [is] most unprofitable and dangerous for you, and will on the whole be much more for your own Detriment, than it can possibly be for theirs.

Among

(a) *Preside over you.*] Lord Barrington imagines, that he refers to the *Apostles of the Circumcision*, to shew that he would not in any Respect derogate from their Authority. (*Essay* i. pag. 87.) but I cannot think the Word, *ηγουμενοι*, should be thus limited. I rather apprehend, with Mr. Boyse, (*Serm.* Vol. i. pag. 415.) that it refers to those who immediately presided over them in their religious Affairs, that is, the *Ministers* of the several particular Churches. The Application of it to *diocesan Bishops* is merely arbitrary.

(b) *Watch for your Souls.*] *Chrysostom* says, he never read these Words without trembling, though he often preached several Times in a Day.

(c) *That they may do it with Joy, and not with Groaning.*] This must necessarily refer to the present Discharge of their Office; for it is not possible for any Perverseness of the People to prevent a faithful Minister's giving up his Account with Joy. Nor can any Groans be mingled with those triumphant Songs which GOD will put into the Mouths of all his People. But their Master will remember what they suffered by their People's Means; and the Account may sit heavy on them, when the Sorrows of their faithful Pastors are all over. Not to say, that great present Damage to the People would proceed from those Things, which are grievous to their faithful and affectionate Spiritual Guides. See Dr. Owen in loc.

(d) By

Sect. 18. Among the rest of your Christian Ministers, we persuade ourselves that you will not forget us. And we intreat, that while Absence may render many other Instances of Affection impracticable, you would not fail however to *pray for us*. And indeed we may very cheerfully ask, and very reasonably expect this; *for*, though our Enemies may meanly insinuate the contrary, *we are confident, that we have a good Conscience*, and have conducted ourselves, so as to have a Testimony to our Integrity in yours, that we are *determined*, whatever it may cost us, *in all Things to behave honourably*, to converse in the most fair and reputable Manner, according to the Obligations of our sacred Profession and Office, though we should sacrifice every Thing to that Resolution. *And I especially beseech you to do this*, that is, to pray earnestly and affectionately for me, both in your private Retirements, and in your public Assemblies, *that I may quickly be restored to you* from this Confinement, and may have an Opportunity of rendering you those Services, which were prevented by this unjust Imprisonment, occasioned by the Fury of the Populace, when I was last at Jerusalem.

19  
20 And *now* to draw towards a Close, *may* that great and blessed Being, who condescends in his Gospel to reveal himself to us, under the endearing Character of *the GOD of Peace*, who reconciling us unto himself by his Son, becomes the Author of eternal Blessings, cause his choicest Favours to descend upon you. May He, who, to confirm these gracious Purposes, *hath brought again from the Dead our Lord Jesus Christ*, who is constituted *that great Shepherd of the Sheep*, by the Blood of the everlasting Covenant,

18 Pray for us: For we trust we have a good Conscience, in all Things willing to live honestly.

19 But I beseech you the rather to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.

20 Now the GOD of Peace that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the Sheep, through the Blood of the everlasting Covenant,

21 Make you perfect in every good Work to do his Will, working in you that which is well-pleasing in his Sight, through Jesus Christ; to whom *be* Glory for ever and ever. Amen.

22 And I beseech you, Brethren, suffer the Word of Exhortation; for I have written a Letter unto you in few Words.

23 Know ye, that *our* Brother Timothy is set at Liberty; with whom, if he come shortly, I will see you.

24 Salute all them that have the Rule over you, and all

nant (*d*), and by his Blood sealed the everlasting Sect. 18. and unchangeable Covenant, which appoints him to stand in that amiable Relation to his People; May he, I say, *make you perfect* 21

*in every good Work, that you may cheerfully and constantly do his Will, exerting an holy Readiness and Alacrity in the Discharge of every Duty; himself producing in you that Temper and Disposition of Soul, which is most pleasing and acceptable in his Sight, through the powerful Influences of his Spirit, given you by Jesus Christ, who hath procured this invaluable Favour for his People: To whom [be] Glory in all the Churches, for ever and ever: Amen.*

I have discovered my Mind to you in the Course of this Epistle with great Freedom; but as it all proceeds from the most sincere Affection, *I beseech you, Brethren, suffer the Word of Exhortation; for I have written to you above in a few Words; but if I were to open all that is in my Heart, the Letter would swell far beyond the Bounds I have here assigned it. In concluding it, I give you the Pleasure to know, that [our] dear Brother Timothy, whose Zeal for me had for a while made him a Partner in my Confinement, is now set at Liberty, with whom if he come soon, I hope by the divine Permission I shall be able to see you, which I cannot but greatly desire.*

In the mean Time, *salute* in the most respectful and affectionate Manner, in my Name, *all that preside over you, as the Officers*

(*d*) By the Blood of the everlasting Covenant.] There is an Ambiguity in the Connection of these Words. Some think they refer to *GOD's bringing again from the dead our Lord Jesus Christ*, according to that Engagement or Covenant which was sealed by his Blood. Beza and others connect the Clause with the Words immediately preceding, namely, *that great Shepherd of the Sheep*, which our Lord was constituted by the Blood of the everlasting Covenant. And this Sense seems to be far preferable. Compare Acts xx. 28. and John x. 11.

Sect. 22. Officers of your respective Churches, *and* all the Saints. They of Italy  
*all the other Saints*, who are private Mem- salute you.  
 Heb. XIII. 24. bers of them. *They* who are Natives of  
 Italy, joined in the Bonds of the same Chris-  
 25. tian Profession, and now with me at Rome,  
 most cordially *salute you*. May the Blessing  
 of GOD, and the *Grace* of our Lord Jesus  
 25. Christ, to which I am so often commending  
 you and all my Christian Brethren, [*be*]  
*with you all*. I put my Hearty *Amen* to it;  
 and you assuredly know, that I can wish  
 you nothing better. I hope therefore, that  
 you will with all your Hearts, put your own  
 Amen to it.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Ver. 17. **L**ET those, whom GOD, in the Course of his Providence, hath  
 called to *preside over* the Souls of others, remember to *watch*  
*over them* with a becoming Diligence, considering that an impartial  
*Account* will shortly be required; considering, that if they do not  
 properly conduct themselves in this important Office, *their Blood*,  
 who *perish* by their Neglect, must be *required at their Hands*. And  
 let the *People* committed to their Care be concerned, that the faith-  
 ful Servants of *Christ* may discharge their Office *with Joy*, and not  
*with Grief*; that they may not from Time to Time be sent with  
*Groanings*, and with Tears, to the Presence of their great Master,  
 to *lament* the Obstinacy, Perverseness, and Rebellion of those over  
 whom GOD hath made them *Watchmen* and *Shepherds*. The Grief  
 would now sensibly affect the *Minister*; yet, on the whole, as he  
 would be to GOD *a sweet Savour in Christ*, in *them that perish*, as  
 well as in *them that believe*, the greatest Detriment would fall on  
 those, who have made such ungrateful Returns to the Divine Good-  
 nefs, and to *their Fidelity*.

Ver. 18. That all other Duties may be more regularly and properly dis-  
 charged, let private Christians be engaged to *pray earnestly for their*  
*Ministers*; for those especially, who make it apparent, that they  
 desire to *maintain always a good Conscience*; and that whatever Sa-  
 crifices they may be called to make to it, they are *determined in all*  
*Things to live reputably* and honourably; so that the *Ministry* may  
 not be blamed, but the Christian Profession in general adorned. And  
 GOD

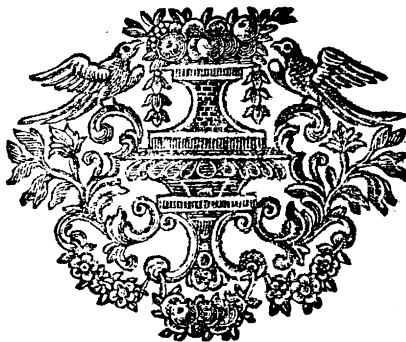
GOD grant, that none but Persons of *such* a Character may be introduced into the *Ministry*, or supported and countenanced in it! Sect. 22.

Let *Pastors*, and *People*, be often looking to him, who is the *great Shepherd of the Sheep*, and whose Relation to the Flock is established on the *Blood of the everlasting Covenant*. Ever may the Thoughts of that *Blood* engage us to regard him with all due Veneration and Love; ever may we be looking to him, who through this blessed Saviour, appears as the *GOD of Peace*, for every Blessing we respectively need. Ver. 20.

We all need his gracious Influence, to implant the first Principles of the divine Life; and we need them, to *make us perfect to do his Will*, and to *work in us* those Things which may render us more compleatly *pleasing in his Sight*. And therefore let an humble Dependence on his *Grace* be daily maintained and expressed; considering of how great Importance it is to be *acceptable* in the Sight of GOD, and to *approve* ourselves at all Times to him. Ver. 21.

That it may be so, may *Grace be with us all*, and continue with us, from the first Entrance on the *Christian Life*, through the whole Course of it, till it *present us blameless in the Presence of his Glory*, with exceeding Joy. Amen. Ver. 25.

The END of the FAMILY EXPOSITOR on the EPISTLE to the HEBREWS.





# The Family Expositor:

OR, A

P A R A P H R A S E

ON THE

CATHOLIC EPISTLE

OF THE

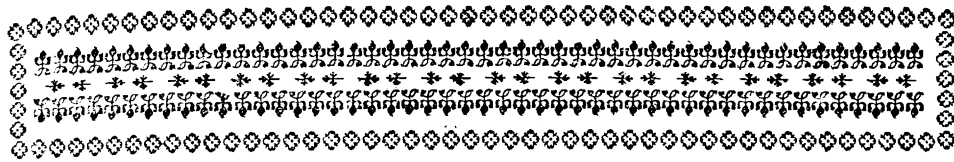
Apostle *J A M E S*.

WITH

Critical N O T E S, and a practical I M P R O V E M E N T  
of each S E C T I O N.







A

# GENERAL INTRODUCTION

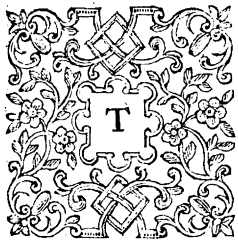
T O T H E

# PARAPHRASE and NOTES

On the CATHOLIC EPISTLE

O F

St. J A M E S.



HE Epistle of *St. James*, and the six following Epistles, have been commonly distinguished by the Appellation of *Catholic*, or *general*, because most of them are inscribed, not to particular Churches or Persons, but to the Body, either of *Jewish* or *Gentile* Converts over the whole World, or at least dispersed in several Countries.

The *first* of these, I mean, that of *St. James*, was from the earliest Times received by the *Christian* Church, though not so universally as most of the Epistles of *St. Paul*. But a precise Detail and Examination of the several Arguments relating to this Question would bear too large a Proportion in the Space allotted to these Introductions. It may however be right to observe, in Support of the Authenticity and Authority of this Epistle, that considerable Stress hath deservedly been laid upon its *Antiquity*, which appears both from *internal* and *external* Evidence; and also, upon the Correspondence of the Sentiments it contains with the Tenor of the *Christian* Doctrine; and though this hath been called in Question

Question by some through an Attachment to particular Hypotheses \*, yet it is evident, I apprehend, beyond all Controversy to those who read the Epistle with suitable Candor and Attention. And it appears to me, that the Authority of this, and some other Parts of the New Testament, having been early questioned by some *Primitive Churches*, affords an Argument of their particular Caution, that no other Writings should be admitted into the *sacred Canon* however excellent, besides those which had an undoubted Claim to that Distinction; and justly challenges our Deference to *their* Judgment, who doubtless were most capable of deciding, and gave sufficient Evidence of their *Care* as well as their *Capacity*. The Epistle before us having passed through a severe and accurate Scrutiny, appears to have been at length *universally received*, and accordingly hath been transmitted down to the present Age, as an Authentic Part of those *Oracles of GOD* which are able to make us wise to Salvation.

If any particular Argument were to be suggested to second the Force of these Observations, it might be this, That this Epistle is found in the *Syriac Version*, and was received by the Churches in *Syria*. This Version is undoubtedly ancient, and is apprehended by most learned Men to have been made as early as the Beginning of the *second Century*. And besides the Authority conciliated to the Epistle of *St. James* by the *Antiquity* of the Version, it should be observed, that the Version was made for the particular Service of the converted *Jews*, to whom the *Epistle itself* was originally written; and it should therefore seem, that its Authenticity and Authority were from the Beginning acknowledged by those for whom it was intended: And I think it can hardly be doubted, that they were better Judges of the Question than the *Gentiles*, to whom it was not written, among whom therefore it was not likely to be propagated so early, and who at first might be prejudiced against it because it was inscribed to the *Jews*.

If any are disposed to examine the several Testimonies of the *Christian Fathers*, as to the Authority of this Epistle, they may find them collected with great Fidelity and Accuracy by the learned  
Dr.

\* It is well known, that at the Beginning of the Reformation, *Luther* apprehending the Doctrine delivered by *St. James* concerning *Justification*, to be inconsistent with that of *St. Paul*, opposed the Authority of this Epistle, in the Preface to his *German Translation* of the New Testament, published in the Year 1522; though he is not followed in this Point by those who at this Day are distinguished by his Name; and indeed he himself, as we are informed by *Wolfius*, (*Curæ Philolog. Vol. v. pag. 6.*) and by *Fabricius*, (*Biblioth. Græc. Lib. iv. Cap. v. §. ix.*) afterwards changed his Opinion.

Dr. Lardner, in the second Part of his valuable Work, *The Credibility of the Gospel History*.

As to the *Author* of this Epistle, some have imagined it to be *James the Elder*, the Son of *Zebedee*, and Brother of *John*. But in this they are evidently mistaken. *James the Elder* was beheaded by *Herod* in the Year of our Lord 44, whereas this Epistle was not written till a very considerable Time afterwards. So early as the Year 44, the Gospel does not seem to have been propagated far beyond the Bounds of *Palestine*, and it can't be supposed there was any very large Number of the *Jews* of the Dispersion, who were then converted to the *Christian Faith*: And though the Epistle seems to have been intended in some measure for the general Benefit of the *twelve Tribes*, yet more especially for those among them who were *Converts* to the *Christian Religion*. Besides, it is intimated in the Epistle itself, that the *Jewish Christians* were at this Time sunk into very remarkable Degeneracy both in Doctrine and Practice, which is not likely to have been the Case while they were under the first Impressions of their Conversion. And indeed in this Epistle there are some plain Intimations that the Destruction of *Jerusalem* was near at Hand, *Chap. v. 1,—8.* which Event was accomplished about the Year 70; and from this Circumstance we may reasonably conclude the *Date* of this Epistle to be about the Year 60 or 61.

It therefore appears, that this Epistle was not written by *James the Elder*, but must have been the Composition of another *James*, called *James the Less*, who was the Son of *Alpheus*, or *Cleophas*, and is said to be the *Brother*, that is, according to the Latitude in which the *Jews* were accustomed to understand this Expression, the *Kinsman* of our Lord; see *Mat. xiii. 55. Mark vi. 3.* And who is expressly numbered among the *twelve Apostles*; see *Mat. x. 2, 3. Mark iii. 17, 18. Luke vi. 14, 15. Acts i. 13.* And though the Time of this *James* being put to Death is not absolutely certain, it is supposed by many learned Men to have happened in the Year 62, before *St. Paul* wrote his Epistle to the *Hebrews*, which was in the Year 63. And if this Account be right, the Date of his Epistle cannot be later than I have already assigned it.

*James the Less* stately resided at *Jerusalem*; whence he hath been stiled by some ancient Fathers, *Bishop* of that City; though without sufficient Foundation, as we observed *Vol. iii. Sect. cliv. Note (b).* Now *James* being one of the Apostles of the Circumcision, while he confined his *personal* Labours to the Inhabitants of

*Judæa*, it was very natural for him to endeavour by his *Writings* to extend his Services to the *Jewish Christians* who were dispersed abroad in more distant Regions. For this Purpose there are *Two Points* which the *Apostle* seems to have principally aimed at, tho' he hath not pursued them in an orderly and *logical* Method, but in the free Epistolary Manner, handling them jointly or distinctly, as Occasions naturally offered. And these were — “ To correct  
 “ those Errors both in Doctrine and Practice, into which the *Jew-*  
 “ *ish Christians* had fallen, which might otherwise have produced  
 “ fatal Consequences; and then, to establish the Faith, and ani-  
 “ mate the Hope, of sincere Believers both under their present and  
 “ their approaching Sufferings.”

And in Prosecution of this *double View*, after inscribing the Epistle to the twelve Tribes in their Dispersion, the *Apostle* enters on his Subject, by endeavouring to fortify their Minds under those Trials wherewith they would be exercised, by suitable Representations of the Benefit of those Trials, of the Readiness of *God* to communicate all necessary Supplies of Wisdom and Grace in Answer to the fervent Prayer of Faith, and by exposing the Vanity of all worldly Enjoyments, which often prove the Means of insnaring and ruining their Possessors. *Chap. i. 1,—16.* And then as a Means of their Stedfastness notwithstanding the most powerful Temptations to Apostacy, he exhorts them to remember and acknowledge the manifold Goodness of *God* in the various Blessings bestowed upon them; more especially, in that of his regenerating Grace, which should constrain them to the Exercise of every Virtue, especially to an ingenuous and candid Reception of his Word, and a Concern resolutely and constantly to adhere to its Directions; particularly, by bridling their Tongues, and succouring such as were afflicted. *Ver. 17, to the End.* And then the *Apostle*, by an easy Transition having glanced at some of their particular Failings, takes the Occasion of introducing Cautions on sundry other Articles in which they needed Reprehension; particularly against showing an undue Respect to Men's external Circumstances, and resting satisfied in a partial Observation of the divine Precepts, especially where the royal Law of Charity, or universal Benevolence, was in Question. *Chap. ii. 1,—13.* After this, as several of the *Jewish Christians* discovered a Disposition to rest in an external and empty Profession of Religion, probably from an Abuse of the Doctrine of Justification by Faith, he largely descants on the Inefficacy of a mere *Historical Faith*, and evinces, by most striking  
 Instances

Instances and Illustrations, the utter Insufficiency of it for our Justification and eternal Salvation. *Ver. 14, to the End.* And as such a barren Profession is apt to inspire Men with conceited and vain-glorious Sentiments of themselves, while they are destitute of every divine Habit and Attainment, he deems it expedient to subjoin a Caution to these *Jewish Christians*, against their being too forward in assuming the Office and Character of Teachers; and as spiritual Pride tends to inflame Men's unbridled Passions, and to set on Fire their licentious Tongues, he resumes and expatiates on a Subject which he had before only slightly touched upon, recommending a strict Government of the Tongue, as a Matter, though of great Difficulty, yet of the highest Importance. *Chap. iii. 1,—12.* And in close Connection with such a Topick, it was very natural to inculcate, as the Apostle does, a candid benevolent Disposition, guarding them against Censoriousness and Animosities, and that Love of the World which tends to excite them; to restrain which he recommends a humble Application to GOD for divine Influences: *Ver. 13.—Chap. iv. 10.* Suggesting particular Cautions against Evil-speaking, and vain Confidence in the Events of Futurity, or in any worldly Possessions, which often prove a Temptation to Luxury, and an Occasion of Ruin. And then as to afflicted and oppressed *Christians*, he encourages and exhorts them to wait patiently for the Coming of the Lord: *Ver. 11.—v. 8.* And concludes the Epistle with condemning profane and vain Swearing, with recommending Moderation, Fortitude and Prayer, a ready Acknowledgment of our Faults, and a sollicitous Concern for the common Salvation. *Ver. 9. to the End.*



A  
P A R A P H R A S E  
A N D  
N O T E S  
O N T H E  
C A T H O L I C E P I S T L E  
O F  
St. J A M E S.

---

S E C T. I.

*The Apostle James endeavours to fortify the Christians to whom he writes, under those Trials wherewith they would be exercised, by suitable Representations of the Benefit of those Trials, of the Readiness of GOD to communicate all necessary Supplies of Wisdom and Grace in Answer to the fervent Prayer of Faith; and by exposing the Vanity of all worldly Enjoyments, which often prove the Means of ensnaring and ruining their Possessors. James I. 1,—16.*

JAMES I. 1.

JAMES I. 1.

JAMES a Servant of  
GOD, and of the Lord  
Jesus.

**T**HIS Epistle is written by *James (a)*, Sect. 1. who esteems it his Honour to be a faithful Jam. I. 1.

(a) *James.*] That is, as we have already observed, the *Apostle James the less*; whom Antiquity, (I know not on what Pretence,) calls *Bishop of Jerusalem*; perhaps because he resided *there* more than most of the *Apostles*. He was the *Brother of Christ*, and it is said he was exalted to this Office, on the Death of *James the great*, beheaded by *Herod: Acts xii. 2, 17.*

(b) *Twelve*

Sect. I. faithful *Servant* and constant Worshipper of the true and living *G O D*, and of his Son *Jesús Christ*, to the twelve Tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting.

Jam. I. I. *the Lord Jesús Christ*; and is address'd with the sincerest Affection *to the twelve Tribes (b)* of *Israel* in this their State of *Dispersion (c)*; so that he would have every Son of *Abraham* according to the *Flesh* consider it as address'd to him, and would himself be considered as *greeting* them all with the most cordial *Wishes of Grace and Peace*; though especially as address'ing himself to those, whom the *Bond of the same Christian Profession* unites yet more strictly to the *Author*.

- 2 *My dear Brethren, count it Matter of all Joy, when you fall into a Variety of Trials, for the Sake of the true Religion, which so many, instead of embracing with a becoming Thankfulness and Zeal, are by all possible Methods endeavouring to extirpate.*
- 3 Far from being discouraged by such *Trials, in such a Cause, rejoice in them, as knowing that the little and short Proof of your Faith* to which it is now brought, in its natural Consequences, under the Influences of *divine Grace, worketh Patience*, which
- 4 will grow by such *Exercise. And let Patience have [its] perfect Work*, that it may rise to its highest Improvements, during this little Space of *Time, in which alone you will have an Opportunity of glorifying God,*
- 2 My Brethren, count it all Joy when ye fall into divers Temptations;
- 3 Knowing *this*, that the trying of your Faith worketh Patience.
- 4 But let Patience have her perfect Work, that ye may

(b) *Twelve Tribes.*] *Dr. Lardner (Credibility, Vol. i. pag. 223, &c.)* very justly observes, that *Josephus* concludes the *Twelve Tribes* to be still in being, when he says, that *six* Persons were sent out of every *Tribe*, to assist in translating the *Scriptures* into *Greek*. It is very evident, that at the *Restoration in Zerobabel's Time, ten Tribes* stay'd behind. See *Dr. Whitby in loc.*

(c) In this their State of *Dispersion.*] *Dr. Whitby in loc.* hath some very pertinent Quotations from *Josephus, Philo,* and even *Cicero*, to show that the *Jews* were dispersed abroad, and were to be found in great Multitudes, in almost all Parts of the *World*. And *Dr. Lardner*, besides the Citations in *Dr. Whitby*, produces another remarkable Passage to the same Purpose, from a Letter of *Agrippa* to the *Emperor*. See *Credibility of the Gospel History, Part i. Book I. Chap. 3. Compare Acts ii. 4,—11.*

(d) If



may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.

GOD, and adorning Christianity, *that so ye may be perfect and compleat, deficient in nothing*; for the other Graces of Christianity will generally shine brightest, where Patience is most conspicuous.

Sect. 1.  
Jam. I. 4.

5 If any of you lack Wisdom, let him ask of GOD, that giveth to all Men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him.

*But if any one of you be deficient in Wisdom (d), and incapable of certainly discerning his Duty in such critical Conjunctions, as these in which you are called out to act; let him ask further Supplies of [it] from GOD, its eternal Fountain, who gives to all every necessary Communication of that, and all other Blessings, liberally, and upbraideth not any with the Importunity or Frequency of their Addressses; and it shall be given him, so far as is needful for his Safety, and the Discharge of his Duty.*

5

6 But let him ask in Faith, nothing wavering: for he that wavereth is like a Wave of the Sea, driven with the Wind, and tossed.

*But then let him take Care, that he ask in steady Faith, nothing wavering, not divided by the Desires of obtaining, and the Fears of not obtaining the Grace he asks, or doubting of GOD's Readiness to bestow it; for he that wavers, and has not a firm Confidence in the divine Goodness and Faithfulness, can have no other solid and substantial Support; but is like a Billow of the Sea (e), driven on, and tossed by the Wind, in a restless and unfettled Condition, (Isai. lvii. 20.) easily discomposed and agitated by every adverse Blast, and in the greatest Danger of being*

6

(d) *If any one of you be deficient in Wisdom.*] Several interpret this of Wisdom to bear Afflictions well, and suppose that when GOD is said *not to upbraid*, it is upon Supposition of former Impatience; but this, tho' authorized by so great a Name as Mr. Howe, (See his Works, Vol. i. pag. 690.) is one of those limited Interpretations, which I cannot fully approve.

(e) *Like a Wave of the Sea.*] Mr. Saurin paraphrases it thus, "He ought not to resemble the Waves of the Sea, which seem to offer to the Spectator, that is upon the Shore, the Treasures with which they are charged; but soon plunge it in the Abyss, from which it cannot be recovered." Saurin's Serm. Vol. ix. pag. 438. But the Interpretation given in the Paraphrase, appears to me much more simple and natural. He elsewhere paraphrases it, "Like a Wave which moves on, and seems to come to the Shore, but immediately returns with Impetuosity into the Gulph from whence it came." Ibid. Vol. v. pag. 56, 57.

(f) The

Sect. 1. being dashed in Pieces. *Let not that*

Jam. I. 7. *Man therefore think, that he shall receive any*

*Thing of the Lord,* while he continues in such a Situation, and dares not trust in him for those Supplies of Grace which he professes to seek. These unworthy Suspicions, as they wrong the divine Goodness, may in many Instances prevent the Communication of those Favours, which might otherwise be obtained. Such a *double*

8 *minded Man,* whose Schemes are divided between GOD and the World, and who cannot cheerfully and resolutely commit himself, in Confidence of divine Support, to be led whithersoever Providence shall please, [*is*] *unsettled in all his Ways:* He will perpetually be running into Inconsistencies of Conduct, and those imperfect and undetermined Impressions of Religion which he feels, will serve rather to perplex and torment, than guide and secure him.

9 In nothing are the Generality of Men more apt to mistake, than in estimating the Value of external Circumstances; but let the Principles of Christianity instruct you, my Brethren, to correct that Mistake; and in this Respect, *let the Brother of low Degree,* of a poor and obscure Condition, *rejoice in his Exaltation;* let him think of his Dignity as a Christian, and entirely acquiesce in his low Sphere of Life, for his Circumstances do really give him such Advantages for Religion, by placing him under a Shelter from many Temptations, that he has a much fairer Probability than others, of rising to some Eminence in the heavenly World. *But let the rich Man*

10 *be greatly cautious, and if he allow himself to rejoice, let it not be in the Height of his Circumstances; but in the Humiliation*

7 For let not that Man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord.

8 A double minded Man is unstable in all his Ways.

9 Let the Brother of low Degree rejoice in that he is exalted:

10 But the rich, in that he is made low: because as the

the Flower of the Grass he shall pass away.

11 For the Sun is no sooner risen with a burning Heat, but it withereth the Grass, and the Flower thereof falleth, and the Grace of the Fashion of it perisheth: so also shall the rich Man fade away in his Ways.

12 Blessed is the Man that endureth Temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the Crown of Life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.

13 Let no Man say, when he is tempted, I am tempted of GOD: for GOD can-  
not

tion (f) of his Mind; for all other Occasions of rejoicing are very precarious. And as for his Distinction in this World, as the Flower of the Grass he shall quickly pass away. For [no sooner] is the Sun risen with a scorching Heat, [but] immediately the Grass, which in Spring looks so fair and flourishing, is dried up; and the Flower thereof, that adorned it, loses its painted Glories yet much sooner; it falleth to the Ground, and all the Beauty of its lovely Form is perished; so shall the rich Man also fade away in his Paths, and though he may by prudent Management, or remarkable Success, grow richer and richer, he dies in the Midst of all his Wealth, and it can no longer either delight, or adorn him.

You will be exercised with Trials while you continue in the present World; but repine not at them: Happy [is] the Man who with a proper Steadiness and Fortitude of Mind endures Temptation; for being approved by such a Course of them as the infinite Wisdom of GOD shall appoint, he shall receive the Crown of eternal Life, which the Lord Jesus Christ has graciously promised to all them that love him, and express their Love by such Fidelity and Zeal. Let no Man who is tempted, say, I am tempted of GOD (g); for GOD is himself by Virtue of

(f) The rich Man in his Humiliation.] Mr. Pyle explains this of a rich Man's being stripped of his Possessions by Persecution, and so reduced for the Sake of his Adherence to Christianity; but this seems not properly opposed to the Exaltation mentioned above. Indeed in any View it must be allowed a very difficult Passage. But I have preferred the Interpretation which seemed to be least entangled, — and indeed to be most agreeable to the Original, if we may rely on an Observation made by Beza, and after him by Raphelius, (and they are both very critical Judges of the Greek Language,) that ταπεινωσις, the Word here used by St. James expresses rather the Disposition of a Man's Mind, than his State and Condition, which is properly ταπεινωσις: though it must be confessed this Distinction is not always observed.

(g) Tempted of GOD.] The Phrase it seems had formerly been in Use; and there is a Sense in which it is allowable. But the obnoxious Sense is so much more ob-

- Sect. I. of his boundless Knowledge and almighty Power, *incapable of being tempted by Evils,* and such is the perfect Rectitude and Benevolence of his Nature, that *he tempteth not any Man*; but on the contrary, abhors all Sin, and lays no Man, in any imaginable Circumstances, under any Necessity of committing it: *But every Man is tempted by the innate Weakness of his own Nature, in Concurrence with the Circumstances of Life in which he is placed, being allured by his own Lusts, and for want of wisely and resolutely opposing the first rising of them, being ensnared (b) to the actual*
- 14 Commission of Sin; *For the Gradation is much more swift and fatal, than the Generality of Mankind are aware; and indeed Lust having conceived, brings forth actual Sin by a speedy Birth, where perhaps the full Indulgence of it was not intended; and Sin when it is finished, or perpetrated (i), is impregnated with Death, and tends in its Consequences to the final Ruin both of Soul and Body, as naturally as the Conception of an Animal does to the Birth. Therefore be not deceived (k), my beloved Brethren, by its flattering Form, nor venture to trifle with Temptations, under a fond Conceit that you shall be able to break the Connection, by stopping yourselves at Pleasure in the Advance of the Danger, or recovering your-*
- not be tempted with Evil, neither tempteth he any Man.
- 14 But every Man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own Lust, and enticed.
- 15 Then when Lust have conceived, it bringeth forth Sin: and Sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth Death.
- 16 Do not err, my beloved Brethren.

vious, that the *Apostle* thought proper to advise, it should be avoided for the future. Perhaps the *Word* might have altered its Signification, as it is certain many Words do.

(b) *Being allured and ensnared: ἐξελασόμενος και δελεαζόμενος.*] The original Words have a singular Beauty and Elegance, containing an Allusion to the Method of *drawing Fishes* out of the Water with a Hook, concealed under the Bait which they greedily devour.

(i) *Finished, or perpetrated: ἀπελειθεσα.*] The Word is used in this Sense by *Polybius*, in a Passage quoted by *Raphelius in loc.*

(k) *Therefore be not deceived.*] This is agreeable to the Reading of the *Alexandrian Manuscript*, which after *μη* inferts *ων*, *therefore*; by which the Connection is rendered more apparent.

yourself again when Sin has been committed. Sect. 1.

Jam. 1. 16.

I M P R O V E M E N T.

LET us learn this holy *Caution*; and guard against those Ver. 16.  
 Baits of *Lust* under which *Death* is concealed; remembering Ver. 14, 15.  
 that GOD has made us with a Power of determining our own Ac-  
 tions, that he *tempis none* to Evil, nor appoints to any such *Temp-* Ver. 13.  
*tations*, as he knows to be in their own Nature *irresistible*. Be our  
 Spiritual Enemies ever so powerful, or ever so artful, they cannot  
 do us any Hurt, till we betray *ourselves* into their Hands. Yet  
 certain it is, that their Artifice and their Power, in Conjunction  
 with the Advantage which the Corruption of our own Hearts gives  
 them, make it requisite, that conscious to ourselves of our *Deficiency* Ver. 5.  
*in Wisdom*, we should *ask it of GOD*. Let the *Liberality* with  
 which he gives it, and the *royal Freedom* with which he has pro-  
 mised it, encourage us to ask it with such Constancy, that we may  
 receive daily Supplies; and with firm *Confidence* in his Goodness,  
 that we may not *waver*, and *be like a Wave of the Sea tossed with* Ver. 6, 7.  
*the Wind*.

Trusting in that Supply of Grace we receive from him, let us  
 go forth calmly and cheerfully to meet such *Trials* as the infinite Ver. 2.  
 Wisdom of GOD shall appoint for us, how various and pressing so-  
 ever they may be; remembering they tend to *improve our Patience*, Ver. 3, 4.  
 and by *Patience* to *perfect* every other Grace; and that if we be  
 not overcome, we shall be *approved*, and made more meet to re-  
*ceive the Crown of Life, which the Lord has promised to them that love* Ver. 12.  
*him*. And Oh, that the *Love* of this blessed Lord, who has pro-  
 cured as well as promised it, may always render us superior to e-  
 very Trial, and *more than Conquerors through him that hath loved*  
*us*, and thereby hath acquired to himself so just a Claim to our su-  
 pream Affection. With Hearts faithfully engaged to him, and  
 established in the firmest Resolutions for his Service, let us look Ver. 9, 10.  
 with Indifference upon those *Worldly Circumstances*, about which  
 they who have no Sense of a higher Interest, are exceedingly solli-  
 citous; and let us regulate our Value of all the good Things of  
 Life, by a Regard to their *Aspect* upon our religious Characters and  
 Hopes. — If *low* Circumstances may improve *these*, let us look  
 upon them as *true Exaltation*; and if Wealth, and Dignity, and  
 Applause, may endanger *these*, let us rather *fear* them, than aspire

Se<sup>c</sup>t. 1. to them. Whatever we have obtained of those Things, which the Men of the World are most ready to covet and admire, is transitory and *fading as the Grass*, or even as the *Flower of the Field*; and sometimes like those beautiful, but tender Productions of vegetable Nature, is consumed by the *Excess* of those Causes, to which it owes its Existence, and its Beauty. "Give us, O Lord, *durable Riches, and Righteousness*, and that *Honour which cometh from thee*, and is *immortal*, as its great Original."

S E C T. II.

*The Apostle exhorts them to remember and acknowledge the manifold Goodness of GOD, in the various Blessings bestowed upon them; more especially in that of his regenerating Grace, which should constrain them to the Exercise of every Virtue; especially to an ingenuous and candid Reception of his Word, and a Concern resolutely and constantly to adhere to its Directions; particularly by bridling their Tongues, and succouring such as were afflicted. James. I. 17, — 27.*

JAMES I. 17. ~~for the~~  
 Se<sup>c</sup>t. 2. **T**HAT ye may be forfeited against every Temptation, and may be animated to behave in a Manner becoming your Christian Profession, Remember, that *every good Gift, and every perfect Gift* which the Children of Men can receive, *is from above*; and the more compleatly excellent the Benefit is, the more Reason have they to acknowledge it, as *descending from the great and eternal Father of Lights (a)*, the

JAMES I. 17.  
**E**VERY good Gift, and every perfect Gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of Lights, with whom is no Va-

(a) *Father of Lights.*] It is the Opinion of *Glassius* that this Phrase only expresses the *Majesty and Glory* of GOD, as if the *Apostle* had said, *The most illustrious and glorious*

Variableness, neither Shadow of turning.

the Blessed GOD, from whom Reason and Light, and Joy are derived. The Sun itself is but a feeble Image of his Glory, Sect. 2.  
Jam. I. 17.

with whom there is no Variableness, nor so much as any Shadow of Turning (b); whereas the Sun is continually varying, and has no sooner arrived to its Meridian, but it begins to descend to the West, or to its Summer Height, but it verges towards the Winter again; causing the Direction of the Shadows it occasions, proportionably to vary.

18 Of his own Will be-  
gat he us with the Word of  
Truth, that we should be a  
Kind of First-fruits of his  
Creatures.

But the immutable and everlasting GOD 18:  
has condescended to multiply those Favours upon us as Christians, which should bind our Souls to him in the Bonds of unchangeable Love; for of his own sovereign Will he impregnated us with the powerful Word of his divine and Evangelical Truth, that we might be a Kind of First-fruits (c) of his  
Creatures,

rious Father. But the accurate Bos more justly imagines, that the Allusion to the Sun which there is in the following Words, begins here; and that the Phrase refers to the Heathens calling that glorious Luminary, the Father of Light, and the Author of Light; some Instances of which he produces. See *Exercitat. Philolog. in loc.* The learned Albert cites a Passages from *Macrobius*, in which the same Title is applied to *Jupiter*. *Observ. Philolog. in loc.*

(b) *Every good Gift &c.*] It is observable that the *Apostle* makes use of two different Words to express *Gift*; the one of which is more poetical and sounding than the other, and he has placed the Words in such an Order that they make an *Heroic Verse*. So that were they to be rendered, “*Every good Gift and every Boon compleat*,” it might perhaps give the *English Reader* a more exact Idea of the *Original*; but as there is all imaginable Reason to believe this was quite an accidental Thing, I thought it might have the Appearance of *Affectation* to have endeavoured to retain it. As neither *Boon*, nor *Present*, would have been proper in this Connection, I know not how to render *δοσις* and *δωρημα* by different Words: Such is the Poverty of our Language, or the Defect of my Acquaintance with it. But the Words, a compleatly excellent Benefit, are inserted in the *Paraphrase*, to preserve some little Imitation of the *Original*. As some learned Men have observed that *τροπικη αποσκιασμα* is something of an *Astronomical Phrase*, and refers to the different Aspects of the *Sun*, as it approaches one or the other *Tropick*, (See *Dr. Bates's Works*, p 747.) I have been careful to express that Sentiment. It hath been the Opinion of some Persons that this is intended to oppose some heretical Notion, of the Influence of the Stars in the Affairs of human Life; but I know not that any such ridiculous Conceit had so early a Footing in the *Church*.

(c) *Kind of First-fruits.*] It has often been observed, that this was addressed to the Jews who were first called to *Christianity*, before the Gospel was preached to the *Gentiles*; but it will not follow, that all the dispersed of the *Twelve Tribes* to whom  
he.

Sect. 2. *Creatures*, more excellent than others, and in a peculiar Manner separated and consecrated to him from among the rest of Mankind. Let us be conscious of the Honour he has hereby done us, and take heed that we do not sacrilegiously alienate ourselves from his Service.

Jam. I. 18.

- 19 *Therefore, my beloved Brethren*, that we may be thus religiously sacred to him, and ever employed to the Purposes he has directed, *let every Man be swift to hear* the Instructions of his Word, and all the good Advices which may be given him agreeable to the Tenor of it; but be *slow to speak*, guarding sollicitously against every rash, and especially every proud and dictatorial Expression; and *slow to Wrath (d)*, not easily yielding to Provocations, how injuriously soever he may be treated; *For the Wrath of Man*, even where it may be most ready to assume the Title of religious Zeal, *worketh not*, but on the contrary greatly obstructs *the Righteousness of GOD (e)*; instead of promoting the Cause of true Religion in the World, it is a Reproach to it, and a Means of exciting the Prejudices of Mankind against it. Endeavour *therefore* to regulate your Passions by these great Maxims; and *laying aside all inward, or outward Filthiness* on the one Hand, and all *Overflowing of Malignity* on the other, compose yourselves, *with all Meek-*

19 Wherefore, my beloved Brethren, let every Man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to Wrath.

20 For the Wrath of Man worketh not the Righteousness of GOD.

21 Wherefore lay apart all Filthiness, and Superfluity of Naughtiness, and receive with Meekness the in-

he addresses, were so called; and GOD did not intend there should afterwards be any Distinction between them and other *Christians*. I think it therefore much better to explain it, as referring to their *Christian Privileges* in general.

(d) *Slow to Wrath.*] It is well known that the *Jewish Doctors* were apt to contend very *fiercely* about their different Opinions; but it is indeed so much the *general Infirmity* of human Nature, as unhappy Experience teaches us, that the Caution is of *universal Concern*.

(e) *Worketh not the Righteousness of GOD.*] Some think the Meaning is, simply, A Man, who is often a Prey to angry Passions, is incapable of performing that *Obedience*, which GOD requires; but *promoting the Interest of the Kingdom of GOD* may be included in the Meaning of *working his Righteousness*; and this *false Zeal* is so often defended under that *Notion*, that I was willing in the *Paraphrase* to point out that Idea *plainly*.

(f) In-



ingrafted Word, which is able to save your Souls.

Meekness and Gentleness of Mind, to receive the ingrafted Word (f); that Word, which, when implanted in your Minds by the Influence of divine Grace, is able to save your Souls, and will effectually form them to a Meetness for a happy Immortality.

Sect. 2.  
Jam. I. 21.

22 But be ye Doers of the Word, and not Hearers only, deceiving your own-selves.

But then you must remember to be Doers of the Word, and not Hearers only, sophistically deceiving and imposing upon yourselves (g) with an unprofitable Attendance, while it has no inward Efficacy upon your Hearts.

22

23 For if any be a Hearer of the Word, and not a Doer, he is like unto a Man beholding his natural Face in a Glass:

For if any one be merely a Hearer of the Word, and not a Doer, he is like a Man carelessly beholding his natural Face in a Mirror, or Glass, who sees some accidental Spot upon it, which it would be convenient to wipe off.

23

24 For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his Way, and straightway forgetteth what Manner of Man he was.

For his looking into the Glass, and taking Notice of it for the present, will signify nothing if he beholds himself, and goes away, and immediately forgets what Manner of Person he was; forgets what rendered him disagreeable, and required to be corrected.

24

25 But whoso looketh into the perfect Law of Liberty, and

But he is the wise and happy Man, who bends down as it were his whole Attention to this important Matter, and is so fit upon his own Reformation and Improvement, that he looketh into the Gospel, that perfect Law of Liberty.

25

(f) *Ingrafted Word*: εμψυλον λογου.] Some have translated this Phrase, the natural, the innate, or internal Word, referring to what hath been sometimes called, the Light within; and it must be acknowledged that εμψυλος hath frequently this Signification. But the Version here given is undeniably justified by Bos and Elser in loc. who illustrate this whole Clause by some apposite and elegant Quotations from the Classics. The Word of GOD is frequently compared to Seed, or to a Plant; particularly 1 Pet. i. 23. 1 John iii. 9. in which Sense it is here said to be εμψυλος, ingrafted or implanted in their Minds.

(g) *Hearers only, deceiving &c.*] The Jews did indeed place much of their Religion in going up at proper Times to the Synagogue to hear the Law read; and there may possibly be an Allusion to that Disposition. The exact Signification of παραλογισμοι is imposing upon any by a sophistical Shew of Argument; and here it is used with great Propriety, as Mr. Superville has observed, *Serm. Vol. iv. pag. 124.* Yet Dr. Edwards tells us the Jewish Writers have a Proverb among them, that "he who hears the Law, and does not practise it, is like a Man, who plows and sows, but never reaps."

(h) *Bends*.

Sect. 2. *berty (b)*, by regarding which the truest and noblest Liberty is obtained, whatever Confinement it may seem to lay us under : He, I say, who not only takes a transient View of its Contents and Designs, but *continues [therein]*, deeply reflecting upon it, and charging his own Soul with its important Doctrines and Precepts ; *this Man not being a forgetful Hearer, but a Doer of the Work* it enjoins ; *this Man*, I say, *shall be happy in his Deed*, and shall find an Advantage which mere speculative Knowledge, though the most perfect and excellent in its Kind, could not possibly secure.

26

But then remember, that when I speak of his Deeds, I mean not on any Account to excuse him from paying proper Regard to his Words ; for it is necessary I should inculcate that *if any Man among you seem to be religious, not resolutely bridling his Tongue*, and reining it in, to prevent those Sallies to which it may sometimes incline, *but deceiving his Heart (i)* with an Imagination, that a Freedom from other Acts of Iniquity, or from gross Profaneness and Wickedness of Speech, or that some good Intention, notwithstanding his Exorbitancies of this Kind, will excuse him before God, even

and continueth *therein*, he being not a forgetful Hearer, but a Doer of the Work, this Man shall be blessed in his Deed.

26 If any Man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his Tongue, but deceiveth his own Heart, this Man's Religion is vain.

(*b*) Bends down his whole Attention, and *looketh &c.*] I have endeavoured in the *Paraphrase* to express the *Emphasis* of the original ο δε παρακνυλας. Compare 1 *Pet.* i. 12. where there is an evident Allusion to the bending Posture of the *Cherubim*, who overshadowed the *Mercy-Seat* in the *Holy of Holies*.

(*i*) *Not bridling, but deceiving &c.*] That excellent Person and Writer, *Dr. Butler*, the present *Bishop of Bristol*, justly observes, that this is the proper *rendering* of the Word ; as if the *Apostle* had said, It is impossible that any Man should so much as *seem to be religious*, if he does not at least *think* that he *bridles his Tongue* ; but if he *deceive himself* in this important Branch of Religion, he is deceived in the *whole* of it. *Butler's Serm.* iv. pag. 58. And indeed so many *Sins of the Tongue* are committed without any Apprehension of their being evil, that this *Caution*, and this *Remark* for the Explication of it, is of great *Importance*, considering how little many *Zealots* seem to be aware of the great Evil of *bitterly reproaching* their Brethren upon Account of their *religious* Differences ; the *Sin*, which (as *Mr. Baxter* justly observes, see his *Works*, Vol. iv. pag. 447.) the *Apostle* seems to have had *particularly* in his View.

(*k*) Without

27 Pure Religion and undefiled before GOD and the Father, is this, to visit the Fatherless and Widows in their Affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the World.

even though he indulge himself in venting Sect. 2.  
irregular Passions under sacred Names; *this* }  
*Man's Religion [is] but vain*, and will stand Jam. I. 26.  
him in no real Stead, whatever Complacency he may at present find in his religious Pretensions. *Pure and undefiled Religion*, that which is clear and without any Flaw, (k) or Blemish, before the penetrating Eyes of GOD, even the Father, consists not merely in Speculations or Forms, or in the Warmth of Affection during the Exercise of Worship (l); but it is this, to take the Oversight of Orphans and Widows in their Affliction (m), with a tender Regard to their calamitous Circumstances, [and] endeavouring to oversee them, in such a Manner as to provide for their Relief, performing to others in Distress suitable Offices of Kindness and Charity; at the same Time, taking a prudent Care to keep himself unspotted from those bad Practices, and irregular Indulgences, which so generally prevail in the World about us, where so little either of Religion, or Morality, is to be found. 27

(k) Without any Flaw.] Archbishop Tillotson has justly observed, that there seems here to be an Allusion to the Excellence of a precious Stone, which consists much in its being καθαρά και αμειβλος, clear, and without Flaw, or Cloud. (See his Works, Vol. ii. pag. 581.) And surely no Gem is so precious or ornamental, as the lovely Temper here described.

(l) Pure and undefiled Religion — consists not merely in the Warmth of Affection during the Exercise of Worship.] The original Word θρησκεια, which, in Conformity with our Translators, I have rendered Religion, strictly signifies divine Worship; and intimates here, that no Kind of religious Services paid to the Deity, can be of any Avail, if we neglect the royal Law of Charity, and to visit the Fatherless and Widows in their Affliction: An Idea which I have endeavoured to preserve in the Paraphrase.

(m) Taking the Oversight of &c.] So επισκεπεισθαι properly signifies, and may import entering into Measures for their Subsistence, as well as sometimes going to them, and conversing with them in their Distresses. See the Note on Mat. xxv. 36. Vol. ii. Sect. 166. Note (d).

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

- Sect. 2. **W**ITH all Gratitude let us direct our Eyes and our Hearts to the *unchangeable Father of Lights*, and acknowledge every good and every perfect Gift as descending from him; but above all, the invaluable Gift of his *regenerating Grace*, to which, if we are the *First-fruits of his Creatures*, we are certainly indebted, and are thereby laid under the strongest Engagements to *consecrate* ourselves continually to his Service. Let us therefore listen with most *obedient* Regard to every Intimation of his Will, and set a Guard upon all our *Passions*, that they may move in sweet and harmonious Subjection to it. Especially, let us be *slow to Wrath*, and not imagine that we can be justified in the Exorbitances of our angry Transports, because they may possibly arise in the *Cause of Religion*. The *Righteousness of GOD* is not to be promoted, but on the contrary, will be *disgraced* and *obstructed*, by such outrageous ungovernable Sallies. Let every *impure* and *malignant* Affection be therefore banished from our Minds, and let us pray that the Word of GOD may be so *ingrafted* into our Souls, as to become the effectual Mean of our *Salvation*. Let us not rest in a mere *forgetful Hearing*, or indeed in an ineffectual *Remembrance*; but having *looked into* the Gospel, that *perfect Law*, which by binding the Soul, gives it the truest *Liberty*, let us by divine Assistance *continue therein*, and improve to the immediate Purposes of Reformation, whatever Knowledge we thereby gain; correcting whatever we observe *amiss* in ourselves. Particularly, let us study a proper Command over our *Tongues*, and cultivate those *charitable* Dispositions and Offices, in which *true and undefiled Religion* is here said to consist; that *Widows* and *Orphans* may give us their Blessing, as their Guardians and Friends; and that an *unspotted Life*, *untainted* with the Vices of a degenerate Age, may bear Witness, that though *in the World*, we are not *of it*, and that we act in Consistency with those sublime and holy Ends, to which we profess as *Christians* to aspire.

S E C T.

S E C T. III.

*He cautions them against shewing an undue Respect to Men's external Circumstances, and resting satisfied in a partial Observation of the divine Precepts; especially, where the royal Law of Charity, or universal Benevolence, was in Question. James II. I,—I 3.*

JAMES II. I.

**M**Y Brethren, have not the Faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, *the Lord of Glory*, with Respect of Persons.

<sup>2</sup> For if there come unto your Assembly a Man with a gold

JAMES II. I.

**M**Y Brethren, let me now caution you, that you hold not the Faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, [*the great Lord*] of Glory (a), in a partial Respect of Persons, so as to give undue Preference to any upon Account of their external Circumstances; whereas the Relation in which the meanest of your Fellow-Christians may stand to him, who is so glorious a Personage as the Son of GOD, should certainly recommend them to your Regard and Esteem. For I have observed something of this Kind among many, which seems to require such an Admonition as this; and have seen, that if a Man come into your Synagogue (b), when you are met for religious Worship, with a gold

Sect. 3.  
Jam. II. I.

2

(a) The Lord of Glory.] *Dr. Whitby* would render it, *the glorious Faith of our Lord Jesus Christ*; but I cannot think that by any Means necessary.

(b) Into your Synagogue.] *Mr. Cradock* and *Dr. Whitby* explain this of their judicial Assemblies, which the Jews held in their Synagogues. *Mat. x. 17. Acts xxii. 19.* And they imagine it is probable, that when they were converted to Christianity, they preserved the same Custom; and that the Partiality here blamed, related to two Persons, who had Causes to try, when the visible Superiority given to one, in the setting him in a more honorable Place than the other, would tend to pervert Justice in his Favour; and which *Maimonides* says the Jewish Precepts particularly forbid. But the representing both the Parties as seated, does not suit this Interpretation. It is urged, that some civil Distinctions might reasonably be made, and it must be allowed: But the Apostle probably saw it rising too high; and in Times of Persecution, when poor People ventured their Lives in Behalf of Christianity, they had some peculiar Title to honorable Regard.

Sect. 3.  
Jam. II. 2.

gold Ring (c) [and] other Parts of a splendid Dress, and at the same Time there come in also a poor Man in mean and sordid Raiment ; you are apt to shew an undue Regard to the former, and to put a visible Slight on the latter, at his first Appearance, without considering what may be the real

3 Character of the one, or the other. And whatever may be said in Excuse for this, it is often blameworthy ; for if ye have a Respect, as ye naturally have, for him who wears a splendid Dress, and say to him, Sit there in an honorable Place ; and say to the poor Man, Stand thou there, or sit here under my Footstool ; and distinguish not in yourselves (d) according to the different Characters of these two Men, but only regard their outward Appearance, you even become Judges, who reason ill (f) ; you seem by such a Conduct to determine, that external Circumstances are chiefly to be considered ; which certainly is wrong, and if it were to be pursued, would produce very iniquitous and unjustifiable Sentiments and Practices.

4 By such a Conduct as this, you court the Favour of the rich, and strongly intimate your Contempt of the poor, as poor ; but hearken, my beloved Brethren, and consider, for it is peculiarly worthy of your most attentive Regard ; hath not GOD apparently

5 Harken, my beloved Brethren, Hath not GOD chosen

a gold Ring, in goodly Apparel, and there come in also a poor Man, in vile Raiment ;

3 And ye have Respect to him that weareth the gay Clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good Place ; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my Footstool :

4 Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become Judges of evil Thoughts ?

5 Harken, my beloved Brethren, Hath not GOD chosen

(c) *With a gold Ring* : χρυσοδακτύλι. Perhaps this Compound Word might have been rendered, *Having his Fingers adorned with gold Rings*. The learned *Albert* hath observed, that those who valued themselves upon the Richness and Luxury of their Dress, were accustomed to deck their Fingers with a considerable Number of costly and valuable Rings, frequently wearing several upon one Finger. *Observ. Philolog. in loc.*

(d) *And distinguish not in yourselves* : και ο διακριθῆτε εν εαυτοις.] This I take to be the exact Rendering of this Clause, as the Verb is of the middle Signification, and that it should not be read as in our *English* Version, with an Interrogation.

(e) *Judges, who reason ill.*] Our *English* Version in this Place is literal, but at the same Time very obscure and ambiguous. *Beza's* Observation is a just one, that the Phrase in the Original is an *Hebraism*, and it is accordingly rendered by him, *Judices male ratiocinantes, Judges who reason ill.*

(f) *To*

chosen the Poor of this World, rich in Faith, and Heirs of the Kingdom, which he hath promised to them that love him?

rently chosen many, who are among the poor of this World, [to be] rich in Faith (f); and does it not appear, that they are so? Are they not Heirs of the Kingdom which he has promised to them that love him; and just upon the Point of being carried to a Glory, that will eclipse that of the greatest Monarchs on Earth? And does it become you, believing this, to despise those who, for any thing you know, may in a few Days be carried by Angels into Abraham's Bosom, and placed in the most distinguished Rank among the Guests at the celestial Banquet? But this indeed is the Case; you have often dishonoured the poor Man, though GOD may have condescended to visit him with such a gracious Regard, and have enriched him with such inestimable Mercies. On the other Hand, do not the rich, whom you court with so much Respect and Affiduity, tyrannize over you, and drag you to their Tribunals? Are not most of the rich your Persecutors, rather than your Friends? Do they not blaspheme the honorable Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, by which you are called? And do they not often compel you to blaspheme it, and inflict the severest Penalties upon you, if you refuse? So that on the whole they often prove themselves the vilest of Men. And can you think, that when this is the Case, and you see so many poor Saints courageously enduring these Extremities, that you ought to fix your Eyes so much on a glaring outside, and overlook that heroic Worth, which so often appears under a Veil of Poverty? I beseech you, learn to think more reasonably at all Times, and especially to bring

Sect. 3.  
Jam. II. 5.

6 But ye have despised the Poor. Do not rich Men oppress you, and draw you before the Judgment-seats?

7 Do not they blaspheme that worthy Name, by the which ye are called?

6  
7

(f) To be rich in Faith.] The Ellipsis in these Words of εἰς τὸ πλούσιος ἢ γινέσθαι, is common; as Bos, and after him, Albert, hath observed. Accordingly I have rendered it, to be rich in Faith.

Sect. 3. bring better Sentiments into your Assemblies  
 for public Worship. And not only in  
 Jam. II. 8. such Instances, *but* in all others, endeavour  
 to act equitably; for *if you fulfil the noble*  
*and royal Law, which according to that*  
*Expression of the Scripture, ought with a*  
*Kind of Imperial Authority to govern all*  
*our Sentiments; Thou shalt love thy Neigh-*  
*bour as thyself; ye do well:* That would be in  
 every thing a Rule to you, and particularly  
 here; for none of you, if you were redu-  
 ced to Poverty, would wish to be treat-  
 ed with Marks of Slight and Contempt on  
 that Account, without any Regard to your  
 9 Character in other Respects. *But if ye*  
*do, in this particular Manner, accept the*  
*Persons of Men, ye work Iniquity therein,*  
*being convicted by the Law I have just now*  
*mentioned, as Transgressors of it. And*  
*give me Leave to say, that whatever Zeal*  
*you may shew for any other Precepts, if*  
*convicted here, you become guilty before*  
 GOD, and forfeit your Acceptance with  
 10 him. *For whoever shall keep the whole*  
*Law in every other Instance, but allow*  
*himself to offend in one [Particular], he is*  
*in Effect guilty of all; as he that commit-*  
*ted but one capital Crime, would as surely*  
*suffer Death, as if he had committed all*  
*that ever were prohibited in that Light.*  
 11 *For it is certain, that he disregards the Au-*  
*thority of the Lawgiver, which has esta-*  
*blished every Precept equally; as it is evi-*  
*dent, he that says, Thou shalt not commit A-*  
*dultery, hath also said, Thou shalt do no Mur-*  
*der. If therefore thou art not an Adulterer,*  
*but committest Murder, thou art evidently a*  
*Transgressor of the Law. Hence it appears,*  
 that it is not by a Regard to the divine Au-  
 thority, that thou abstainest from the for-  
 mer Crime, since that would equally have  
 pre-

8 If ye fulfil the royal  
 Law according to the Scrip-  
 ture, Thou shalt love thy  
 Neighbour as thyself, ye do  
 well.

9 But if ye have Respect  
 to Persons, ye commit Sin,  
 and are convicted of the  
 Law as Transgressors.

10 For whosoever shall  
 keep the whole Law, and  
 yet offend in one Point, he  
 is guilty of all.

11 For he that said, Do  
 not commit Adultery; said  
 also, Do not kill. Now if  
 thou commit no Adultery,  
 yet if thou kill, thou art  
 become a Transgressor of  
 the Law.



12 So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the Law of Liberty.

preserved thee from the latter. Let it Sect. 3.  
therefore be your Care, that ye *so speak,* *and so act,* as those that shall be judged by the Law of Liberty, by the glorious Gospel, which is a Dispensation that sets us at Liberty from the Bondage of the Jewish Ritual, and directs us to all the Branches of that Virtue and Holiness, which is the truest Liberty of the Mind, and which being so excellent, must subject us to severer Punishment, if we presume to contemn it. And especially, remember to maintain a Regard to it, where the Rules of Charity are concerned. For you know a particular Stress is laid upon this Branch, as of the highest Moment in the Sight of God; as we are warned by our compassionate Lord himself, that on the one hand, *He shall have Judgment without Mercy, who hath not exercised Mercy; and on the other hand, Mercy rejoices against Judgment,* and emboldens our Hopes, when we stand before that merciful Being, whom we have resembled in that amiable Part of his Character.

Jam. II. 12.

13 For he shall have Judgment without Mercy. that hath shewed no Mercy; and Mercy rejoiceth against Judgment.

13.

I M P R O V E M E N T.

THE *Apostle* could not intend to condemn those *civil Distinctions*, which are founded upon the different Relations and Circumstances of Mankind in the present World; but surely God intended to teach us, how *little Esteem* he sets upon *Riches*, by bestowing them on many of the most *undeserving* of Mankind, while he with-holds them from his *dearest Children*: And to *admire* them, and others, on Account of their *Riches*, while we pour *Contempt* on the *poor*, as poor, though so many of them are distinguished by the Riches of the divine Favour, must be highly *unreasonable*, and to God highly *offensive*. As for those who are *poor in this World, but rich in Faith*; let them adore the divine Munificence to them, and think with Pleasure of those *durable Riches*,

Ver. 1, 4.

Ver. 6.

Ver. 5.

Sect. 3. *Riches, and of that everlasting Kingdom, which GOD has prepared for them as their Inheritance.*

- Ver. 8. Whatever our Stations be, let us pray that the *royal Law* may be inscribed upon our Hearts, and that we may *love our Neighbours as ourselves*; guarding against that mean and prohibited *Respect of Persons*, which would expose us to *Conviction*, as *Transgressors of the Law*. Let us also learn to guard against that *Partiality* in our
- Ver. 10. Obedience to it, which is utterly inconsistent with *Sincerity*. Let
- Ver. 11. us remember, that the divine Authority *equally* establishes every
- Ver. 12. Precept of it, and that the *generous* Nature of the *Gospel* Dispensation, as a *Law of Liberty*, will be a sad Aggravation of our presumptuous Violation of it. A Consciousness of those many Defects and Imperfections, which the *best* of Men may see Reason to charge themselves with, should certainly engage our most earnest Applications to GOD for *Mercy*; and as we desire to obtain it, let it be our Care to *exercise Mercy* to others, both in the *Candor* of our Censures on the one Hand, and the Readiness of our *Liberality* on the other.

## S E C T. IV.

*The Apostle largely descants on the Inefficacy of a mere historical Faith, and evinces by most striking Instances and Illustrations, the utter Insufficiency of it for our Justification and eternal Salvation. James II. 14, to the End.*

JAMES II. 14.

Sect. 4. **I**T is with real Grief, that I perceive many of you seem highly to value yourselves upon the Profession you make of the Christian Religion, without being suitably impressed with a practical Sense of its important Principles, and influenced to a Life agreeable to them. But *what Advantage [is there], my Brethren, if any one say, He has Faith, but has not suitable*

Jam. II. 14.

JAMES II. 14.

**W**HAT *doth* it profit, my Brethren, though a Man say he hath Faith, and have not Works? Can Faith save him?

15 If a Brother or Sister be naked, and destitute of daily Food;

16 And one of you say unto them, Depart in Peace, be you warmed and filled: notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the Body; what doth it profit?

17 Even so Faith, if it hath

able Works (a) to support the Justice of Sect. 4. that Pretension? Can such a Faith, as may be separate from good Works, save him? Consider the Case, when Men make Professions of Charity, without producing the proper Fruits of it, and you will easily see how vain such a Pretension is. If, for Instance, a Brother or Sister be naked, and destitute of daily Food for the Subsistence of Life, And one of you, who calls himself a Christian, say to them, we heartily pity your Case, and feel the tender Emotions of that Love, which our Relation to each other requires; Depart therefore in Peace, whithersoever the Providence of God may lead you, and I sincerely wish that you may meet with suitable Accommodations: May ye be clothed and sheltered, warmed, and fed to the full; but with all these soft Addresses, if ye give not to them either Food, or Raiment, or any Money to purchase the Things necessary for the Body; what [does it] profit them to be addressed with such hypocritical Professions of Love? Yea, does it not rather seem a cruel Mockery, than a real Kindness? So also Faith, how zealously forever

(a) If anyone say he has Faith, but has not suitable Works.] I am surpris'd at the immense Pains Commentators have taken, to reconcile St. Paul and St. James; and the many Hypotheses they have formed for that Purpose. Whereas to me nothing is more evident, than that the Ideas they affix to the Words, Faith, and Works, are entirely different. St. James by the Word, Faith, means simply an Assent to the Truth of religious Principles, without determining whether it be, or be not, effectual; and then declares, that in Case this Assent does not produce good Works, that is, the solid Virtues of the Heart and Life, it cannot be accepted by God. Whereas St. Paul by the Word Faith means a cordial and vital Assent to divine Truth, which influences the Heart to a holy Temper, and according to the gracious Terms of the Gospel, entitles a Man to divine Acceptance, without any Regard at all to the Mosaic Law, and previous to the Production of any of those good Works, which will naturally be the Fruit of it. Had Luther calmly considered this, he would not have denied the Inspiration of St. James, out of Regard to his supposed Heterodoxy in the Business of Justification, nor would one of his Followers have presumed to charge him expressly with lying, as Limborch tells us he did, *Mentitus est Jacobus in Caput suum. Limborch. Theol. I. iii. 16.*

Sect. 4. ever it may be professed, and how orthodox  
 Jam. II. 17. soever those Articles are to which an Assent  
 is given, *if it have not* suitable Works to  
 attend it, *being by itself, is dead (b)*, and  
 producing no substantial Fruit, is altogether  
 18 insignificant. *But one* better instructed  
 in Christianity, *may perhaps say* to one of  
 these forward Professors, in order to bring  
 Matters to a short Issue, Thou sayest that  
*thou hast Faith, and I make it appear in*  
*my Life and Conversation, that I have*  
*Works, which naturally spring from that*  
*Principle: Give me then the Evidence I*  
*offer thee; shew me thy Faith by thy*  
*Works (c), and I will also in Return shew*  
*thee my Faith by my Works: Let us without*  
 quarreling about different Explications of  
 Faith, make it manifest to each other, that  
 our Profession is truly solid, by its substan-  
 tial Effects upon our Tempers and Lives.  
 19 *Thou assuredly believest that there is one* only  
 true and living GOD, and therein *thou*  
*doest well*; it is the grand fundamental Prin-  
 ciple of all true Religion. But remember, it  
 is a Principle common to those who are en-  
 tirely destitute of Religion; for *the Devils also*  
 firmly believe it, and cannot with- hold their  
 Assent; they are persuaded by dreadful Ex-  
 perience of his Existence, *and of the Ter-*  
*rors of his Wrath, so as even to tremble in*  
 the Expectation of that full Display of it,  
 to

hath not Works, is dead,  
 being alone.

18 Yea, a Man may say,  
 Thou hast Faith, and I  
 have Works: Shew me thy  
 Faith, without thy Works,  
 and I will shew thee my  
 Faith by my Works.

19 Thou believest that  
 there is one GOD; thou  
 dost well: the Devils also  
 believe, and tremble.

(b) *Faith, if it have not Works &c.*] From this Passage it appears, that we should not confine the Idea of the Word *Faith*, as used by *St. James*, to a mere Assent; for it would be an absurd Supposition, that a mere Assent should have any Works. By this Word therefore *St. James*, (as we observed in the former Note,) means simply an Assent, whether it be or be not effectual. Nor is it indeed the Assent that saves, when accompanied with Works. So that the *Apostle's* Assertion is more critically and correctly true, than many of his Commentators have apprehended.

(c) *Shew me thy Faith &c.*] This Version is so very different from our own, that many of my English Readers will be much surprized at it. — But I have followed the most and best Copies, which read it, as in the Margin of our Bibles, *εκ των εργαων σου* — and — *εκ των εργαων μου*, though some Copies read the first Clause, *χωρις των εργαων σου*, which our Translators have followed.

(d) *The*

20 But wilt thou know, O vain Man, that Faith without Works is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our Father justified by Works, when he had offered Isaac his Son upon the Altar?

22 Seest thou how Faith wrought with his Works, and by Works was Faith made perfect?

23 And the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith, Abraham believed GOD, and it was imputed unto him for Righteousness: and he was called the Friend of GOD.

to which they know they are inevitably Sect. 4. doomed. *But wilt thou know, O vain empty Man, who reatest in that which might be found in equal, or in higher Degrees, in the infernal Spirits, that Faith without Works, a Persuasion of the Truths of Christianity, if it produce no solid Fruits of Holiness, is really dead as to any valuable Purpose that can be expected from it. Take an Instance of this in the most celebrated of all the Patriarchs; I mean, the Instance of Abraham, our great and illustrious Father: Was he not plainly justified by Works, when, in Consequence of that full Persuasion he had of a divine Commission and Command to do it, he offered his Son Isaac upon the Altar, intending, in Obedience to what he apprehended the Will of GOD, actually to have slain him, and to have trusted in GOD to accomplish the Promise of a numerous Seed to descend from him, by raising him from the dead. Thou seest then in this Instance, that Faith co-operated with his Works, and animated him to Zeal and Self-denial in them; and Faith was perfected by Works; the Integrity of it was made fully apparent to himself, to Angels, and to GOD. And thus the Scripture was fulfilled, which says, (Gen. xv. 6.) referring to what passed long before this, Abraham believed GOD, and it was imputed to him for Righteousness (d); and in Consequence of this he was treated by GOD with such peculiar Endearment, that he was even called the Friend of GOD; as it is said, (Isai. xli. 8.) the Seed of Abraham*

(d) *The Scripture was fulfilled &c.*] This very Text St. Paul quotes Rom. iv. 3. to prove, that Abraham was justified by Faith; which plainly shews, that the Faith by which St. Paul says he was justified, was such a Faith as includes good Works in it, as a certain Principle of them; and consequently, establisheth what was said above, for reconciling these two Apostles in the easiest Manner.

Sect. 4. ham my Friend. This proved the Sincerity of his Faith, and that he was in some Degree worthy the Honour of the divine Friendship. *You see then* by this Instance

Jam. II. 24. of the great Father of the Faithful, if the Characters of the Children are to be estimated in the same Manner as those of the Father, *that a Man is justified by Works, and not by Faith only*: It is by no means enough, that the great Principles of Religion be credited, if they have not also their practical Influence on the Heart and Life.

25 *In like Manner also* I might illustrate the Matter by the further Instance of *Rahab*, who had been *the Harlot*, though afterwards reclaimed by divine Grace: *Was she not justified by Works, when* in Consequence of that Faith which she professed in the GOD of Israel, *she received*, entertained and sheltered *the Spies*, who came to observe the State of Jericho, *and* at the apparent Hazard of her Life, concealed them from those that came to search after them; till at length knowing which Way the Persecutors would go, *she sent them out another Way*, and so made effectual Provision for their

26 Escape. And on such Principles must all others expect Justification and Salvation; *for as the Body, without the Spirit, is but a dead Carcase*, how fair and entire soever it may appear, and will at length fall into Putrefaction and Dissolution; *so such a Faith as remains, without the substantial Fruits of good Works*, which ought ever to attend it, *is also dead*: It now appears as a Carcase in the Sight of GOD, and as such will e'er long perish.

24 Ye see then how that by Works a Man is justified, and not by Faith only.

25 Likewise also was not Rahab the Harlot justified by Works, when she had received the Messengers, and had sent them out another Way?

26 For as the Body without the Spirit is dead, so Faith without Works is dead also.

**IMPROVE-**

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

LET this great and important Lesson, which the *Apostle* here Sect. 4. teaches so plainly, and inculcates so largely, be never forgotten. It is true indeed, (as *St. Paul* elsewhere fully proves,) that Ver. 14 &c. we are justified by Faith in Christ, without the Works of the Law. The Works of the *Mosaic Law* are by no means necessary; and it is not by our Obedience to any Law, but by embracing and resting upon the Mercy of God in Christ, for our Salvation, that we obtain it. Nevertheless, it is vain to pretend to such a Faith, if Ver. 26. good Works are not produced by it, and we might as soon expect the Guardianship and Counsel, the Offices and Consolations of Friendship, from a dead Corpse, as Happiness from a mere Assent, even to the most important Doctrines. Let us therefore endeavour to shew our Faith by our Works. Let us be ready, with Abraham, Ver. 18. to offer up our dearest Comforts to God. Let us, with Rahab, Ver. 21. be willing even to expose our Lives in the Defence of God's People, and his Cause: Otherwise our Faith being of no better a Kind, than that of the Devils, will leave us the Companions of Ver. 19. their Misery and Despair; even though the Conviction should now be so powerful as to make us tremble, or a false Persuasion of our enjoying Privileges to which we are utter Strangers, should give as strong an Emotion to any of the softer Passions.

Let Faith then be active, and influential. Let Love be without Dissimulation. Let us not love merely in Word, but in Deed, and Ver. 15, 16. charge it upon our Consciences to be ready to authenticate by the most substantial Offices of Humanity, the Profession we at any Time make of friendly Wishes, or kind Intentions. Otherwise, such Professions will be worse than unprofitable, as, by encouraging only a false Dependence and Expectation, they will make the Disappointment proportionably grievous and afflictive, to those whom we hypocritically, or lightly, pretended to compassionate and succour.

## S E C T.

## S E C T. V.

*The Apostle cautions them against being too forward in assuming the Office and Character of Teachers, and recommends a strict Government of the Tongue, as a Matter, though of great Difficulty, yet of the highest Importance. James III. 1,—12.*

## JAMES III. 1.

Seçt. 5.  
Jam. III. 1.

AND now, my Brethren, give me Leave to caution you against another Evil, which I have seen some Reason to apprehend; and to press you, that ye *be not many Teachers* (a); that none of you rashly undertake the Office of Teachers, which many are ready to intrude themselves into, without due Qualifications, or a regular Call: But I would urge you to be cautious against such an assuming Disposition, as *knowing that* we who bear that Office, must expect that *we shall undergo greater and stricter Judgment*, than others in a more private Station of Life. The many Infirmities, to which the best of us are subject, may indeed teach us to think with Awe of that exact Trial we are then to undergo; *for in many Things we all offend* (b); we are too ready to trip and stumble

## JAMES III. 1.

MY Brethren, be not many Masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater Condemnation.

2 For in many Things we offend all. If any Man offend

(a) *Not many Teachers.*] Our Translators render it, *Masters*, as διδασκαλος is frequently rendered; and it is generally explained of *imperious and censorious Dictators*, as many of the *Jewish Zealots* were. But when he forbids *many* to be such, he seems to allow that *some* may: and consequently I think *Teachers* ought to be explained in an innocent and indifferent Sense, as in the *Paraphrase*. And though the Word κριμα in the following Clause, may usually signify *Condemnation*, yet sometimes it means *Judgment* in the general; particularly, *Mat. vii. 2. Acts xxiv. 25. Rom. v. 16.* (where it is evidently distinguished from καὶ κριμα) *1 Cor. vi. 7. Heb. vi. 2. Rev. xx. 4.* as on the other Hand, κρισις, which generally signifies *Judgment* alone, sometimes includes *Condemnation* in it. *Mat. xxiii. 33. Mark iii. 29. Heb. x. 27.*

(b) *All offend.*] The Word, πλαιομεν, properly speaking, signifies *we trip*; and *Dr. Barrow*, (See his *Works, Vol. i. pag. 129.*) has justly observed, that as the general Course



offend not in Word, the same is a perfect Man, and able also to bridle the whole Body.

stumble in our Walk. And it is peculiarly Sect. 5. worthy our Attention here, that if any one offend not in Word, he [is] a perfect Man (c), Jam. III. 2.

3 Behold, we put Bits in the Horses Mouths, that they may obey us; and we turn about their whole Body.

arrived at so high a Pitch and Improvement in Virtue, that it may be concluded, that he is able also to bridle in the whole Body; as it is frequently much more difficult to govern our Tongues in a becoming Manner, than to avoid Enormities in our Actions. Behold we put Bridles into the

Mouths of Horses, that they may obey us according to their Direction; and strong, and sometimes furious, as those Creatures are, we turn them hither and thither, so as to influence the Motion of their whole Body.

4 Behold also the Ships, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce Winds, yet are they turned about with a very small Helm, whithersoever the Governour listeth.

Behold also how the Ships, though they be many of them so large, and sometimes agitated by violent Winds, are turned by a very small Helm, whithersoever the Steersman pleaseth (d), and the Waving of his Hand determines their Direction.

5 Even so the Tongue is a little Member, and boasteth great Things. Behold, how great a Matter a little Fire kindleth!

So also the Tongue, though it is but a little Member, yet boasteth great Things, pretends, and that not unjustly, to have a great deal of Influence upon the World. Behold, and observe, how great a Quantity of Materials a little Fire kindleth into a Blaze. And

6 And the Tongue is a Fire, a World of Iniquity: fo

thus the Tongue [is] a Fire, which often produces a great Conflagration: It is a little World

Course of Life is called, a Way, and particular Actions, Steps; so going on in a regular Course of right Action, is walking uprightly, and acting amiss, tripping or stumbling.

(c) Perfect Man.] It is certain a Man whose Words are inoffensive, may possibly have some Imperfections; it shews therefore in how limited a Sense the Word perfect is to be taken; and the Observation may be applied to many other Passages.

(d) Whithersoever the Steersman pleaseth.] As the Word is, εὐθυννός, which signifies any Person that sits at the Helm, and not necessarily the Pilot, who is called by way of Eminence, οὐβερνύτης, I thought it best to render it Steersman; though I confess the Remark and Distinction to be a Matter of small Importance. I know not how well to express in English the Force of ὀρμητὴς εὐθυννός, which admirably represents the Impetuosity, with which, in a Storm, a Man at the Helm on a critical Occasion turns his Hand. See Dr. Owen on the Spirit, pag. 57.

(e) A World

Sect. 5. *World of Iniquity* (e) of itself. *The Tongue* is so set among our Members, holds such a Rank and Place, [that] indeed it defiles the whole Body, and inflames the whole Course and Circle of Nature (f), and is itself also set on Fire by Hell; the infernal Spirit influences the Heart, and its Wickedness overflows by the Tongue, and tends indeed by its fatal Consequences to produce a very

Jam. III. 6.

- 7 Hell upon Earth. It is observable, that every Species of wild Beasts and Birds, of Reptiles and Fishes, though some of them take Shelter in inaccessible Deserts, and others bury themselves in the Earth; tho' some mount the Air, and others have their Abode deep in the watery Element; yet still every Sort is subdued (g), and has in some Instances or other been subdued, by Men; and many, whose Natures are fiercest, are so tamed as to do the human Species no Harm. But the Tongue no Man can entirely subdue, neither the Tongues of others, nor his own, so that it shall not in some Instances be hurtful; for [it is] an insuperable Evil, and like a Serpent, or an Adder, full of mortal Venom, by which sometimes Death, and even Damnation itself

so is the Tongue amongst our Members, that it defileth the whole Body, and setteth on Fire the Course of Nature; and it is set on Fire of Hell.

7 For every Kind of Beasts, and of Birds, and of Serpents, and Things in the Sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of Mankind:

8 But the Tongue can no Man tame; it is an unruly Evil, full of deadly Poison.

(e) *A World of Iniquity*: ο κόσμος της αδικίας.] *Elfner*, (*Observ. Sacr. in loc.*) gives a very singular Translation of this Clause, *The Tongue is the adorning of Unrighteousness*; referring to those specious Colourings, by which wicked Men endeavour to excuse or conceal their criminal Conduct.

(f) *Circle of Nature*.] So I thought, τροχον, might be rendered, which most exactly signifies a *Wheel* from the *Revolutions* formed. And perhaps it may intimate, how the *Mischief* done by the Tongue often comes round about. A Consideration, which, were it not intimated by the Expression, is well worthy the Attention of every wise Man. *Elfner*, *Albert* and *Bos* by this Phrase understand successive Generations of Men; as if the Apostle had said, The Tongue inflamed our Forefathers, it hath the same bad Influence on us, and is likely to have on our Posterity.

(g) *Is subdued*.] So I chuse to render, δαμασσειν, rather than tamed, that it may include the conquering great and mighty Fishes of the Sea, such as *Sharks* and *Whales*; of which it seems less proper to say they are tamed, as that generally imports a Kind of harmless Familiarity, to which some savage Beasts are indeed brought; but of which large Fishes are in their Nature incapable; and it may be questioned whether some other Animals are not so likewise; and such it was most to the Apostle's Purpose to mention.

9 Therewith blefs we GOD, even the Father; and therewith curse we Men, which are made after the Similitude of GOD.

self is occasioned. *By it we sometimes blefs GOD, even the Father*; and it is our Glory, when we make use of it in that sacred and honourable Employment; and yet sometimes this noble Instrument is degraded to the vilest Purposes, *and by it we curse and revile Men, our Brethren, who are made after the Likeness of GOD*, and honoured with his Image.

Sect. 5.  
Jam. III. 9.

10 Out of the same Mouth proceedeth Blessing and Cursing. My Brethren, these Things ought not so to be.

*Out of the same Mouth proceedeth the Blessing and the Curse*, and the same Tongue is the Instrument of expressing both; and too frequently when the Act of Devotion is over, the Act of Slander, or Outrage and Insult commences. Alas, *my Brethren, these Things ought not so to be*; it is a Shame to human Nature, and it it is surely a much fouler Reproach to a Christian Profession.

10

11 Doth a Fountain send forth at the same Place sweet Water and bitter?

*Does a Fountain from the same Opening send forth alternately, and at different Times, sweet [Water] and bitter.* It is not known in the natural, and it ought not to be known in the moral World.

11

12 Can the Fig-tree, my Brethren, bear Olive-berries? or a Vine, Figs? so can no Fountain both yield salt Water and fresh.

*Can a Fig-tree, my Brethren, produce Olives, or a Vine, Figs?* No, but every Tree has its own proper Productions. *So no Fountain produces brackish Water, and sweet.* In like Manner there ought to be a great deal of Care, that we maintain a Consistency in our Discourses; and that if we profess Religion and Devotion, we speak at all Times, as those who are often employing our Speech to these noble Purposes. So shall we honour God, and promote the Peace of Society, and of our own Minds; whereas otherwise, we shall injure both; yea, and injure others, and ourselves the more, in Consequence of the Profession which we make of Religion.

12

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

- Sect. 5. **L**ET this *pathetic* Discourse of the *Apostle* concerning the Difficulty and Importance of governing our Tongues aright, engage us to the strictest Care on this great *Article* of practical Religion, of which so many are *careless*, in which the most are so far *deficient*, as to entitle those to the Character of *perfect Men*, who do not herein *offend*. Let us intreat the Assistance of divine Grace, that we may *keep our Mouths as with a Bridle*, (*Psal.* xxxix. 1.) that we may *steer* this important *Helm* aright, lest by the Mismanagement of it we *shipwreck* even our eternal Hopes. Let us be cautious of every *Spark*, where there are so many *combustible Materials*; and take Heed, lest we, and others, be *defiled*, and *infernal Flames* kindled and propagated. It is indeed a *difficult*, but in Consequence of this a *glorious* Toil, far more glorious than to *subdue* the *fiercest Animals*, or the haughtiest Enemies: Let us therefore resolutely make the Attempt, and learn to employ our Tongues, as indeed *the Glory of our Frame*, to *bles GOD even the Father*. And let the Remembrance of that *Similitude of GOD*, in which *Men are formed*, make us tender of all their Interests; and especially careful, that we do not injure them by unkind Reproaches, or detracting Speeches; and so much the rather, that we may maintain a *Consistency* between the Words of *Devotion* addressed to God, and those of *Converse* with our Fellow-Creatures. So shall the *Well-Spring of Wisdom* rising up in our Hearts, and streaming forth from our Lips, be as a *flowing Brook*. Let those, who are by Providence called to be *Teachers* of others, set a *double Guard* upon their Words, not only in *public*, but in *private* too, as peculiar Notice will be taken of them; and the Honour of Religion, one Way or another, be greatly affected by the Tenour of their Discourses. And let the awful *Account*, which such are to give, the *greater Judgment* they are to expect, prevent any from *intruding* themselves into such an *Office*, without suitable *Qualifications*, and a regular Call. May God enable them to judge rightly concerning *that Call*; and where it is indeed given, may his Grace furnish them for their Work, and his Mercy cover those *many Imperfections*, which the best will see Room to acknowledge and lament.
- Ver. 2.
- Ver. 4.
- Ver. 6.
- Ver. 7.
- Ver. 9.
- Ver. 11.
- Ver. 1.
- Ver. 2.

S E C T.

S E C T. VI.

*The Apostle urges a candid benevolent Disposition, guarding them against Censoriousness and Animosities, and that Love of the World which tends to excite them; to restrain which he recommends an humble Application to GOD for divine Influences. James III. 13, —IV. 10.*

JAMES III. 13.

WHO is a wise Man, and endued with Knowledge amongst you? Let him shew out of a good Conversation his Works with Meekness of Wisdom.

14 But if ye have bitter Envy and Strife in your Hearts, glory not, and lie not against the Truth.

15 This Wisdom descendeth not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish.

JAMES III. 13.

MANKIND are naturally desirous of the Reputation of an Understanding superior to others: Consider what is the best Display of it. *Who [is] wise, and a Man of Sense among you? let him shew himself to be possess of the most valuable Kind of Knowledge, by exhibiting out of a good, holy and useful Conversation, his honourable and beneficent Works. And let him do this, not with vain Ostentation, or rigorous Zeal; but with the Meekness and Gentleness of true Wisdom. But if ye have bitter Zeal against each other, and uncharitable Contention in your Hearts, boast not of your Improvements in Christianity, and lye not against the Truth by such groundless Pretensions. This is not the Wisdom, that cometh down from above, and which that Religion that our divine Master brought from Heaven, teaches us; but it [is] on the contrary, earthly, sensual, and even diabolical (a). It takes its Rise from Considerations relating to the present World, Objects which*

Sect. 6.  
Jam. III. 13.

14

15

(a) *Earthly, sensual, diabolical.*] Dr. Bates supposes this refers to the three grand Temptations of the World, *Avarice*, a Love of Pleasure, and *Ambition*; the first of which is *earthly*; the second *sensual*, the third *diabolical*, being the Sin by which the Devils fell. *Bates's Works*, pag. 339.

Sect. 6. which gratify only our Senses, the inferior  
 Part of our Nature, and which are the  
 Jam. III. 15. Baits of the Devil's Temptations, by which

16 and ruin our Souls. *For it is evident in Fact, that where uncharitable Zeal and Contention [is], there [is] wild Confusion and Disorder, and every other evil and pernicious Work; all the turbulent Passions are in Exercise, and a thousand irregular and fatal*

17 Effects are produced. *But the Wisdom [which is] from above, of celestial Original, is first pure from all unclean and corrupt Mixtures, and agreeable to the Tenor of divine and evangelical Truth; then, in Consequence of that, peaceable and pacific, desirous to make and maintain Peace; moderate and gentle, easily to be intreated, persuaded and reconciled, where any Matters of Disgust may have arisen; full of Mercy and good Fruits, compassionate to the afflicted, beneficent to all; without Partiality to those of our own Sentiments and Denomination to the Injury of others; and without Hypocrisy, meaning all the Kindness it expresses, and glad to extend its good Offices, as uni-*

18 *versally as possible. And thus the good Man recommends and adorns Religion, and in this he finds his own truest Account; for whereas the Wrath of Man, as I observed, worketh not the Righteousness of GOD, the blessed Fruit of Righteousness is sown in Peace for those that make Peace (b); Persons of such a Spirit promote the Spread of the Gospel, that great Root of Righteousness,*

16 *For where Envy and Strife is, there is Confusion, and every evil Work.*

17 *But the Wisdom that is from above, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be intreated, full of Mercy and good Fruits, without Partiality, and without Hypocrisy.*

18 *And the Fruit of Righteousness is sown in Peace of them that make Peace.*

(b) *The Fruit of Righteousness &c.] Possibly it might have been rendered, The Fruit of Righteousness in Peace is sown for them that make Peace. As if it had been said, They who shew a peaceful Temper, (supposing it to proceed from right Principles,) may assure themselves, that they shall reap a Harvest, in a World where Righteousness flourishes in eternal Peace. A Seed is sown, and it will spring up, and make them ample Amends for all the Injuries they have sustained in a contentious World.*

(c) *Wars*

ousness; and while a Harvest of Goodness Sect. 6.  
 by this Means springs up in the Minds of others, they shall themselves in due Time Jam. III. 18.  
 reap Joy and Blessing, in the Comforts of the present Life, and in the Fruits of a glorious Immortality.

IV. 1. From whence come Wars and Fightings among you; come they not hence, even of your Lusts, that war in your Members?

On the other Hand, when we come to IV. 1.  
 consider the Effects of a contrary Disposition, how melancholy and how dreadful are they! Whence [are] Wars and Fightings among you (c)? Whence all the shocking Scenes, which private Quarrels, and public Wars occasion; even all the Carnage of the Field of Slaughter, and the barbarous Attempts which human Creatures, and Brethren, make to destroy one another? [Is it] not hence, from your sensual Lusts and Appetites, which first war in your Members; that is, do first, as it were, give Battle to your rational Powers, and then turn the several Members of your Bodies into Weapons of Mischief and Destruction? Ye 2.  
 covet this and that Pleasure and Gratification, and in your present Circumstances ye find, that ye have not (d) the Means of procuring it; and therefore ye are ready to

2 Ye lust, and have not:  
 ye

(c) Wars and Fightings.] The contentious Spirit of the Jews was very apparent, and drew on them speedy Destruction; as many Writers have justly observed on this Text. Plato says, "Nothing but the Body, and its Lusts and Appetites, kindle Sedition, Quarrels and Wars in the World." But Mr. Blackwall observes, that the Sentiment is here expressed with with greater Vivacity; and another beautiful Metaphor is added, *Your Lusts which war in your Members*; intimating, that there is a State of civil War in the Soul, either between sensual Inclinations and Conscience, or between one Lust and another. Blackwall's Sac. Class. Vol. i. pag. 212.

(d) Ye covet, and have not.] Dr. Whitby explains this particularly of the the Jews. They lusted after two Things, Freedom from Tribute, and Dominion over neighbouring Nations; and they continually prayed for these, without considering whether they were indeed agreeable to the Will of GOD; and aiming at nothing more than the Gratification of their sensual Desires in them. But the Apostle seems to imply, they would have had the desirable Things here referred to, if they had asked aright; and I think that a good Reason for the more extensive Sense, which, according to my usual Manner, I have given to the Words.

(e) Ye

Sect. 6. to *kill (e)* one another, because you stand  
 in each other's Way, and one possesses  
 Jam. IV. 2. what another would be glad to possess, e-  
 ven though it were at the Expence of the  
 Owner's Life. Because *ye* thus *earnestly de-*  
*sire* for yourselves, and envy each other the  
 Possession of what *ye cannot obtain*, *ye*  
 quarrel and *fight*, make one Injury beget  
 another, till *ye* come to *wage* a confirmed  
*War* with each other. *Yet* after all, *ye*  
 miss the surest Way of obtaining the most  
 desirable Blessings, which would be ear-  
 nestly to seek them of GOD in Prayer; but  
 this is omitted, and so *ye have not* the Blef-  
 sings you might otherwise easily obtain, *be-*  
 3 *cause you ask not.* Or if you do pray, it  
 is with little Devotion, and so to little Pur-  
 pose: *Ye ask and receive not, because ye ask*  
*amiss*, without a becoming Faith and Fer-  
 vency, or without that Regard to the Glory  
 of GOD, which ought to animate all your  
 Desires. Whereas *ye* seek these Things  
 only, *that ye may squander* them away upon  
 your *Lusts*, and indulge yourselves in the  
 Height of luxurious Pleasure; while your  
 poor Brethren are in the last Necessity; and  
 surely the dearer any Man is to GOD, the  
 less likely will he be to succeed in such Pe-  
 4 titions as these. *Ye Adulterers and Adul-*  
*teresses*, (for I cannot give you a milder  
 Name, while guilty of this spiritual Whore-  
 dom, while you are lavishing away your  
 best Affections upon Objects so far beneath  
 him, to whom you have vowed them,)  
*Know ye not that the Friendship of the World,*  
*which you so much court and care for, is En-*  
*mity against GOD? Whoever therefore will*  
*be*

*ye* kill, and desire to have,  
 and cannot obtain: *ye* fight  
 and war, yet have not, be-  
 cause *ye* ask not.

3 *Ye* ask, and receive  
 not, because *ye* ask amiss,  
 that *ye* may consume it up-  
 on your Lusts.

4 *Ye* Adulterers, and A-  
 dulteresses, know *ye* not  
 that the Friendship of the  
 World is Enmity with GOD?  
 Whosoever therefore will  
 be

(e) *Ye* kill.] Beza, and Erasmus Schmidius, would read it *ye* *envy*, tho'  
 without the Authority of a single Manuscript. But *Slaughter* is agreeable enough  
 to what was said above of *Wars and Fightings*, and to the contentious and *sanguinary*  
 Temper of the *Jews*.

(f) *Is*



be a Friend of the World,  
is the Enemy of GOD.

be a Friend of the World, and resolves to  
pursue it as his chief Good, is by a neces-  
sary Consequence declared and *adjudged to* Sect. 6.  
Jam. IV. 4\*  
*be an Enemy (f) of GOD*, as he will be led  
into that Rebellion against his Law, which  
makes up the grand Character of that En-  
mity.

5 Do you think that the  
Scripture saith in vain, The  
Spirit that dwelleth in us  
lusteth to Envy?

*Do you think the Scripture speaks* 5  
*in vain* in all the Passages, in which it  
guards us against such a Temper as this, and  
leads the Mind directly to GOD as the su-  
preme Good; teaching us to abandon every  
Thing for him? Or *does the holy Spirit,*  
*that dwells in us* Christians, *lust to Envy (g)?*  
Does it encourage these wordly Affections,  
this Strife and Envy, which we have  
reproved? Or can it be imagined, that we,  
who appear to have so much of the Spirit,  
have any interested Views in the Cautions  
we give, and would persuade you from the  
Pursuit of the World, because we should  
envy you the Enjoyment of it? No: *But* 6

6 But he giveth more  
Grace: wherefore he saith,  
GOD resisteth the Proud,  
but giveth Grace unto the  
humble.

we rather pity such fond and wretched At-  
tachments; for *he gives us greater Degrees*  
of *Grace*, than to leave us the Slaves of so  
wretched a Disposition; *as it is said* in  
those ever memorable Words, [Prov. iii. 34.]  
*GOD sets himself in Battle Array against*  
*the proud, but to the lowly he giveth Grace*  
and Favour. *Subject yourselves therefore* 7  
*to GOD*; and being listed in his Army,  
keep the Rank (*b*) which he has assigned  
you; *resist the Devil* steadily and couragi-  
ously, as the great Enemy of your eternal  
Salvation; *and though he may for a while*  
combat:

7 Submit yourselves  
therefore to GOD; resist the  
Devil, and he will flee from  
you:

(f) *Is adjudged to be an Enemy.*] So Dr. Barrow, (See his Works, Vol. i. p. 228.)  
justly observes, that the Word *καθίσταται* signifies; and there is a considerable Empha-  
sis in the Expression: It is now declared and adjudged beyond Controversy, that he is  
an Enemy of GOD.

(g) *Does the Spirit—lust &c.*] This Rendering, (with Dr. Whitby,) I prefer to our  
own, which intimates the latter Clause to be a Quotation. Bishop Patrick supposes it is  
borrowed from Numb. xi. 29. But I think it would be doing great Violence to that  
Text, to suppose this an intended Quotation from thence.

(b) *Keep the Rank.*] So the Expression, *ὑποτάγητε*, properly and exactly signifies.

Sect. 6. combat you with his varied Temptations, *he will at length flee from you*, and your  
 Jam. IV. 7. Progress in Religion, and your Victory over your Spiritual Adversaries, will grow daily

8 more easy. *Draw near to GOD* with humble Submission and earnest Prayer, *and he will draw near to you with Mercy. Cleanse [your] Hands, O ye Sinners*, from all the Pollutions with which they are stained; *and rest not merely in a Freedom from evil Actions*, but labour to *purify [your] Hearts*, as much as possible, from all Irregularities of Affection, *O ye double minded*, who continue thus wavering between GOD and the World, and have as yet learned to exert so little Resolution in Religion, that it is Matter of Doubt, whether you have any Principles of it at all.

9 And when you reflect upon the former Part of Life, so unprofitably and so unworthily spent, *lament the Guilt of such a Conduct; and mourn and weep* for the Miseries to which you have exposed yourselves by it. And instead of these vain Indulgences, *let your Laughter be turned into Mourning*, and [your] ill-timed Joy into Expressions of the deepest Sorrow. On the whole, *humble yourselves in the very Dust before the Lord*, whom by your Sins you have offended. *And you may hope he will return to you in the Methods of his Mercy*, and *raise you up* again from that prostrate Condition.

8 Draw nigh to GOD, and he will draw nigh to you: cleanse *your Hands*, ye Sinners, and purify *your Hearts* ye double-minded.

9 Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your Laughter be turned to Mourning, and *your Joy* to Heaviness.

10 Humble yourselves in the Sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Chap. III. 13. **I**F we desire the Character of *Wisdom*, let us learn from the Oracles of eternal Truth, how it is to be obtained, — by *Meekness* and a *good Conversation*. Let us avoid that *infernal Wisdom*, here so severely and justly branded, which consists in knowing the most effectual Methods to distress others. On the contrary, let us pray,

pray, and study, and labour for that *which is from above*, and of which so amiable a Character is here given. And so far as it can be obtained without injuring Conscience, let us cultivate universal *Peace*; and let a *gentle* and placable Temper, an *impartial* and *sincere* Disposition, be ever inviolably preserved, even when we are obliged to *contend* with others, about Matters of the highest Importance; remembering, that the more *sacred* the Cause is, the more solicitous we should be that we do not injure it by a passionate or iniquitous Management of it. Thus let us *sow the Fruits of Righteousness in Peace*, and wait the promised *Harvest*; leaving *Wars and Contentions* to others, lamenting them, and praying that GOD would cause them entirely to cease. And that we may be less obnoxious to those Temptations, whereby others are betrayed into them, let us endeavour to guard against those *Lusts* and *Passions*, which give a disproportionate Value to the *Objects* about which those *Contentions* arise. Does GOD brand them with this Character of *Adultery*? Let us preserve our Souls pure from such Affections, as ever we desire that our *Prayers* should be *acceptable* to GOD. May his Grace subdue all the Workings of *Pride*, of *Luxury*, and of *Envy*; and produce in our Hearts more and more of that *Humility*, to which he will give *more Grace*; engaging us, when thus invited, to *draw near to him*, to ask aright what we need from him, trusting his Promise that he will *draw nigh to us*, and that when we *humble ourselves before him*, he will *raise us up*. *Cleansing our Hands*, let us endeavour to *purify our Hearts* too. So may those who have hitherto been *double minded*, hope to attain to an *Establishment* in Religion, in Conjunction with that *established Peace*, which no *carnal* Affection, even when most fully gratified, can either afford or admit.

Sect. 6.  
Ver. 17.

Ver. 18.  
Chap. IV. I.

Ver. 2.

Ver. 4.  
Ver. 3.

Ver. 6.

Ver. 8.

## S E C T. VII.

*The Apostle suggests particular Cautions against Evil-speaking, and vain Confidence in the Events of Futurity, or in any worldly Possessions, which often prove a Temptation to Luxury, and an Occasion of Ruin; and concludes the Section with encouraging and exhorting afflicted and oppressed Christians to wait patiently for the Coming of their Lord. James IV. II. —V. 8.*

## JAMES IV. II.

Sect. 7. **L**ET me now charge you, my Brethren, that ye *speake not Evil of one another*; for *he that speaketh Evil of [his] Brother, and judgeth [his] Brother with a rash Severity, therein speaketh evil of the Law, and judgeth the Law*; condemning it as if it were an erroneous Rule, in so expressly forbidding such a Conduct (a). *But if thou thus judgest the Law, and passest, as it were, a condemning Sentence upon it, thou art then not a Doer of the Law, but a Judge.* And how the Arrogance of setting up such a Superiority to the great Governor of the Universe will pass, when it comes under his final Review, it well becomes you seriously to consider. For it is certain, *there is one great almighty Lawgiver, who is able abundantly to assert the Honour of his own Government; and as he can save his faithful and obedient Subjects from the greatest Extremity*

Jam. IV. II.

12

## JAMES IV. II.

**S**PEAK not evil one of another, Brethren. He that speaketh Evil of his Brother, and judgeth his Brother, speaketh evil of the Law, and judgeth the Law: but if thou judge the Law, thou art not a Doer of the Law, but a Judge.

12 There is one Lawgiver, who is able to save, and

(a) *Speaketh Evil of [his] Brother &c.*] Dr. Whitby explains this of the unbelieving Jews reproaching their Christian Brethren for their Non-observation of the *Mosaick Law*; and thinks, the *Apostle* intimates, that as the *ceremonial Law* was not originally intended for the *Gentiles*, this Conduct was a Reflection upon the *Wisdom of GOD* in giving it. But I choose the more *extensive* Explication.

(b) Ye

and to destroy: who art thou that judgest another?

tremity of Danger and Calamity, so he is Sect. 7. also able to destroy the most obstinate and audacious Rebel, and to smite him with Jam. IV. 12. irrecoverable Ruin in the full Career of his Crimes. Who art thou therefore that judgest another? and darest to invade the Office of this supreme and universal Lawgiver, and thereby exposest thyself to his Condemnation?

13 Go to now, ye that say, To-day or To-morrow we shall go into such a City, and continue there a Year, and buy and sell, and get Gain.

But to insist no further upon this; let me now turn myself to those, who are quite immersed in their worldly Schemes, and promise themselves assuredly an Opportunity to accomplish them. Come now, ye that say, To-day, or To-morrow, we will go to such a City, and spend a Year there, and traffick, and get Gain by our Merchandize, and then return and enjoy the Fruits of our Labours. Alas! upon 13

14 Whereas ye know not what shall be on the Morrow: for what is your Life? It is even a Vapour that appeareth for a little Time, and then vanisheth away.

what an Uncertainty do you proceed in such a Supposition as this! whereas instead of being able to count on a Year to come, ye know not even what [shall be] on the Morrow, and much less, what the Days and Months of a Year may bring forth. For what [is] your Life, upon the Continuance of which all your worldly Projects depend? For it is only like a Vapor that appeareth for a little while, and then vanishes away, and is seen no more; how gay soever its Form might be, and how wide soever it might have extended itself. Whereas ye [ought] 14

15 For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that.

to say in Consideration of this, if the great Lord of our Lives will please to lengthen them, we shall live, and do this or that, intimating even by your Manner of speaking, the Sense that you have, of his being able at Pleasure to cut you short in all your Purposes and Appointments. But now you 15

16 But now ye rejoice in your

rejoice in your Boastings; you take Pleasure in this arrogant and confident Manner of talking; 16

Sect. 7. talking; whereas, *all such Rejoicing is evil,* and ought to be corrected: And so much the rather, as you have been better instructed than many others, and *therefore* ought to shew the good Effect of these Instructions. For *to him that knows to do good, and does it not, to him it is aggravated Sin;* and it would have been much better for him, that he had wanted that Degree of Knowledge he had, than that he should thus abuse it.

Chap. V. 1.

I direct these Things especially to those, who have the Advantage of the Christian Revelation and Institutions; but I confine not myself wholly to them. Let others pay them Regard, in Proportion to the Degree in which they have Opportunities of attaining divine Knowledge. Let them take the greatest Care, that they do not abuse it. And let those especially be careful, whom Providence has distinguished by the Fulness of their Circumstances; which often proves a Temptation to Vice, though it should in all Reason and Gratitude be an Engagement to Virtue and Piety. Experience will soon teach many such the Vanity of those Things, in which they pride themselves, and which embolden them in their Transgressions of the divine Law. *Come now therefore, ye rich Men (b), weep, and even howl over the Miseries that are speedily coming upon you,* in those Days which are near-  
 2 ly approaching. You have been solicitous to lay up abundant Stores for your future Subsistence and Security; but *your Riches are corrupted, and your Garments are Moth-*  
 3 *eaten; Your Gold, and your Silver,* which

your Boastings: all such rejoicing is evil.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is Sin.

V. 1. Go to now, ye rich Men, weep and howl, for your Miseries that shall come upon you.

2 Your Riches are corrupted, and your Garments are Moth-eaten.

3 Your Gold and Silver  
 ver

(b) *Ye rich Men &c.*] *Josephus*, (*Bell. Jud.* v. 20, 30. iv. 19.) particularly observes, how much the *rich Men* suffered by the *Romans* in the *Jewish War*. — I have rendered *ταλαιπωρίας ταις επερχομεναις*, *Miseries which are coming upon you*, and I think it more agreeable to the *Original*, than our *English Version*, *επερχομεναις* being a *Participle* of the *present Tense*.  
 (c) *The*

ver is cankered; and the Rust of them shall be a Witness against you, and shall eat your Flesh as it were Fire: ye have heaped Treasure together for the last Days.

4 Behold, the Hire of the Labourers, which have reaped down your Fields, which is of you kept back by Fraud, crieth: and the Cries of them which have been reaped, are entered into the Ears of the Lord of Sabaoth.

5 Ye have lived in Pleasure on the Earth, and been wanton; ye have nourished your Hearts, as in a Day of Slaughter.

6 Ye have condemned and killed the just; and he doth not resist ye.

which should have been brightened by a generous Circulation, have been hoarded up, till they are cankered, and their Rust shall be a Witness against you in the Sight of GOD, and so bring upon you such awful Rebukes from him, that it shall, as it were, eat into your Flesh, with an Anguish as piercing and corroding as Fire itself. Ye have laid up Treasures for the last Days (c); for the last Days are now coming, and the Enemy shall seize and dissipate them all to your infinite Vexation and Distress. Behold the Wages of the Labourers, who have reaped your Fields, who have been defrauded by you, of their due Reward, crieth for Vengeance against you; and the Out-cries of those who have gathered in your Harvest, have come into the Ears of the Lord of Hosts. Ye have lived delicately and luxuriously upon the Earth, indulging yourselves in every Desire that rose in your Minds, without Restraint. You have pampered your Hearts, as Beasts are fed for a Day of Slaughter (d); and truly to you it is much nearer than you are aware. And well has the Vengeance been deserved by you; for you have condemned, [and] at last murdered the righteous one; the Son of GOD himself; [and] he doth not yet resist you (e) with that Display of Power, which he can easily exert to your utter Destruction; but the Day will

Sect. 7.  
Jam. V. 3,

4.

5.

6.

(c) *The last Days.*] This Phrase does not merely signify, for *the Time to come*, but for *that Period*, when the whole *jewish* Œconomy was to close, and when those awful Judgments, threatened in the Prophets to be poured out upon wicked Men in the last Days, are just coming. Acts ii. 17. Heb. i. 2. 2 Pet. iii. 3. and the like. Comp. Mat. xxiv. 33, 34. 1 Cor. x. 11.

(d) *For a Day of Slaughter:* *ως εν ημερα σφαγης.*] There are some who render this, as in a Festival, when many Sacrifices are slain. But Wolfius observes, that the Word is always used in the Seventy to signify not a Day of Feasting, but of Slaughter.

(e) *Not resisted you.*] Instead of *ουκ*, Dr. Bentley would read *ους*, for *ο κυριος*, the Lord; and would render it, and the Lord resists you, that is, you have brought the Vengeance of his Almighty Arm upon you. *Memoirs of Literat.* Vol. vi. pag. 173. Others interpret it of the meek Sufferings of the Disciples of Christ, in Conformity to the Example of their Master.

Sect. 7. will speedily come, when GOD will avenge his Cause, and pour out the Judgment he has threatened, on those who have treated him in so base and unworthy a Manner.

Jam. V. 6.

- 7 Since this is the Case, since our divine Master has met with such injurious Treatment, and borne it with such steady Patience; *be ye therefore, my Brethren, long-suffering and patient, even till the Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ; Behold the Husbandman waiteth for the precious Fruit of the Earth; [and] though it does not immediately appear, when sown; or ripen, when it appears; yet he exerciseth Patience with Respect to it, till he receive the former Rain, to produce it, and the latter, to bring it on to Perfection. Be ye also patient, and strengthen your Hearts in every good Resolution; for the Appearance of the Lord is near; he will quickly come, and reward all your Long-suffering, and take Vengeance on your implacable Enemies, for all the Outrages they have committed against you.*

7 Be patient therefore, Brethren, unto the Coming of the Lord. Behold, the Husbandman waiteth for the precious Fruit of the Earth, and hath long Patience for it, until he receive the early and latter Rain.

8 Be ye also patient; stablish your Hearts: for the Coming of the Lord draweth nigh.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Chap. IV. 12. **L**ET the Law of that one great Legislator, who is able both to save and to destroy, be always seriously remembered, and considered; that we may not affront his Authority in pretending to judge others, nor set up for Judges, and in Effect Condemners of the Law, by the Severity of those Censures which we pass upon our Brethren. We are happy in knowing that sacred Rule of Life, if we obey it; otherwise, that Knowledge of it which adds an Aggravation even to Sins of Omission, will much more aggravate every presumptuous Opposition to it.

Ver. 11. Ver. 17. Ver. 14. Let us look on this World, as a Scene of great Uncertainty; and on Life, as a flattering Vapor, which vanishes while we are beholding it; and let a Sense of its Shortness and Uncertainty, and of our own Ignorance what shall be on the Morrow, engage us to be very careful, that we do not presume upon the future, as if it were



were in our own Power; but set ourselves with all possible Diligence to *improve present Time*, referring the Disposal of all future Events, to the Wisdom of *that GOD* on whom it depends to determine whether *we shall live, and do this, or that.* Sect. 7. Ver. 15.

Let *rich Men*, read the Address of the *Apostle* to Persons in their Circumstances, with *holy Awe*, and with a Jealousy over themselves, lest their present *Prosperity* be succeeded with *Misery*, and their *Joy* with *weeping* and *howling*; as it undoubtedly will be, if Wealth be *unjustly gotten*, or *fordidly boarded up*, or *luxuriously employed* to pamper their Appetites, while the truest and noblest Use of it, the Relief of the Poor, and the Benefit of Mankind, is forgotten. Especially have they Reason to tremble, who abuse Wealth and Power as the *Instruments of Oppression*; soon will all their Stores be *wasted*, soon will they become naked and indigent, and find a terrible *Account* remaining, when all the Gaieties and Pleasures of Life are utterly vanished. In the mean Time, the *Saints of GOD* may be among the *poor* and the *oppressed*: But let them *wait patiently for the Day of the Lord, for his Coming is near.* They *sow in Tears*; but let them *comfort their Hearts* with the View of the *Harvest*; in like Manner as the *Husbandman* demands not *immediately* the Fruit of that Seed he has committed to the Furrows. Adored be that kind Providence, which gives the *former and the latter Rain*, in its Season. To him, from whom we have received the *Bounties of Nature*, let us humbly look for the *Blessings of Grace*, and trust him to fulfil all his Promises, who without a Promise to bind him, in particular Instances, *gives us Rain from Heaven, and fruitful Seasons, filling our Hearts with Food and Gladness.* Acts xiv. 17. Chap. V. 1. Ver. 2,—5. Ver. 6. Ver. 8. Ver. 7.

S E C T.

## S E C T. VIII.

*He concludes the Epistle with inculcating Moderation and Fortitude; cautioning them against profane and vain Swearing, with recommending Prayer, a ready Acknowledgment of our Faults, and a solicitous Concern for the common Salvation. James V. 9. to the End.*

JAMES V. 9.

Sect. 8.  
Jam. V. 9.

AND now, to draw to a Conclusion, *be not inwardly incensed against each other, Brethren,* so as to grudge or envy one another any superior Advantages in Life, or to harbour even that Malignity of Disposition, which should groan in secret (a), while it wants Opportunities of Mischiefs; *that you yourselves be not condemned, for behold the Judge is standing before the Door;* he is now present, and sees all the Irregularities of your Tempers, as well as Actions; in Consequence of which, he will quickly bring these inward Disorders of Mind into Judgment, as well as the Enormities of the Life. And that you may be fortified against such trying Circumstances, *my Brethren, take for an Example of enduring Adversity, and of Long-suffering under the greatest Provocations, the holy Prophets of old, who spake to our Fathers in the Name of the Lord,* and gave such convincing Evidences of their divine Inspiration.

JAMES V. 9.

GRudge not one against another, Brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold the Judge standeth before the Door.

10 Take, my Brethren, the Prophets, who have spoken in the Name of the Lord, for an Example of suffering Affliction, and of Patience.

(a) Groan in Secret.] Thus I have *paraphrased* the Words, because it is well known, that the Original *σευαζέει*, (as *Beza* observes,) hath this Signification. *Justin Martyr* represents the *Jewish Converts*, as the *worst Sort of Christians*, who were apt to be impatient of the *Gentile Yoke*, and to retain their Attachment to the Views of a *temporal Kingdom*.

(b) We

11 Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the Patience of Job, and have seen the End of the Lord: that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender Mercy.

ration. [Heb. xi. 36, 37.] Behold, in Sect. 8. this Respect we esteem them happy (b), who endure steadily and patiently the Trials which God appoints for them. In this View, ye have heard of the celebrated Patience of Job, with how much Honour it is proclaimed from Generation to Generation; and ye have also seen the End of the Lord (c), how much to his Honour, and how much to his Comfort, his various and heavy Afflictions concluded; that the Lord is full of Compassion, and of tender Mercy; and it is with the Bowels of an affectionate Father, that he corrects his beloved Children, not for his own Gratification, but from a View to their Advantage.

12 But above all Things, my Brethren, swear not, neither by Heaven, neither by the Earth, neither by any other Oath: but let your yea, be yea; and your nay, nay;

Among other Effects of that Impatience, against which I am cautioning you, may be reckoned the irreverent Use of the Name of God, and profane Oaths and Ex-  
 12  
 ecrations, into which in the Transport of their criminal Passions, some unhappy Wretches are ready to fall; but be you above all Things, my Brethren, careful, that ye swear not, upon such Occasions, or on any other, lightly and profanely (d), neither by Heaven, the Throne of God, nor by Earth, his Footstool, nor by any other Oath; but remember the Command of our blessed Lord, (Matt. v. 37.) and let your Yea be Yea, and [your] Nay, Nay: Content yourselves with a simple Affirmation or Negation, and take Care to maintain such constant Integrity in all your Words, that nothing

(b) *We esteem them happy &c.*] The Apostle speaks of this, not only as his own Judgment, but that of all Christians who judged right, and understood the Nature of Things. And it is indeed a Judgment, in which all Christians should be agreed.

(c) *Seen the End of the Lord.*] It is observable, that in Job xlii. 7, &c. God decides the Cause in his Favour, and calls him his Servant Job four Times in the Compass of a few Verses.

(d) *Swear not.*] This the Jews were very apt to do upon trifling Occasions.

210 *The Sick to be healed by Anointing, and the Prayer of Faith:*

Sect. 8. nothing more may be needful to gain them Credit; *that ye may not fall under Con-* nay; lest ye fall into con-  
Jam. V. 12. *demnation* for profaning the Name of GOD, demnation.  
 and lessening the Regard due to an Oath, when used on the most solemn and necessary Occasions.

13 Accustom yourselves to the frequent Exercises of Devotion, as what will have the surest Tendency to promote the Comfort and Happiness of your Lives in every Circumstance. *Is any one among you afflicted? Let him pray,* and cast the Burden of his Cares and Sorrows upon the compassionate GOD, always ready to sustain his People. *Is any chearful,* in easy and agreeable Circumstances? *Let him rejoice in GOD, and sing Psalms of Praise to him, in a thankful Acknowledgment of his Mercies.*

13 Is any among you afflicted? Let him pray. Is any merry? Let him sing Psalms.

14 *Is any one among you sick? let him under his Confinement call for the Elders of the Church; and let them pray over him for his Recovery, anointing him with Oil in the Name of the Lord Jesus Christ, if they feel themselves so instigated to do it by the secret Workings of the Spirit of Grace upon their Minds, as may encourage them to hope for an extraordinary Cure: And the Prayer of Faith (e), in such a Circumstance as this,*

14 Is any sick among you? Let him call for the Elders of the Church; and let them pray over him, anointing him, with oil in the Name of the Lord:

15 And the Prayer of Faith

(e) *The Prayer of Faith.*] I can by no Means think, that this is advised merely physically. By the *Prayer of Faith* I understand such a *Faith*, as is founded on some more than ordinary *Impression*, by which GOD intimated an Intention of *working a Miracle*; and I look upon it as a very considerable Proof, that, as the Power of working Miracles was not *absolutely* confined to the *Apostles*, so it might in some Instances continue something *longer* in the Church, than their Days. *Lord Barrington* indeed thinks, that the Expression, *if he hath committed Sins &c.* refers to the Commission of *such* a Sin as had engaged the Apostle to deliver them to *Satan*, in order to *corporal Punishment*. But I hardly think, an *Elder of the Church* would then have been mentioned; and one cannot imagine, that when the Apostles were so *few*, and two of them comparatively so seldom together, the Expression, "*Send for the Elders of the Church,*" should mean, send for *some of the Apostles*. How vastly different this is from the *Extreme Unction*, practised by the *Papists*, not for *Cure*, but only when Life is *despaired of*, I think every reasonable Man may easily judge.

(f) *Confess*

Faith shall save the Sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed Sins, they shall be forgiven him.

this, shall save and recover the Sick; and Sect. 8. the Lord shall, in Answer to Prayer, raise him up; and if he hath committed Sins, which have brought this Sickness upon him by way of extraordinary Punishment, they shall be forgiven him; and the Lord shall have Mercy upon him, and recover him according to the Words of his Servant. Jam. V. 15.

16 Confess your Faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed: The effectual fervent Prayer of a righteous Man availeth much.

When you are conscious of having been really to blame, do not perversely vindicate a Conduct, which your own Hearts condemn, but be frank in acknowledging it. Confess [your] Faults one to another (f); for we are all too ready to stumble in the Way of our Duty; and pray one for another, especially when your Brethren are under God's afflicting Hand, or have been under any visible Declension in Religion, that you may be healed, and recovered. The earnest Prayer of a righteous Man, the Effect of good Affections wrought in his Heart by the Energy of the holy Spirit (g), is of great Efficacy. Many Instances of this you

17 Elias was a Man subject to like Passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain: and

it subject to the like Infirmities with us, (Compare Acts xiv. 15.) and had himself no greater Command over the Clouds and the Rain than any of us; yet he prayed with a Prayer, that is, with great Faith and Fervency, that it might not rain; which was not the Effect of any Resentment he had against his Country for the ill Usage he met, with, but

(f) Confess [your] Faults &c.] The general candid Sense, which I have given to the Words, and which is a very important one, seems to me utterly to supersede all Pretences to claim from them any priestly Power, or to the requiring Confession in the Manner, which the Church of Rome does. For the Confession here mentioned is plainly spoken of as mutual.

(g) Wrought — by the Energy of the Spirit.] The Word ενεργουμεν, as Bishop Hopkins, (in his Works, pag. 749.) observes, seems to imply this Sense. I have not confined it to the Prayer of miraculous Faith.

Sect. 8. but in Obedience to a secret Intimation, that it was the Will of GOD to glorify himself by sending upon them such a Punishment for their Idolatry: *And the Event, though so improbable, was correspondent to his Prayer; for it rained not upon the Land for three Years and six Months (b);* computing the Time from the Beginning of the Famine to the End of it. *And he prayed again,* at the End of that Time, that GOD would be pleased to remove the heavy Affliction, which the Drought occasioned; *and the small Cloud which appeared at first, soon spread itself over the whole Horizon, so that the Heaven gave Rain in Abundance, and the Land put forth the green Blade again, and yielded its Fruit in great Quantity, to repay the Barrenness of former Years.*

Jam. V. 17. it rained not on the Earth by the Space of three Years and six Months.

18 *And he prayed again,* at the End of that Time, that GOD would be pleased to remove the heavy Affliction, which the Drought occasioned; *and the small Cloud which appeared at first, soon spread itself over the whole Horizon, so that the Heaven gave Rain in Abundance, and the Land put forth the green Blade again, and yielded its Fruit in great Quantity, to repay the Barrenness of former Years.*

18 And he prayed again, and the Heaven gave Rain, and the Earth brought forth her Fruit.

19 And now, *Brethren,* let me conclude with one Exhortation of the greatest Importance both to yourselves and others; which is, that you labour to the utmost to promote the spiritual Good of your Fellow-Creatures; for *if any one of you wander from the Truth, and one turn him back to it, and lead him to tread its forsaken Paths, he performs the most important Charity that can be imagined:* For *let him know, that he who thus turneth back a Sinner from the Error and fatal Wanderings of his Way, shall produce a much happier Effect, than any miraculous Cure of the Body; for he shall save a precious Soul from everlasting Death (i),* Ruin and Condemnation, *and so*  
vail,

19 Brethren, if any of you do err from the Truth, and one convert him;

20 Let him know, that he which converteth the Sinner from the Error of his Way, shall save a Soul from Death,

(b) *Three Years and six Months.*] *Elijah* is said, *1 Kings xviii. 1, &c.* to have showed himself to *Abab*, in the third Year; that is, from his going to live at *Zarephath*, *1 Kings xvii. 8, 9, 14.* but from the Beginning to the End of the Famine was three Years and six Months, according to the Account given by *St. James*, as also in *Luke iv. 25.*

(i) *Save a Soul from Death &c.*] This Way of Expression intimates in the strongest Manner, the infinite Importance of such an Event; as to *save a Soul from Death*, is yet

Death, and shall hide a Multitude of Sins.

vail, or *cover*, a *Multitude of Sins*; not only procuring the Pardon of those committed by the Convert, but also engaging GOD to look with greater Indulgence on his own Character, and to be less ready severely to mark all he shall have done amiss.

Sect. 8.  
Jam. V. 20.

*I M P R O V E M E N T.*

**M**AY it ever be remembered by *all*, and especially by the *Ministers of the Gospel*, of how great Importance it is to be instrumental in *saving a Soul from Death*, an *immortal Soul from everlasting Death*; that so they may be animated to the most zealous and laborious Efforts for that blessed Purpose; and think themselves richly rewarded, though it were for the otherwise *unsuccessful Labours of a whole Life*, by succeeding even in a *single Instance*. In this View, may there be a Care to *bring them to the Truth*, that so they may be *converted from their wandering Ways*, that their Understandings being convinced of the Truth and Importance of the Gospel, their Conduct may be practically influenced by it; and that, upon such *steady Principles*, as may effectually prevent their *Return to their Wanderings* again. Thus may a *Multitude of Sins be hidden*, and the Glory of GOD, and the Salvation of Men, be effectually promoted.

Ver. 20.

Ver. 19.

Whatever *Trials* we may meet with in these charitable Efforts, or in any other Path of Duty, may we *take the Prophets of old, and the Apostles of our Lord, for Examples of suffering Adversity and Patience*; especially remembering *their Lord, and ours*; remembering how abundantly the Patience of good Men has been rewarded, *the End of the Lord* with Respect to holy *Job*, and many others, who have trod in his Steps in succeeding Ages; and remembering especially, that *the Judge stands at the Door*, that in a very little Time he will appear, not only to put an End to the Trial of his Servants, but to crown their Virtues and Graces. In the mean Time, the Bowels of his *Compassion* are abundant, and he will not be wanting in communicating all necessary Consolations

Ver. 10.

Ver. 11.

Ver. 9.

Ver. 11.

and

yet more than *hiding the Sins* of the Convert. As to the latter Clause *Bishop Atterbury*, and *Dr. Scott*, urge the Interpretation given in the last Words of the *Paraphrase*. See *Atterbury's Sermon*. Vol. i. pag. 46,—48. *Scott's Christian Life*, Vol. 1. pag. 368. And I have not seen Reason, on the most attentive Enquiry, to disallow the Force of their Arguments. Compare *1 Pet. iv. 8.* and the *Note* there.

- Sect. 8. and Supports. May we be so happy, as to be acquainted with those of *Devotion*, that in our *Affliction* we may *pray*, and in our *Chearfulness*, *sing Psalms*; that we may know by blessed Experience, the Efficacy of such a Temper to soften the Sorrows of Life, and to sweeten its Enjoyments. And as we desire to be *visited of GOD* in our *Afflictions*, may we with *Christian Sympathy* be ready to *visit* and relieve others, in their *Sickness*, or other Kinds of *Distress*. It is indeed the special Office of *the Elders of the Church*, who should be *sent for* upon such Occasions with Readiness, and who, if they be worthy of their Office, will attend with Pleasure. But it is not *their Office alone*. Let us all be ready to *pray for each other*, in *Faith* and *Charity*; and where Offences have been committed, let there be a frank and candid *Acknowledgment* of them on the one Side, and as hearty a *Forgiveness*, on the other. In a Word, let the *Efficacy of the fervent Prayer of the Righteous* be often reflected on, to excite *Fervor*, and to engage to *Righteousness*, and to lead us to honour those, who maintain such a Character, and who offer such *Petitions* and *Supplications*; that GOD may in Answer to their Requests, *shower down his Blessing upon us, that our Land may yield its Increase, that Righteousness may spring up out of the Earth, and that in every Sense GOD, as our own GOD, may bless us.* (*Psal.* lxxvii. 6. lxxxv. 11.
- Ver. 13.
- Ver. 14.
- Ver. 15.
- Ver. 16.
- Ver. 17, 18.

The END of the FAMILY EXPOSITOR on the CATHOLIC EPISTLE of  
St. JAMES.



# The Family Expositor:

OR, A

## PARAPHRASE

ON THE FIRST

CATHOLIC EPISTLE

Of the APOSTLE

*P E T E R.*

WITH

Critical N O T E S, and a practical I M P R O V E M E N T  
of each S E C T I O N.





A

# GENERAL INTRODUCTION

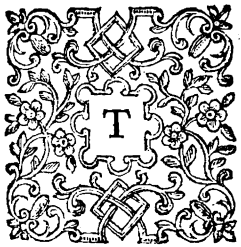
T O T H E

# PARAPHRASE and NOTES

On the first Catholic EPISTLE

O F

St. P E T E R.



THE Apostle *Peter* makes a very eminent and illustrious Figure on the Theatre of the evangelical History, and was, on several Occasions, favoured by our Lord with peculiar and distinguishing Marks of Honour. One Instance, which I shall alone recite, among the many which might be recited, if it was needful, and which happened very soon after our Lord's Ascension is, that he was deemed worthy, under the Impulse and Inspiration of the Holy Ghost, to open the Gospel-Dispensation, and *first* to preach Salvation through a crucified Redeemer to the *Jews* (*Acts* ii.), and *Gentiles* (*Acts* x). And I the rather suggest this Instance, because it affords some Colour to my own Opinion, that this Epistle was written both to the *Jewish* and *Gentile* Converts, who were dispersed in various Regions of the World.

The Sentiments of learned Men upon this Question — *To whom was this Epistle written?* — are very various. The principal and most remarkable are these — That it was to the converted *Jews* of the

the Dispersion — Or to the converted *Gentiles* — Or lastly, (which is the Opinion of Lord *Barrington*, embraced and defended by Dr. *Benson*;) to the converted *Profelytes of the Gate*. It is not necessary in this Place \*, to enter into a particular Confutation of the last-mentioned *Hypothesis*; especially as I apprehend what is suggested in my *Notes* on several Passages of the *Acts*, may convince an attentive Reader, that there is no sufficient Ground to suppose there were ever any such Persons as *Profelytes of the Gate*. And as to the *two former* Opinions, when the several Arguments by which they are supported, are duly considered and examined, we shall perhaps be inclined to imagine that the *Apostle* rather designed his Epistle for the *Jewish* and *Gentile* Converts *both*, than for either of them *distinctly* and *separately*. Without discussing the Reasons for the Opinion I have adopted, I shall leave the Reader to form his own Judgment, after he hath perused my *Paraphrase* and *Notes* on those Passages of this Epistle, on which it is founded.

It is not very easy to assign the *Date* of this Epistle with Exactness. The most commonly received Opinion is that it was written in the Year 61. the seventh of the Emperor *Nero*; and this seems to be a *Medium*, between the Sentiments of those who place it some Years higher and those who place it lower, which bids fairest for the Truth.

It is evidently the *Design* of this Epistle, “ To induce the  
 “ *Christian* Converts in various Parts of the World, to maintain a  
 “ Conversation, not merely inoffensive to all Men, but in all Re-  
 “ spects worthy of the Gospel; and to support them under the  
 “ severe Persecutions and fiery Trials they already endured, or  
 “ were likely to endure, by the noblest Considerations which their  
 “ Religion could suggest.”

The *first* Branch of this Design the *Apostle* seems to keep particularly in view from *Chap. i.*—*iii. 7.* And in Pursuance of it, after having congratulated his Brethren, who were dispersed abroad through various Countries, on their Happiness in being called to the glorious Privileges and Hopes of the Gospel; which was introduced into the World in so sublime a manner by the Prophets and Apostles; (*Chap. i.*—*12.*) he exhorts them to Watchfulness, to Sobriety, to Love and to universal Obedience, by an affecting Representation of their Relation to God, their Redemption by  
*Christ's*

\* The learned Author intended, had Providence prolonged his valuable Life, to have published a distinct Dissertation on this Subject. But this, and many other Designs he had projected for the Benefit of the Church and World, were prevented by his justly-lamented Death.

*Christ's* invaluable Blood, and the Excellence and Perpetuity of the *Christian* Dispensation, and of its glorious Fruits and Consequences, compared with the Vanity of all worldly Enjoyments: (*Ver. 13. to the End.*) Urging them, by the like Considerations, to receive the Word of God with Meekness, to continue in the Exercise of Faith in *Christ* as the great Foundation of their eternal Hopes, and to maintain such a Behaviour as would adorn his Gospel among the unconverted *Gentiles*. (*Chap. ii. 1,—12.*) For the same End, he exhorts them to the Exercise of a due Care as to relative Duties; and particularly, a Subjection to civil Governors, and to Masters, even when their Dispositions and Injunctions might be harsh and severe; enforcing all by the Consideration of that Patience with which our Lord *Jesus Christ* endured his most grievous Sufferings. (*Ver. 13. to the End.*) He likewise exhorts *Christian Wives* to submit themselves to their Husbands, and to study the Ornaments of their Minds rather than of their Persons; and Husbands to treat their Wives in a becoming and honourable Manner, from a tender Sense of those Infirmities to which the Sex is peculiarly liable. (*Chap. iii. 1,—7.*)

In the ensuing Part of the Epistle, the *Apostle's* Arguments and Exhortations more immediately and directly refer to those dreadful Sufferings and Persecutions to which the *Christian* Converts were exposed, or which they actually endured, from the Malevolence and Rage of their implacable Enemies. And here, well-knowing that such Treatment, unmerited and unprovoked, is apt to embitter and narrow Mens Spirits, and inflame their Resentments; in which Case the Religion of the meek and lowly *Jesus* would be greatly dishonoured, and its Spread and Influence in the World retarded by the indiscreet Behaviour of its Friends and Advocates; — therefore *St. Peter* urges many Arguments on the *Christian* Converts, in order to engage them to an inoffensive, benevolent and useful Life and Conversation; and to a steady, courageous Adherence to their Religion amidst all Opposition. (*Ver. 8,—17.*) And then, animating them to endure their Sufferings with Patience and Resignation, from the endearing Consideration of what their divine Savior had suffered for them, he expatiates on his Atonement, Resurrection and Exaltation, on the Obligation of their Baptismal Covenant, and on the awful Solemnity of the last Judgment, as powerful Arguments to a Life of Mortification and Holiness, whatever Discouragement and Opposition they might be called to encounter. (*Ver. 18,—iv. 6.*) And as eminent Vigilance, Fidelity and Courage would be requisite for rightly improving their Talents, and

for discharging the Duties of their respective Stations in the Church, at all Times, but especially in Times of imminent Danger and Persecution, he distinctly inculcates these several Virtues; and by Way of Inference from the Trials to which good Men were exposed, he observes, that a tremendous, inevitable Destruction will overwhelm the impenitent and unbelieving. (*Ver. 7,—19.*) And at the Close, he addresses some particular Cautions both to Ministers, and private Christians; urging on the former Humility, Diligence and Watchfulness; and exhorting the latter to a steadfast and faithful Discharge of their several Duties, animated by this sublime Consideration, that the God of all Grace had called them to his eternal Glory, and would, after they had suffered a while, make them perfect; according to the *Apostle's* earnest Prayer for them. *Ver. 20, to the End.*

From this imperfect Delineation of this admirable Epistle, the Production of another eminent *Apostle*, it is no unnatural, or improper Remark, that all the Principles of our holy Religion, as here represented, are perfectly consistent with the *Analogy of Faith*, and with the whole Tenor of the *New Testament*; that they are directly levelled against all manner of corrupt Affections and immoral Practices, as well as urged in the Light of Motives to all those Virtues and Graces, in which our Conformity to God, and the true Glory of our Nature consists. And (which, if it were the only Circumstance that could be pleaded, would exalt our Religion to an infinite Superiority to the Institutions of the most renowned heathen Philosophers and Lawgivers, and in Connection with its amazing Progress, is a Demonstration of its divine Original,) *Christians* are here instructed to encounter outrageous Violence and Persecution only with the hallowed Weapons of Patience, Meekness, and Charity, and to silence the Cavils, and blast the Machinations of their own and their Master's bitterest Enemies, with the Lustre of a pure and holy Life, and the Fervour of a generous and invincible Benevolence. How amiable, how elevated, how divine, how worthy of all Acceptation is the Religion of *Jesus!*—in delineating, as we have seen, the grand and essential Branches of which, even *Peter* and *Paul*, notwithstanding all their Contentions about Things of inferior moment, or of a personal and private Nature, are perfectly consistent and harmonious.

A P A R A-

A

## P A R A P H R A S E

A N D

## N O T E S

O N T H E F I R S T

## C A T H O L I C E P I S T L E

O F

## S t . P E T E R

## S E C T . I.

*The Apostle Peter begins his Address to his Brethren, who were dispersed abroad, with congratulating their Happiness in being called to the glorious Priviledges and Hopes of the Gospel; and takes Occasion to expatiate upon the sublime manner in which it was introduced, both by the Prophets and the Apostles. 1 Pet. i. 1,—12.*

I P E T E R I. I.

PETER an Apostle of Jesus Christ, to the Strangers scattered throughout

I P E T E R I. I.

PETER, who has the Honour to be invested with the Office of *an Apostle of Jesus Christ*, inscribes and addresses this Epistle to the *Elect Strangers, who are scattered abroad (a)*; to those Christians whom Providence

Sect. I.  
1 Pet. I. 1.

(a) *Scattered abroad.*] Lord Barrington (*Miscell. Sac. Essay II. pag. 84,—88.*) strenuously maintains that St. Peter wrote only to the converted *Profelytes of the Gate*; and

Sect. I.  
1 Pet. I. 1.

Providence has dispersed thro' various Countries, and whom Divine Grace has taught to consider themselves, where-ever they dwell, as Strangers and Sojourners on Earth; and particularly, to those who inhabit the Regions of *Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia*, and those in the Provinces of *Asia, and Bithynia*.

out Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia.

2 I call you [*Elect*], because you are indeed chosen according to the *Fore-Knowledge of God the Father*, who has projected all his Schemes with the most consummate Wisdom, and perfect Discerning of every future Event. He has been pleased, according to the steady Purposes of his Grace, to bring you by means of the *Sanctification of the Spirit*, by the sanctifying Influence of the Holy Ghost operating upon your Souls, to evangelical Obedience. He has subdued all your Prejudices against the Gospel, and effectually engaged you to submit to it; and thus you are interested in the Pardon of Sin, and in all the other Blessings which proceed from

2 Elect according to the Fore-Knowledge of God the Father, through Sanctification of the Spirit unto Obedience, and sprinkling of

and in Favour of this Opinion he urgeth their being called *Strangers*; which he thinks is the Stile peculiar to those who having renounced Idolatry, and receiving the seven Precepts of *Noah*, were yet *Strangers to the Commonwealth of Israel*. He supposes they must have been *Gentiles*, because they are said, *once not to have been a People*, Chap. ii. 9, 10. and to have been *ignorant*, Ver. 14. and to have wrought the Will of the *Gentiles*, Chap. iv. 3. and he also pleads, from Chap. i. 22. where they are said to have purified their Souls by obeying the Truth, that it is likely they were *Profelytes of the Gate*, because a parallel Expression is used by St. Peter concerning *Cornelius* and his Friends, (*Acts xv. 9*. See Vol. III. § 33. Note (b)) whom he supposes to have been such. He likewise argues from their being addressed in these Words, *If ye call on the Father who without Respect of Persons, judgeth according to every Man's Work* (Chap. i. 17.) by St. Peter, who had himself addressed *Cornelius* in almost the same Terms. (*Acts x. 34, 35*. See Vol. III. § 23. Note (c)) He pleads in support of the same Opinion, their being called *Christians*, (Chap. iv. 16.) a Title which he supposes was first given to the converted *Profelytes of the Gate*, of which the Church at *Antioch*, where they were first called *Christians*, in his Apprehension, consisted. (*Acts xi. 26*. See Vol. III. § 25. Note (f)) But all this appears to me to be utterly inconclusive; it is in Part obviated already in my Notes on the *Acts*; and as for the Force which may seem to remain in his Lordship's Arguments, arising from the Phrases in which St. Peter addresses those to whom he writes, it is I think entirely annihilated by supposing that the Epistle was written both to the converted *Jews and Gentiles*; of which the Reader will be able to form a Judgment by observing whether my *Paraphrase* of the several Passages in Question be natural and easy.

(b) Un-



of the Blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and Peace be multiplied.

from *the sprinkling of the Blood of Jesus Christ*, whereby Forgiveness is obtained for us Christians as it was for the Jews under the Law upon sprinkling the Blood of the Sacrifices; and may this, and every other Instance and Degree of *Grace*, and all the *Peace* consequent upon it, *be multiplied unto you* all, where-ever you are, and what ever your Condition and Circumstances in Life may be.

Sect. I.  
1 Pet. I. 2.

3 Blessed *be* the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which, according to his abundant Mercy, hath begotten us again unto a lively Hope, by the Resurrection of Jesus Christ from the Dead,

Whatever your Afflictions are in this variable and troublesome World, I hope you will never forget, how indispensably you are obliged to Thankfulness on account of your Christian Privileges; and to such Thankfulness let me now excite you, and myself: *Blessed* therefore [be] *the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to his abundant Mercy hath regenerated us, to a great, important and lively Hope of future Happiness by the Resurrection of Jesus Christ from the Dead*; upon whom indeed, and upon whose Resurrection, all our Hopes depend, And by whom we are brought to the chearful, and confident Expectation of *an Inheritance, incorruptible, undefiled (b) and unfading*, which nothing can spoil, which nothing can pollute, and which is incapable of any internal Decay, as well as external Violence. This Inheritance is *reserved in the Heavens for you*, and for all true Believers;

3  
4  
5

4 To an Inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in Heaven for you,

*Who*, tho' now surrounded with many apparent Dangers, are not left defenceless, but *are guarded*, as in a strong and impregnable Garrison (c), by the almighty Power of God, through the continued

5 Who are kept by the Power of God, through Faith

(b) *Undefiled.*] That is, into which nothing that *polluteth* can enter. The Land of Canaan was said to be defiled by Sinners; to which perhaps there may here be an Allusion. Compare Rev. xxi. 27.

(c) *Are guarded, &c.*] The original Word, *οπισθενουτες*, is very *emphatical*, and properly signifies, *being kept as in an impregnable Garrison*, secure from Harm, under the Observation of an *all-seeing Eye*, and Protection of an *Almighty Hand*. *Blackwall's sacred Classics*, Vol. I. pag. 196. Compare 2 Cor. xi. 32. in the Greek.

(d) *In*

Sect. I. continued Exercise of that *Faith*, which this  
 4 Pet. I. 5. } almighty Power wrought in your Hearts; and he will still maintain it *unto* that blessed

Faith unto Salvation, ready to be revealed in the last Time.

Hour, when you shall receive the complete and eternal *Salvation* which is already *prepared*, and tho' now kept as under a Veil, is *to be revealed* in its full Radiance of Glory, *in the last Time (d)*, the grand Period, in which all the Mysteries of divine Providence shall beautifully terminate.

6 This is the blessed State and Condition to which by the Gospel you are brought, *in which*, and in the glorious Hopes which it inspires, you cannot but rejoice, *though now for a little while, if it be necessary, you are grieved*, and distressed *amidst various Trials*. You know they are all under the Direction of the infinite Wisdom of your heavenly Father, who would not subject you to them, did he not see them to be subservient to your truest Happiness; and they will e'er long be brought to an everlasting Period.

7 His Intention in all is most kind and gracious, namely, *that the little Trial of your Faith*, which is *far more precious* and valuable *than that of Gold which perishes* and wears out in Time, *though it be tried with Fire*, and purified to the highest Degree; *may be found to Praise and Honour and Glory, in the great Day of the Revelation of Jesus Christ*, the divine Author and Finisher of our Faith, who having himself indured yet forer Trials, will

6 Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a Season (if need be) ye are in Heaviness through manifold Temptations.

7 That the Trial of your Faith being much more precious than of Gold that perisheth, though it be tried with Fire, might be found unto Praise, and Honour, and Glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ :

(d) *In the last Time.*] This plainly refers to the second Appearance of *Christ*, called *the last Time*, because it will be the concluding Scene of all the divine Dispensations relating to this World. For the same Reason it is called *the last Day*, *John vi. 39.* and *xi. 24.* And the Design of the Passage before us confirms this Interpretation, since the *Apostle* is here speaking of the full Manifestation of the future Happiness reserved in Heaven for them. Some would connect, *in the last Time*, with their being *kept by the Power of God*; and understand it, as if the *Apostle* had said, Though our Lot is cast in the *last Time*, when the Temptations to Apostacy are so great and powerful, we are, notwithstanding, preserved from all the Dangers to which we are exposed.

(e) *Not*

8 Whom having not seen, ye love; in whom, though now ye see *him* not, yet believing, ye rejoice with Joy unspeakable, and full of Glory.

9 Receiving the End of your Faith, *even* the Salvation of *your* Souls.

10 Of which Salvation the Prophets have enquired, and searched diligently, who prophesied of the Grace that should come unto you.

11 Searching what, or what manner of Time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the Glory that should follow.

will rejoice to applaud and reward the Fidelity of his Servants in his Cause: I Sect. 1.  
 say, in the Revelation of Jesus Christ, 1 Pet. I. 8.  
 that glorious Redeemer, *whom not having seen (e)* with your bodily Eyes, nor personally conversed with him, ye nevertheless love, and in whom, though now you see [him] not, yet assuredly believing, ye rejoice, as your almighty Saviour, Friend and Protector, *with unutterable, and even glorified Joy*, with such a Joy as seems to anticipate that of the Saints in Glory; Receiving with unspeakable Delight, as a full equivalent of all your Trials, *the great End of your Faith*, even the compleat Salvation of [your] Souls; a Prize of infinitely greater Importance, than all you can be called to sacrifice for its sake; concerning which Salvation, the Prophets, who predicted the Grace of the Gospel which [was appointed] to you, sought and diligently enquired; Searching with the deepest and most attentive Reflection, to what Period, or to what manner of Time, the Spirit of Christ which was in them, did refer (f), when he testified long before they came to pass, the various Sufferings which were to come upon Christ, and the exalted and permanent Glory, which was to succeed them, and render him and his Kingdom

(e) *Not having seen.*] It is very possible that among these dispersed Christians, there might be some who had visited Jerusalem whilst Christ was there, and might have seen or even conversed with him; but as the greater Part had not, St. Peter speaks, according to the usual Apostolic Manner, as if they all had not. Thus he speaks of them all as loving Christ, though there might be some among them who were destitute both of this divine Principle, and of that Joy which he speaks of, as, *ἠεδόξαμεν, wrought up even to Glory.*

(f) *Spirit of Christ which was in them, &c.*] It is well worthy our Notice, that the Spirit which dictated to the Prophets, is called the Spirit of Christ; which (as Mr. Fleming observes, *Christol. Vol. i. pag. 185.*) both proves his Existence before his Incarnation, and illustrates the full View he himself had of all he was to do and suffer under the Character of our Redeemer; the Particulars of which therefore must have been comprehended in the Stipulations between him and the Father.—The Apostle in discoursing so largely concerning the Prophets, seems to have a special Reference to the converted Jews, who would enter more thoroughly into this Part of his Reasoning, than the converted Gentiles.

Sect. 1. Kingdom so perpetually illustrious, and his  
 1 Pet. I. 12. Servants so compleatly happy. To the  
 memorable Testimony of these Prophets it  
 becomes us to pay a sincere and profound  
 Regard, *to whom* such extraordinary Discov-  
 eries were made, as no attentive Reader  
 can view without Conviction and Astonish-  
 ment; and *it was revealed (g)* to them  
 among other Things, *that [it was] not to*  
*themselves, but to us, that, they ministered these*  
*Things*; they knew that we, when the  
 Events arose, should have a more compleat  
 Understanding of these Oracles, than they  
 who declared them, had. Consider then,  
 how happy you are in that Dispensation  
 under *which* you *now* live, when those di-  
 vine Mysteries, which were only in a more  
 obscure manner hinted at by the Prophets,  
*are* most clearly and expressly *declared to you,*  
*by those, who have published the glad Tidings*  
*of the Gospel amongst you, by the evident Au-*  
*thority and Attestation, as well as by the*  
*Assistances of the Holy Spirit, sent down from*  
*Heaven* with such visible Glory, and testi-  
 fying his continued Residence amongst us  
 by such wonderful Effects. And indeed,  
 the Doctrines *which* they preach, are *Things*  
 of so great Excellence and Importance, as  
 to be well worthy *the* Regard of *Angels,* as  
 well as Men; and accordingly, (as the Images  
 of the Cherubim on the Mercy Seat, seem-  
 ed to bow down, to look upon the Tables  
 of the Law laid up in the Ark,) so those  
 celestial Spirits do, from their heavenly a-  
 bode, *desire to bend down (b) to [contemplate.]*  
 such

12 Unto whom it was  
 revealed, that not unto  
 themselves, but unto us they  
 did minister the Things  
 which are now reported un-  
 to you by them that have  
 preached the Gospel unto  
 you, with the Holy Ghost  
 sent down from Heaven;  
 which Things the Angels  
 desire to look into.

(g) *To whom it was revealed, &c.*] I think this *Text* plainly proves, that the *Pro-*  
*phets* had some *general* Intimation, that their *Prophecies* referred to the *Messiah*; but  
 that they did not understand *every* Clause of them in their full Force, nor so well as  
 we understand them, who are capable of comparing them with the *Event*.

(b) *Angels desire to bend down, &c.*] Thus it is in the Original, *ἐπιθυμοῦσιν κατακύψαι,*  
*desire to stoop down to*; in *allusion* no doubt, (as Mr. Saurin, *Diff. Vol. II. pag. 266,*  
 has beautifully illustrated it, and many others have remarked,) to the *bending Posture*  
 in

such glorious Displays of divine Wisdom and Goodness, and attentively to survey those important Scenes that are opening upon us here on Earth; which is become so much more considerable than it would otherwise be, as it is honoured with being the Theatre of such glorious Events.

Sect. 1.  
1 Pet. I. 12.

I M P R O V E M E N T.

**A**R E we desirous of rendering it apparent to ourselves, and all around us, that we are indeed *the Elect of God*? Let it be, by an humble Application to *the sprinkling of the Blood of Jesus* on the one Hand; and by the evident Fruits of *the Sanctification of the Spirit unto Obedience*, on the other.

The *abundant Mercy* of God hath begotten real Christians to *the lively Hope of an incorruptible, undefiled and unfading Inheritance, reserved in Heaven for them*: Let us keep it steadily in View, and earnestly pray, that God would *preserve us by his mighty Power through Faith unto Salvation*. Whilst we are *waiting* for this Salvation, it is very possible, yea, probable, Affliction may be our Portion; but let us remember, it is *if need be*, that we are *in Heaviness through manifold Temptations*. Our *Faith*, and our other Graces, are as it were thrown into *the Furnace*, not to be *consumed*, but *refined*; that they may be *found unto Praise and Honour and Glory at the Appearance of Jesus Christ*. Even at present, may this divine Faith produce that *Love to an unseen Jesus*, which is here so naturally expressed by the *Apostle*; and *though now we see him not*, yet may that *Love* be eminently productive of *Joy*, even that Joy which is *unspeakable and full of Glory*; and in the lively and vigorous Exercise of these Graces, may we all *receive the End of our Faith*, even *the everlasting Salvation of our Souls*!

Let what we are here told of the *Prophetic Writers*, be improved as it ought, to confirm our Faith in that glorious *Gospel*, of which these holy Men have given, in their *Writings*, such wonderful Intimations and Predictions; Writings, which we have such excellent Advantages for more *distinctly* and *clearly* understanding, than even they

F f 2

in which they were represented on the *Mercy-Seat*. And Mr. Blackwall observes, (*Sacred Classics*, Vol. i. pag. 431.) that it may denote, not only the *attentive Curiosity* with which they may enquire into the *Gospel*, but the *Humility* of their *Adoration*, whereas it is very probable that their *apostate Brethren* refused to *stoop* to such a Scheme.

Sect. 1. they *themselves* did. What exalted Ideas should we entertain of a Dispensation, introduced by such a Series of Wonders, preached by the inspired *Prophets*, and by the *Holy Ghost*, in his miraculous Gifts and salutary Influence *sent down from Heaven*: A Dispensation, *into the Glories of which the Angels desire to pry*; how much more worthy then, the Attention of the *Children of Men*, who are so nearly concerned in it, who were redeemed from everlasting Destruction by the Blood of the Son of God? Oh! let us review it with the closest Application, and improve it to the infinitely gracious and important Purposes for which it was intended. Then will *Grace and Peace* be multiplied to us; and however we may now be *dispersed* and afflicted, *Pilgrims and Strangers*, we shall e'er long be brought to our everlasting Home, and meet together in the Presence of our dear and condescending *Saviour*; where, having a more lively Sense of our Obligations to him, and beholding his *Glory*, we shall love him infinitely better than at this Distance we have been capable of, and feel our *Joy* in him increased in a proportionable Degree.

Ver. 2.

## S E C T. II.

*The Apostle inforces his general Exhortations to Watchfulness, to Sobriety, to Love and to Obedience, by an affecting Representation of our Relation to God, our Redemption by the invaluable Blood of Christ, the Vanity of all worldly Enjoyments, and the Excellence and Perpetuity of the Gospel-Dispensation. I Pet. I. 13, to the End.*

I PETER I. 13.

Sect. 2. I Have been endeavouring to give you some general Ideas of the Excellence and Importance of the Gospel-Dispensation; reminding you of the wonderful Manner in which it was introduced by the united Labours of the Prophets and Apostles, and of the Regard paid to it by the native Inhabitants of

I Pet. I. 13.

I PETER I. 13.

WHEREFORE gird up the Loins of your Mind,

Mind, be sober, and hope to the End, for the Grace that is to be brought unto you, at the Revelation of Jesus Christ;

of the Heavenly World. Regard it *therefore* as worthy the closest attention; and let the Blessings of it be most vigorously pursued; and *girding up the Loins of your Mind*, that you may be capable of the most strenuous Action, and *being continually sober*, and temperate, and watchful against every thing that would ensnare and pollute you, *hope unto the End for the Grace and Mercy which shall be brought unto you, in the great and glorious Day of the Revelation of Jesus Christ.* Live in the View of his second Appearance, and think every Labour, and every Self-Denial, happily bestowed, which may subserve your Prospect of Felicity in that important Day. You have now the Honour to be adopted into the Family of God; conduct yourselves therefore *as his obedient Children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former Lusts*, which you indulged in the Time of *your Ignorance*, when you knew not this Gospel, and were many of you in Heathen Darkness, and others under the imperfect Dispensation of Moses; *But as He that has called you to this glorious Light, and Participation of such invaluable Blessings, is holy, be ye yourselves also holy in the whole of [your] Conversation*, in every thing you say, and do; aspiring after this as your greatest Honour, to bear the Image of God in the moral Perfections of his Nature; *For it is written* in several Passages of the Mosaic Scriptures, (Lev. xi. 44. xix. 2. xx. 7.) *be ye holy, for I am holy.* There is the same Force in the Argument now, respecting us Christians, which there was with Regard to the Jews; yea, greater Force, in proportion to the Degree in which the Sanctity of the divine Being is now more illustriously displayed; *And accordingly let me exhort you, if ye call upon the God and Father of all, who without Respect of Persons,*

Sect. 2.  
1 Pet. I. 13.

14 As obedient Children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former Lusts, in your Ignorance :

14

15 But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of Conversation ;

15

16 Because it is written, Be ye holy, for I am holy.

16

17 And if ye call on the Father, who without Respect

17

or

Sect. 2. or any kind of Partiality, whether to Jews, or Gentiles, *judges every one according to*  
 1 Pet. I. 17. [his] *Work, to converse during the Time of your sojourning here, with all becoming Re-*

spect of Persons judgeth according to every Mans Work, pass the Time of your sojourning here in Fear.

18 of God; And so much the rather, *knowing* the Price of your Redemption to have been so rich and invaluable. This is an important Article of divine Knowledge, of which no Christian can be ignorant, *that you were not redeemed with corruptible Things, as with Silver and Gold, (a)* which however regarded by Men, have no Value in the Sight of God: This, I say, was not the Price, which bought you *from your vain, trifling and unprofitable Conversation, received by Tradition from your Fathers (b)*, from those hereditary Superstitions, Follies and Vices, which had in succeeding Generations assumed the Name and the Garb of Religion, and from the Guilt which they had brought upon your Souls. Ineffectual had all the Treasures of the Earth been to purchase Help for us under so sad and deplorable a Circumstance. *But God was*

18 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible Things, as Silver and Gold, from your vain Conversation received by Tradition from your Fathers;

20 *pleased to find out the only Ransom, and has redeemed us with the precious Blood of Christ his Son, as of a Lamb unblemished and unspotted, free from the least Degree of moral Pollution, and therefore properly represented by those Lambs, free from all corporeal Spots and Blemishes, which the*

19 But with the precious Blood of Christ, as of a Lamb without Blemish and without Spot:

Jews

(a) *Redeemed with corruptible Things, with Silver and Gold, &c.*] Some think here is an Allusion to the *Lamb*, which made an Atonement, and was bought at the common Expence, furnished by the Contribution of the *half-Shekle*, as an Atonement for their Souls. Compare *Exod. xxx. 11, &c.* As for those that think here is a Reference to the Stamp of a *Lamb* on the *Jewish Coin*, I am neither sure of the Truth of the Fact, nor can I perceive the Elegance of the supposed *Allusion*. Compare *Well's Geog. of the Old Test. Vol. i. pag. 275.*

(b) *Received by Tradition, &c.*] Some think this refers to the *Jewish Traditions*; but perhaps it may express those vain *Rites of Worship* which for successive Ages had been delivered down from Parents to their Children in the *Gentile World*.

(c) *Who*



20 Who verily was fore-ordained before the Foundation of the World, but was manifest in these last Times for you ;

21 Who by him do believe in God that raised him up from the Dead, and gave him Glory, that your Faith and Hope might be in God.

22 Seeing you have purified your Souls in obeying the Truth through the Spirit, unto unfeigned Love of the Brethren; see that ye love one another with a pure Heart, fervently :

Jews were required to offer as an Expiation for their Souls. And as the Paschal Lamb was chosen, and set apart, some Time before it was sacrificed, so the Lord Jesus Christ, *who was indeed* typified by it, was known, approved and *fore-appointed from the Foundation of the World, but made manifest in these latter Times*, by the clear Preaching of the Gospel, *for your Sakes*, that ye might obtain Redemption and Salvation by Him; Even ye all, *who by him*, and the Manifestations of the divine Grace and Mercy in him, are brought to repose your Trust and Confidence in God, *(c) who raised him from the Dead, and gave him such exalted Glory and Majesty in the Celestial World; that so your Faith and Hope might be in God*, and ye might be encouraged to commit all your Concerns to him with cheerful Confidence, when he has appointed you such a Saviour; and to expect all Blessings from that Friendship with him which is founded upon the Incarnation, Atonement and Blood of his own Son. Let it be your Care, therefore, that *having purified your Souls*, by an Application to this Fountain which God has opened, and *by that Obedience to the Truth* which will, *through the Assistance of the Spirit*, be the Result of such an Application; and since the whole Genius and Design of this Religion, which you have imbibed and professed, leads to an *undissembled, brotherly Love*: let it be your Care, I say, to enter affectionately into its Design and Tendency; and to *love one another out of a pure Heart*,  
operating

*(c) Who by him trust in God.]* This Phrase is remarkable, and I think with Mr. Hallet, (See his Notes and Discourses, Vol. i. pag. 58.) that the Meaning is, that Christians, who before their Conversion were ignorant of the true God, learnt his Being and Providence from the great Fact of Christ's Resurrection, and the Power with which God invested him on his Ascension into Heaven.

*(d) Intense-*

Sect. 2. operating fervently and *intensely* (d), and not to rest merely in those deceitful Forms and Professions of Affection, with which

1 Pet. I. 22.

- 23 approve its Reality and Sincerity. The Temper and Conduct which I recommend, may justly be expected from you, considering your Relation to God, and to each other; as *having been regenerated, not by corruptible Seed, not by Virtue of any Descent from human Parents, but by incorruptible*; not laying the Stress of your Confidence on your Pedigree from Abraham, if you had the Honour to descend from that illustrious Patriarch; for that Descent could not entitle you to the important Blessings of the Gospel. It is *by means of the Efficacy of the Word of God upon your Hearts, even that powerful Word which lives and endures for ever* (e), that you are become entitled to these glorious evangelical Priviledges.
- 24 For as the Prophet Isaiah testifies, (Isaiah xl. 6.) *all Flesh [is] as Grass, and all the Glory of Man as the Flower of the Grass, which is yet frailer than that; the Grass withereth, and the Flower thereof falleth; quickly deprived of its blooming Honours, it drops, blasted and dying, to the Ground. And thus precarious and uncertain are all the Dependencies, which we can have on*
- 25 *perishing Creatures; But the Word of the Lord abideth for ever in undiminished Force and Vigour, nor can ten thousand succeeding Ages prevent or abate its Efficacy. Now this,*

23 Being born again, not of corruptible Seed, but of incorruptible, by the Word of God which liveth and abideth for ever.

24 For all Flesh is as Grass, and all the Glory of Man, as the Flower of Grass. The Grass withereth, and the Flower thereof falleth away:

25 But the Word of the Lord endureth for ever. And

(d) *Intensely.*] So I think the Word *εκτενως* properly signifies; according to the Sense in which it is used by *Polybius* and *Herodotus*. See *Raphelius, Annot. in loc.*

(e) *The Word of God, which lives and endures for ever.*] This is rendered by some, *Who lives and endures for ever*, referring it to God himself. But it is more agreeable to the Design of the *Apostle*, and (as *Wolfius* imagines to the Order of the *Original Words*.) to refer this Clause to the *Word of God*, which is here styled *incorruptible Seed*.

And this is the Word which by the Gospel is preached unto you.

this, which the Prophet refers to in the Sect. 2. Oracle, I have just been quoting, is the Word which is preached to you in the Gospel; 1 Pet. I. 25. Shew therefore your Regard to it, by such a Temper and Behaviour both towards God and Man, as it was intended to inculcate and produce!

I M P R O V E M E N T.

LET it be Matter of our daily delightful Meditation, that, while we clearly discern the Uncertainty of all human Dependencies, which wither like the *Grass*, and fall like the *Flower of the Field*, the *Word of God* is permanent and immutable. Let us cheerfully repose our Souls on this stable, unfailing Security; gratefully acknowledging the Goodness of God, that he hath condescended to lay a Foundation for our Hope, so firm and durable as his own infallible Word, and to make that Word the *incorruptible Seed of our Regeneration*. If we have indeed experimentally known its Efficacy and Power, so that our Souls are purified by obeying the Truth, let us carefully express our Obedience to it by undissembled, fervent brotherly Love; and animated by our glorious and exalted Hopes as *Christians*, even that divine and illustrious Hope of the *Grace to be brought unto us at the Revelation of Jesus Christ*, let us set ourselves to the vigorous Discharge of every Duty, as knowing that we should be *Children of Obedience*, having the Excuse of *Ignorance* no longer to plead for the Indulgence of our Lusts, but by a *holy God* being called with a *holy Calling*, and instructed to invoke him, at once, as our gracious *Father* and impartial *Judge*.

It is worthy of our special Remark, that the blessed *Apostle* urges us to pass the transitory and limited Time of our sojourning here in Fear, from the Consideration of our being redeemed by the Blood of the Son of God, which is a Price of infinitely more Value than all the Treasures of the Universe. And certainly there is a mighty Energy in the Argument; for as it is a very amiable, so it is also a very awful Consideration. What Heart so hardened, as not to tremble at trampling on the Blood of the Son of God, and frustrating, as far as in him lies, the important Design of his Death? Frustrating the Design of a Scheme, projected from Eternity in the Councils of Heaven,

Ver. 21. Sect. 2. Heaven, and at length *made manifest* with every Circumstance to convince our Judgments, and engage our Affections. And while we are reflecting on the *Resurrection* and Exaltation of our Redeemer, as the great Foundation of our eternal Hopes, let us *dread* to be found opposing *Him*, whom God hath *established* on his own exalted Throne; and with the utmost Reverence *let us kiss the Son*, in token of our grateful Acceptance of his Mercy, and chearful and humble Submission to his *Authority*. (Psal. ii. 12.)

S E C T. III.

*The Apostle urges them, by a Representation of their Christian Priviledges, to receive the Word of God with Meekness, to continue in the Exercise of Faith in Christ, as the great Foundation of their eternal Hopes, and to maintain such a Behaviour as might adorn his Gospel, among the unconverted Gentiles.*  
 1 Pet. II. 1,—12.

I P E T E R II. I.

Sect. 3. I H A V E been reminding you of the everlasting Permanency, and invariable Certainty of the Word of God; let this, therefore engage you to pay it a becoming Regard; and *laying aside all Malignity, and all Deceit, and Hypocrisies and Envies, and all evil Speakings*, which are so contrary to its benevolent Design. With all Simplicity, <sup>2</sup> *as new born Infants (a)*, who are regenerated by divine Grace, *desire that spiritual Nourishment, that rational and unmingled Milk,*

I P E T E R II. I.

W Herefore laying aside all Malice, and all Guile, and Hypocrisies, and Envies, and all Evil-speakings.

<sup>2</sup> As new-born Babes desire the sincere Milk of the Word,

(a) *New-born Infants.*] This Expreffion very emphatically denotes those who are newly converted, or regenerated. — *Wolfius* observes, (*Curæ Philol. Vol. v. pag. 105.*) that the *Jewish Rabbies* were wont to stile new *Profelytes* to their Religion, *little Children* and *New-born Babes*.

(b) *Since*

Word, that ye may grow thereby :

3 If so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious.

4 To whom coming, as unto a living Stone, disallowed indeed of Men, but chosen of God, and precious,

5 Ye also as lively Stones, are built up a spiritual House, an holy Priesthood to offer up spiritual Sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.

6 Wherefore also it is contained in the Scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief Corner-Stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded.

7 Unto you therefore which believe, he is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the Stone which

Milk, if I may so call it; that so ye may grow thereby to a State of adult Christianity. Sect. 3:

And this may reasonably be expected of you, since you have so experimentally felt and tasted that the Lord [is] gracious (b), since you have known the Sweetness there is in Christ, and how suitable He is to the Necessities and Desires of an awakened Sinner; To whom coming, [as to] a living

Stone, who is capable of diffusing spiritual Life into those who are united to him, tho' disallowed indeed and rejected of Men, yet chosen of God, [and] inexpressibly precious and valuable; Ye also as living Stones, united to him, and deriving Life from him, are built up as a spiritual House, consecrated to his Service; and in another View, ye may be considered as a holy Priesthood, destined to offer up the spiritual Sacrifices of Prayer, Praise and Obedience, which are all acceptable to God by Jesus Christ, who is the great high Priest over the House of God, whose Intercession alone can recommend to the Father such imperfect Services as ours.

Therefore it is contained in a well-known Passage of the Scripture, (Isaiah xxviii. 16.) Behold I lay in Sion a Stone, even a chief Corner-Stone, chosen, precious; and he that confideth in it, shall not be ashamed: Which Words undoubtedly refer to the Messiah, as the great Hope and Confidence of his Church. To you therefore who believe [it

is] precious: (a) You, who rest your Salvation on this Corner-Stone, know by blessed Experience its Value, as infinitely beyond all that can be compared with it. But as for those who are disobedient, these Words of the Psalmist are accomplished with Regard

G g 2

to

(b) Since you have tasted, &c.] This is the proper Rendering of εἴπερ, and not, according to our Translation, if so be. See Blackwall's Sacred Clafs. Vol. ii. pag. 203.

(a) It is precious.] τιμὴν, Preciousness itself.

(b) They

Sect. 3. to them, and may well be recollected in the present Connection, (Psal. cxviii. 22.) *The Stone which the Builders rejected, is become the Head of the Corner*: all their Opposition to it is in vain; they can never pretend to prevent the Honour to which it is destined in the divine Purpose; *And to themselves, it is also, as Isaiah expresses it in the preceding Context, a Stone of Stumbling and a Rock of Offence*; they who would attempt, as it were, to remove it out of the Way, find it an Over-Match for their Strength and are dashed in Pieces by it. *They being disobedient, to the divine Revelation, stumble at the Word (b) of the Gospel, which contains this awful Testimony, and bring inevitable Ruin upon themselves; to which also they were appointed by the righteous Sentence of God long before, even as early, as in his first Purpose and Decree he ordained his Son to be the great Foundation of his Church.*

8  
9 *But you, on the contrary, who unfeignedly believe in him, [are] a chosen Generation (c), a royal Priesthood, who bear at once the Dignity of Kings, and Sanctity of Priests; a holy Nation, set apart in a special Manner for the Service of God; and a peculiar People. When these Titles were given to Israel of old, it was in an inferior Sense, and it is in a much nobler Signification, that these*  
Words

which the Builders disallowed, the same is made the Head of the Corner,

8 And a Stone of stumbling, and a Rock of Offence, even to them which stumble at the Word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed.

9 But ye are a chosen Generation, a royal Priesthood, an holy Nation, a peculiar People; that ye should

(b) *They being disobedient, stumble, &c.*] A learned Writer, I think, very well observes, that it is doing Violence to the Text, to read it as one continued Sentence, as it is in our Translation. The Truth is the Apostle runs a double Antithesis between Believers, and Unbelievers: *υμιν εν — πιστευουσιν*, saith he, *To you who believe, it is precious: απειδουσι δε*, but to them who are disobedient, and Unbelievers, a Stone of stumbling: *οι προσκοπιουσιν*, they stumble: *υμεις δε*, but you are a chosen People, &c. See Taylor's Key to the Romans, § 71.

(c) *You are a chosen Generation.*] Dr. Whitby shews at large that the Phrase of God's chosen is applied to the whole Nation of the Jews, good and bad, and not to those among them who might be supposed elected to eternal Life. But it seems very unreasonable to limit such Phrases as these when applied to Christians just to the Idea, which the like Phrases had, when applied to the Jews.

(d) The

should shew forth the Praises of him who hath called you out of Darknes into his marvellous Light :

Words may be applied to you. Consider Sect. 3. it therefore as the wise Intention of divine Providence, *that you should declare and proclaim all abroad, the Virtues (d) of him who has called you out of that Darknes, in which you originally were, into his marvellous and glorious Light; (e) that clear Light of the Gospel, which opens so many illustrious Scenes of divine Wonders.* To this, are

10 Which in Time past were not a People, but are now the People of God: which had not obtained Mercy, but now have obtained Mercy.

you, my Brethren, called, *who once [were] not a People, but [are] now the People of God; (f) who had not obtained Mercy;* who, many of you, lay in the Ruins of the Gentile World; *but have now obtained Mercy,* and are gathered into the Church of God, and by his Favour entitled to all it's Priviledges.

11 Dearly beloved, I beseech you as Strangers and Pilgrims, abstain from fleshly Lusts, which war against the Soul ;

My Beloved Brethren, let it be your special Care to walk worthy of these Priviledges; and that you may, *I beseech [you], as Strangers in this World, and Sojourners in the Body, who are to be here but for a very little Space of Time, and must soon quit this State of Mortality to dwell in another World, that ye abstain from carnal Lusts, in the Gratification of which, only a very mean and transient Pleasure is to be found; for these are Appetites which are suited only to that Part of our Nature, which so soon is to be laid down, and which do indeed make War against the nobler Powers*

(d) *The Virtues.*] We render it *Praises*; but the Word, *αρετας*, is well known commonly to have the Signification here assigned it.

(e) *Marvellous and glorious Light.*] A most beautiful Expression of the *Wonders* the Gospel opens on the *enlightened Eye*. But perhaps no Interpretation was ever more unnatural and servile to an *Hypothesis* than that which the Author of *Miscellanea Sacra* gives to these Words, when he explains their being called out of *Darknes*, by their being first made *Profelytes of the Gate* from their State of Heathen Idolatry, and then being brought into the *marvellous Light* of the *Christian Religion*. *Miscell. Sacra, Vol. ii. pag. 85.*

(f) *Were not a People.*] I think it plain that *Hosea* ii. 23. (to which there seems here to be a Reference) relates to the *Israelites* after their *Rejection*. But it may with so much Propriety be accommodated to the *Gentiles*, that I thought it much better to give it such a Turn, then to suppose it here spoken only of *Jewish* Conyerts.

**Sect. 3.** Powers of *the immortal Soul*, and have a  
 Tendency, not only to injure, but for ever  
 1 Pet. II. 11. to ruin it, if they are suffered to prevail and  
 12 govern; *Having your Conversation honest,*  
 fair, and honourable *among the Gentiles*, par-  
 ticularly in an exemplary Discharge of all  
 social and relative Duties; *that whereas they*  
*speak against you, as Evil-Doers* in separating  
 from the Worship of their Gods, and join-  
 ing yourselves with what they, presumptu-  
 ously, call the impious Sect of Christians,  
*they, being Eye-witnesses continually of [your]*  
*good Works*, may not only lay aside these  
 blasphemous Reproaches, but exchange  
 them for Commendations and Praises; and  
*so may glorify God in the Day of [their]*  
*Visitation*, during the Season in which the  
 Gospel is preached among them, whereby  
 they are visited with the Offers of Pardon  
 and Salvation.

12 Having your Conver-  
 sation honest among the  
 Gentiles: that whereas they  
 speak against you as evil-  
 doers, they may by your  
 good Works which they  
 shall behold, glorify God in  
 the Day of Visitation.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

**L**ET us examine our own Hearts seriously and impartially,  
 with respect to those Branches of the *Christian Temper*, and  
 those Views of the *Christian Life*, which are exhibited in this ex-  
 cellent Portion of holy Writ. Let us, especially, enquire, in what  
 Manner, and to what Purposes we receive *the Word of God*. Is it  
 with the Simplicity of *Babes*, or *Children*? Do we desire it, as  
 they desire the *Breast*? Do we lay aside those *evil Affections* of  
 Mind, which would incapacitate us for receiving it in a becoming  
 Manner? And does it conduce to our *spiritual Nourishment*, and  
 Growth in Grace? Have we indeed *tasted, that the Lord is gracious*?  
 Do we experimentally know, that to the *true Believer* the Re-  
 deemer is inestimably *precious*? Have we indeed *come to him, as to*  
 a *living Stone*; and notwithstanding all the *Neglect* and *Contempt*  
 with which he may be treated by many infatuated and miserable  
 Men, by Wretches who are bent on their own Destruction, do we  
 regard, and build on him as our great and only *Foundation*? And  
 do we feel that *spiritual Life* diffused through our Souls, which is  
 the genuine Consequence of a real and vital Union with him?—

If



If these be our happy Circumstances, we shall never be *ashamed*, or confounded; for this is that *Foundation which God hath laid in Zion*; and the united Efforts of Earth and Hell to raze or over-turn it, will be scattered as Chaff and Stubble, and by the Breath of God be rendered utterly vain and ineffectual.

Sect. 3.

Ver. 6, 8.

Are we conscious of our high *Dignity*, as we are *a chosen Generation, a royal Priesthood, a holy Nation, a peculiar People*? Are our Hearts suitably affected with a Sense of the divine *Goodness*, in calling us *to be a People*, who once were *not a People*; and us *beloved*, who were *not beloved*; in leading us from the deplorable *Darkness of Ignorance and Vice*, in which our *Ancestors* were involved, into the *marvellous Light* of his Gospel; yea, in dissipating those thick Clouds of Prejudice and Error, which once veiled this sacred Light from our Eyes, that its enlivening Beams might break in upon our Souls? And are we now *shewing forth his Praises*? Are we now *offering to him spiritual Sacrifices*, in humble Dependence on *Christ*, our great *High-priest*, who continually interceeds for our *Acceptance with God*. Then shall we indeed *make our Calling and our Election sure*, and shall e'er long appear in his heavenly Temple, both as *Kings and Priests unto God*, to participate of our Redeemer's Glory, to reign with him, and minister to him for ever.

Ver. 9, 10.

Ver. 5.

Let us be careful, in the mean Time, to remember, that we are *Strangers and Sojourners on Earth, as all our Fathers were*; and that our Days in this transitory Life are but as a *Shadow that declineth*; and let us learn to regard the Appetites of our animal Nature, and the Interests of this mortal Life, with a noble Superiority, reflecting, for how little a Space of Time they will solicit our Attention. And as for *fleshy Lusts*, let us consider them as *making War against the Soul*; arming ourselves with that Resolution and Fortitude, which is necessary to prevent their gaining a *Victory* over us; which would be, at once, our *Disgrace*, and our *Ruin*. There is an additional Argument to be derived, for a strenuous *Opposition* to them, from our Circumstances and Situation in the present World; where there are so many Enemies to our holy Religion, who cannot be more effectually *silenced* than by our *good Conversation*. Let it be, therefore, our principal Care to cut off from them *the Occasion of speaking against us as Evil-Doers*; and by exhibiting a clear and unexceptionable Pattern of *good Works* in our daily Conversation, let us invite and allure them to *improve the Day of their Visitation, and glorify their Father who is in Heaven*.

Ver. 11.

Ver. 12.

S E C T.

## S E C T. IV.

*In order to adorn the Gospel, the Apostle urges upon them the Exercise of a due Care as to relative Duties; and particularly a Subjection to civil Governors, and to Masters, even where their Dispositions or Injunctions might be harsh and severe; enforcing all by the Consideration of that Patience, with which our Lord Jesus Christ endured his most grievous Sufferings. I Pet. II. 13, to the End.*

I PETER II. 13.

Sect. 4.  
I Pet. II. 13.

**H**AVING been already urging you to set a good Example before those that are without; for the further illustration of that general Precept, let me exhort you to be particularly careful to *be subject to every human Constitution (a) of Government, under which you are providentially placed, for the Lords Sake, and that ye may not bring any Reflection upon the Religion of Jesus; whether it be to the King or Emperor, as* 14 *supreme; Or whether it be to Governors, and Presidents, as sent and commissioned by him from Rome, in order to the Punishment of Evil-Doers (b), but to the Praise of them who do well; for this is indeed the true Intent of Magistracy, and this will be the Care of them who rightly understand the Nature*

I PETER II. 13.

**S**UBMIT yourselves to every Ordinance of Man for the Lords Sake: whether it be to the King, as supreme;

14 Or unto Governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the Punishment of Evil-Doers, and for the Praise of them that do well.

(a) *Every human Constitution.*] The whole Course of the *Apostle's* Reasoning in this Place so plainly shews how very impertinent it is to apply this to the Injunctions of *Men* in Matters of *Religion*, that one cannot but wonder that any *rational* Writer should ever have mentioned the *Argument* which has been drawn from it.

(b) *In order to the Punishment of Evil-Doers.*] The *Roman* Governors had the Power of *Life* and *Death* in such *conquered* Provinces as those mentioned *Chap. i. 1.* There is therefore the exactest Propriety in the *Stile*, as *Dr. Lardner* hath observed, *Credib. Vol. i. pag. 167.*

(c) *The*

*And should fear God, and honour the King :*

15 For so is the Will of God, that with well-doing ye may put to silence the Ignorance of foolish Men :

Nature and Honour of their Office. *For Sect. 4.*  
*so is the Will of God* in this Respect, *that by* *doing Good ye should bridle in the Ignorance of foolish Men (c)*, which might be ready to cast Reflections upon you. *As those* 16

16 As free, and not using your Liberty for a Cloke of Malicioufness, but as the Servants of God.

who are indeed in the noblest Sense *free*, in consequence of your Relation to Christ and your Share in the Purchase of his Blood, *yet not using [your] Liberty as a Veil* and Covering for the Practice of *Wickedness*, as the Jews too often do ; *but* behaving continually *as becomes the Servants of God*, as those who are now more than ever his Property in consequence of your having been bought with such a Price. *Honour all Men;* 17

17 Honour all Men. Love the Brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the King.

maintain an Esteem for human Nature in general, and observe with Pleasure whatever is truly honourable in the meanest and most undeserving of Mankind. *Love the Christian Brotherhood* with a peculiar and distinguishing Affection, suitable to that fraternal Relation, into which you are brought by your joint Adoption into the Family of God, and Insertion into the Body of Christ. *Reverence God (d)* at all Times with the sincerest and profoundest Humility ; and let a Sense of the Honour and Favour he has conferred upon you increase, rather than diminish that Reverence. *Honour the King* whom God hath set over you, and all the subordinate Governors who derive their Authority from him ; paying Obedience to all their just Commands, and taking heed that there be nothing rebellious or factious in your Behaviour,

(c) *The Ignorance of foolish Men.*] By the *foolish Men* here spoken of *Dr. Whitby* understands the *Heathens*, who might be ready *foolishly* to judge of *Christians* by the Behaviour of the turbulent *Jews*, and so might represent them as a People naturally *averse* from Subjection to Kings ; as *Josephus* says of his own Nation.

(d) *Reverence God, &c.*] Perhaps no finer and stronger Instances of the *Laconic Stile*, are to be found any where than in this Place. It is remarkable that they are required to *honour the Emperor*, though so great a Persecutor, and of so abandoned a Character, as *Nero* himself.

Sect. 4. Behaviour, which would turn to the Hurt of Society, and bring a Reflection upon your  
 1 Pet. II. 18. holy Profession. *Ye who are domestic*

*Servants and Slaves, be in Subjection to [your own] Masters in all Things lawful, with all Reverence and Submission; and remember to pay this Regard not only to the Good and the Gentle, whose Moderation, Clemency and Benevolence make your Yoke easy;*

19 *but also to the froward and perverse. For this [is] graceful indeed, and deserves Applause, if any one for the sake of Conscience towards God, and a Desire of performing his Duty to him, patiently endures Grief*

20 *and Sorrow, though he suffer unjustly; For after all, what Glory [is it], or what can you possibly value yourselves upon, if when ye have committed an Offence, and are buffeted and corrected for it, ye endure [it]? How can you indeed do otherwise? or if you could, how shameful were it in such a Case, to rise against the Hand of your injured Masters? But if, when you have done Good, and yet suffer through their Tyranny and Perverseness, ye endure [it] meekly and patiently, this [is] acceptable and graceful before God (e); his Eye which always judges of the true Beauty of Characters aright, is even delighted with such a Spectacle, tho' exhibited in the lowest Rank of human*

21 *Life. And I would particularly urge this meek and patient Temper upon you; for to this you were called, when you were brought into the Profession of the Christian Faith; because Christ himself (f), pure and spotless as he was, suffered not only Buffetings and Stripes*

18 Servants, *be subject to your Masters with all Fear, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.*

19 For this *is* thank-worthy, if a Man for Conscience toward God endure Grief, suffering wrongfully.

20 For what Glory *is it*, if when ye be buffeted for your Faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently; this *is* acceptable with God.

21 For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving

(e) *If when ye have done Good, and yet suffer, ye endure [it], this [is] graceful before God.* The Emperor Antoninus quotes it as an excellent Saying of Antisthenes, that *it is truly royal to do Good and to be reproached.* Ant. Med. L. vii. § 36.

(f) *Because Christ himself, &c.* It is observable, that upon the Mention of the Name of Christ, the Apostle falls into a noble and animated Digression of several Verses, to the End of the Chapter; afterwards he continues to pursue his Exhortation to relative Duties.

(g) *By*

leaving us an Example, that ye should follow his Steps :

Stripes, but deep and mortal Wounds, *for you*, Sect. 4. leaving you (g) an Example and Copy, that you might with Certainty trace, and with Constancy and Diligence follow, his Foot-steps, and by observing them as his, be charmed to an Imitation, even where it was most difficult and painful. We cannot expect indeed to arrive at a perfect Resemblance of it; but let us endeavour to approach as near as possible, even to the amiable Character of him, *who did no Sin, neither was any Degree of Deceit found in his Mouth;* *Who being reviled, reviled not again, and suffering the most grievous Insults and Injuries, threatened not the Vengeance which he had it in his Power to have executed; but committed [himself] to him, who judgeth righteously,* and who in his own most proper Time will make the righteous and innocent triumphant over all their Enemies. Yet we know this spotless and holy Person was as much distinguished by the Grievousness of his Sufferings, as by the Integrity of his Character. For it is He, *who himself bore the Punishment of our Sins in his own Body, when he hung in the Agonies of Crucifixion on the accursed Tree; that we being freed from the Guilt of our Sins (b), and the Misery to which they exposed us, might live unto Righteousness: By whose Stripes and Bruises ye are healed (i) of Evils infinitely greater than the Cruelty of the severest*

1 Pet. II. 21.

22 Who did no Sin, neither was Guile found in his Mouth :

23 Who when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously :

24 Who his ownself bare our Sins in his own Body on the Tree, that we being dead to Sin, should live unto Righteousness: by whose Stripes ye were healed.

(g) Suffered for you, leaving you, &c.] I here prefer the Reading of the *Alexandrian*, and other *MSS.* as most agreeable to the Sense and Connection.

(b) That being freed from Sin: ταις αμαρτιας απογενομενοι.] That our common Translation is agreeable to the frequent Signification of the *original Word*, is certain. But so is the Version I have chosen, which is approved by *Beza*, and is preferred and adopted by that judicious and learned Critick *Erasmus Schmidius*.

(i) By whose Stripes, &c.] *Mr. Cradock* supposes the Meaning of this is, as if he had said, The Blood of *Christ*, by which your Souls are saved, may be a sufficient Balm for those Wounds and Bruises, which your cruel Masters may inflict upon you: that is, it may so delight your Minds as to raise you above an undue Regard to and Concern about such *corporal Sufferings*. *Apostol. History*, pag. 407.

Sect. 4. severest Masters can bring upon you; according to the well-known Phrase of the  
 1 Pet. II. 25. Prophet, (Isaiah liii. 4, 5, 6.) *For ye were like Sheep going astray, exposed to Want and Danger, and wandering in the Way to Destruction; but now ye are by divine Grace recovered, and turned again to him, who bears the important and tender Character of the great Shepherd and Bishop of your Souls (k), who has graciously received you under his Pastoral Care, and will maintain that Inspection over you which shall be your continued Security from returning to those fatal Wanderings; and the Sense of this may cheer and comfort you under any Oppression or Injuries, to which you may be exposed.*

25 For ye were as Sheep going astray; but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your Souls,

### I M P R O V E M E N T.

Ver. 13, 18. — **A**S the Honour of God is eminently concerned in the Regard shewn by his People to their *relative Duties*, let us out of a due Respect to *that*, pay a very careful and diligent Attention to *them*; that the Ignorance of foolish Men, of those who reproach our good Conversation in Christ, may be utterly silenced. Let Magistrates, especially, be revered, and in all Things lawful, obeyed. And if they desire to secure Reverence to their Persons and Authority, let them remember the End and Design of their Office, namely, *to be a Terror to Evil-Doers, and a Praise and Encouragement to the regular and virtuous*. And let us, who rejoice in our Liberty, *that Liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free*, be very careful, that it be not *abused as a Cloke of Licentiousness*; but as we would manifest our Fear and Reverence of God, let us remember to honour the King; yea, to render to every Man, in every Station and Character, the Esteem and Respect which he justly claims; feeling at the same Time, the Constraints of a peculiar Affection to all those, who are united to us by the endearing Character of our Brethren in the Lord. — Should Men who fill superior Stations and Relations

(k) Bishop of your Souls.] This is an Instance of that Duplicity of Design, which is often to be found in the Epistles. The Apostle urges these Things peculiarly upon Servants; yet does it in general Language, as well knowing that many of them were the Concerns of all Christian Readers.

lations in Life, not be so regular and without Exception, in their private and public Department, as they ought, let us perform our *Duty*, not only to the *gentle* and *obliging*, but to the *perverse* and *froward*; remembering our *Lord's Example*, which was set before us *that we might follow his Steps*. And let his marvellous *Love* in bearing our *Sins in his own sacred Body on the Tree*, endear both his Example and his Precepts to our Souls, and constrain us to a holy Conformity to him.

Sect. 4.

Ver. 18.

Ver. 21.

Ver. 24.

Since he who is the great *Shepherd and Bishop of Souls*, came on the most gracious and condescending Errand of *seeking and saving that which was lost*, of gathering us into his Fold, who were *wandering* in the Way to Perdition; let us shew so much Gratitude and Wisdom, as not to *wander* any more; but as we regard our Security and our very Life, let us keep our *Shepherd* in our Eye, submit ourselves to his pastoral Inspection, and cheerfully follow him, in whatsoever Path he shall condescend to conduct us.

Ver. 25.

S E C T. V.

*Christian Wives are exhorted to submit themselves to their Husbands, and to study the Ornaments of their Minds rather than of their Persons; and likewise Husbands are exhorted to treat their Wives in a becoming and honourable Manner, from a tender Sense of those Infirmities to which the Sex is peculiarly liable.*  
I Pet. III. 1,—7.

I PETER III. I.

I PETER III. I.

**L**ikewise, ye Wives, be in Subjection to your own Husbands; that if any obey not the Word, they also

**I** Have been discoursing of the Duty of a Servant; let me now *likewise* consider those of some other Relations; and, particularly urge it upon you, O ye *Christian Wives*, that ye [*be*] in Subjection to your own Husbands, in all Things just and lawful; that if any of them be disobedient to the Word of the Gospel, and have refused to yield to all the other mighty Arguments by which Christianity

Sect. 5.

I Pet. III. 1.

Sect. 5. Christianity is supported, *they may, without attending upon the Word, be gained over, to the Love and Practice of it by the amiable and edifying Deportment of [their] Wives :*

1 Pet. III. 1.

2 Particularly, *beholding your chaste and spotless Conversation, in the Fear of God, and with a due Reverence to your Husbands, for his*

3 Sake, and not merely on Constraint. Be careful to behave in every Respect as becomes those *whose Happiness it is, to be acquainted with the great Principles of Christianity ; and particularly consider, how they should influence your Conduct in the adorning of your Persons (a). And as to this, let it not be merely external (b), nor consist in the plaiting and braiding the Hair, or in putting on Chains of Gold about the Neck, or Ear-rings, or Bracelets of Gold on the Arms, or in wearing of sumptuous and splendid Apparel.*

4 *But let your Ornament be of a much more glorious Nature ; let it consist in a well regulated Temper of Mind, in having the hidden Man of the Heart rightly formed : Let it be seated in what is more incorruptible by far than Gold or Gems, which, stable as they are, may in Time wear away, and are liable to a Variety of Accidents ; I mean, in the beautiful and harmonious Disposition of a meek and quiet Spirit, silently submitting to the Conduct of your Husbands, and gently accommodating yourselves*

also may without the Word be won by the Conversation of the Wives,

2 While they behold your chaste Conversation coupled with Fear.

3 Whose adorning, let it not be that outward adorning, of plaiting the Hair, and of wearing of Gold, or of putting on of Apparel :

4 But let it be the hidden Man of the Heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the Ornament of a meek and quiet Spirit, which is in

(a) *Whose adorning, &c.] Plutarch quotes a Passage from Crates, in which he observes, in Words greatly resembling these, " That neither Gold, nor Emeralds, nor Pearls give Grace and Ornament to a Woman ; but all those Things, which clearly express, and set off her Gravity, Regularity and Modesty." Præcept. Cong. pag. 86. But St. Peter's Precept is enriched with a Variety of much more noble and agreeable Thoughts, especially when recommending Virtue as the Ornament of the hidden Man, incorruptible, and precious in the Sight of God, the truest Judge of Beauty and Perfection.*

(b) *Let it not be, &c.] This is not to be interpreted as absolutely prohibiting the Ornaments of Dress, but only the making these Things our chief Concern. Compare John vi. 27. with 1 Tim. v. 8.*

(c) *Not*



in the Sight of God, of great Price.

elves to them as far as reasonably you can; *which* argues an inward Wisdom and Goodness, that is highly precious in the Sight of God himself; who looks with comparative Contempt on those little Artifices, by which the Notice of vain Men is often attracted. *1 Pet. III. 4*

5 For after this manner in the old Time, the holy Women also who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in Subjection unto their own Husbands;

This has long been the prevailing Fashion in God's Family; *for so the holy Women also, who hoped in God, and served him in the Integrity of their Hearts, long since, adorned themselves, being, agreeably to the Exhortations I have been giving you, in Subjection to their own Husbands:* As you may particularly recollect in the Instance of *Sarah*, who you know obeyed *Abraham* her Husband, calling *him* constantly, when she spoke of him, her Lord, though she was not only of the same Family with him, but was herself in so peculiar a manner dignified by God, and had her Name changed in Token of her being a Mother of many Nations, and of the Veneration, in which she was to be held in all succeeding Ages. Remember therefore the Character of this excellent Woman, whom those of you, who are of Jewish Extraction, are so fond of calling, your Mother; and whose Daughters you indeed are, so long as ye do well, and preserving, by such a Conduct, your inward Tranquility and Fortitude, are not meanly terrified, so as to act out of Character, with any Amazement (c), or Danger,

6 Even as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him Lord: whose Daughters ye are as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any Amazement.

6

(c) *Not terrified with any Amazement.*] Many have apprehended this last Clause is suggested as an Argument to persuade them to do well, that they would be preserved from those Alarms and Terrors, which a perverse and rebellious Contest with superior Power might bring along with it, and which would indeed prove as injurious to their Peace as to their Character. But the Structure of the Greek Sentence makes it evident, that he speaks of the Condition on which they were to preserve the Characters of Daughters of Sarah. Possibly the Apostle might have in his Mind the Instance in which Sarah acted beneath her usual Character, when through Fear and sudden Amazement she denied her having laughed. Gen. xviii. 15. And if he had, it is the Design of this Sentence to intimate, that though in that Instance she failed, she generally acted in a very different manner: But as the Hint is very oblique, I chose not to express it very strongly in the Paraphrase, though I have indeed glanced upon it.

(d) Allotting

Sect. 5. Danger, which may meet you in the Way  
 of your Duty. The want of a becoming  
 and necessary Fortitude in this Case, would  
 indeed be attended with fatal Consequences,  
 and render you unworthy of so honourable  
 a Title. And that the Duty of the Wife  
 may be rendered more easy and agreeable,  
 and ye Husbands may have more Reason to  
 expect it to be chearfully performed, let it  
 be your Care likewise that ye dwell with  
 [your Wives] according to Knowledge, and in  
 such a manner as becomes those who have  
 been instructed in that great System of  
 Wisdom and Duty, the Gospel of Christ.  
 And particularly be careful so to order your  
 Affairs, that you may not be prevented from  
 allotting an honourable and comfortable Sub-  
 sistence to the Woman (d); for this is a Piece of  
 Respect which is due to the Tenderness and  
 Infirmary of her Sex, as being upon the whole  
 the weaker Vessel, less able to endure the  
 Fatigue of Labour, and subject to various  
 Indispositions which peculiarly require Suc-  
 cour and Accommodation. See therefore  
 that this Duty be properly and carefully  
 performed, that your Hearts may be en-  
 deared to each other; and upon the whole,  
 converse together, as [those who are] Joint-  
 Heirs of the Grace of eternal Life, and are  
 solicitous, that your Behaviour may be cor-  
 respondent to so exalted a Hope, and may  
 be so ordered in every Respect, that your  
 joint

7 Likewise, ye Husbands,  
 dwell with them according  
 to Knowledge, giving Ho-  
 nour unto the Wife as unto  
 the weaker Vessel, and as  
 being Heirs together of the  
 Grace

(d) *Allotting an honourable Subsistence to the Woman.*] The Reader may see a very different, and truly I think, a very unjustifiable Interpretation of these Words in Dr. Whitby; which I shall not so much as transcribe. — It is to be remembered, that many of the Christians were Persons of low Rank in Life, which might make such a Precept of maintaining their Wives decently, and not subjecting them to harder Labour than they could bear, (which they might be tempted to do from their indigent Circumstances,) exceeding proper. This Sense of the Word *τιμω*, (as signifying Subsistence or Maintenance,) is so much confirmed by 1 Tim. v. 17. that I think, I need say no more to vindicate it.

(e) That

Grace of Life; that your Prayers be not hindered.

joint Prayers may not be hindered(e), nor the Pleasures of Devotion impaired by any secret Alienation of Heart, but rather be increased by the strictest Union, and sincerest Affection.

Sect. 5.

1 Pet. III. 7.

I M P R O V E M E N T.

LET us observe with a pleasing Attention, how greatly solicitous all the *Apostles* are, not only to establish the *Doctrines* of Christianity, but to inculcate its *Precepts*; particularly those, which refer to the *relative Duties* of Life. The comprehensive Argument, by which St. *Peter* enforces those of *one* peculiar Relation, may be considered also as enforcing *all the rest*; I mean, the Tendency of our exemplary Behaviour, to win over those who are without the *Word*, and are disobedient to it. In this manner let us all plead the Cause of our *Lord and Master*. And this silent, this winning Eloquence will by the divine Blessing, be powerful and effectual. — The Veil of *Modesty* is decent in *all*, and an humble Caution, and Fear of offending, are to be considered as Duties of *universal* Obligation. But if the *weaker Sex* are commanded to aim at a noble Superiority to the Concerns of this *animal* Life, and to the Parade and Vanity of *Dress*, it may with greater Reason be expected from *Men*, who boast of their superior Understanding and larger Experience. *They*, not only from *Christan* Humility, but, one would think, even from a *manly Pride*, should be raised above such childish Ornaments, in contriving and adjusting which, many who are stiled rational Creatures, spend much to large a Portion of their *precious Time*, and for the sake of which they neglect the Cultivation and Embellishment of their intelligent and immortal Part, and the securing a Happiness that will never have an End: As if glittering in the Eyes of our *Fellow Worms* were so desirable a Thing, that it were worth while, for the sake of it, to expose ourselves to *Condemnation from God!* Let the *hidden Man of the Heart* be more our Care; and when that is rightly governed, the proper Conduct of our *external* Behaviour will be natural and easy.

Ver. 1.

Ver. 2.

Ver. 3, 4.

Ver. 4.

Let

(e) That your Prayers may not be hindered.] These Words seem strongly to intimate the great Importance of *social Prayer*; as, when we shortly expect to unite in Acts of *Domestic Devotion*, a Concern not to be notoriously *unfit* for it, will be a *Guard* upon our general Behaviour.

Sect. 5. Let us labour to walk *according to Knowledge*, to behave as those who have been well-instructed in the Science of the Gospel, in comparison of which all other Sciences are *Ignorance* and *Vanity*. Let us be ready to make Allowance for the *natural Infirmities* of those about us. Especially, let *Husbands* consider *those* of their *Wives*, (not as an Encouragement to *Oppression*, than which nothing could be more ungenerous, but) as an Engagement in all Honour and Conscience, to a *tender* and *respectful* Behaviour. How becoming and amiable is such Conduct in those who through divine Grace are *Heirs of eternal Life*! And if a due Care be not maintained on this Head, there will be an Indisposition for *social* and for *secret Prayer*; and when the Pleasures of *Devotion* are destroyed or embittered, it is not to be expected any *other kind* of Pleasure, worth the Regard of a *rational* Creature, can long continue.

---

## S E C T. VI,

*The Apostle urges various Arguments on the Christian Converts, to engage them to an inoffensive, benevolent and useful Life and Conversation, and to a steady courageous Adherence to their Religion amidst all Opposition. I Pet. III. 8—17.*

I P E T E R III. 8.

Sect. 6. **T**O conclude this Head; my Brethren, [*be*] *all unanimous*, guarding against all unnecessary Occasion of Contention; be *sympathizing*, full of brotherly Love to all Christians, *compassionate* to those that are in Distress, and *friendly* to all those that need your Assistance; *Not returning Evil for Evil, nor Reproach for Reproach*; but on the contrary, rather *Blessing*, even to those that curse you, according to our Lord's Precept; *knowing that to this Purpose ye were called to the Profession of Christianity, that ye might inherit a Blessing* immense and eternal;

I P E T E R III. 8.

**F**inally, *be ye* all of one Mind, having Compassion one of another, love as Brethren, *be* pitiful, *be* courteous:

9 Not rendering Evil for Evil, or Railing for Railing: but contrariwise Blessing; knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a Blessing.

10 For he that will love Life, and see good Days, let him refrain his Tongue from Evil, and his Lips that they speak no Guile.

11 Let him eschew Evil, and do Good; let him seek Peace, and ensue it.

12 For the Eyes of the Lord are over the Righteous, and his Ears art open unto their Prayers: But the Face of the Lord is against them that do Evil.

13 And who is he that will harm you, if ye be Followers of that which is good?

nal; the Expectation of which, (consider- Sect. 6:  
ing its infinite Importance,) may well keep your Spirits calm and composed, whatever 1 Pet. III. 9.  
be the Injury and ill Usage you may meet with from your Fellow-Men. For this 10

you know is the Language of the Psalmist, and it ought never to be forgotten, (Psalm. xxxiv. 12, 13.) What Man is *He that would love Life (a)*, in the truest Sense of loving and enjoying it, and would see good, prosperous and happy Days? let him refrain his Tongue from Evil, and his Lips from speaking Deceit; Let him turn away from the Practice of all that is evil, and do good to the utmost Extent of his Power; let him seek after Peace, and resolutely pursue it, even though it may appear to fly away from him. For the favourable Eyes of the 11

Lord [are] continually set upon the Righteous, to watch over and protect them; and his Ears [are] ever [open] to listen to the Voice of their Supplication; but the Face of the Lord, his Countenance full of Wrath and Resentment, [is] set against them that do evil; in so much that he will even blot out their Names from the Book of the living, and cause their Remembrance to perish from the Earth. These are the Things which on the one Hand may be hoped for, and on the other, dreaded, as the Consequence of practising, or neglecting Religion. 12

And now reflect with yourselves, who 13  
shall hurt you? who shall have the Ability, or Inclination to hurt you, if ye imitate him who is supremely good, if you copy after the

(a) *He that would love Life, &c.*] The Apostle here urges in Favour of the Virtues he recommends, that by these the Comforts of Life will be secured, Ver. 10, 11. the Favour of God engaged, Ver. 12. and the Malice of Men in a great Measure disarmed, Ver. 13, &c. And these three Arguments are indeed of very great Weight and Importance.

Sect. 6. the Benevolence of the divine Being, and  
 of your great Master, whose whole Life was  
 so illustrious an Example of the most dif-  
 fusive Generosity and Goodness to his Fol-

1 Pet. III. 13.

14 lowers? *But if ye should suffer on account of Righteousness, [ye are] still happy in spite of all the malicious and outrageous Efforts of your Enemies to render you miserable: Therefore fear not their Terror (b), neither be troubled,* as they are, under the various Calamities of Life, who are, alas! utterly

15 destitute of your Support. *But sanctify the Lord God in your Hearts; behave towards him continually with that Reverence, with that dutiful and obedient Regard, which his unrivalled Perfections and Glories demand; and [be] always prepared, by a ready and familiar Acquaintance with the Contents and Evidences of your holy Religion, and by that Cheerfulness and Presence of Mind which arises from a Conscioufness of your practical Regard to it, to [offer] an Apology to every one that demands of you an Account of the exalted Hope which is in you, and which enables you to maintain such Serenity and Composure, under those Troubles and Persecutions, to which the Profession of Christianity may expose you. And that this noble Defence may be rendered the more effectual, let it be made with Meekness and Reverence; the good Fruit of your religious Principles appearing in the Piety and Gentleness of your*

16 Minds. Let it be your constant Endeavour, that, *having a good Conscience,* you be always bold and courageous in the Defence.

14 But and if ye suffer for righteousness Sake, happy are ye: and be not afraid of their Terror, neither be troubled;

15 But sanctify the Lord God in your Hearts: and be ready always to give an Answer to every Man that asketh you a Reason of the Hope that is in you, with Meekness and Fear:

16 Having a good Conscience; that whereas they speak

(b) *Fear not their Terror.*] Mr. Jos. Mede understands it, as if he had said, Fear not the Jew, nor the Gentile; but sanctify, reverence and worship the one living God. Diatr. on Luk. xi. 2. But I think the Interpretation given in the Paraphrase, is much more natural.

(c) *That*

Speak Evil of you, as of Evil-Doers, they may be ashamed that falsely accuse your good Conversation in Christ.

fence of that System of Religion which Sect. 6. gives to such a Conscience so mighty and stable a Support; *that wherein they, who bitterly oppose your Religion, speak against you as Evil-Doers, and lay to your Charge Crimes of the most detestable Nature, they may be ashamed (c);* they, I say, *who revile your good, inoffensive, and useful Conversation in the Profession of that Religion, which brings you into such an intimate Relation to Christ.* For [it is] certainly 17

1 Pet. III. 16.

17 For it is better, if the Will of God be so, that ye suffer for well-doing, than for evil-doing.

*better to suffer, (if it be the Will of God, that you should suffer,) for doing Good, than for doing Evil;* the Testimony of a good Conscience, and the Sense of the divine Favour, affording the noblest Supports in the former Case; whereas in the latter, the severest Torments that can be endured, are those which the guilty Mind inflicts upon itself: To which we may add, that while we suffer for the Truth, we have the Pleasure of reflecting, that we follow our blessed Redeemer; and this is another most powerful Source of Consolation, of which I shall presently have Occasion to discourse more particularly and largely.

I M P R O V E M E N T.

HOW very astonishing, and lamentable is it, that when the Way to Happiness is so plainly delineated, so few should find it! *What Man is there, who does not desire Life, and love many Days, in which he may see good? Yet how few Tongues are kept from Evil, how few Lips from speaking Guile! How few decline from Evil, and do Good! How few seek Peace, and pursue it!* On the contrary, how much low Cunning and Artifice, and what Discords

Ver. 10.  
Ver. 11.

(c) *That wherein they speak against you, they may be ashamed.*] I think this remarkably illustrated by the Strain of that Epistle of Pliny, in which he gives an Account of his own Conduct, in persecuting the Christians, by which it plainly appears that he was ashamed of what the Laws required, when he considered how inoffensive their Behaviour was.

Sect. 6. cords and Contentions reign among Mankind! And they often issue in those *Bloody Wars and Fightings*, which arise from *those Lusts that war in our Members*. How detestable, and how miserable, do these perverse and ungovernable Passions render us! How sadly do they prevent the *Ascent* of our *Prayers* to God, and the *Descent* of his *Mercies* upon us! Mercies, which he is ever ready to impart to those, who are meet and disposed to receive them.

There is, notwithstanding, a *little Remnant*, who are *righteous before him*; and to them his *gracious Eye* is continually directed for their *Good*: To their *Cry*, yea, to the soft *Whispers* of their *Supplications*, *his Ears are ever open*. Honoured and happy above all the Children of Men are they who have the Favour, and the Attention of the great Sovereign of the Universe. Who *will be able to hurt or injure them*, should they have Malignity enough to *wish and attempt* it? — And as this *Loving-Kindness* of the Lord is thus productive of *Security and Happiness* to his People, let it engage us to be *Followers and Imitators of him*, who is supremely good. We may then face all the *Menaces* of a frowning World with an *holy Intrepidity*, and *sanctifying the Lord God in our Hearts*, making him our *Fear and our Dread*, we need not have any terrible *Apprehensions* of what Men or Devils can do unto us. Yea, we shall in that Case, not only have nothing to *fear*, but every Thing to *hope*, which can conduce to our real and everlasting *Felicity*. Encouraged by these important Considerations, let it be our Care, in the *Fear of God*, to study and endeavour clearly to understand the *Foundation* of our Religion, and of our glorious *Hopes*, that we may be able to *defend* it against every *Attack*, however formidable, and to *give an Account of our Hope* to all who shall demand it, in sweet *Harmony and Complacency* of Soul, undisturbed with the *Disquietude*, and untainted with the *Example*, of those who *render Evil for Evil*, and *Railing for Railing*. On the contrary, let us greatly triumph over all *Ill-usage*, by repaying it with *Good*; and may a *Sense* of that important *Blessing*, which by the Gospel we are *called to inherit*, diffuse that *Pleasure and Happiness* through our whole Souls, which may carry them above the *Repentment* of the little *Injuries* we receive from the *Unkindness of Men*, and dispose us to every genuine *Expression* of that unlimited *Benevolence*, which should fill and expand the *Hearts* of those who are thus feasted with the *divinest Hopes and Consolations*.

S E C T.



S E C T. VII.

*The Apostle Peter urges on the Christian Converts the Atonement, Resurrection and Exaltation of their divine Saviour, the Obligation of their Baptismal Covenant, and the awful Solemnity of the last Judgment, to engage them to a Life of Christian Mortification and Holiness, whatever Opposition they might be called to encounter. I Pet. III. 18,—IV. 6.*

I PETER III. 18.

FOR Christ also hath once suffered for Sins, the just for the unjust (that he might bring us to God) being put to Death in the Flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:

I PETER III. 18.

I Have already observed, that, if it be the Will of God you should suffer, it is better it should be for doing well than for doing evil; and it is very evidently so, because hereby we are made conformable to Christ our Head and Leader, whom it cannot but be our Glory and Happiness to resemble; for he also once suffered for Sins (a); he, who was eminently and perfectly the just, suffered for the unjust, for our Benefit, and in our stead, that he might introduce us to God, and fix us in a State of Acceptance and favourable Intercourse with him; being indeed put to Death in the Flesh, by those Enemies, whom God permitted for a while to triumph over him; but quickened by the Spirit of God (b), which soon re-animated his Body and raised it to an immortal Life: Even that Spirit by the Inspiration of which granted to his faithful Servant Noah, going forth,

Sect. 7.

I Pet. III. 18.

19. By which also he went

19.

(a) *Because Christ also once suffered, &c.*] The following Section, though it seems a kind of Digression occasioned by the Apostle's mentioning the Name of his blessed Master, yet is in the main properly connected with his Purpose of animating them under their Sufferings.

(b) *Quickened by the Spirit.*] Dr. More renders it, *remaining alive in the Spirit*, and urges it as an Argument against the Sleep of the Soul. *More's Theol. Works*, pag. 17.

(c) *The*

- Sect. 7. *forth*, as it were, in that Progress in which he employed him, *he preached to those notorious Sinners*, who for their Disobedience have since experienced the just Severity of *the divine Vengeance*, and are now in the Condition of separate *Spirits* reserved as it were *in Prison (c)*, to the severer Judgment at the great Day.
- 20 I speak of those, *who were long since disobedient, when once the abused and insulted long Suffering of a compassionate God waited upon them, in the Days of the Patriarch Noah*, during the Succession of one hundred and twenty Years, *while the Ark was preparing; in which few, that is, eight Souls*, of Noah and his Wife, his three Sons and their Wives, *were carried safely through the Water (d)*, in which the
- 21 Residue of Mankind perished. *The Antitype to which (e)*, (or that which corresponds to, and was figured by it, that is, by the Preservation of Noah's Family in the Ark,) *does now save us*, or is the Instrument of our Safety and Preservation, as the Ark was of theirs; [*I mean*] *Baptism*, whereby we are received into the Christian Church and

went and preached unto the Spirits in Prison;

20 Which sometime were disobedient, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the Days of Noah, while the Ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight Souls, were saved by Water.

21 The like Figure, whereunto even Baptism, doth

(c) *The Spirits in Prison*] Hardly any Text has been more differently interpreted, than this. Some understand it of *Souls*, who were in some *lower Place* in Paradise, εν φυλακῇ, or in a *Watch-Tower*, where they were waiting the Redeemers Coming: Others of those *in Hell*, whom he delivered, to grace his Triumph. See *Dr. More's Theolog. Works*, p. 18. *Bishop Pearson on the Creed*, p. 228. *Lord Barrington* understands it of *Noah's preaching to his own Family*, shut up with him in the *Ark*; while *Dr. Whitby* and *Burnet* understand it of those who were in the *Darkness of Heathen Ignorance*. *Burnet's four Disc.* p. 68, 69. *Comp. Limborch's Theol.* 3. xiii. 27,—28. Upon the whole I think the Sense given in the *Paraphrase*, is most easy; and next to that, know none more probable than that of *Mr. Cradock*, who explains it of *Christ's preaching*, while he was on Earth, to those who were now *Spirits in Prison*; which might engage them to a holy Caution, lest they also should trifle with the means of Salvation which they enjoyed, and perish as the former did. Compare *Matt. v. 25. Rev. xx. 7.*

(d) *Carried safely through the Water: δι' ὕδατος.*] *Raphelius* abundantly justifies this Sense of the Particle *διὰ*, when used with a *Genitive Case*. See *Annot. ex Xenoph. in loc.*

(e) *The Antitype to which.*] That is, the Thing which corresponds, not with the *Water* but with the *Ark*.

(f) *Baptism,*

doth also now save us (not the putting away of the Filth of the Flesh, but the Answer of a good Conscience towards God) by the Resurrection of Jesus Christ:

and numbered amongst the Heirs of Salvation: But then it is to be remembered, that it is *not* merely *the putting away the Pollution of the Flesh* by the use of material Water; for that would be very insignificant; *but the Answer of a good Conscience (e)*, the Reply that it makes when interrogated *in the Presence of God*, and spoken in such a Language, as he only is capable of hearing and understanding; and when this likewise is found, then we attain Salvation, by that great Event in which at Baptism, we declare ourselves Believers; I mean, *the Resurrection of our Lord Jesus Christ* from the dead; *Who is now set down at the right Hand of God, being gone into Heaven (f)*, there to take Possession of the Glory prepared for him, where he reigns supreme over all Worlds, all the *Angels and Authorities, and Powers*, which are there enthroned, *being made subject to him*, and humbly bowing before his superior Dignity and Authority.

Sect. 7.  
1 Pet. II. 2.

22 Who is gone into Heaven, and is on the right Hand of God, Angels, and Authorities, and Powers being made subject unto him.

*Who is now set down at the right Hand of God, being gone into Heaven (f)*, there to take Possession of the Glory prepared for him, where he reigns supreme over all Worlds, all the *Angels and Authorities, and Powers*, which are there enthroned, *being made subject to him*, and humbly bowing before his superior Dignity and Authority.

IV. 1 Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us

*As Christ therefore has suffered for us in the Flesh* such extreme and amazing Sufferings

Chap. IV. 1.

(e) *Baptism, not the putting away the Pollution of the Flesh, but the Answer of a good Conscience.*] It is well known the *Jews* laid a great Stress upon their *Lustrations*. The *Apostle* therefore very properly cautions them against such foolish *Dependances*. A courageous Readiness in the Performance of their whole Duty, and even in suffering *Persecution* for the sake of Truth, was absolutely necessary, in order to maintain that *good Conscience*, to which in their *Baptism* they professed such a Regard, and to the Exercise of which they so solemnly engaged themselves. — *Arch-bishop Leighton* has observed on this Place, that the Word *επερωτημα* here used, is a *judicial Word*, and signifies *Interrogations* used in the Law for a Trial, or executing a Process. Which is much preferable to the Translation *Dr. Barrow* gives us, namely, *the free and sincere Stipulation*. *Barrow's Works, Vol. i. pag. 355.* — It is a *credible Fact*, supported by *Cyprian*, and other *ancient Writers*, that the *Catechumen* had certain *Interrogations* put to him at *Baptism*, concerning his Faith in *Christ*, and his Renunciation of *Satan*, and all the Works of *Darkness*, and the Vanity of the *World*; and it is very probable, the *Apostle* may refer to that *Custom*.

(f) *Being gone into Heaven, &c.*] When the *Apostle* speaks of the Resurrection and Glory of *Christ*, he means not only to represent him as the Object of our Confidence; but to intimate, that if we imitate him in his courageous *Fidelity*, we may hope to partake with him in his *Glory*.

Sect. 7.  
1 Pet. IV. 1.

ings as are not to be described, and even when their Weight lay heaviest upon him, even in the Agony of Death, persisted in his generous Design to accomplish all that was needful for our Redemption and Salvation; I beseech you, *arm yourselves likewise with the same Fortitude and Resolution of Mind* in his Cause, whatever Extremities you may be called out to endure. And let this engage you, on the like Principles, to mortify all your irregular Desires, and to die to Sin; *for he who hath*, in Conformity to our Lord Jesus Christ, *suffered this Crucifixion in the Flesh* of which I now speak; he *has ceased from the habitual Practice of all Sin whatsoever (g)*, and considers himself as absolutely and finally dead to it, *so as never to return to it any more*, And *no longer to live [his] remaining Time in the Flesh*, whether it be shorter or longer, *according to the Lusts of Men*, those Lusts by which they are too frequently and generally governed; *but according to the Will of God*, in a holy Conformity and Obedience to the divine Precepts, how contrary so-ever they are to his own carnal and sensual Inclinations, or to his worldly Interests. For surely *the Time of Life that is past*, [may] appear to [be] *sufficient*, and more than sufficient for us, to have forgotten the great End for which Life was given, and *to have wrought the Will of the Gentiles*; following those Pleasures and Pursuits to which the Heathens that know not God are addicted; *when ye walked in all the variety of Lasciviousness, inordinate*

- 2
- 3

us in the Flesh, arm yourselves likewise with the same Mind: For he that hath suffered in the Flesh, hath ceased from Sin;

2 That he no longer should live the rest of his Time in the Flesh, to the Lusts of Men, but to the Will of God.

3 For the Time past of our Life may suffice us to have wrought the Will of the Gentiles, when we walked in Lasciviousness, Lusts,

(g) *He who hath suffered in the Flesh hath ceased from Sin, &c.*] It is plain, that *suffering in the Flesh*, cannot signify *suffering Death*; because the Apostle in the very next Verse mentions the *remaining Part of Life* as not to be spent in the Lusts of the Flesh. The Sense, to be sure, is something *obscure*; and I have sometimes doubted whether it may not intimate, that the Consciousness of having endured *suffering for Christ* greatly confirms our Motives to *Obedience*.

(h) *Unlawful*

Lusts, Excess of Wines, Revellings, Banquetings, and abominable Idolatries:

4 Wherein they think it strange that you run not with them to the same Excess of Riot, speaking Evil of you:

5 Who shall give Account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.

6 For, for this Cause was the Gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might be judged according to Men in the Flesh

*inordinate Desires, excess of Wine, Banqueting, Drunkenness, and unlawful detestable Idolatries (b):*

*In Respect to which abominable Course of Life, they who were once your Partners in such Enormities, now think it strange (i) that you run not with them, as ye once did, into the same Profusion of the most profligate Riot (k): Speaking Evil [of you], wretched Creatures as they are,*

*Who though forgetful of the true Honour and Happiness of the human Nature, shall nevertheless give an Account of all this Disorder and Abuse, to him who is ready in a little Time to appear, that he may judge the Living and the Dead:*

*For it was to this Purpose that the Gospel was preached also to the dissolute Gentiles, who might truly be said to be dead in Trespases and Sins, that they might be judged according to Men in the Flesh (l); that they might*

Sect. 7.

I Pet. IV. 4.

5

6

(b) *Unlawful Idolatries.*] Considering how very averse the Jews were in the Apostles Times to Idolatry, I cannot think in this Passage he hath a Respect to them, and therefore I look upon this as one Argument among many, which might be urged, to prove that this Epistle was written to Gentile, as well as Jewish, Christians.

(i) *Think it strange: ξενίζονται.*] *Raphelius, (Annot. ex Polyb. in loc.)* and others, have observed that the original Word is very emphatical, and expresses a perfect Amazement and Consternation of Mind. The same Word is used below, at the 12th Verse.

(k) *Profusion of Riot.*] This is a very literal Translation of *Arch-bishop Leighton.*

(l) *That they might be judged, &c.*] This Interpretation, which is preferred by *Brennius* and *Dr. Whitby*, appeared to me, on a full Examination, most probable; though the Text must be confessed to be extremely difficult. Some have thought the Apostle refers to those who then suffered Martyrdom for Christianity; as if he had said, "It was Gospel indeed, good Tidings, even to those who died for it; for though Men condemned their Bodies, yet the Salvation of their Souls, which is of infinitely greater Importance, has been secured by it." *Dr. Whitby* renders the latter Clause, "That they might condemn their former Life, and live a better." But this does not preserve the Force of *κρίνωσι*, nor the Opposition between *κατ' ανθρώπου* and *κατά Θεου*. *Sir N. Knatchbull* supposes *οι* to be understood before *κατά*, and renders it, "That they who are according to Men in the Flesh, that is, live a sensual Life, may be condemned; and they who live according to God in the Spirit, (that is, a holy Life) may live." No Interpretation seems more singular than that of *Mr. Saurin*; who seems to consider it as referring to *Chap. iii. 19.* and understands it of the Sinners of the old World, and founds upon this Text some Hopes of the Salvation of some of them; as if the Meaning were, God sent his Message to them with a kind Design,

K k 2

Sect. 7. might be brought to such a State of Life, Flesh, but live according to  
God in the Spirit.  
 as their carnal Neighbours will look upon  
 1 Pet. III. 6. *as a kind of Condemnation and Death; but  
 might live according to God in the Spirit,*  
 might be brought to a truly spiritual and  
 divine Life: And if when Men hear of the  
 Gospel, they will not receive and improve  
 it for this important Purpose, they must ex-  
 pect to render to God an impartial and se-  
 vere Account for their Abuse of it, and  
 must stand by all the terrible Consequences  
 of their Folly.

### I M P R O V E M E N T.

Chap. III. **L**ET our devoutest Meditations frequently dwell on the Bene-  
 fits we receive by *the Death of Christ*, and the wonderful  
 Ver. 18. manner in which they are conveyed. The important *End*, for  
 which *he suffered, the just for the unjust*, was, *to introduce us* into the  
 Presence and Favour of *God*: Let us rejoice, that we are brought  
*nigh* to the infinite Majesty of Heaven, the indefectible Source of  
 Perfection and Blessedness; and always live as in a State of *Near-*  
*ness and Intimacy* with *him*; dreading the most distant Approach  
 to that *Disobedience* to the heavenly Message, which even after  
 Ver. 20. *the Patience of God waited on them*, proved fatal to the sinful  
*Inhabitants of the old World*. That Patience indeed waits upon  
*us*; but as *their Time* was limited, so is *ours*. — For ever  
 blessed be the Father of Mercies, that by *Christ* he hath made  
 Provision for our Salvation, as he did of old, for *Noah* and his  
 Family, by commanding him to prepare an *Ark*. But then let us  
 remember, *the Baptism that saves*, is not *the putting away the Filth*  
 Ver. 21. *of the Flesh*, but *the Answer of a good Conscience towards God*. If we  
 Ver. 22. have this inward Witness, let the *Resurrection of Christ*, and his  
*Exaltation* to supreme Glory *at the right Hand of the Father*, en-  
 courage our sublimest Hopes; and let us triumph in him as our all-  
 sufficient

that though their Bodies perished, their Souls might be saved; and he fancies that  
 for this Reason the Flood came gradually upon them. *Saur. Disc. Vol. i. pag. 112.*  
 If that Interpretation be preferred, which refers it to those *actually dead*, it will be,  
 (as *Mr. Baxter* observes) a Proof of the *Existence* of Spirits in a *separate State*.  
 The chief Objection against the Sense I have chosen, is, that it changes the Signifi-  
 cation of the Word *Dead* so soon.

sufficient Saviour, who, though he were once crucified, now sits on the Throne of his Glory, *Principalities and Powers being made subject to him.* Sect. 4.

Let the Recollection of his bitter *Sufferings* excite our *Zeal* and *Courage* in his sacred Cause, and *arm us* with a Conformity of Sentiments and Resolutions to his own; that we may *cease from Sin*; that we may spend the *Residue of our Lives*, not in following the *Lusts of the Flesh*, but in fulfilling, in all Respects, the *Will of our God*. Let us often reflect, that, perhaps, we were *long* insensible of his sacred Authority, and in many Instances were the Sport of irregular *Appetites* and *Passions*: Let the *past Part of our Lives suffice*, and be deemed *more than sufficient*, to be spent in this inglorious and detestable Slavery. By *Mortification* let us assert our *Liberty*. And though others wonder at our Abstinence, Severity and Self-denial, let us not envy that *Excess of Riot*, into which with unbridled Eagerness, they allow themselves *to run*. But seriously considering the *awful Account* they must render, (though alas! so ill prepared for it) *to the great Judge of the quick and dead*, let us readily choose, and cheerfully submit to the severest *Mortification* which God may require of us. Let us rather embrace a *Life* which *Infidels* would esteem *Death*, than expose our immortal Souls to the Judgment of God, to *his* Condemnation, from which there lies no *Appeal*, and which will consign over impenitent Sinners to an *Execution* infinitely dreadful, beyond their utmost Fears and Apprehensions.

Chap. IV. 1.

Ver. 2.

Ver. 3.

Ver. 4.

Ver. 5.

Ver. 6.

S E C T.

## S E C T. VIII.

*The Apostle exhorts the Christian Converts to Watchfulness, and to Fidelity, that they might rightly improve their several Talents, and discharge the Duties of their respective Stations in the Church; and to Courage and Fortitude amidst their Discouragements and Persecutions; and by way of Inference from the Trials to which good Men were exposed, he observes that a tremendous inevitable Destruction will overwhelm the impenitent and unbelieving. 1 Pet. IV. 7,—19.*

I P E T E R IV. 7,—19.

Se<sup>c</sup>t. 8. **H**OW strongly are vain and sinful Men attached to the Amusements and Interests of this mortal Life, and to the Gratification of their Lusts! *But the important End of all Things is at Hand (a)*, when this earthly Globe, and all Things which are therein, shall be burnt up, when the eternal State of all its Inhabitants shall be determined, and immutable Happiness, or Misery, shall be their final Portion. *Be sober therefore, and watch* against all Occasions of Intemperance, and of Impurity, and endeavour to preserve your Souls in so divine a Posture, as that you may be habitually qualified for joining in Prayer and those other Exercises of Devotion, which have such an Influence on our whole Conduct.

1 Pet. IV. 7.

I P E T E R IV. 7.

**B**UT the End of all Things is at Hand: Be ye therefore sober, and watch unto Prayer.

(a) *The End of all Things, &c.*] I cannot think, this signifies the Destruction of Jerusalem; an Event, in which most of those to whom the Apostle wrote, were comparatively but little concerned. It must undoubtedly signify either Death, which may be considered as the End of the whole World to every particular Person; or the Consummation of all Things, which may be said to be at Hand, in the Sense in which our Lord, long after the Destruction of Jerusalem, says to the Church, “*Behold I come quickly.*” Rev. xxii. 7, 20.

(b) *Love*



8 And above all Things have fervent Charity among yourselves : For Charity shall cover the Multitude of Sins.

duct.

*And above all Things be careful* Sect. 8.

to remember the distinguishing Badge of your Religion, having and maintaining fervent Love towards one another ; which as it will be very comfortable and honourable to yourselves, will be very pleasing and acceptable to God ; for on the whole, as the wise Man assures us, *Love will cover a Multitude of Sins (b)* ; it will cause us to excuse them in others, and it will entitle us thro' divine Mercy to the Expectation of Forgiveness for numberless Slips and Failings. *Be hospitable to each other, without grudging the Expence which may attend the Exercise of a Virtue which in present Circumstances is so important and necessary. As every one has received the free Gift of God, exercise it towards each other, as becomes those who know they are not themselves Proprietors, but merely Stewards, of what they possess, and who desire to approve themselves good Stewards of the manifold Grace of God, with which they have the Honour to be intrusted. If any one speak in public Assemblies, discoursing on the great Topicks of the Gospel, [let him handle the Subject] with Seriousness and Reverence, and as becomes one who knows that sublime Dispensation contains no Discoveries of Doctrine*

1 Pet. IV. 8.

9 Use Hospitality one to another without grudging.

10 As every Man hath received the Gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good Stewards of the manifold Grace of God.

11 If any Man speak, let him speak as the Oracles of God ; if any Man minister, let him do it as of the Ability which

which

(b) *Love will cover a Multitude of Sins.*] This is agreeable to the Interpretation given of the parallel Text, *Jam. v. ult.* For the further Illustration of it compare *Ecclus. iii. 20. Psal. xviii. 25. Prov. x. 12. Dan. iv. 27.* It would be monstrous to imagine, that *Acts of Liberality* to the Poor can procure the *Pardon* of Sin, while Men continue in a Course of *Impenitence* and *Unbelief* ; for by this the whole Gospel would be subverted. But where *Acts of Charity* to the Souls and Bodies of Men, spring from an inward Principle of *Love* to God, and *Faith* in *Christ*, with that humble Regard to his *Atonement* and *Righteousness*, which every true *Christian* will have, it cheerfully encourages our Hopes of finding many *merciful Allowances* from God in our final Account with him, which those who are destitute of this *divine Principle*, in which so much of the *Image of God* consists, must never expect, whatever *Faith* or *Sanctity* they may pretend to. *Comp. Matt. vii. 1, 2. Jam. ii. 13.*

(c) *The*

Sect. 8. trine or Duty but what are indeed *the*  
 Oracles of God. If any one minister in any  
 Office of Kindness to others, and parti-  
 cularly in the Work of a Deacon, [let it  
 be] according to the utmost Ability which  
 God supplies; that God may in all Things be  
 glorified by Jesus Christ, who has called us  
 to his Service, and to the Hope of enjoy-  
 ing him for ever; to whom, as our great  
 Redeemer and Saviour, be Glory and Do-  
 minion ascribed for ever and ever; Amen.

1 Pet. IV. II.

- 12 And now, my beloved Brethren, let me seriously caution you, that you be not surprised at the fiery Trial (c), at the dreadful Series of furious and bitter Persecutions which is to try you, as if some strange and unexampled Thing, beyond all reasonable Expectation, had befallen you: But rather rejoice in these Trials, as being therein Partakers in the Sufferings of Christ, the Memory of which should ever be dear and precious to you; that when his final Glory shall be revealed (d), ye in the Participation of it, may be even transported with Joy far beyond what can now be described, or conceived. In the mean Time, while you are in this present World, and obnoxious to Persecutions and Injuries, if you are reproached for the Name of Christ, [ye are] happy, and ought to reckon yourselves so; because
- 13
- 14

which God giveth: That God in all Things may be glorified through Jesus Christ; to whom be Praise and Dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12 Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery Trial, which is to try you, as though some strange Thing happened unto you:

13 But rejoice, in as much as ye are Partakers of Christs Sufferings; that when his Glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding Joy.

14 If ye be reproached for the Name of Christ, happy

(c) *The fiery Trial: πυρωσις.*] This is a *Metaphor*, borrowed from *chymical* Operations, and very emphatically expresses the Nature of those Trials, in the Furnace of Affliction, which were intended to refine their Graces, and separate all the Dross and Allay from the pure Gold.

(d) *When his Glory shall be revealed.*] There is no Occasion with *Mr. Fleming* to interpret this of the Glory of the *Schekinah*, appearing at the *Millennium*, to excite the exceeding Joy of the Saints after the *first Resurrection*. *Flem. Christol. Vol. iii. pag. 868.* It probably refers to the great and glorious Day of Christ's second Appearance, which is so often spoken of as the grand *Jubilæe* of *Christians*, though not inconsistent with *great Joy* to be received by the Spirit of every good Man, immediately on its Entrance into the *intermediate* State.

(d) Spirit

happy are ye ; for the Spirit of Glory, and of God resteth upon you: On their Part he is evil spoken of, but on your Part he is glorified.

because the Spirit of Glory and of God resteth upon you (d) ; which will support you under it, and spread a Lustre around you ; and [though] he, in whose Cause ye suffer so unjustly, is blasphemed on their Part, yet on yours, he is glorified ; it shews the Excellence and sublime Spirit of true Religion, that it can support you under the opprobrious and cruel Treatment which you endure, for adhering to it, and defending it.

Sec̄t. 8.  
1 Pet. IV. 14.

15 But let none of you suffer as a Murderer, or as a Thief, or as an Evil-Doer, or as a Busy-Body in other Mens Matters.

But let not any of you, who have the Honour to bear the Christian Name, by any means suffer as a Murderer, or a Thief, or a Malefactor of any other Kind, or even as over-busy and assuming in the Affairs of others (e), aspiring to direct, over-rule and determine them in a manner not suiting your Station in Life ; in Consequence of which you may bring any Degree of Ill-Will upon yourselves.

15

16 Yet if any Man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed ; but let him glorify God on this Behalf.

But if it please Providence to appoint, that [any of you] should [suffer] as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, though the Punishment, like that inflicted upon his divine Master himself, should be ever so infamous ; but rather let him glorify God in this Respect, despising the

16

(d) Spirit of Glory and of God, &c.] The *Veslesian* Reading is, “ The Spirit of Honour, and of Glory, and divine Power, even the Spirit of God, rests upon you.” But I take the Meaning to be in general, you shall have the Spirit of God in a very glorious manner to support you in Proportion to the Trials you are called out to : And this will spread a Glory around you, even though you may be treated in the most infamous manner, as the vilest of Malefactors, which we know many of the Primitive Christians were.

(e) As over-busy in the Affairs of others.] *Αλλοτριεπισκοπος*, says the learned *Dr. Lardner*; cannot here signify merely a prying into the Concerns of private Families ; which could not be ranked with such Crimes as are here mentioned, nor expose a Man to the Punishment of the civil Magistrate : But it may signify a Man that affects to inspect or direct the Affairs of others, perhaps that aspires to publick Authority ; a Temper which appeared much amongst the Jews, particularly at Alexandria, and Cæsarea, and which would naturally give great Offence to the Romans, and make them very dangerous Enemies. If therefore any Thing of this kind might appear among Christians, it would be of particular bad Consequence in those Times. *Lardn. Cred. Vol. i. pag. 426.* I have paraphrased the Words so as to suggest this, yet so as to take in the most that could be imagined to be intended.

Sect. 8. the Shame, as well as resolutely enduring the Agony, that may attend it ; *Because*  
 1 Pet. IV. 17. *the Time [is coming], and just at Hand, when Judgment is to begin at the House of God (f) ; for he hath determined to exercise his own People with very severe Trials, giving them up for a while to the Malice of their Enemies ; that by this means their Characters may be approved, and those who are Hypocrites, may be separated from those who are sincere in their Christian Profession ; and if [it begin] first with us, what [shall be] the End of those, who are obstinately and presumptuously disobedient to the Gospel of God, and who not only reject it, but persecute its Professors, and endeavour to root it out of the World ?*

18 *And if the Righteous himself be saved with Difficulty (g), how miserable must the ungodly and the Sinner be ? where shall he appear in the Day of*

17 For the Time is come that Judgment must begin at the House of God : And if it first begin at us, what shall the End be of them that obey not the Gospel of God ;

18 And if the Righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the Ungodly and the Sinner appear ?

(f) *Time is coming when Judgment is to begin at the House of God.]* As if he had said, “ Don't think this a matter of unconcerning Speculation. No, the Time fore-told by *Christ* (*John* xvi. 2. &c.) is coming.” I doubt not there is an Allusion to that Passage in *Ezek.* ix. 6. where it is said the Slaughter to be made was to begin at the Sanctuary ; but this cannot be interpreted as of the Temple at Jerusalem, because it answers to *beginning with us*, that is, *Christians*, immediately after. So that *Grotius's* Criticism upon the Word *ἑλκος*, in the latter Clause of this Verse, as answering to *כלה*, *Dan.* ix. 27. and to *ἑλκος* in *Matt.* xxiv. 6. seems quite foreign to the Purpose.

(g) *If the Righteous be saved with Difficulty.]* The *Apostle* seems to quote *Prov.* xi. 31. according to the *Seventy*, which in *Sense*, though not exactly in *Words*, agrees with the *Hebrew*. He cannot intend Deliverance from the *Roman Invasion*, in which so very few of those *Christians* were concerned ; nor merely Deliverance from any of their *Persecutors*, because he takes it for granted, that in this *Sense* the *Righteous would be saved*, though *with Difficulty* ; whereas Multitudes fell by *Persecution*, even of these *Christians* in *Bithynia*, as appears by *Pliny's Letter*. It is necessary therefore to understand it more generally, of the *Difficulty* with which good Men get to Heaven, thro' this dangerous and ensnaring World. Compare *Acts* xiv. 18. xxvii. 7, 8, 16. where *μολις* signifies *with Difficulty* ; in which *Sense* it is also used by *Philo.* (See *Wolfii Curæ Philolog.* Vol. v. pag. 161.) — The Turn of the latter Clause of the Verse in the *Original*, which I have endeavoured to preserve, is *very lively* ; it seems as if the *Apostle* were solicitous to lead the *Sinner* to consider, where he should hide his Head ; since where-ever he was, he would find God immediately appearing against him as an irresistible Enemy. This he might say by Way of Warning to *Persecutors*, and to encourage *Christians* to hope that God would vindicate their Cause, and preserve them from turning aside to crooked Paths. And this the *Connection* with the following Verse favours.

of divine Vengeance, when all Nature shall be, as it were, armed with Terror by the God of Nature, for his Destruction; and when all impious Transgressors shall be brought forth in his awful Presence, that his just, though dreadful Sentence of Condemnation, may be executed in its Rigour? *Therefore let them also, who now suffer this temporary Punishment, which according to the Will of God so permitting, their Enemies have at present a Power of inflicting; acknowledge the Providence of God in this mysterious Event, and commit their Souls [to him], as to a faithful Creator, in well doing; assured that while they continue to act as under a Sense of his Presence, and endeavour to approve themselves to him, he will regard them as his Creatures, and even his Children, and will render their immortal Interests secure, whatever Injuries of a temporal Nature he may suffer them to sustain.*

Sect: 8.  
1 Pet: IV. 18.

19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the Will of God, commit the keeping of their Souls to him in well-doing as unto a faithful Creator.

19

I M P R O V E M E N T.

LET us continually bear in Mind the approaching *End of all Things*; and then we shall neither omit the Exercises of Devotion, nor grow supine and careless in the Discharge of them. Then shall we be engaged, through a Sense of our Need of the divine *Clemency and Indulgence*, to exercise *Forbearance and Candour*, and maintain the most *fervent Charity* to all without Distinction; and we shall then be more disposed to consider ourselves as *Stewards*, and as such, be concerned to behave with all *good Fidelity*, both in the Use and Enjoyment of our *Possessions*, and in the Exercise of those Gifts and Endowments with which God hath been pleased to intrust us. To this *they* should especially attend, who are called to *speak in Gods Name*; they should consider, that his *Oracles are committed to them*; and though they cannot pretend, that the Instructions they deliver from thence, are revealed to and impressed upon their Minds by *immediate Inspiration*, yet a Reflection on the general Nature of the glorious Gospel, and on its important

Ver. 7.  
Ver. 8.  
Ver. 10.  
Ver. 11.

Se<sup>c</sup>t. 8. and everlasting Consequences, may well dispose and form them to a humble Awe and Reverence in their Manner of handling and dispensing it; and may remind them that on the whole, in every Ministrations of the Word of Life, in every Distribution of Charity, and Office of Kindness, the main End to be pursued is, *That God may be glorified.*

- Ver. 12. If, in the Cause of *Christ*, Providence should call us out to encounter the severest Persecutions, and even *fiery Trials*, let us not be astonished, as if some *strange Thing* had happened to us; let us not be discouraged, nor think ourselves hardly dealt with in such divine Appointments; remembering, that, in this Case, we are only
- Ver. 13. *Partakers in the Sufferings of Christ*, that we only tread in the same rough and thorny Path in which he walked before us, and that in due Time, if we continue faithful to him, we shall also be made *Partakers of his Glory*. In the mean while, *the Spirit of God, and*
- Ver. 14. *of Glory will rest upon us*; only let us be jealous of his Honour with
- Ver. 15, 16. *a godly Jealousy*, and be greatly concerned, that our *Sins and Indiscretions* may not throw a Blemish on a *Profession*, which derives its Appellation from him. Glorious are the Priviledges indeed which belong to the Disciples of *Christ*; but they, notwithstanding, draw very awful Consequences after them. For *Judgment begins at the House of God*, and even his dearest Children are exercised with Trials of their Fidelity and Patience. Let us prepare for them before they come, that when they do come, we may bear them honourably, *committing the keeping of our Souls to him, as to a faithful Creator, in well-doing*. But let the wicked and the *ungodly meditate Terror*; for the Vengeance of God will find them out; *the great Day of Wrath will come; and who can be able to stand?* May divine Grace reclaim those who are now exposed to so terrible a Condemnation; lest they know by Experience, what no Words can describe, no Thought conceive, *The End of those who obey not the Gospel of God.*

S E C T.

S E C T. IX.

The Apostle concludes this Epistle with particular Cautions to Ministers, and private Christians; urging on the former, Humility, Diligence and Watchfulness; and exhorting the latter to a steadfast and faithful Discharge of their several Duties, animated by this Consideration that the God of all Grace, had called them to his eternal Glory, and would, after they had suffered a-while, make them perfect, according to his earnest Prayer for them. 1 Pet. V. 1, to the End.

1 PETER V. 1.

THE Elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an Elder and a Witness of the Sufferings of Christ, and also a Partaker of the Glory that shall be revealed:

1 PETER V. 1.

I Would now in the most affectionate manner address myself to those who are <sup>Sect. 9.</sup> *the Elders, among you,* or any other Christian Societies, into whose Hands this Epistle may come; and I would exhort them with the greater Warmth and Freedom, [as I also am] an Elder with them, and an Eye-Witness of the Sufferings of Christ, and as I also hope, through divine Grace, that I shall be a Partaker of the Glory which shall hereafter be revealed, when he shall appear the second Time, in Circumstances so different from those in which we have seen and conversed with him on Earth. By <sup>2</sup> all the Engagements of Love and Duty to him, and by all the Regard you owe to your own Honour and Happiness in that important Day, let me beseech you to *feed the Flock of God that is among you,* the Churches of Christ which you are called to preside over; *discharge the episcopal Office (a)* with that

1 Pet. V. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Feed the Flock of God which is among you, taking the Oversight thereof, not

(a) Discharge the Episcopal Office.] This Idea is so plainly suggested by the Word *παιδοποιέω*, that I thought it Matter of Duty to translate it as I have done; that every

Sect. 9. that due Inspection which its very Name imports; *not by Constraint (b)*, as if it were  
 1 Pet. V. 2. an ungrateful Burden, *but willingly and cheerfully; not for the sake of dishonourable Gain (c)*, but of a ready Mind, and because you love the Flock, and really desire its Edification and Welfare: *Not assuming to yourselves Dominion over those who fall to your Lot (d)*; but being humble, and behaving towards them with such gentle tender Solicitude for their Souls, and such an entire Freedom from the very Appearance either of Avarice or Ambition, that your *Examples* may be rendered worthy the Imitation of the Flock, and your Conduct as instructive

not by Constraint, but willingly; not for filthy Lucre, but of a ready Mind;

3 Neither as being Lords over Gods Heritage, but being Ensamples to the Flock.

every Reader might observe, what all candid People seem to confess, that those who are stiled *Bishops*, from their having the *Over-sight* of others, and also *Presbyters* or *Elders*, are spoken of as the *same* Persons. Compare *Ver. 1.* And I hope the Time will come, when good Men will join their Efforts to remove that very hard Imposition, by which the Ministers of some Churches are obliged in order to their entering into the Ministry, to declare, not only that they are *different Orders*, but that it is evident unto all Men diligently reading holy Scripture, that they are so.

(b) *Not by Constraint.*] It is true, that in the primitive Church some were almost against their Will forced into the Episcopal Office by Dint of Importunity. And one would hope, it was not an affected Modesty with which they declined the Office, especially as it was then attended with no temporal Emoluments, but exposed them to distinguished Labours and Sufferings. It is difficult to see how any could in the strictest Sense be constrained; but perhaps the Apostle saw some good Men too unwilling to accept the Office, when the Churches chose them to it, and when inspired Teachers urged it upon them. And tho' little Gain could have been made of it, and the Temptation to lord it over God's Heritage was not so great, as when Ecclesiastical Persons were invested with civil Power, (in which most of the Honour and Influence of their Ecclesiastical Character, as such, has been generally lost,) yet foreseeing what would happen in the Church, and observing perhaps some Discoveries of such a Temper beginning to prevail, the Caution was exceedingly just, proper and pertinent. Compare *Luke x. 2.* and the Note there.

(c) *Dishonourable Gain.*] See the Note on *1 Tim. iii. 3.*

(d) *Those who fall to your Lot.*] The Word, *God's*, is not in the Original. I think therefore it is with abundant Reason, that the learned *Mr. Boyse* refers this to their not domineering over the particular Congregations, or Bishopricks, which were by Providence committed to their Care; alluding to the Division of Canaan by Lots. *Boyse's Serm. Vol. ii. pag. 413.* An Interpretation much preferable to *Dr. Whitby's*, who explains it of the Possessions of the Church. (Compare *Col. i. 12. Note (k)*) And yet after proposing this Interpretation at large, he admits at the Close of his Note, that what is here stiled κληρος, being in the same Sentence expressed by ποιμνιον, the Flock of God, it seems to establish the common Interpretation. What the learned *Mr. Dodwell* had offered in Support of the Sense *Dr. Whitby* mentions, is particularly considered and refuted by *Wolfius, Curæ Philolog. Vol. v. pag. 163.*

(e) *Mighty*



4 And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a Crown of Glory that fadeth not away.

instructive, as any of your Cautions and Sect. 9. Precepts can be: *And if this be indeed* 1 Pet. V. 4.  
 your Character and Behaviour, you will render up your Account hereafter with Joy; for *when* He, who does you the Honour to acknowledge himself *the chief Shepherd* of the Flock, *shall appear*, to take the final Survey of it, and examine into the Conduct of those to whom he had partly committed it, *you shall* be most magnificently and nobly rewarded, and *receive an unfading Crown of Glory*; a Crown, which shall bloom in immortal Beauty and Vigour, when all the transitory Glories of this World are withered like a fading Flower.

5 Likewise, ye Younger, submit yourselves unto the Elder: Yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with Humility: For God resisteth the Proud, and giveth Grace to the Humble.

But it is proper, that I should *likewise* address some Exhortations to others besides Ministers; and particularly to you, *O ye younger Persons*; and that I should urge you *to be in Subjection to those [who are] more advanced in Age*, and to pay a decent Respect to their hoary Hairs. *Yea let all [of you] be subject to one another*, endeavouring by mutual Condescension to make each other as easy and happy as possible; and for this Purpose *be ye clothed with unfeigned Humility*; for God opposeth himself to the proud, and draws up, all his Terrors, as it were, in Battle-array against him; *but giveth Grace and Favour to the humble Soul.* 6

6 Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty Hand

*yourselfes therefore* with that just Reverence *under the mighty Hand of God (e)*, (under all the Dispensations of divine Providence, even though wicked Men should be made the Instruments of effecting its Purposes,) *that so*

(e) *Mighty Hand of God.*] Perhaps by this Expression, the *Apostle* may intend to remind them, that the *Hand* of a righteous *Providence* was concerned in those Events, which were owing to the Wickedness of Men; so far concerned, as to overrule them, and render them instrumental and subservient to the Accomplishment of his own wise Designs; as is strongly intimated *Isai. x. 5. Psal. xvii. 14.* and in many *parallel* Places.

(f) *Your*

- Sect. 9. *so he may exalt you in due Time*; for in his own most proper and well-chosen Season, he will certainly raise you up, though for the present you may seem to be depressed to the lowest Condition. In the mean while, whatever Uncertainties and Dangers may attend you, endeavour to live as easy as possible; *casting all your anxious Care (f)*, and all those Burthens that might otherwise occasion it, *upon him*; leaving it to his all-wise and all gracious Providence to determine every Event of your Lives; *for he careth for you* in a manner the most effectual; and his tender Care will accomplish infinitely more, than your utmost Anxiety can possibly effect. Turn your Solitude therefore into the right Channel; *be sober* in the Government of your Appetites and Passions, *and watchful (g)* against every Occasion of Mischief from your spiritual Enemies; *for your great and inveterate Adversary the Devil is continually walking about (h)*, like a roaring Lion, or Evening Wolf, prowling round the Fold, *seeking whom he may assault with the greatest Likelihood of Success, and may suddenly devour and swallow up*: Whom therefore, as you regard your Safety and Life, be careful stoutly to *resist, being steadfast in your Adherence to the Christian Faith*, and armed with the most heroic Courage and Resolution
- Hand of God, that he may exalt you in due Time:
- 7 Casting all your Care upon him, for he careth for you.
- 8 Be sober, be vigilant; because your Adversary the Devil, as a roaring Lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour.
- 9 Whom resist steadfast in the Faith, knowing that the

(f) *Your anxious Care.*] So I have rendered *μεριμνῶν*, because that is the proper Signification of it; what does, as it were, *rend and tear* the Mind to Pieces. See *Tillotson's Works, Vol. ii. pag. 629.*

(g) *And watchful.*] *St. Peter* might well give such a *Caution* as this, having himself received such particular and express *Warning* from *Christ* his Master, (*Luke xxii. 31, &c.*) and so shamefully *fallen* immediately after, for want of the *Watchfulness* he here recommends.

(h) *Walking about.*] I chose to express the *περιπατῶν* with this Exactness, that the *Force* of its Signification in this *Similitude* might be observed. The Word *καταπιν* expresses more than *devouring*, even *swallowing up*; and so represents the *insatiable Rage* of the Enemy of our Salvation, with great Advantage.

(i) *Make*

the same Afflictions are accomplished in your Brethren that are in the World.

lution in its Defence. And to this you Sect. 9. should the rather attend, as knowing that I Pet. V. 9. the Trials, with which you are exercised, are not peculiar to you; but that the same Afflictions, which you are called out to encounter, are accomplished in others of your Christian Brethren, who are in the World; and you may reasonably hope the same Grace which is their Support, will be also yours. But may the God who is the

10 But the God of all Grace, who hath called us unto his eternal Glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.

IO great Fountain of all Grace, from whom descendeth every good and every perfect Gift, and who has displayed his Goodness in innumerable important Instances, even He who has called us to the Hope and Enjoyment of his eternal Glory in Christ Jesus; may he grant you his perpetual Presence and enlivening Favour; and when you have suffered for a little while such Trials as his infinite Wisdom shall see fit to appoint, may he make you perfect (i) in every good Disposition; in whatever Improvements you are enabled to make, may he confirm, strengthen and establish [you] upon a firm and unshaken Foundation. To him

11 To him be Glory and Dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

11 therefore, who of all Beings is infinitely most worthy of it, [be] Glory and Dominion ascribed for ever and ever: Amen. I have written briefly unto you by the Bearer 12 Sylvanus, in whom I place great Confidence, as I suppose and conclude him to be a sincere Christian and faithful Brother (k); one

12 By Silvanus a faithful Brother unto you, (as I suppose) I have written briefly

(i) *Make you perfect.*] If any one please to peruse Arch-bishop Leighton's excellent Discourse on these Words, he will have a fine Specimen of his Commentary on this Epistle; which I esteem to be among the most instructive and useful Books our Language affords, and cannot but consider it as a great Honour conferred upon me by Providence, to have been an Instrument of presenting it to the World in so correct a Form; as well as of rescuing many other instructive Pieces of that excellent and amiable Author, from the Oblivion in which they had so long been buried.

(k) *Sylvanus, as I suppose, a faithful Brother.*] Whether this was the Silas, or Sylvanus, mentioned several Times in the Acts as the Companion of St. Paul, and by St. Paul himself, 2 Cor. i. 19. 1 Thes. i. 1. 2 Thes. i. 1. we cannot certainly say. — The Phrase, as I suppose, does not seem to imply any Doubt. Compare Rom. iii. 28. and viii. 18. in the Original.

Sect. 9. one who hath the Interest of Christ at Heart, and on whose Fidelity we may rely; and I send it, *exhorting, and testifying* with the greatest Solemnity, *that this is the true Grace of God wherein ye have hitherto stood*; and urging it therefore upon you, that you steadily adhere to it in the midst of all your Difficulties and Persecutions.

13 *The [Church, which is] here in Babylon (l), chosen with [you] to partake of the Priviledges of the Gospel, saluteth you; and [so doth] Marcus, whom I may call my Son (m), as being my Convert, and behaving to me with all filial Tendernefs and*

14 *Respect. Salute one another with a Kiss of pure and unfeigned Love in your Christian Assemblies; and may Grace and Peace, and the truest Happinefs, ever [be] with you all who are in Christ Jesus, who is the Corner Stone which God hath laid in Sion, and the great Foundation of all our eternal Hopes.*

1 Pet. V. 12.

briefly, exhorting and testifying that this is the true Grace of God wherein ye stand.

13 The Church that is at Babylon elected together with you, saluteth you, and so doth Marcus my Son

14 Greet ye one another with a Kiss of Charity. Peace be with you all that are in Christ Jesus. Amen.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Ver. 1. THIS *Apostolick Charge* should be received with the profoundest Regard and Submission, by all those who profess to reverence the Authority of *Christ*, who thus, by the Mouth of his Servants, bespeaks their Attention; and it should both regulate

(l) *At Babylon.*] Hence *Bishop Cumberland* and *Mr. Cradock* argue, that probably *St. Peter* wrote from the Neighbourhood of *Babylon*, and found many *Jews* remaining there ever since the *Babylonish Captivity*, among whom he had preached the Gospel with considerable Success.

(m) *Marcus my Son.*] That is, my *Convert*, or at least my *Assistant* in the ministerial Work. I have observed *Vol. iii. Sect. xxviii. Note (b)* that *John Mark*, who was the Companion of *Barnabas* and *Paul*, was a different Person from *Mark the Evangelist*, who was the intimate Companion of the *Apostle Peter*. And as he was so, it is likely that the *Evangelist* is the *Mark* of which the *Apostle* here speaks. Under *St. Peter's* instruction he is said to have written *his Gospel*, probably receiving at different Times *historical Facts* from him, which he records without very exact Order, and which *St. Luke* afterwards greatly illustrated, without changing the Order, by adding many more *important Circumstances*.

gulate their Conduct, and animate and exalt their Hopes. Let us therefore attend to this venerable *Elder, this Witness of the Sufferings of Christ*, who on the Mount of Transfiguration, had been favoured with an illustrious Representation of *that Glory*, wherein our Lord shall be hereafter revealed, and with which he will then invest all those, who, in his Cause, have approved themselves *faithful unto Death*. Let *Ministers*, especially, ever maintain a most affectionate and respectful Regard for the *Flock of God*, and take the Oversight thereof with a ready and generous Mind, and be Examples to it in the mild and condescending Temper of their common Master, as well as in all other Graces and Virtues. It is indeed possible, they may pursue such a Conduct as this, and meet with very little Esteem or Recompence, yea with injurious and unworthy Treatment, from their Fellow-Men. But a *Crown of Glory*, a royal Diadem, *incorruptible* and immortal, will be hereafter conferred on them by their exalted Saviour, in the Day of his triumphant Appearance; and this Crown, in itself so illustrious, will be a Mark of still *more* distinguished Honour, as it will be placed on their victorious Heads in a Season of such Solemnity, in the View of the whole assembled World, and of the *innumerable Company of Angels*. — But in the mean Time, while we are continued in so lowly a Condition in the present World, let us all cultivate *Humility* of Mind, being *cloathed* with that amiable Virtue, which is certainly the most *graceful* Ornament of our Nature; an Ornament of singular Value in the Eye of that God, whose Approbation is the surest Mark and Criterion of Excellence and Honour. And that we may accordingly entertain the more humble and lowly Conceptions of ourselves, and the more grand and venerable Ideas of the almighty Creator, Preserver and Disposer of all Things; let us often and seriously reflect upon *his mighty Hand*; how gloriously it hath been displayed in the infinite Variety of the Works of *Nature*, in the continual Agency and Operation of *Providence*, and in the wonderful Scheme of *Redemption* and *Salvation*; how powerful and resistless it is in the Execution of all its Works; and yet how graciously its awful Power is tempered and moderated, and to what kind and merciful Purposes it hath been already exerted, and still is, in behalf of such degenerate and unworthy Creatures as ourselves. By these Considerations, let us be disposed to bow to every divine Dispensation with all Resignation and Submission; fixing our Dependence upon a Power so wisely and graciously exerted; rejoicing that we are permitted to *cast our Cares on God*, and abhorring both the Ingratitude and

Sect. 9.

Ver. 2.

Ver. 3.

Ver. 4.

Ver. 5.

Ver. 6.

Ver. 7.

*Sect. 9.* Folly of fainting and sinking under our Burdens, when we are favoured with the Permission of relying on him; indeed, with a paternal *Command*, as well as Permission; which accordingly requires our Obedience in Point of Duty, as well as of Gratitude and Honour.

Our great *Adversary the Devil* is still continually prowling round the Fold of *Christ*; and therefore it behoves us to be constantly on our *Guard*. And if we would escape both his Wiles, and his Power, let us be especially careful, that neither our *Security*, nor *Intemperance*, give him an *Advantage* over us: But, on the contrary, as it is nothing less than our utter and eternal Destruction he aims at, let us strenuously *resist him*, in the Exercise of a *steady Faith*, and with a firm Resolution. Let us also remember, that Trials and *Afflictions* have been the Lot of all the People of God in all Generations; and that *the God of all Grace* is able, if it seem good to his infinite Wisdom, to shorten and *contract* the Time of our *Sufferings*, and by means of them whilst they last, to *strengthen* and *perfect* our immortal Souls. Let us therefore, as the Close of all, continue to *stand fast*, in what is so authentically *testified to be the true Grace of God*; and real substantial *Peace will be with us*, will be our everlasting Portion, in *Christ Jesus. Amen.*

The END of the FAMILY EXPOSITOR on the first Catholic EPISTLE of St. PETER.

# The Family Expofitor:

O R, A

## P A R A P H R A S E

O N T H E S E C O N D

C A T H O L I C E P I S T L E

O F

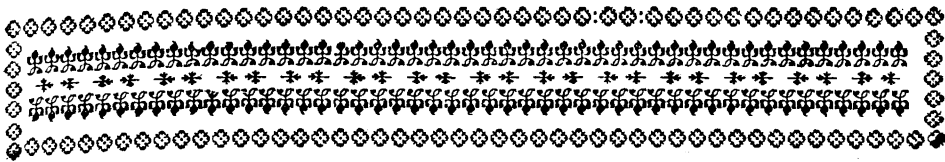
St. *P E T E R*.

W I T H

Critical N O T E S, and a practical I M P R O V E M E N T  
of each S E C T I O N.







A

# GENERAL INTRODUCTION

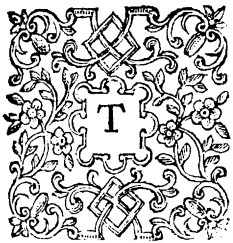
T O T H E

# PARAPHRASE and NOTES

On the second Catholic EPISTLE

O F

St. P E T E R.



HERE were some in the primitive Church, who called in Question the Genuineness and Authority of *this Epistle*, though it expressly claims St. Peter for its Author, and contains very strong *internal Characters* of its Authenticity. But this being no proper or convenient Place to enter largely into the Argument, if any are desirous of seeing it truly and accurately represented, as far as it depends upon the Testimonies of the *Christian Fathers*, they may consult the Second Part of *Dr. Lardner's Credibility of the Gospel History*. As to the *internal Evidence*, there are some *general Observations*, which having made already in the Introduction to the Epistle of *James*, I think it unnecessary to repeat, though they are very applicable to the present Occasion. But it is fit to observe, in *particular*, that the Author of this Epistle hath some Allusions or Appeals to Facts and Circumstances as relative to *himself*, which evidently refer to St. Peter; and that besides, there is a remarkable Coincidence between the Sentiments of *this*, and of the *former*

*former* Epistle; infomuch that it is extremely probable, it was the Production of the *same* Author, intending to confirm the Doctrines he had already advanced, in Opposition to the Scruples of honest Men, and the Objections of designing ones. St. *Jerom*, acquainting us with the Dispute which had been raised concerning the Author and Authority of this Epistle, informs us at the same Time, that it was owing to a remarkable *Difference of Stile*, in this, and the former unquestionably genuine Epistle of St. *Peter*. But the Truth is, there is, properly speaking, no Difference of Stile between the *two Epistles*, but only between the *former Epistle*, and a *Part of this*, namely, the *second Chapter*; which indeed is as different from the Stile of the *Remainder* of this, as it is from that of the *whole* former Epistle. The Fact therefore seems to be, (as the learned Bishop of London, *Dr. Sherlock*, supposes, in his *first Dissertation*, at the End of his *Discourses on Prophecy*, which is well worth the Reader's Perusal;) I say, the Fact seems to be, that the Apostle in the second Chapter of this Epistle, describing the Character of such Seducers and false Teachers, as endangered the Faith of the *Christian* Converts, adopts the Language and Sentiments of some *Jewish* Author, containing a very strong Description, in the Eastern Manner, of the Character and Conduct of some false Prophets of that, or earlier Ages. And as St. *Jude* hath likewise described these false Teachers as well as St. *Peter*, and there is a remarkable Similitude in some Respects, and Variation in others, between the Accounts of these two Apostles, it appears extremely probable, that they both took the principal Features of their Descriptions from the same Author. And if this be a just Account, the *Foundation* of all the *Doubts* concerning the Genuineness of this Epistle, is exceeding feeble; and no other reasonable Conclusion can be drawn from them, except the singular Caution of the primitive *Christians*, what Writings they honoured with the Veneration due to the *Oracles of God*.

This Epistle was very probably written about the Year 67; which was six Years after the Date of the former. For the *Apostle* speaks of his Death as very near at Hand: *I think it meet*, saith he, *as long as I am in this Tabernacle, to stir you up by putting you in Remembrance; knowing that shortly I must put off this my Tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me: (Chap. i. 13, 14.)* and ecclesiastical History informs us, that the *Apostle* finished his Race by Martyrdom in the Year 68, the 14th of the Emperor *Nero*.

The

The general *Design* of this Epistle is, To confirm the Doctrines and Instructions delivered in the former; “to excite the *Christian* Converts to adorn and stedfastly adhere to their holy Religion, as “a Religion proceeding from God, notwithstanding the Artifices of “false Teachers, whose Character is at large described; or the Persecution of their bitter and inveterate Enemies.”

The *Apostle*, with this View, having first congratulated the *Christian* Converts on the happy Condition into which they were brought by the Gospel, exhorts them, in order to secure the Blessings connected with their Profession, to endeavour to improve in the most substantial Graces and Virtues. (*Chap. i. 1,—11.*) And that their Attention might be the more effectually engaged, he reminds them, both that he spoke to them in the near View of Eternity, it being revealed to him that he should shortly put off his earthly Tabernacle; and that the Subjects on which he discoursed, were not cunningly devised Fables, but attested by a miraculous Voice from Heaven, and by divinely inspired Prophecies. (*Ver. 12, to the End.*) And that this Exhortation might not fail, of producing the most kindly and genuine Effects, he cautions them against the false Teachers, whose Character he describes; reminding them of the Judgments executed on the *apostate Angels*, on the *old World*, and on *Sodom*; and at the same Time, of the Deliverance of *Noah*, and of *Lot*; as suggesting Considerations, which, on the one Hand, should terrify such ungodly Wretches, and on the other, comfort and establish the Hearts of upright and pious Christians. (*Chap. ii. 1,—9.*) He then further describes the Character of these Seducers; warning all true *Christians* of the Danger of being perverted by them, and *them* of the dreadful Destruction to which they exposed themselves. (*Ver. 10, to the End.*) And that the Persons to whom he was writing, might more effectually escape the Artifices of those who lay in wait to deceive, they are directed to adhere steadily and closely to the sacred Scriptures, and to consider the absolute Certainty and awful Manner of the final Destruction of this World: And then the whole is concluded with several weighty and pertinent Exhortations. *Chap. iii. throughout.*



A

## P A R A P H R A S E

A N D

## N O T E S

On the second Catholic EPISTLE

O F

St. P E T E R.

## S E C T. I.

*The Apostle Peter, after his Salutation, begins his Epistle with congratulating the Christians on the happy State into which they were brought by the Gospel; and urges them, in order to secure the Blessings connected with their Profession, to endeavour to improve in its most substantial Graces and Virtues. 2 Pet. I. 1,—11.*

2 PETER I. 1.

SIMON Peter, a Servant and an Apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious Faith

2 PETER I. 1.

SIMON Peter, who has the Honour to Sect. I. style himself a Servant, and even an Apostle of Jesus Christ; being selected by 2 Pet. I. 1. his heavenly Master to that exalted and important Office; sends his most affectionate Salutation, with this his Epistle, to all those to whom it may come, who have obtained like

N n 2

Se<sup>c</sup>t. 1. *like precious Faith, with us, in that glorious Gospel, which is a Declaration of Life and Salvation by the Righteousness of our God, and Saviour Jesus Christ (a);* in which, sinful as we are, we obtain Acceptance with the Father, through that Atonement which our divine Redeemer has made, and the perfect Righteousness he has introduced; for the Justification of all his believing People.

Faith with us, through the Righteousness of God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ :

- 2 For this Purpose, that this invaluable Blessing may be insured to you, may *Grace and Peace*, in all your Concerns, temporal and spiritual, *be multiplied unto you, by the Acknowledgment of the great God and of Jesus Christ our Lord;* by a faithful and courageous Profession of whose Name we put ourselves into the Way of receiving the most important Blessings. This we may cheerfully expect, *as his divine Power has given unto us all Things in such rich Abundance, which [relate] both to Life and Godliness (b);* whereby the present Life is rendered much more comfortable to us, and the future and eternal Life of our Souls is secured. And this we obtain, *by the Knowledge of him who has, by his Gospel, called us by that Glory with which he has now invested us, and that strengthening Virtue (c)* and

2 Grace and Peace be multiplied unto you through the Knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord,

3 According as his divine Power hath given unto us all Things that *pertain* unto Life and Godliness, through the Knowledge of him that hath called us to Glory and Virtue :

(a) *Of our God and Saviour, &c.]* The Order of the *original* Words rather favours this *Translation*, tho' I confess it is not absolutely necessary, and it may be rendered as in our Version, *of God and our Saviour*. It is observable, that the Order in the next Verse is different, and determines it to the *Translation* there used.

(b) *Life and Godliness.]* Some imagine this to be an *Hebraism* for a *godly Life*; but the Meaning is so much *enriched* by understanding it more literally, that I choose to retain our Version, and to paraphrase the Words according to it.

(c) *By Glory and Virtue: δια δόξης και αρετης]* This is the proper Rendering of *δια* with a *Genitive Case*, as several *Criticks* have rightly observed. *Dr. Whitby* supposes these Words to be an *Hebraism*, and understands them of the *glorious and powerful Effusion of the Spirit*. It is remarkable, that the Word *αρετη*, used so frequently in *Heathen* Writers, seldom occurs in the *New Testament*; and when it does, it does not always signify the *whole of a right Principle*, but generally *Courage*. (See *Note*

4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious Promises; that by these you might be Partakers of the divine Nature, having escaped the Corruption that is in the World through Lust.

and Energy of his Spirit: *By means of which (d) illustrious Seal, set to the Declaration of the Gospel, are given unto us exceeding great and precious Promises, relating to Blessings infinitely more valuable, than any present Enjoyments, or Expectations. And the Design of God, in bestowing this inestimable Favour, is, that by these you may be made Partakers of a divine Nature (e); transformed into the Image of God's moral Perfections; having escaped the Corruption, [which is] so generally prevalent in the World through the Lust, which Men are ready to indulge, to the Reproach and Destruction of their immortal Souls. And for this Purpose (f) applying with all possible Diligence, as you have believed the Gospel, be careful to accompany that Belief with all the lovely Train of attendant Graces; associate (g), as it were, to your Faith, Virtue (b), true Fortitude and Resolution of Mind, which*

Sect. 1.  
2 Pet. I. 4.

5 And besides this, giving all Diligence, add to your Faith, Virtue; and to Virtue, Knowledge;

Note (b) below) And therefore as the learned *Albert* observes, (*Observ. Philolog. pag. 460.*) some Interpreters, apprehending the Word *αἰῶν* to be in no Sense applicable to God, but only to Men, have rendered this Clause, contrary to the *Greek* Idiom, to *Glory and Virtue*. But it may very properly be understood of that *strengthening Energy*, which God exerts on the human Mind, which appeared in so extraordinary a Manner in the *Apostolic* Age.

(d) *By Means of which.*] Some would render, *δι' οὗ*, for the Sake of which; that is, as they understand the Clause, that we might attain to this *Glory and Virtue*, God has made such *precious Promises*, of the Pardon of Sin, the Assurances of his Spirit, and at last, eternal Happiness. *Dr. Whitby* would read it, *δι' οὗ*, by whom, that is, by *Christ*; for which he hath the Authority of some *Manuscripts*.

(e) *Partakers of a divine Nature.*] I cannot think the Passages, which are produced from *Philo* and *Josephus*, as parallel to this, are sufficient to justify *Dr. Whitby's* interpreting this Phrase of *miraculous and prophetic Endowments*.

(f) *For this Purpose:* *αὐτοῦ τούτου.*] The learned *Albert* supposes the Particle *εἰς* to be understood, and I have translated it accordingly.

(g) *Associate.*] The Word *ἐπιχοινωνῶμεν* properly signifies to *lead up*, as in *Dance*, one of these *Virtues* after another in a beautiful and majestic Order. See *Goodman's Parable of the Prod.* pag. 296, and *Sir. N. Knatchbull in loc.*

(h) *Virtue.*] *Virtue* cannot here signify an universal *Regularity of Mind and Manners*, (See *Titus. iii. 8.*) because every particular afterwards mentioned, is a *Virtue* in that Sense; and the *Apostle* speaks of each as additional to what went before. It must therefore here signify *Courage*, as the original Word *αἰῶν* often does. (compare Note (c) above.) And it is properly added to *Faith*, in Reference to the Need *Faith* has

Sect. I. which may enable you to break through  
 that Variety of Dangers with which your

2 Pet. I. 5. Faith may be attended; *and to this heroick  
 Virtue and Bravery, that Knowledge, which*

6 may direct your Resolution aright; *And  
 to Knowledge, Temperance, that if you should  
 be in the most plentiful Circumstances, they  
 may not be a Snare to you, and the Boun-  
 ties of Providence may not be abused to  
 the Dishonour of God and your own Detri-  
 ment; and to this Temperance add Patience,*  
 as you are not apprized what Afflictions  
 may possibly succeed your Prosperity, nor  
 how severe they may be; *and to Patience  
 add Godliness, that devout Temper of Mind,  
 which will be so powerful a Support to your  
 Patience, both by the Views it gives you,  
 of the Wisdom and Goodness of all the  
 divine Dispensations, and by the Pleasure  
 which it will mingle with the most pain-  
 ful Exercises and Trials;*

7 *And to Godli-  
 ness add brotherly Kindness, that peculiar  
 Affection which you owe to your Fellow-  
 Christians, as your Brethren in the Lord;  
 and add to this brotherly Kindness, universal  
 Love to all your Fellow-Creatures, extend-  
 ing your kind affectionate Regards to those,  
 who are entirely Strangers to that Religion  
 which you are so happy as to embrace, and  
 even to those, who most unrighteously op-  
 pose it, and injure you for your Profession  
 of it;*

8 *For if these excellent Things  
 which I have now described, exist and a-  
 bound*

6 And to Knowledge,  
 Temperance; and to Tem-  
 perance, Patience; and to  
 Patience, Godliness;

7 And to Godliness, bro-  
 therly Kindness; and to  
 brotherly Kindness, Charity.

8 For if these Things be  
 in you, and abound, they  
 make

has of a courageous *Defence*, and of the Advantage it gives us for that Purpose. The *Knowledge* to be added, signifies, not that *general Knowledge*, on which *Faith* and *Virtue* must be founded, but an Acquaintance with the Importance of the several Principles and Duties comprehended in that *general Knowledge*; and by this, *Courage* would properly be *directed*, which might otherwise act at Random. Nor can we imagine, that *one* of these *good Qualities* can entirely subsist without *another*; but every one is to make up, as it were, a Part of the *Chorus*, appearing together in a lovely and venerable Train.

(i) *Calling*



make you that ye shall neither be barren, nor unfruitful in the Knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

bound in you, they will permit [you] to be Sect. 1.  
neither inactive, nor unfruitful, in the Know- 2 Pet. I. 8.  
ledge of our Lord Jesus Christ; but as they  
must put you upon exerting yourselves in  
Consequence of that Knowledge, they will  
make these your Endeavours delightful, and  
effectual for that Purpose; But he that

9 But he that lacketh these Things, is blind, and cannot see far off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old Sins.

is deficient in these Things, is blind, as to the  
most important Objects of Knowledge; at  
best he is very short sighted, his Views are  
limited to a narrow Circle of low and mean  
Objects, which lie immediately before him,  
and cannot take in that enlarged and noble  
Prospect which Christianity sets before him.  
He shews that he hath contracted a sad For-  
getfulness of [his] baptismal Engagements,  
and of that Purification from the Sins of  
his former Life, which he professed to be  
in Search of, and hoped to find by that  
solemn Ordinance which initiated him in-  
to the Christian Church.

10 Wherefore the rather, brethren, give Diligence to make your Calling and Election sure: For if ye do

And as it would be very fatal to fall 10  
from these bright Views and Expectations  
into a State of such aggravated Condem-  
nation, therefore, my Brethren, endeavour so  
much the more diligently to make your Calling  
and your Election sure (i), and firm; that  
having been called into the Church of  
Christ,

(i) Calling and Election sure.] Mr. Brekell, the ingenious Author of the Christian Warfare, hath taken Pains to prove that Calling and Election alludes to the Manner in which Armies were raised; first, by calling together all of a proper Age to bear Arms; and then, chusing out such as were reckoned most proper for that Purpose. And he supposes, that making the Calling and Election, *βεβαιων, stedfast*, was acting in such a Manner that they might not be cashier'd and disbanded, as unworthy a Place in the Army, into which they had been listed. He has indeed proved by a great Number of learned Quotations, that this was the Case in the Grecian Armies; and Rev. xvii. 14. may perhaps be a further Illustration of it, as he well urges. But I cannot think, that by this we are to determine our Notion of the Christian Calling and Election; and whoever should attempt to apply this Idea to such Phrases in a multitude of Places, would find it utterly unsuitable. I have therefore so taken in the Idea, which this agreeable Writer suggests, as not entirely to drop others, which I think it extremely probable the Apostle might have in his View. And it will certainly be a good Sense, if we understand the Exhortation, Make it an assured Thing to yourselves, that you are called and chosen of God.

Se&t. I. Christ, and chosen to such exalted external Priviledges and such glorious Hopes, you may not finally lose them; but may be assured upon the best Grounds, that you are indeed effectually called by divine Grace, and chosen to the Possession of Life everlasting. And this importat End will be secured, if you resolutely persist in your Duty, according to the Directions, I have now given; *for if ye do these Things ye shall never fall*, God will support you with Communications of Grace, suitable to any extraordinary Trial, to which you may be called, till the whole is brought to a happy Issue and Conclusion.

2 Pet. I. 10.

II

*For so an Entrance shall be richly and abundantly administered unto you into the everlasting Kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ; you shall not only be secure of obtaining Happiness there; but shall be received into it with Circumstances of solemn Pomp and distinguished Honour; and those Graces, which adorned your Profession here on Earth, shall, as it were, attend you in a radiant Train to those Mansions of everlasting Felicity and Glory, which the divine Mercy shall then assign you, through Jesus Christ, to whom the Praise of all is to be ascribed, and with whom you shall reign through the endless Ages of Eternity.*

do these Things, ye shall never fall.

II For so an Entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly, into the everlasting Kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Ver. I. **W**ITH all Humility let us adore the divine Goodness, in making us *Partakers of the like precious Faith* with that which he bestowed on the *primitive Believers*. And let it often be considered in this comprehensive and edifying View, as terminating on the *Righteousness of our God and Saviour Jesus Christ*, on that Method of Justification by him, and his Gospel, which divine Grace hath found out and proposed. With Thankfulness let us own

own the abundant Provision made for us, of *all Things pertaining to Life and Godliness*; and above all, let the *exceeding rich* and invaluable *Promises*, contained in the Gospel, be reviewed with sincere Delight, and be esteemed as our securest and most important Treasure. May they actually have all that Efficacy they are suited and intended to have, to promote and secure our *Escape from the Pollutions which are in the World through Lust*, and to advance the *divine Resemblance* in our Souls. How various, and how lovely, are the Graces which are here recommended, as what we are with *all Diligence* to add to our Faith: *Courage and Temperance, Patience and Godliness, brotherly Kindness, and universal Charity!* These are the genuine Fruits of the *Knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ*: These, while they honour him and adorn our Profession, will be no less honourable and beneficial to ourselves. *Short-sighted* indeed we are, if we perceive not on the one Hand, the happy and delightful Consequences which they will finally produce; and on the other, how utterly vain our *baptismal Honours and Engagements*, and all external Priviledges of *Church-Communion*, will be, if these *Vitals of Christianity* are wanting. In order to excite our indolent Minds to pursue these divine Graces with a Spirit in some Measure proportionable to their Excellence, let us frequently reflect on our speedy Removal from this World and all its Vanities; how soon we must enter upon *Eternity*. Oh, how desirable *then* to enter on the *Kingdom of Christ*, to be honoured with an *abundant Entrance* into everlasting Mansions, to be received as with a cordial Welcome, to sail as it were, into that blessed Harbour with a full Gale of Consolation and Joy! Be not *deceived*; *God is not mocked*; it is the invariable Design of the Gospel to produce and advance our *Holiness*; it is the immutable Constitution of the *Kingdom of Christ*, that without it *no Man shall* be permitted to *see the Lord*. (*Heb. xii. 14.*)

Sect. I.

Ver. 3.

Ver. 4.

Ver. 5, 7.

Ver. 8.

Ver. 9.

Ver. 11.

## S E C T. II.

*The Apostle in the View of his own approaching Dissolution, reminds his Christian Brethren, that their Religion was firmly founded, as it was attested both by the miraculous Voice from Heaven, which declared Jesus to be the Son of God, and by the divinely inspired Prophecies, which also bore Testimony to him under that Character. 2 Pet. I. 12, to the End.*

## 2 P E T E R I. 12.

Sect. 2.  
2 Pet. I. 12.

I Have been exhorting you to cultivate the several Graces of Christianity, and urging this as necessary for the Security of your eternal Salvation; *therefore I will not neglect, always to put you in Mind of these Things; though I am aware, that you already know them, and are well established by the Instruction you have received in the present Truth,* relating to the Practice of these

- 13 Virtues. *But I account it right and Expedient, yea what by my Office in the Church of Christ I owe to you, and my other Brethren, as long as I am in this Tabernacle, and inhabit this frail mortal Body, from which, God only knows how soon I may be dislodged, to stir you up by way of Remembrance, and to endeavour to keep your Hearts under as lively a Sense of divine*
- 14 Things as I can; *Knowing that all these Opportunities of Service are confined within very narrow Limits, and that I must quickly put off this my Tabernacle by Death, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me by an express Prophecy, and that memorable Action of his, when, just after his Resurrection, he commanded me to follow him in token of my Readiness to dye for him,*  
by

## 2 P E T E R I. 12.

Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in Remembrance of these Things, though ye know them, and be established in the present Truth.

- 13 Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this Tabernacle, to stir you up, by putting you in Remembrance:

- 14 Knowing that shortly I must put off this my Tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me.

15 Moreover I will endeavour, that you may be able after my Decease, to have these Things always in Remembrance.

16 For we have not followed cunningly devised Fables, when we made known unto you the Power and Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were Eye-witnesses of his Majesty.

17 For he received from God the Father, Honour, and Glory, when there came such a Voice to him from the excellent Glory, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

18 And this Voice which came from Heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy Mount.

19 We have also a more sure Word of Prophecy ; where-

by the same kind of Death which he suffered. (John xxi. 18, 19, 20.) *But I* Sect. 2.

*will endeavour* to the utmost of my Ability, while it pleases God to continue me among you, *that you may* have these Things so familiar to your Minds now, that ye may also every one of you have them in Remembrance after my Departure, when I shall have made my Exit from the Stage of Mortality. *For we have not been pursuing* 16

after a Series of artfully devised Fables, while we made known unto you the Power and Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ; they were not fallaciously invented, nor rashly credited by us; *but we were Eye-Witnesses of his Majesty*, and of the solemn Pomp and Grandeur with which he appeared at his Transfiguration; *For he then received* 17

from God the Father illustrious Honour and Glory; sublime Honour was done him, and a refulgent Glory was shed round about him, when such a Voice was sent forth to him from the magnificent Glory of the Shechinah, which then appeared so conspicuous and glorious, and made that ever memorable Proclamation, *This is my well beloved Son, in whom I acquiesce*, (Mat. xvii. 5.) and in whom my Soul is perfectly well pleased.

*And this Voice, which came down from Heaven, we*, his three distinguished Friends, James and John, as well as myself, actually heard, when we were with him in the holy Mount, which was, for the Time, consecrated by the visible Appearance of the divine Glory upon it. *And we have a* 18

*surer and firmer prophetic Word (a), the Evidence* 19

(a) *Surer prophetic Word.*] Some are of Opinion that the *Apostle* intended no Comparison in this Place, but that the comparative is used for the positive; so that it only signifies a very sure prophetic Word. As in Heb. xiii. 23. ταχιον is used for quickly. Acts xxv. 10. καλλιον for well. Compare 1 Tim. iii. 14. 2 Tim. i. 17, 18. And μικροτερος for the least, Matt. xi. 11. Luke vii. 28. Others assert, that the

Sect. 6. Evidence of which, on the whole, is far more extensive and important, than that of any single Miracle, how conspicuous soever: *to which* therefore, *ye do very well to adhere, and to take heed to its Contents, as to a Lamp shining in a dark, obscure and gloomy Place (b).* Observe it therefore, and adhere to it, *till the Day Dawn, and the Morning Star arise in your Hearts,* with resplendent Beams, as the sure Herald of an eternal Day, whose Sun shall no more go down, nor its Moon withdraw itself:

20 *Knowing this first, as a matter of chief Importance, that no Prophecy of Scripture is*

21 *of private Impulse (c), or Original. For Prophecy was not brought of old, to the Minds of those that uttered it, by the Will of Man; they could not work themselves up to the Attainment of this extraordinary Gift, nor divinely foretel what they themselves desired, and when-ever they pleased; but holy Men of God, whom he honoured*

whereunto ye do well that ye take Heed, as unto a Light that shineth in a dark Place, until the Day Dawn, and the Day-Star arise in your Hearts :

20 Knowing this first, that no Prophecy of the Scripture is of any private Interpretation.

21 For the Prophecy came not in old Time by the Will of Man; But holy Men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.

the Series of Prophecies, when explained in the Light of the *New Testament*, is a much clearer Proof of *Christ's* being the *Messiah*, than any *single miraculous Fact*, as this was. It is also debated, whether Prophecy signifies the *Gift* so called among *Christians*, or the *written Prophecies of the Old Testament*. But I think it cannot be doubted, that, it refers to the latter, and is the same with what is called below, in the 20th Verse, the *Prophecy of Scripture*, and is said to have *come in old Time, by the Will of God*.

(b) *Lamp shining in a dark Place.*] *Bishop Chandler* supposes, Prophecy is so called, because it grows *gradually* brighter and brighter, as it approaches nearer and nearer to its Accomplishment. *Bishop Chandler's Defence of Christianity*, pag. 23.

(c) *No Prophecy of Scripture is of private Impulse.*] So I render *επιλυσεως*; and take it to signify that Men did not *work themselves up* into such Agitations, as led them to utter the Predictions and Oracles recorded. And this, I think, the Original will very well bear, and the Opposition justly. To interpret it in Opposition to *the Right of private Judgment* in the Interpretation of Scripture, is quite foreign to the Apostle's Purpose, as well as extremely injurious to common Sense. See *Flem. Christology*, Vol. i. pag. 147. *Dr. Clark* and *Mr. Baxter* have understood this, as if the Apostle had said, *Scripture* is not to be interpreted merely as speaking of this *particular Person* of whom it literally speaks; but as having a further Sense, to which the Expressions of the Prophets were over-ruled under the Influence of the Spirit, in Reference to the Gospel-Dispensation; in Respect to which they sometimes were carried further, than they themselves were aware. *Mr. Jefferies*, (after *Dr. Hammond*,) observes, that *επιλυσεως* originally signifies a *Sign* or *Watch-Word* given to the *Racers*, when they were to start. See *his Review of the Controversy between the Author of the Grounds, &c. and his Adversaries*, pag. 149.

honoured with that important Work, *spake* Sect. 2.  
 [as they were] borne on by the holy Spirit, *and they were only his Organs, in declar-*  
 ing to the People what he was disposed to suggest to them. *2Pet. II. 21.*

I M P R O V E M E N T.

**M**A Y that Uncertainty, that Frailty and Brevity of human Life, which *the Ministers of Christ* are frequently inculcating upon others, be seriously considered by themselves. Let them remember, that they must *quickly put off this Tabernacle*, and be dismissed from their present State of Service; and while they have Opportunity therefore, let them *stir up the Minds* of the People committed to their Charge, *by Way of Remembrance*, and give Diligence to make such Impressions upon their Hearts, that when they themselves are laid down in the Silence of the Grave, and sleeping among the Clods of the Valley, by the Recollection and Improvement of the Lessons they taught, *Survivors* may be quickened in their Preparation to quit *their dissolving Tabernacles* likewise, and to follow their pious Leaders into the *Joy of their Lord*. Ver. 14. Ver. 13. Ver. 15.

It must undoubtedly yield us an inconceivable Satisfaction as *Christians*, that we *have not followed cunningly devised Fables*; that the Persons, on whose Testimony we rely as an authentic Evidence to the Truth of our holy Religion, were *Eye-Witnesses* of the illustrious Facts on which it is founded: And particularly, that important Oracle, *the Voice from Heaven*, by which the true and living God declared *Jesus of Nazareth* to be his well beloved Son, and recommended him to the *obedient Regard* of all who reverence his own Authority, was, on the Mount of Transfiguration, distinctly heard by *Peter, James and John*; who at the same Time were *Eye-Witnesses of his Glory*. Yet are we bound to acknowledge the divine Oracles of the *Old Testament*, and the numerous and various *Prophecies* they contain, to be to us a superior, a more sure and incontestible Evidence: Let us therefore *take heed to it, as a glorious Light to our Feet, and Lamp to our Paths*. And let what is particularly said of the *ancient Prophets* recommend to our Regard the *whole sacred Volume*; namely, that it was not written by *private Impulse*, but by the *Inspiration of the Holy Ghost*. Let Ver. 16. Ver. 17, 18. Ver. 20.

- Sect. 2. us receive it with the profoundest Humility, not as the *Word of Man*, but as it is indeed and in Truth the *Word of God*, which is able to make us wise unto Salvation; and let us follow its sacred
- Ver. 21. Illumination, till at length it conduct us to the *Dawning* of an *eternal Day*, and to the Rising of that bright and *Morning-Star*,
- Ver. 29. which will shine out hereafter with the full Glory of the *Sun of Righteousness*.

## S E C T. III.

*The Apostle cautions Christians against false Teachers; mentioning the Judgments which God executed on the fallen Angels, on the old World, and on Sodom, and the Deliverance of Noah and of Lot, as Considerations, which should, on the one Hand, terrify the Ungodly, and on the other, comfort and establisb the Hearts of good Men. 2 Pet. II. 1,—9.*

## 2 PETER II. I.

Sect. 3. I Have observed to you, that it was by a divine Impulse that the Prophets delivered and wrote their Predictions in former Times; *but* they were not always regarded in a becoming Manner; for *there were also false Prophets among the People (a)* of the Jews,

2 Pet. II. 1.

## 2 PETER II. I.

BUT there were false Prophets also among the People, even as there shall

(a) *There were also false Prophets among the People.*] Dr. Sherlock, (the present Bishop of London,) has observed in his *first Dissertation* at the End of his *Discourses on Prophecy*, that there is a sensible Difference, not so much between the *first* and *second Epistles of Peter*, as between this *second Chapter* when compared with the *first* and *third*. This *Chapter* abounds in pompous Words and Expressions. It is a Description of *false Teachers*, and seems to be extracted from some *Jewish Writer*, who had given a Description of the *false Prophets*, either those of his own Time, or those who had lived before him. This Remark accounts for the great Resemblance between this *Chapter* and the *Epistle of Jude*; as was observed in the Introduction. He supposes it might be transcribed, or translated by them, from some *Jewish* or *Hebrew* Book, that remained among them. See the *Epistle of Jude* Note (c)

(b) *As*



shall be false Teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable Heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift Destruction.

2 And many shall follow their pernicious Ways, by reason of whom the way of Truth shall be evil spoken of.

3 And through Covetousness shall they with feigned Words make Merchandize of you : Whose Judgment now of a long Time lingereth not, and their Damnation slumbereth not.

Jews, as there shall also be among you (b), Sect. 3. the Disciples of a greater Master than Moses, false Teachers, who will make Parties among you ; and privately introduce pernicious and destructive Heresies, even denying the Lord who, bought and redeemed them ; as those false Prophets denied the God who had redeemed Israel from its Bondage and Misery ; but they will at last be found in the same dreadful Circumstances, bringing upon themselves swift Destruction. And yet many will persist to

follow their pernicious Courses, by Means of whom the Way of Truth, the Cause of genuine and uncorrupted Christianity, will by many others be blasphemed ; as if the Errors and Madness of those Members who are corrupted, were to be charged on those who are not infected with their Disorders, or the Vices of a few, were to be imputed to all.

And as for the false Teachers I mention, they will order both their Teaching and their Conduct by Views and Maxims of Covetousness, and with deceitful Words will make Merchandize of you, trafficking as it were for your immortal Souls. These are Wretches, whose Judgment for a long Time delays not, but advances apace ; and their Destruction does not slumber (c), how fondly soever they may dream of escaping it. But if they consider the numerous Examples God has already given, of his righteous

(b) As there shall also be among you.] Hence, Mr. Mede, I think somewhat precariously, infers a Similitude between the Errors propagated by the false Prophets among the Jews, and those which were to over-run the Christian Church ; and Instances in Image-Worship, and the Worship of departed Saints and Hero's, customary in the Church of Rome. Mede in loc. Dr. Whitby applies all these Things to the Nicholaitans, and Gnosticks, who were a Branch of them.

(c) Does not slumber.] Mr. Blackwall observes, that this is a most beautiful Figure, representing the Vengeance that shall destroy such incorrigible Sinners, as an Angel of Judgment pursuing them upon the Wing, continually approaching nearer and nearer, and in the mean Time keeping a watchful Eye upon them that he may at length discharge an unerring Blow. See his sacred Classics, Vol. i. pag. 297.

(d) Did.

Sect. 3. righteous Indignation, they must certainly take the Alarm; For if God did not spare the Angels that sinned (d), but, having cast [them] down from Heaven, and sunk them to the Abyfs of Hell (e), delivered [them] to be reserved in Chains of Darknefs (f) to the Judgment of the great and terrible Day of Account; we may from hence reasonably conclude, that he will find out a proper Season to punish wicked Men, the Confederates and Instruments of these rebellious

5 Spirits. And indeed the History of Mankind furnishes us with many awful Instances of this kind; and one, in which almost the whole human Species was made the Monument of divine Displeasure; for when God had been long insulted and provoked by their continued Wickedness, we know that he spared not the Inhabitants of the old Antediluvian World. Nevertheless it is worth our while at the same Time to observe

4 For if God spared not the Angels that sinned, but cast them down to Hell, and delivered them, into Chains of Darknefs to be reserved unto Judgment;

5 And spared not the old World, but saved Noah the eighth

(d) *Did not spare the Angels, &c.*] Some have imagined this to be an imperfect Sentence, I think it compleat in the 9th Verse. But as the Length of the Sentence is so necessarily increased, by such a Method of paraphrasing as I have chosen, (tho' brought into the narrowest Limits, which were judged consistent with answering the End,) I have thought it proper here, and in many other Instances, to divide what, in the Original, makes one Sentence, into several; else I must have left many Passages of the sacred Writings far more intricate, than I found them.

(e) *Cast [them] down to Hell.*] Mr. Mede would translate the Words, *When God had condemned the Angels that sinned to the Punishment of Hell, he delivered them into Chains of Darknefs to be reserved to Judgment.* I cannot but think that the Word *ταρταρος* is illustrated by the Description given of *Tartarus* in *Homer* (*Iliad*. ©. *Lin.* 13,—15.) as a *deep Gulph under the Earth, where there are Iron Gates, and a brazen Entrance.* It is derived from a Word expressive of Terror, and signifies the doleful *Prison* in which wicked Spirits are reserved, till they shall be brought out to publick *Condemnation* and *Execution.*

(f) *In Chains of Darknefs.*] It has been query'd, how the *Confinement* of these unhappy Spirits in *Chains of Darknefs*, is consistent with their *wandering* up and down in the Air, and upon Earth. I think we are to answer, not by saying, that the *Darknefs* is *moral*, or that the *Light* is *disagreeable* to them, as some have suggested; (compare *Reynold's Enquiry concerning the Angelic World*, *Query xxx.* pag. 191.) but rather, that a *general Confinement* may be reconcilable with some Degree of *Liberty*, yet still liable to *Restraint*, as God shall see fit. Compare *Luke* viii. 31. *Rev.* xx. 1, 3. And this *Air*, over which they seem indeed to have some Power sometimes granted them, (*Eph.* ii. 2.) is to be sure *Darknefs*, when compared with the *Light* in which they originally dwelt.

(g) *The*

8<sup>th</sup> Person, a Preacher of Righteousness, bringing in the Flood upon the World of the Ungodly ;

serve the favourable manner, in which God Sect. 3. interposed amidst the general Ruin, for the Preservation of the only good Man that remained ; for *He kept Noah, the eighth [Person] (g), who was a Preacher of Righteousness, and seven others, who were with him in the Ark, when he brought the irresistible Destruction of the universal Deluge upon the whole World of the Ungodly, and destroyed all the impious Wretches who had derided the Admonitions of that faithful Patriarch.*

2 Pet. II. 5.

6 And turning the Cities of Sodom and Gomorrha into Ashes, condemned them with an Overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly ;

And in a succeeding Age, when the Inhabitants of those Places were sunk into the lowest Degeneracy, *He condemned the Cities of Sodom and Gomorrha, with the most dreadful Destruction, reducing them to Ashes, by raining down Fire and Brimstone from Heaven upon them ; Setting [them] as an Example and Pattern of that final Vengeance, he will bring on those Sinners who should afterwards be ungodly, that they might learn their own Condemnation and Misery from the Memorials of the Destruction of those once noble, pleasant and flourishing, Cities of the Plain.*

6.

7 And delivered just Lot, vexed

And by the miraculous

7

(g) *The eighth [Person] a Preacher of Righteousness.* Bishop Pearson would render this Clause, *Noah the eighth Preacher of Righteousness ;* supposing, that *Enos* was the first, (*Gen. iv. 26.*) from whom *Noah* was the eighth ; that all the intermediate Persons bore the same Office, and that *Christ* preached by them all. *1 Pet. iii. 19. Pearf. on the Creed, pag. 113.* To which *Bishop Cumberland* assents, supposing God had a continued Succession of extraordinary Persons in the Patriarchal Church. *Cumb. on Gen. pag. 49.* But I think it certain, that *Enos* could not be the first Preacher of Righteousness : *Adam* was in a wonderful Manner fitted to perform that Office in the first World, as *Noah* was in the second ; and what excellent Instructions both might give, *Dr. Winder* has finely represented. *Winder's History of Knowledge, Vol. i. pag. 17, &c. pag. 81,—92.* *Bishop Pearson* adds, that if we are not disposed to refer *ογδοον* to *κρηνα*, and translate it, *the eighth Preacher of Righteousness,* it may be understood as denoting, not the Order in which *Noah* was ranked, but merely the Number of Persons that were with him, *Noah with seven others, or Noah one of Eight ;* and accordingly I have determined it to this Sense in the Paraphrase. The *Bishop* hath produced several Passages in the *Greek Classics* in Support of this Sense of the Word ; and others may be seen in *Raphelius.* Compare also *1 Pet. iii. 20.*

Sect. 3. *culous Interposition of his Providence, he rescued righteous Lot, who was so long*  
 2-Pet. II. 7. *grieved and afflicted by the lascivious Con-*  
 8 *versation of these lawless Men. For that*  
*righteous Man, while he dwelt among them,*  
*seeing and hearing from Day to Day, the*  
*Instances of their profligate and abandon-*  
*ed Wickedness, tormented his upright Soul*  
*by [those] unlawful and scandalous Works,*  
*whose Cry came up at length to Heaven,*  
*and brought down upon them this flaming*  
 9  *Destruction. And thus on the whole,*  
*we discern in this memorable Example,*  
*that on the one Hand, the Lord knows how*  
*to rescue the Godly from Temptation and*  
*Danger, and on the other, to reserve the*  
*Unrighteous to the Day of Judgment, to be*  
*punished with a Severity becoming their*  
*Guilt and Wickedness.*

vexed with the filthy Con-  
 versation of the wicked :

8 (For that righteous  
 Man dwelling among them,  
 in seeing and hearing, vex-  
 ed his righteous Soul from  
 Day to Day, with their un-  
 lawful Deeds)

9 The Lord knoweth  
 how to deliver the godly  
 out of Temptations, and to  
 reserve the unjust unto the  
 Day of Judgment to be  
 punished :

### I M P R O V E M E N T.

Ver. 1. **T**H E R E is no Church so pure, but some *false Members*, and  
 even *false Teachers*, may insinuate themselves into it; yet it is  
 our Duty to watch and pray, that the Churches, to which we re-  
 spectively belong, may be guarded against their *pernicious* In-  
 sinuations, and especially against the *destructive Heresies* of those  
 who *deny the Lord who bought them*. As we regard the Edification  
 of the Church, and the Salvation of our own precious and im-  
 mortal Souls, let us *guard* against whatever may justly deserve such  
 an Imputation as this. *Woe* be to those Teachers who are actuated  
 with a *covetous Spirit*, who *teach Things which they ought not for the*  
*sake of filthy Lucre, and make Merchandize of the Souls of their*  
*Hearers*. How *swiftly* does their *Damnation* approach, though  
 they perceive not the Gradations by which it advances; and with  
 what irresistible Terror will it at length overwhelm them!

Ver. 3.

Ver. 4. That our Hearts may be preserved under an awful Impression of  
 the *divine Judgments*, let us often meditate on those Displays of  
 them, of which the *Scripture* informs us. And let us, in particular,  
 reflect on the Fall of the *Apostate Angels*, who were, for their first  
 Offence,

Offence, precipitated from Heaven, and reserved in Chains of Darkness to the Judgment of the great Day: And while we contemplate this awful Dispensation, let us adore that distinguishing Grace and Compassion which laid hold on *Apostate Man*, and provided an all-sufficient Saviour for him. Let us call to Remembrance the Dissolution of the *old World* by a Deluge of Water, and the tremendous Destruction of the *Cities of the Plain*, by Fire from Heaven; and let us fear that God, who can at Pleasure break open the *Fountains of the great Deep*, and open the *Windows of Heaven*, and emit from these his various Magazines, Deluges of Water, or Torrents of burning Sulphur, to execute his Vengeance. Who can flee from his pursuing Hand? or who can be secure and happy but under his almighty Protection? Yet awful as the Terrors of his Indignation are, his Eyes are upon the Righteous, and his Ears are open to their Cry. What a noble Support and Encouragement may it therefore be to the small Remnant, who from Day to Day are vexing their righteous Souls at the ungodly Deeds of the wicked among whom they dwell, to reflect on the Deliverance of *Noah*, and of *Lot*, from that general Destruction with which they were surrounded. A more perfect and compleat Deliverance will be at length accomplished for all the faithful Servants of God, and there will be no Possibility of doubting any more his Ability, or his Willingness, to rescue them from every Evil; for he will make the Day of his Vengeance on his Enemies, a Day of compleat and everlasting Salvation to his Saints. And the Lord grant that we may all find Mercy of the Lord in that important Day.

Sect. 3.

Ver. 5, 6.

Ver. 7, 8.

## S E C T. IV.

*The Apostle describes in very emphatical Terms the infamous Character of some ungodly and seducing Teachers, who were crept into the Christian Church; and warns the Christian Converts of the Danger of their being perverted by them, and them of the dreadful Destruction to which they exposed themselves.*  
2 Pet. II. 10,—22.

## 2 PETER II. 10.

Sect. 4. **I** Have been just mentioning the divine Vengeance which will be poured out on audacious and impenitent Sinners; *but I would especially be understood to intend those, who go after strange Flesh, in the Lust of Uncleaness; for they are particularly detestable in the Eye of God, and the Crimes they commit so much resemble that of Sodom, that it is the less to be wondered, if they share in its Punishment: And with them I also comprehend those, who despise Dominion, of which there are many among the licentious Wretches before described, daring and Self-willed, uncontrollable in their own Ways, and ready to face and withstand any Opposition in the Prosecution of them; they fear not to speak Evil of those who possess the highest Dignities:*

II *Whereas the Angels, even those, who are greater in Strength and Power than the rest of those glorious Beings, bear not a reviling Testimony against them before the Lord; but abhorring all Scurrility and Violence of Language, they, with all Calmness and Decency declare Matters as they are, as revering the Presence of God, how much soever they may abhor the Characters of ungodly*

## 2 PETER II. 10.

**B**UT chiefly them that walk after the Flesh in the Lust of Uncleaness, and despise Government: *Presumptuous are they, Self-willed, they are not afraid to speak Evil of Dignities:*

II *Whereas Angels, which are greater in Power and Might, bring not railing Accusation against them before the Lord.*

12 But these, as natural brute Beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak Evil of the Things that they understand not, and shall utterly perish in their own Corruption ;

ungodly Men. (Jude 9.) *But these Men behave as if they were irrational Animals (a), made by Nature to be taken, destroyed, and consumed : The fiercest savage Beasts, whom Men for their own Security and Preservation, hunt down and destroy, can hardly be more violent, and outrageous than They ; blaspheming Things which they do not understand ; and the Consequence will be, that they shall be utterly destroyed in their Corruption (b) ; and many of them by their own Intemperance, Rashness, and Folly, will hasten upon themselves that irretrievable Ruin ; Receiving indeed the just Reward of their Unrighteousness, and Irregularities ; while they account it a Pleasure to riot in the Day : They are Spots and Reproaches to the Society to which they belong, living luxuriously in other Places by means of those Deceits (c), which they conceal under the Mask of Christianity, banqueting with you at the holy Table (d).*

Sect. 4.  
2 Pet. II. 12.

13 And shall receive the Reward of Unrighteousness, as they that count it Pleasure to riot in the Day-time : Spots they are and Blemishes, sporting themselves with their own Deceivings, while they feast with you ;

13

Many

(a) *Irrational Animals* ] Dr. Whitby would render this, *But these are as natural brute Beasts* ; referring it to their promiscuous Exercise of Lust. And indeed it is evident, it must be explained as a general Assertion, relating to some Violence of Temper ; as no Sin of the Tongue, which is immediately afterwards spoken of, could be the Resemblance of a Brute. It may refer to their running headlong into extreme Danger, which this licentious manner of Speech, especially when attacking the Characters of Governors, might very naturally expose them to.

(b) *Destroyed in their Corruption.*] The original Phrase is εν τῷ φθορᾷ αὐτῶν καὶ ἀφαιρέσει, and some would render it, *are destroyed by Destruction*, that is, certainly, or utterly destroyed. Compare Cradock's Apostolical History, pag. 117. They boasted of being beyond the Power of Corruption and Punishment, but are lost in both together.

(c) *Living luxuriously, &c.*] This is so good and proper a Sense, that one is not tempted to wish the establishing of the Reading of ἀγαπᾷς for ἀπάταις, which some have proposed, and so explain it of the Riot of those pretended Love-Feasts, into which indeed it is not impossible that Luxury might soon come, when Persons of such a Character were concerned in them ; and probably, that was the Occasion of laying them aside.

(d) *Banqueting with you.*] It is not to be thought that Luxury could be introduced into those Feasts, which they celebrated with the Church, without detecting their own Characters ; and therefore I think it most reasonable to consider their Luxury as practised elsewhere, and to refer this banqueting of which the Apostle speaks, to their attending the sacred Banquet of the Lord's Supper, as a Cover for their Licentiousness.

(e) *Having*

Sect. 4. Many of them are as lewd, as they are  
 ~~~~~  
 2 Pet. II. 14. gluttonous, *having Eyes full of Adultery (e)*,  
*and that cannot cease from Sin*, even when  
 the Powers of animal Nature are exhausted ;  
 but by their Words and Gestures they en-  
 deavour to fan the Flame ; *ensnaring un-*  
*stable Souls* by their artful Addresses, and  
*having their Heart continually exercised in*  
*avaricious Schemes* : On all which Accounts  
 they are the *Children of a Curse*, and they  
 shall find that in the End it will indeed fall  
 heavy upon them.

15 For, *deserting the straight* and upright  
*Way of Truth and Integrity, they have wan-*  
*dered in dangerous and destructive Paths ;*  
*following in the Way of that infamous Person*  
*Balaam, [the Son] of Bofor (f) who so loved*  
*the Wages of Unrighteousness*, that he was  
 willing to sacrifice every other Interest to  
 obtain them. *But he received*, in a very  
 extraordinary manner, *the Reproof of his*  
*Transgression* ; for *the dumb Beast* on which  
 he rode, *speaking with the Voice of a Man,*  
*restrained the Madness of the Prophet*, when  
 he would have pressed on to his own De-

16 struction. *These*, notwithstanding all  
 their boasted Pretensions, *are Fountains*  
*without Water, they are Clouds agitated by*  
*a Whirlwind*, easily yielding to every Wind  
 of Persecution or Temptation, and them-  
 selves big with Storms and Tempests : But  
 after all their Turbulence and Mischief,  
 they will be found in the Number of those,

17  
 to

14 Having Eyes full of  
 Adultery, and that cannot  
 cease from Sin ; beguiling  
 unstable Souls : An Heart  
 they have, exercised with  
 covetous Practices ; cursed  
 Children :

15 Which have forsaken  
 the right Way, and are  
 gone astray, following the  
 Way of Balaam the Son of  
 Bofor who loved the Wages  
 of Unrighteousness ;

16 But was rebuked for  
 his Iniquity : The dumb  
 Ass speaking with Man's  
 Voice, forbad the Madness  
 of the Prophet.

17 These are Wells with-  
 out Water, Clouds that  
 are carried with a Tem-  
 pest, to whom the Milt of  
 Darkness

(e) *Having Eyes full of Adultery* : ὀφθαλμοὶ — μέσος μοιχαλίδος.] There is a  
 prodigious Strength in this Expression ; it properly signifies, their having an  
 Adulteress continually before their Eyes.

(f) *Balaam [the Son] of Bofor.*] There is one Manuscript which reads *Beor*, and  
 this Reading is confirmed by the Syriac Version. Mr. Ainsworth and Dr. Lightfoot  
 suppose, that the Apostle in writing *Bofor* for *Beor*, used the Chaldee Dialect, as he  
 writ in the Neighbourhood of Babylon. See Ainsworth on Num. xxii. 5. and Dr.  
 Lightfoot's Addenda to his *Horæ Hebraicæ* on 1 Cor. xiv. Cap. 4.

(g) Swelling



Darkness is reserved for ever.

18 For when they speak great swelling Words of Vanity, they allure through the Lusts of the Flesh, through much Wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in Error :

19 While they promised them Liberty, they themselves are the Servants of Corruption : For of whom a Man is overcome, of the same is he brought in Bondage.

20 For if after they have escaped the Pollutions of the

to whom is reserved Blackness of Darkness Sect. 4. for ever, even the Judgment of eternal Darkness, and Despair. They sometimes indeed affect sublime Strains of Language, which are often void of any real Meaning, and speaking swelling [Words] of Vanity (e), they ensnare in the Lusts of the Flesh, which they practise and promote in all Variety of Lasciviousness, those who were, so far as we can judge by their external Behaviour, quite escaped (f) from them that have their Conversation in Error, and they draw back into Apostacy some, who appeared to have set their Faces in good Earnest towards the Kingdom of Heaven ; by which means they become Partakers in the Guilt of that aggravated Condemnation and Ruin, which these deluded and unhappy Persons bring upon themselves. For promising them Liberty, they are so far from performing their Engagements, that they are themselves the despicable Slaves of Corruption, and have not Power and Spirit enough to extricate themselves, out of that infamous Bondage ; for by whomsoever any one is defeated and conquered, by him he is of course also enslaved ; and its too evident to admit of Dispute, that these wretched Men are continually conquered by Sin.

And they ought certainly to be reckoned among the most miserable of Mankind ; for if, having escaped the Pollutions of the World,

(e) Swelling Words of Vanity.] It is observed, that here, and in many other Places, these heretical Teachers are represented as seducing their Followers, not by the Power of Miracles, but by the Arts of Address.

(f) Quite escaped, &c.] The Words, οὐτως ἀποφυγόντας, which is the received Reading, certainly signify, those who were thoroughly or entirely escaped. But the Alexandrian Reading, ολίγως, which some other Copies in some Degree imitate, where they do not entirely follow, leaves a strong Suspicion on my Mind, that the Apostle might intend those who had almost escaped. I have therefore taken a Medium, and retaining the usual Reading in the Version, have paraphrased the Words in what I apprehend the most natural Sense, with some Regard to the other Copies.

(g) From

Sect. 4. *World, by the Knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are entangled and subdued by them again, caught as it were in their Nets, and so lying at their Mercy to be wounded and destroyed by them, their last State is certainly much worse than the first,*

2 Pet. II. 20.

21 *For it had been better for them not to have known the Way of Righteousness at all, than having known [it] and professed a Desire, and Resolution of walking in it, to have turned aside from the holy Commandment (g) delivered to them; for by this means their Guilt is so much the more aggravated; their Conduct is the more pernicious to others, and consequently to themselves.*

22 *But indeed when the Matter comes thoroughly to be considered, it will appear, that under all the external Appearances of Reformation, there was still an evil Nature, and Principle remaining, which at length prevailed; so that it is happened to them according to the true Proverb, the Dog [is] returned to gorge up his own Vomit again, and the Sow that was washed from the Filthiness she had before contracted, having still the same unclean Nature prevailing, is returned to wallow in the Mire, and so makes herself as filthy she had ever been before. (Comp. Prov. xxvi. 11.)*

the World through the Knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome; the latter End is worse with them than the Beginning.

21 For it had been better for them not to have known the Way of Righteousness, than after they have known it, to turn from the holy Commandment delivered unto them.

22 But it is happened unto them according to the true Proverb, The Dog is turned to his own Vomit again; and, The Sow that was washed, to her wallowing in the Mire.

(g) *From the holy Commandment.*] The learned Dr. Sherlock, the present Bishop of London, interprets this of some Directions drawn up by the Apostle, relating to the Conduct which Christians should maintain with Regard to these seducing Teachers they are here cautioned against. See his Discourses on Prophecy, Diss. i. pag. 124. It is, however certain, that it is capable of a larger Interpretation, as many holy Commandments remain upon Record in the New Testament, which might guard them against the Evils referred to in the preceding Discourse.

**I M P R O V E -**

I M P R O V E M E N T.

**I**T is indeed Matter of grievous *Lamentation*, that such *Wretches* as those who are here described, should be any where found in the *Christian Church*. Let us be the less surpris'd, if any such *Spots* and *Blemishes* are discovered among us, *on whom the Ends of the World are come*; but let the licentious Character, here drawn, be noted with a just Abhorrence, that if any such Persons are found, they may with becoming Indignation be *put away*. Many there are who seem to be as irrational and ravenous as *brute Beasts*, and are far more *pernicious* to Society, than the Race of savage or poisonous Animals. They are indeed *Children of a Curse*, and they will inherit the *Curse*, who thus contrive to make their Lives *one Scene* of Iniquity, whose Eyes, and Lips, declare more Wickedness in their *Hearts*, than they have Power to execute. But it should be remembered, they are accountable to God, not only for all they *do*, but for all they *desire* and *wish* to do; and they are incessantly aggravating that terrible Account. These Disciples of *Balaam* will surely receive *his Reward*; those *dark Clouds* will quickly, if they continue thus to *obscure* with their Crimes the *Horizon* in which they ought to shine as *Stars*, be doom'd to *Blackness of Darknes for ever*. May Persons of such a Character, how specious soever the *Form* which they wear, be universally detected and disgraced; may none of their *swelling Words of Vanity* intice and ensnare those, who appear just *escaping* from the Delusions of Error and the Fetters of Vice; and may none permit themselves to be seduced by *Promises of Liberty*, from such mean and miserable *Slaves of Corruption*.

Sect. 4.

Ver. 13.

Ver. 12.

Ver. 14.

Ver. 15, 16, 17.

Ver. 18.

Ver. 19.

Ver. 20.

Ver. 21.

Finally, let us learn, by the awful Conclusion of *this Chapter*, to guard against all Temptations to *Apostacy*; may we never, after having long *escaped the Pollutions of the World*, be *intangled* again, and *overcome* by them. *Better*, far better, would it have been for us *not to have known the Way of Righteousness, than, having known it, to turn away from the holy Commandment*: Our *last End*, in this Case, would be *worse than the Beginning*: And those expressive *Similies*, taken from such loathsome and detestable Animals, would not be sufficient to paint out the Degree, in which we should ourselves be loathsome and odious, in the Sight of that God, *who is of purer Eyes than to behold Iniquity, and cannot look upon Evil* (*Habak i. 13*). May we therefore, with the *Righteous, hold on*

Sect. 4. *our Way*; and taking Care to preserve the *Cleanness of our Hands* and Hearts, may we daily *wax stronger and stronger*, (*Job xvii. 9.*) and shine with an increasing Lustre; for *the Path of the Just should be as the shining Light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect Day.* (*Prov. iv. 18.*)

## S E C T. V.

*That they might be effectually guarded against the Artifices of those who scoff at Religion, or lie in wait to deceive, the Apostle directs them to adhere closely and steadily to the holy Scriptures; and represents to them the absolute Certainty, and awful Manner, of the Destruction of this World; concluding with several weighty and pertinent Exhortations.* 2 Pet. III. throughout.

## 2 PETER III. I.

Sect. 5. *T H I S* second Epistle (a) I now write to you, my dearly beloved Brethren, with the same Purpose, with which I wrote the former; in [both] which, I stir up your sincere and upright Minds, for such I hope they indeed are, in the Remembrance of those glorious Principles of our holy Religion, which may be of the greatest Importance to your spiritual Improvement: 2 For it is my ardent Desire, that in order to your

## 2 PETER III. I.

*T H I S* second Epistle, beloved, I now write unto you; in both which I stir up your pure Minds by way of Remembrance:

(a) *This second Epistle.*] Arch-bishop Tillotson seems to think, this last Chapter to be a distinct Epistle by itself. See his Works, Vol. ii. pag. 718. Grotius imagines, that it was written after the Destruction of Jerusalem, and expresses the Triumph of profane Men, when they saw that Christ did not come to Judgment, as it was expected he would then do. He infers from hence, that this Epistle was written not by Simon Peter the Apostle, but some other Simon. But I confess, I see no Reason at all for any such Conclusion; nor do I perceive these Scoffers were then actually come, but only predicted.

(b) *The*

2 That ye may be mindful of the Words which were spoken before by the holy Prophets, and of the Commandment of us the Apostles of the Lord and Saviour :

3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last Days Scoffers, walking after their own Lusts,

4 And saying, Where is the Promise of his Coming? For since the Fathers fell asleep, all Things continue as they were from the Beginning of the Creation.

your Advancement in true Religion, you Sect. 5.  
*may be mindful of the Words which were* <sup>2</sup>Pet. III. 2  
*spoken long before our own Time, by the*  
*holy Prophets* who lived in remote Ages;  
*and also, of the Commandment of us the*  
*Apostles of the Lord and Saviour (b),* who  
 hath condescended by our Instrumentality,  
 to send you Messages upon which your Sal-  
 vation evidently depends; a Method, which  
 divine Wisdom and Love hath pitched up-  
 on, to accomplish that important and de-  
 sirable End : *Knowing this first,* as what 3  
 is most necessary to be remembered and  
 considered, *that in the last Days,* which are  
 now approaching apace, *there shall come*  
*profane Mockers (c),* walking in a most  
 scandalous and licentious Manner, *according*  
*to the Impulse of their own* uncontrolled  
*Lusts and Appetites;* *And they shall* 4  
 deride the Hope of the faithful Followers  
 of Christ, *saying,* “ *Where is the* boasted  
 “ *Promise and Declaration of his Coming,*  
 “ *in which these silly deluded Creatures re-*  
 “ *posed so great a Confidence; for since the*  
 “ *Fathers of former Ages are fallen a-*  
 “ *sleep (d), all Things remain just in the*  
 “ *same State and Situation, as [they were]*  
 “ *from the beginning of the Creation; the*  
 “ *Times*

(b) *The Commandment of us the Apostles of the Lord and Saviour.*] Some translate this Clause, *The Commandment of the Apostles of our Lord and Saviour;* and would from hence infer, that *Simon*, who wrote this Epistle, was not an *Apostle* himself; but the Version I have given, is most agreeable to the Order of the original Words. The *learned Author*, whom I mentioned above (*Sect. IV. Note (g)*) observes, that the *Apostolic Constitutions* affirm, there was a *Counsel of the Apostles* called on Occasion of these Teachers, whom *St. Peter* guards against, and that all in common delivered this Advice, which he has admonished the *Christian Converts* to regard.

(c) *Mockers.*] *Arch-bishop Tillotson* explains this of the *Carpocratians*, a large Sect of the *Gnosticks*, who deny'd the Resurrection of the Dead, and the future Judgment, and appeared quickly after the writing *this Epistle*. See *Tillotson's Works*, Vol. ii. pag. 711.

(d) *Since the Fathers are fallen asleep.*] *Mr. Grove* would render it, *for except that the Fathers are fallen asleep;* that is, That the Inhabitants of the World are continually changing, and new Generations rising instead of the old, all other Things continue as they were. See *Grove's Addit. Posthum. Serm. Vol. i. pag. 200.*

Sect. 5. "Times and Seasons revolve as they did  
 before, and there is no such marvellous  
 2 Pet. III. 4. "Interposition of this Jesus, as to turn the  
 "Sun into Darkness, and the Moon into  
 "Blood, to cause the Stars to fall from  
 "Heaven, to bring down Vengeance and  
 "Destruction on all his Enemies, and to  
 "confer an ample Reward on his Servants."

5 *But this they willingly are ignorant of, and they continue ignorant of it through Affectation, plain and obvious as it is from the Word of God, that all Nature is in his Hand and at his Disposal, and that he can in whatsoever Time and Manner he pleases, change and overthrow its universal System; they know, and consider not, that by the almighty and ever efficacious Word of God, the Heavens, with all their Host, were produced of old, and the Earth subsisting from the Water, with which the Mass of it was at first covered; till by the divine Command, it emerged from it, and the liquid Element flowed to its appointed Channel; and God ordained that the Earth should be nourished and supported by Water, which is the*

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the Word of God the Heavens were of old, and the Earth standing out of the Water, and in the Water.

6 *Life of the vegetable Creation. Yet that very Element, from which it had its Original and Support, became at length, by divine Appointment, the Means of its Destruction; whereby (e), that is, in consequence of which Constitution of Things, under a different Direction and Agency of God, the World that then was, being deluged with an irresistible Inundation of Water, perished, and every Thing upon the Face of it was destroyed; none of the human Race, or other terrestrial Animals surviving, but those*

6 Whereby the World that then was, being overflowed with Water, perished.

(e) *Whereby.*] Very possibly *δι' αὐτῶν* refers to *οὐρανοὶ, the Heavens*, mentioned above, and may relate to the *Windows of Heaven* being opened, and pouring forth upon the Earth a destructive Deluge of Water.

(f) *One*

7 But the Heavens and the Earth which are now, by the same Word are kept in Store, reserved unto Fire against the Day of Judgment, and Perdition of ungodly Men.

those who, by God's special Providence, were preserved in the Ark. It appears from hence credible in Reason, as well as certain from divine Revelation, that the Earth may be dissolved, and its Inhabitants removed. But we know, that God has determined to effect this great Revolution, by a Method far different from that of the former; for the Heavens and the Earth, which now [exist], are treasured up, as it were, by the same Word, and guarded from all Danger of a second Deluge of Water, being kept to be dissolved by a Deluge of Fire, on the Day, which God has appointed for the Display of his Righteousness, at the universal Judgment, and for the Destruction of ungodly Men, who alas! so generally abound, and towards whom his Patience has been so long exercised. This is indeed,

Sect. 5.  
2 Pet. III. 7.

8 But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one Thing, that one Day is with the Lord as a thousand Years, and a thousand Years as one Day.

in the course of divine Providence, long delayed; but let not this one Thing be hid from you, my dearly Beloved, that one Day [is] with the Lord as a thousand Years (f), and a thousand Years as one Day; all the Divisions of our Time are so absolutely disproportion-able to his Eternity, that the Difference, between one and another of them, seems to be lost in his Presence; and a Vengeance, certainly to be inflicted after a thousand Years, is nearer in his Estimation, than that which is to be executed To-morrow, is in ours.

8

9 The Lord is not slack concerning his Promise (as some

And indeed, as to the Delay of this awful Season, the Lord is not slow concerning the Accomplishment of his Promise to his People, who look for this compleat Deliverance, as some, under the Infirmities of their Im-  
patience

9

(f) One Day as a thousand Years:] This was, as many have observed, a proverbial Expression among the Jews, to signify, that no finite Duration bears any Proportion to the Eternity of God. Plutarch has a Passage exactly parallel to it in his Discourse on the Slowness of the divine Vengeance.

(g) The

310 *But the Day of the Lord will come as a Thief in the Night,*

Sect. 5. patience, may be ready to count [it] *Slowness*; but good Reasons are to be assigned for it, most consistent with the Perfections of the divine Nature; especially this, That he is *Long-suffering towards us*, and endures in great Compassion, as *not willing that any should perish, but that all should come over to Repentance*, and thereby, to Salvation; to which, by the Exercise of this Patience, he seems tenderly and graciously to invite the worst and most unworthy of

2 Pet. III. 9.

10 Mankind. *But at length the Day of Patience will have its Period, and this Day of Retribution will come, suddenly and irresistibly; yes, Sirs, the Day of the Lord (g) will come as a Thief in the Night, (Matt. xxiv. 43.) will break in upon Men, when they least expect it, with a terrible Alarm; even that Day, in which the Heavens shall pass away with a great Noise, and the Elements, of which this goodly Frame of Nature is composed, being set on Fire, shall be dissolved, and the Earth and all its Works shall be burnt up, so that none of the Ornaments of Nature, or of Art, shall any longer continue; but the whole shall be one undistinguished Heap of smoking Desolation.*

11 Oh, *therefore*, be persuaded to lay this to Heart, and seriously and daily reflect with yourselves, *since all these Things*, which are now so ready to engross your Thoughts and your

some Men count Slackness) but his Long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any one should perish, but that all should come to Repentance.

10 But the Day of the Lord will come as a Thief in the Night; in the which the Heavens shall pass away with a great Noise, and the Elements shall melt with fervent Heat, the Earth also and the Works that are therein shall be burnt up.

11 Seeing then that all these Things shall be dissolved,

(g) *The Day of the Lord.*] It has always appeared surprizing to me, that Dr. Hammond should refer this Context to the coming of Christ to the Destruction of Jerusalem. Mr. Ray has most solidly confuted him at large, in his *three Discourses*, pag. 244, 5, urging the Opposition between the *Deluge*, and the *Day* here spoken of in the preceding Verses, and that a long Delay was intimated in the Word *thousand Years*; whereas the Destruction of Jerusalem happened, at furthest, about twenty Years after the writing of this Epistle. *The Day of Judgment of ungodly Men*, mentioned Ver. 7. does also, I think, afford a sufficient Answer to this Hypothesis; as well as the mention of a *new Heaven and Earth*, as what was immediately to succeed this important Scene.

(h) *Hasten*



ved, what manner of Persons ought ye to be in all holy Conversation and Godliness,

12 Looking for and hastening unto the coming of the Day of God, wherein the Heavens being on Fire shall be dissolved, and the Elements shall melt with fervent Heat?

13 Nevertheless we, according to his Promise, look for new Heavens and a new Earth, wherein dwelleth Righteousness.

14 Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such Things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in Peace, without Spot, and Blameless :

15 And account that the Long-suffering of our Lord is Salvation; even as our beloved

your Affection, shall be dissolved, what manner of Persons ought ye to be in the Exercise of holy Conversation and Piety. We

Sect. 5.  
2Pet. III. 12.

Christians, I say, who have the express Revelation of these Things, how should we be affected with them, *looking for, and*, as it were, *hastening on* with our ardent Wishes (*b*), *the coming of the Day of God*, though it be attended with so much Terror, tho' it be the Day in which the Heavens being on Fire, as I said, shall be dissolved, and the Elements shall melt with fervent Heat?

13

Yet still, thro' the divine Grace, it is a Day that we have Reason not only to wish, but even to long for, as we, according to the Tenor of his unfailling Promise, look for a glorious and transporting Change, which will then commence, for new Heavens, and a new Earth, new and everlasting Abodes, which divine Mercy will then open to our raptured View, into which it will conduct us, and in which Righteousness, perfect Holiness and Felicity dwelleth.

14

Therefore, my beloved, bearing these great Truths in your Minds, give up your whole Souls to their Influence, and expecting these Things, these most awful, and important Scenes, endeavour with the utmost Diligence, that ye may found by him, by your great Lord, who will preside over even this dissolving World, in Peace, and may be presented spotless and blameless before him.

15

And while this triumphant Season is delayed, account the Long-suffering of our Lord Jesus Christ to proceed, as it really does, not from the least Defect of Power, or Forgetfulness of his Promise, but from his

(b) *Hastening on, &c.*] This is the *Emphasis* of the original Expression; according to the Version of *Erasmus Schmidius*, supported by several pertinent Quotations from the *Classicks*, by *Raphelius*, (*Annot. ex Polyb. and ex Herod. in loc.*) and by *Mr. Blackwall*, (*Sacr. Class. Vol. ii. pag. 180.*)

(i) *Our*

Sect. 5. his gracious Desire to promote the *Salvation* of his People, and to afford to all, who are willing to embrace it, an Opportunity of securing this final and everlasting Deliverance; *as also our beloved Brother Paul (i)*, whom I am far from honouring the less on account of his being sent to the Gentiles, according to the *Wisdom given to him* by the Inspiration of the holy Spirit, *has written*. The Passage to which I refer, is in a Letter immediately directed to the Romans, but it may be considered as designed for you, (k) and for the general Use of all Christians: I mean, that in which he expressly testifies, that the Goodness of God leadeth to

2 Pet. III. 15.

16 Repentance: (Rom. ii. 4.) *As also, in all [his] other Epistles; speaking in them of such Persons as I have now described; for undoubtedly the Words are peculiarly applicable to them. In which Writings of his, and particularly in that from whence these Words are taken, there are some Things hard to be understood (l), which the unteachable and unstable torture and wrest, as they also do o-*  
*ther*

beloved Brother Paul also, according to the Wisdom given unto him, hath written unto you;

16 As also in all his Epistles, speaking in them of these Things: In which are some Things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other Scriptures, unto their own Destruction.

(i) *Our Brother Paul*. It is very evident from hence not only that *St. Peter* maintained a reverent Regard for *Paul*, and looked upon him as a *Brother*, but also, that he had seen *his Epistles* before he wrote this.

(k) *Has written to you*.] *Lord Barrington* is of Opinion, that this refers to *some Epistle* not now extant, which *St. Paul* wrote to the *Proselytes of the Gate*; imagining the converting and edifying them to have been a *mixed Province*, partly managed by the *Apostles of the Circumcision*, and partly by those of the *Uncircumcision*. *Miscell. Sac. Ess.* ii. pag. 110. But as I think the whole Foundation of this Distinction *groundless*, I look upon this Passage, as a very instructive Admonition to all Christians, to consider *St. Paul*, and the other *Apostles*, as writing to them in their *Epistles*, so far as a *Similarity* of Circumstances would admit. In which View it is of infinite Importance that we should consider them, as written to us, in like Manner as *St. Peter* tells us, even the ancient *Prophets* considered the great Subjects of which these *Epistles* treat, as relating to them. 1 Pet. I. 12.

(l) *Some Things hard to be understood*.] Some by *ev ais* understand not the *Epistles of Paul*, but the Things spoken of. But as these are plainly mentioned as spoken of in the *Scriptures*, this Interpretation will still leave us under a Necessity of vindicating the *Perspicuity* of some Part of Scripture. Not to mention that there are several *Manuscripts* of considerable Authority which read *ev ais*, which expressly refers to *St. Paul's Epistles*.—It is remarkable, that *Barclay* explains this of the *Ninth Chapter*

ther Scriptures, whether belonging to the Sect. 5.  
 Old Testament, or the New, to their own  
 Destruction; putting such perverse Interpretations upon them, with some Shew or Colour of Reason, as no candid Man would, on the whole, have thought of, or will admit. *You therefore, dearly beloved, knowing* 17

17 Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know *these Things* before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the Error of the Wicked, fall from your own Stedfastness.

*ing [these Things] before, knowing especially in how awful a Manner the Scene will close, and what dreadful Vengeance will be executed on all wicked Men, and especially on those that pollute the Church of Christ, into which they have professed to enter; guard [yourselves,] that ye may not, being entangled with the Error of the ungodly, fall from your own Stedfastness, which by God's Assistance you have hitherto retained. But grow in Grace, more and more, advancing from one Stage of practical Religion to another, and increasing daily in the Knowledge of our divine Lord and almighty and all-gracious Saviour, Jesus Christ: To him [be] Glory throughout all the Churches, and all the Creation of God, both now and for ever. Amen.*

18 But grow in Grace, and in the Knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ: To him be Glory both now and for ever. Amen.

17

18

I M P R O V E M E N T.

WHO is there, that can be so sluggish and lethargic, as not to be in some Measure awakened and alarmed by the awful Views here given, of the *Dissolution*, as well as the *Creation of the World, by the Word of God!* Who must not even tremble when he turns his Eye back to the dreadful Ruin brought on it by the universal *Deluge*; when *that Element*, which had been, and is, the Means

Ver: 5.

Ver: 6.

ter of the Romans, in which there are some Things which seem to be contrary to God's Long-suffering to all, and which are very liable to be perniciously wrested. See *Barcl. Apol. pag. 155.* It is by many Writers justly remarked, that the Difficulty is said to affect, chiefly *αμαρτες* and *ασυμμετοι*, *unteachable* and *unsteady* Men, whose

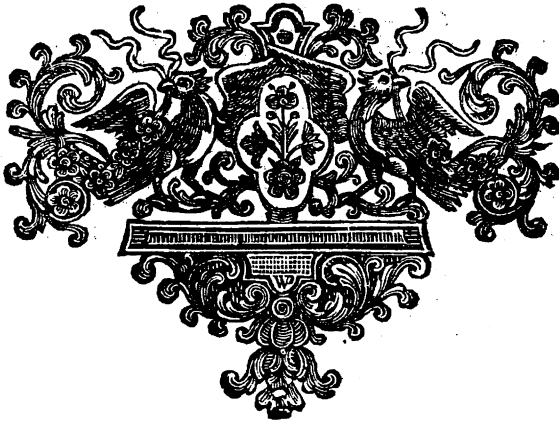
314 *Reflections on the Character, and Danger, of Scoffers:*

- Means and Instrument of *Life* to the whole Animal Creation, at the divine Signal, became the Means and Instrument of *Death!* Who can be unaffected, when he seriously reflects on *the Heavens passing away with a great Noise? on the Elements melting with fervent Heat? on the burning up the Earth, and all Things therein?* Let *Scoffers who walk after their own Lusts*, madly deride *the Promise of his Coming*; let them deliver over their Taunts and Insults to each other, thro' the Succession of a *thousand Years*: Were his Coming at the Distance of *ten Thousand Generations*, or a yet remoter Distance, they who have any just Impression on their Minds, of the *Eternity of God*, or the Immortality of the human Soul, would discern the important Day of final Retribution, as immediate and present to their View. While *they scoff* and deride the tremendous Reality, let us *hear* the Declaration of its Approach with the profoundest Attention; and let our Souls enter deeply into the alarming and important Reflection. If indeed we *look for such great Things* as these, *what manner of Persons ought we to be in all holy Conversation and Godliness*; that we may be *found of him in Peace, without Spot or Blemish?* And if we desire this Blessedness, (as who can fail earnestly to desire it, who hath a firm and steady persuasion of its Reality?) can we possibly live in tolerable *Composure*, if we have little or no Reason to conclude we shall obtain an Interest and Share in it? Let us be all concerned *that we may grow in Grace, and in the Knowledge of our Lord and Saviour*; by the Knowledge of whom every Grace will be greatly revived and strengthened. On these lively and important Subjects of Meditation let our Thoughts frequently dwell; and let us endeavour, that the Sentiments which result from them, may be wrought into our Hearts, and controul our Lives. And as for those *hard Sayings*, which occur, either in *St. Peter* or *St. Paul*, or any other sacred and inspired Writer, let us neither *wrest* and torture them to our own *Mischief* and Destruction, nor be so curiously and sedulously diving into their Meaning, as to neglect these, and the like

Prejudices indispose them for admitting the Truth, or whose Levity prevents their due Solicitude to retain it; but not Persons of *humble teachable* Minds, resolute in pursuing, and maintaining the Truth. And the *Remedy* prescribed, is not *laying aside* the Scriptures on account of their Obscurity, as some would persuade us to do; but a Concern to *grow in Grace, &c.* (Ver. 18) The Expression *σπείλαινον*, *wrest*, or *torture*, as on the Rack, plainly implies, that *Violence* is done, by these bad Men, to some Passages of Scripture, to make them speak an unnatural Sense, which may answer their own Purposes. And truly he must know little of the History of *theological* Controversies, who hath not observed many deplorable Instances of this.

like, plain and serious Admonitions, this *sincere Milk of the Word*, that we may grow thereby. May all the Powers of our Souls be exerted in securing their Deliverance from Wrath to come, that so the *Patience of God*, and his *Long-suffering towards us*, may indeed prove *Salvation*. And if that be indeed the Case, the Light of Heaven will mightily illustrate those *Mysteries* both of the divine Word and Providence, which our weak and defective Organs of Vision have not enabled us clearly to discern and unfold, while by the comparatively fainter, though in itself glorious, Light of Revelation, we are guided through this dark and gloomy Valley.

The END of the FAMILY EXPOSITOR on the second Catholic EPISTLE of St. PETER.





# The Family Expofitor:

O R, A

## P A R A P H R A S E

O N T H E F I R S T

C A T H O L I C E P I S T L E

O F

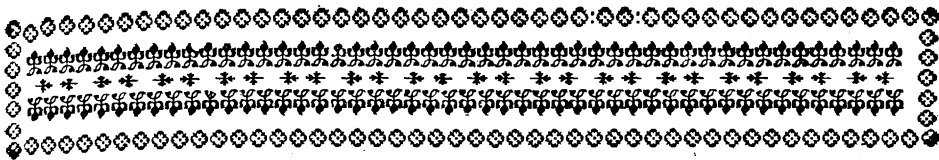
St. *J* *O* *H* *N*.

W I T H

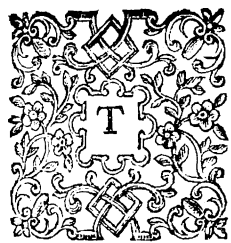
Critical N O T E S, and a practical I M P R O V E M E N T  
of each S E C T I O N.







A  
 GENERAL INTRODUCTION  
 TO THE  
 PARAPHRASE and NOTES  
 ON THE  
 FIRST CATHOLIC EPISTLE  
 OF  
 St. J O H N.



THE Apostle *John*, to whom the unanimous Suffrage of the *Ancients* hath ascribed *this Epistle*, is the same with *John the Evangelist*, who is said to have written his Gospel in extreme *old Age*; and, as *Eusebius* informs us, with a View to record some Particulars concerning our blessed Lord, which had been omitted by the other Evangelists, though he explicitly acknowledged the Truth of their History, as far as it went, and confirmed it by his own Testimony. (See *Euseb. Eccles. Hist. Lib. iii. Cap. 24.*) According to the Title of this Epistle in the *old Italic Version*, and the Account which is given us by *St. Austin* and others, it was written to the *Christian Converts in Parthia*; which was a Part of the upper *Asia*. But in the Opinion of the learned *Dr Mill*, (see his *Prolegom. pag. 18. § 150. Edit. Kuster.*) this Notion had its sole Original from a Tradition, that the Apostle *John* had preached the Gospel in that Country; whereas if we may credit the Report, mentioned by *Eusebius*, it was *St. Thomas* who exercised his Apostolical Office among the *Parthians*. Others have conjectured from some Passages

in this Epistle, in which the Persons, whom *St. John* addresses, are represented, as *having known Christ from the Beginning*, (see *Chap. ii. 13, 14.* and other Places,) that he writes only to the *Jewish* Christians, who inhabited *Judæa* and *Galilee*. But I very much question, whether these Expressions will support the Strefs which hath been laid upon them; and accordingly, in my *Paraphrase*, I have assigned them a more general Interpretation.

And as we find nothing but Conjecture and Uncertainty concerning the *Persons*, to whom this Epistle was addressed, so there is very little Precision to be expected, in our Enquiries concerning the *Time*, when it was written. From the *Apostle's* saying, *Chap. ii. 18. It is now the last Time*; and *Chap. iv. 1.* that *many false Prophets are gone out into the World*, compared with *Mat. xxiv. 24.* where this is mentioned as a Sign of the approaching Dissolution of the *Jewish* Commonwealth; some have indeed inferred this Epistle was written a very short Time before the Destruction of *Jerusalem*: Whereas several others, (and in particular *Dr Mill*,) are of Opinion its Date should be assigned to the Year 91 or 92. — It was probably written before the *Apocalypse*, as I shall have Occasion to observe hereafter, in *Seçt. IV. Note (b)*.

In the *Stile* of this *Apostle* there is a remarkable Peculiarity; and especially in this Epistle. His Sentences, considered separately, are exceeding clear and intelligible; but when we search for their Connection, we frequently meet with greater Difficulties than we do even in the Epistles of *St. Paul*. The principal Signature and Characteristic of his Manner is an artless and amiable Simplicity, and a singular Modesty and Candor, in Conjunction with a wonderful Sublimity of Sentiment. His Conceptions are apparently delivered to us in the Order in which they arose to his own Mind, and are not the Product of artificial Reasoning, or laboured Investigation.

His leading *Design* is, “ To demonstrate the Vanity of Faith separate from Morality, to sooth and refine the warm and over-zealous Tempers of the Christians, to whom he writes, into that amiable Charity and Love for which he himself was so eminent and illustrious, and to guard and arm them against the Snares and Efforts of *Antichrist*, the grand *Apostate*, and Seducer of the *Christian* Church; and of all who were endued with his Spirit.”

In Pursuance of which pious and benevolent Intention, he first testifies the divine Purity and Holiness, and the Grace and Mercy which is exhibited in *Jesus Christ*, to all who lament and confess their Sins with sincere Desires of Reformation and Amendment:

(*Chap.*

(Chap. i. 1, to the End.) And then he urges the Propitiation and Intercession of *Christ*, as Arguments to that Obedience, that brotherly Love, and that Victory over the World, which are the genuine Fruits of divine Love. (Chap. ii. 1,—17.) And that they might not be perverted from their Course of Fidelity and holy Obedience, he fore-warns them of the many *Antichrists*, who were springing up in the World; directing them to the best Preservatives against their seducing and insnaring Doctrines. (Ver. 18,—28.) With the same Intention of awakening a generous Ambition in their Breasts, to attain the divine Resemblance, he discourages of those exalted Priviledges, to which Christians, as the Children of God, are entitled, and urges the Necessity of Holiness, both in Heart and Life, to prove that we are in that blessed Number. Ver. 29,—iii. 10. In this View; namely, as the grand Characteristic of the Children of God; he further inforces brotherly Love: (Ver. 11, to the End.) Cautioning them more particularly against being deceived by seducing Spirits, and directing them in what Manner they might distinguish between the Spirit of Truth, and the Spirit of Error: (Chap. iv. 1,—12.) Drawing to a Conclusion, with declaring his general Design to be the Confirmation of their Faith; reminding them of the Ground they had to hope, their Prayers should be heard for themselves and others, who had not sinned unpardonably; and at the Close, adding a Reflection on the happy Difference, which their knowing God in *Jesus Christ* had made between them and an ignorant and ungodly World. Ver. 13, to the End.



A

## P A R A P H R A S E

A N D

## N O T E S

O N T H E

F I R S T C A T H O L I C E P I S T L E

O F

S t . J O H N .

## S E C T . I .

*The Apostle John opens the pious and charitable Design which he had in writing this Epistle, and lays the Foundation of what he has further to say, in bearing his Testimony to the Holiness of God, and to the Mercy which he exhibits in Jesus Christ to all who are truly sensible of their Sins, and confess them with sincere Desires of Reformation and Amendment. I. John I. 1, to the End.*

I JOHN I. 1.

THAT which was from the Beginning, which we have heard, which we have

I JOHN I. 1.

MY Christian Brethren, I am now going to address you on a very important Subject; to speak of *that which was from the Beginning* of the Gospel-Declaration, and indeed from the Beginning of the World, and previous to its Existence; of *that which we have heard* most credibly attested by au-

Sect I.  
I John I. 1.

S s 2.

thenticks

And truly our Fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.

divine Grace, exalted: And truly it is a glorious Priviledge, well worthy your most ready Acceptance, and earnest pursuit; for *our Communion [is] with God the Father, and with his only begotten Son Jesus Christ, as we are happy in an intimate and inseparable Union with each.*

Sect. 1.  
John I. 3.

4 And these Things write we unto you, that your Joy may be full.

*And these Things we write to you, that the Divine Life may be so improved in your Souls, and your Meetness for the heavenly Inheritance may be so apparent, and so advanced, that your Joy may, as far as pessible, be fulfilled, and no Circumstance, which this mortal State will admit, may be wanting to compleat it.*

4

5 This then is the Message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no Darknes at all.

*And this is the great Declaration which we have heard from him, upon which our Faith most chearfully centers, and which we again declare unto you, That GOD is perfect Light (c), consummate Knowledge and Holiness; and in him there is no Darknes at all, not the least Mixture of Ignorance, or of Sin.*

5

6 If we say that we have Fellowship with him, and walk in Darknes, we lie, and do not the Truth:

*And if we pretend to say, that we have Communion with him, and walk in Darknes, that is, go on in the Practice of Sin, which is as contrary to his holy Nature, as Darknes is to that of Light; whatever Professions we may make of our Acquaintance with Christianity, and of being zealous for its Interests, we lye, and do not the Truth, but act in direct Opposition to it.*

6

7 But if we walk in the Light, as he is in the Light, we have Fellowship one with

*But if, on the other Hand, we walk in the Light of Holiness, as he himself is ever in the Light of it, and surrounded with it as his brightest Glory, we have then Communion with him, and with one another in him; and tho' we are indeed conscious to ourselves of many past Offences, for which so holy a God might for ever banish us from his Presence,*

7

(c) God is Light.] This expresses his most clear and perfect Knowledge, for Light discovers all Things; his unspotted Holiness, for Light is incapable of any Pollution; and his sovereign Goodness and Happiness, for Light, joined with vital Heat, inspires Pleasure into universal Nature. See Dr. Bates's Works, pag. 537.

(d) If

Sec. 1. *I* thentick Witnesfes, and *that which we have* not taken merely on their Credit, but have *seen with our own Eyes* ; we are going to treat of *that which we have attentively looked upon (a)*, and viewed fo near and fo long, that it is impoffible we fhould miftake in it ; and which, in Allufion to the Condefcenfion of our bleffed Redeemer in fubmitting himfelf to be examined by our Touch and Feeling ; I may venture to fay, that even *our Hands have handled (b) of the Word of eternal Life.*

have feen with our Eyes, which we have looked upon, and our Hands have handled of the Word of Life ;

2 And well may it be filed the Word of Life ; for *even* Jesus, who himfelf is the living Word, and eternal *Life, was graciously manifested* in human Flefh for the Redemption of finful Men ; *and we faw [it]* in its full Evidence, *and we chearfully bear our renewed Testimony, and declare unto you that eternal Life, which* from the Foundation of the World *was with the Father,* moft intimately converfant with him, and united to him ; but in due Time, by affuming the human Nature into an Union with the Divine, *was manifested to us* with all the genuine Characters of the promifed Meffiah.

2 (For the Life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear Witness, and fhew unto you that eternal Life which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us)

3 And in Confequence of this, *what we have feen and intimately converfed with,* and have not only heard of, but have ourfelves *heard* fpeaking to us, *we declare unto you ; that ye alfo may have Communion with us* in that Dignity and Felicity to which we are, by divine

3 That which we have feen and heard, declare we unto you, that ye alfo may have Fellowship with us :  
And

(a) *That which we have attentively looked upon : ο εθεωραμεθα.*] Mr. Blackwall obferves (in his *Sacr. Clafs. Vol. ii. pag. 152.*) that this is by no means fynonymous with the former Clause, but hath a more emphatical Signification, namely, that of *beholding attentively,* with a kind of Delight and Admiration.

(b) *Our Hands have handled.*] This probably refers to *Thomas's* having infifted upon handling *Chrift's* Body, in Proof of his *Refurrection* ; which being permitted, was a Confirmation of this important Fa&t to all After-Ages. *Dr. Berryman* fupposes thefe Words were particularly leveled againft the *Menandrians*, who denied the real Exiftence of the *Flefh of Chrift*, and asserted that it was only a vifible Appearance : They were therefore called *δουκται*, and *φανταστας*. See his *Hift. of the Trin. pag. 77.*

(c) God

And truly our Fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.

divine Grace, exalted: *And truly* it is a glorious Priviledge, well worthy your most ready Acceptance, and earnest pursuit; for *our Communion [is] with God the Father, and with his only begotten Son Jesus Christ,* as we are happy in an intimate and inseparable Union with each.

Sect. 1.  
John I. 3.

4 And these Things write we unto you, that your Joy may be full.

*And these Things we write to you,* that the Divine Life may be so improved in your Souls, and your Meetness for the heavenly Inheritance may be so apparent, and so advanced, *that your Joy may, as far as possible, be fulfilled,* and no Circumstance, which this mortal State will admit, may be wanting to compleat it.

4

5 This then is the Message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no Darknes at all.

*And this is the great Declaration which we have heard from him,* upon which our Faith most chearfully centers, *and which we again declare unto you, That GOD is perfect Light (c), consummate Knowledge and Holiness; and in him there is no Darknes at all,* not the least Mixture of Ignorance, or of Sin.

5

6 If we say that we have Fellowship with him, and walk in Darknes, we lie, and do not the Truth:

*And if we pretend to say, that we have Communion with him, and walk in Darknes,* that is, go on in the Practice of Sin, which is as contrary to his holy Nature, as Darknes is to that of Light; whatever Professions we may make of our Acquaintance with Christianity, and of being zealous for its Interests, *we lye, and do not the Truth,* but act in direct Opposition to it.

6

7 But if we walk in the Light, as he is in the Light, we have Fellowship one with

*But if, on the other Hand, we walk in the Light of Holiness, as he himself is ever in the Light of it, and surrounded with it as his brightest Glory, we have then Communion with him, and with one another in him; and tho' we are indeed conscious to ourselves of many past Offences, for which so holy a God might for ever banish us from his Presence,*

7

(c) *God is Light.*] This expresses his most clear and perfect Knowledge, for Light discovers all Things; his unspotted Holiness, for Light is incapable of any Pollution; and his sovereign Goodness and Happiness, for Light, joined with vital Heat, inspires Pleasure into universal Nature. See Dr. Bates's Works, pag. 537.

(d) *If*



Sect. 1. fence, and of many remaining Imperfections, which might discourage our Approaches to him, we have this grand Consolation, that

John. I. 7.

*the Blood of Jesus Christ his Son, cleanses us from all our Sins,* be they ever so numerous,

8 or ever so heinous. And indeed it is a

Consolation which we absolutely need; for

*if we say, that we have no Sin,* it is too evident that *we grossly deceive ourselves, and*

*the Truth is not in us:* We must be destitute of every good Principle, if we are utterly insensible of our own Guilt and Im-

9 perfection. But *if we confess our Sins, (d)*

to GOD, with a becoming Lowliness and Contrition of Spirit, *he is not only merciful*

and gracious, but *faithful and just, to forgive us our Sins,* in Consideration of his

Engagements to our great Surety, and to us

by him, *and effectually to cleanse us from all Unrighteousness* by his atoning Blood, and

the Influence of that sanctifying Spirit, which it has purchased for us.

10

This is our Ground of Confidence, and our Refuge as Sinners; and let us often re-

new our Applications to it: For as on this Foundation we are indeed secure, so on the

other Hand, *if we are so rash and presumptuous, as to say, that we have not sinned,* we

not only lie ourselves, which in every Instance must be displeasing to the God of

Truth; but *we, in effect, make him a Lyar (e),* who, in the Constitution of the Gos-

pel which he hath sent to all, goes on a Sup-

position, that every Soul to whom it is ad-

dressed,

with another, and the Blood of Jesus Christ his Son, cleanseth us from all Sin.

8 If we say that we have no Sin, we deceive ourselves, and the Truth is not in us.

9 If we confess our Sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our Sins, and to cleanse us from all Unrighteousness.

10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make him

(d) *If we confess our Sins.*] This so evidently refers to confessing our Sins to God, and not to the Priest, that one could hardly forbear being astonished, that it should ever have been urged in Behalf of Auricular Confession; if it were not for the many Examples we have of such shameful and preposterous Reasoning in the Arguments which are pleaded in Favour of Popery.

(e) *We make him a Lyar.*] This Text plainly implies, that Christianity does in Effect assert, that we are all in a degenerate State, and consequently is a clear Proof of the Corruption of human Nature.

him a Liar, and his Word  
is not in us.

dressed, is under Guilt and Condemnation. And consequently, if we assert and maintain our own personal Innocence, we shall shew, that his Word is not in us, that this humbling Message of his Grace has never been cordially received by us, nor hath produced its genuine Effects on our Hearts.

Sect. 1.

1 John I. 10.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

**H**OW seriously should we attend to the *Word of Life*, when addressed to us by those who were so *intimately acquainted* with it, and with him who brought it and revealed it to the World. In like Manner may all concerned in dispensing it, be able to say, that it is what they *have heard*, and, as it were, *seen and handled*; yea, *tasted and felt* in all its Sweetness and Energy. *Jesus Christ* is indeed that *Life* which was *with the Father*, and is now *manifested unto us*: May we ever regard him as such, and have *Communion* with *John*, and the other sacred Writers, in their *Communion with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ*. Surely they, who by Experience know the Delight and Benefit of that *Communion*, will desire that others may be Partakers of it with themselves. Their own *Joy*, instead of being diminished, will be rather rendered more *complete and intense*, by being in this Manner imparted to others.

Nothing can be of more Importance, than to form right and worthy Conceptions of God; and that we may do so, let us reflect on him, as the purest and even unmingled *Light*, without any the least Shade of *Darkness*; as *Truth* in Perfection, without any Mixture of Falsehood or Evil. And let us be particularly concerned, that as we desire to *have Fellowship with him*, we allow not ourselves to *walk in Darkness* of any Kind, but *put off all its Works*, that we may *put on the whole Armour of Light, and walk in the Light, as he is of the Light*. Let every Action of our Lives, every Thought of our Hearts, be brought to the *Light of the Gospel*, and tried and proved according to it. And as it would be very vain and criminal in us, to *deny our having any Sin*, as it would be Self-Deceit to imagine it, and Self-Confusion to affirm it, let us, with humble Thankfulness, apply to that *Blood*, which is able to *cleanse us from all Unrighteousness*. Most freely *confessing our Sins* in all their Aggravations, so far as our weak and limited Thoughts can attain to the View of them, let us humbly plead his Promise, and his Covenant.

Ver. 1.

Ver. 2.

Ver. 3.

Ver. 4.

Ver. 5.

Ver. 6.

Ver. 7.

Ver. 10.

Ver. 9.

Sect. 1. venant; and then *Fidelity* and *Justice* will join with *Mercy*, to ensure our Deliverance from the Punishment they merit: So that instead of being, as we have deserved, *Companions* in Condemnation and Ruin, we shall *share together* in that compleat Freedom from all the penal Consequences of Sin, which will be the Portion of all those who truly repent and obey the Gospel.

## S E C T. II.

*Farther to promote that Holiness of Temper, which it is the great Design of this Epistle to recommend, the Apostle urges the Propitiation and Intercession of Christ, and the Necessity of shewing our Love to God, by Obedience, by Brotherly Love, and by overcoming the immoderate Love of the World. I John II. 1, —17.*

## I JOHN II. 1.

Sect. 2. **P**ERMIT me now to address myself to you with all Tenderness and Endearment, as *my little Children*, and to assure you, that *I write these Things* concerning the Readiness of God to forgive Sin, not to encourage you to offend, but with a contrary Purpose, *that you may not sin*. And I hope you will consider it, as your highest Interest, to guard against that greatest and most formidable of all Evils. *But if any Man*, through the Surprize of a violent Temptation, and remaining Infirmity of human Nature, do fall into *Sin*, let him not absolutely despair, as if his Case were hopeless; for we have still this great and important Consolation, that if we are true Believers, *we have an Advocate with the*  
Fa-

## I JOHN II. 1.

**M**Y little Children, these Things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any Man sin, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus

Jesus Christ the righteous.

*Father* (a), to plead for our Pardon and re-  
new our Peace, even *Jesus Christ, the right-  
eous one*; that great exalted Saviour, who  
was himself by way of Eminence, and in  
such a Degree, as no other Person dwelling  
in human Flesh ever was, so perfectly right-  
eous, that his Obedience absolutely an-  
swered the Demands of the Divine Law in  
all its Extent and Purity. *And he is the*

Sect. 2.  
I John II. 1.

2 And he is the Propiti-  
ation for our Sins: and not  
for ours only, but also for  
the Sins of the whole World.

great *Propitiation for our Sins*, to whom,  
under that Character, we have fled with  
cheerful Confidence; and it is a Joy to us  
to reflect, that he is *not only* the Propitiation  
for ours, but also [for the Sins] of the whole  
World (b): No Nation under Heaven is  
excluded from a Share in the Blessings he  
hath purchased, nor shall any Person what-  
soever be excluded, let his Iniquities have  
been ever so great and aggravated, if he be  
disposed to make a proper Application to  
him. *And by this certain Mark and E-  
vidence, we know that we are acquainted  
with him* to the most happy and effectual

3 And hereby we do know  
that we know him, if we  
keep

Pur-

(a) *An Advocate with the Father.*] The Word, *Advocate*, in our Language com-  
monly signifies one, who is to *plead* for a Person in a *Court of Judicature*; but *Dr.*  
*Samuel Harris* hath taken great Pains to show, that it properly signifies the same with  
*Patron* amongst the *Romans*, or עוֹרֵךְ in the *Hebrew*; a *great Person*, who used to  
patronize the Cause of some of inferior Rank, and who was also a *Sponsor* for their  
good Behaviour. By this he imagines several *Scriptures* may be illustrated, and par-  
ticularly *Isai. l. 7,—9. Job. xxix. 12. Psal. lxxii. 12. Job xxxiii. 23, &c.* And in  
Confirmation of this Sentiment he brings some remarkable Quotations from the *An-  
cients. Harris's Observ. pag. 49,—61.* Perhaps there is nothing that illustrates the  
Matter more, than the *Residence* of some eminent Persons from distant Provinces, in  
the *Courts* of great Princes or States, whose Business it was constantly to negotiate  
with them the Affairs of those whom they represented, to vindicate them from any  
unjust Aspersions, and to advance their Interest to the utmost of their Power.

(b) *For the Sins of the whole World.*] *Mr. Reyner* has urged this as a Proof, that  
the Merit of *Christ's* Death shall extend, not only to *Believers*, but to *virtuous Hea-  
thens*; and I don't see that Christianity can receive any Prejudice by our acknowledg-  
ing, that if there are those in whom a *truly virtuous* Temper prevails, they may be  
accepted of God, in Consideration of the *Atonement* which *Christ* hath made. But  
this will by no means prove the Doctrine of *Universal Redemption*, in the Sense in  
which some Persons have stated it. But it seems to me, that the Apostle is to be un-  
derstood, as speaking only of all those who believe, whether *Jews* or *Gentiles*, over  
the whole World.

VOL. VI.

T t

(c) To

Sect. 2. Purposes, even if we faithfully and uprightly keep all his Commandments. For he that

1 John II. 4. *saieth, I know him, and keepeth not his Commandments, is a Lyar; he falsely pretends to a Knowledge of him, of which he is quite destitute; and therefore in this Respect*

5 *the Truth is not [in him]. But whosoever uprightly and impartially keepeth his Word, in him certainly is the Love of God perfected; it is plain he has it truly in his Heart, and does not, like those who are regardless of the Divine Authority, make a vain and hypocritical Pretence to it. And by this we know, that we are interested in the Son of God, and united to him by this Influence*

6 *of our Faith upon our Practice. He that saith, he abideth in him, and pretends a Claim to his saving Benefits, ought himself so to walk, as he, whom he calls his divine Master, walked, when he was here on Earth. He ought in every thing to trace, and endeavour to imitate his Example.*

7 *And this is so obvious and natural a Truth, that I persuade myself, Brethren, ye already know it; for herein I write no new Commandment to you, but the old Commandment, founded in Nature, recommended by the Mosaick Law, and that which ye had especially inculcated from the Beginning of your Acquaintance with the Gospel, the great practical Intent of which was doubtless presently made known to you by whomsoever it was preached. I may therefore well say, it is the old Commandment; for it is the Word which you heard from the Beginning of your*

8 *Acquaintance with Christianity. Yet considering its peculiar Obligations, and the new Motives with which it is enforced upon us continually, I may say again, A new Commandment I write to you, which expression is true in him, and in you, for he has laid us under new Engagements to observe it,*  
by

keep his Commandments.

4 He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his Commandments, is a Liar, and the Truth is not in him.

5 But whoso keepeth his Word, in him verily is the Love of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in him.

6 He that saith he abideth in him, ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked.

7 Brethren, I write no new Commandment unto you, but an old Commandment which ye had from the Beginning: the old Commandment is the Word which ye have heard from the Beginning.

8 Again, a new Commandment I write unto you, which Thing is true in him, and in you: because the  
Dark-

Darkness is past, and the true Light now shineth.

9 He that saith he is in the Light, and hateth his Brother, is in Darkness even until now.

10 He that loveth his Brother, abideth in the Light, and there is none Occasion of stumbling in him.

11 But he that hateth his Brother, is in Darkness, and walketh in Darkness, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that Darkness hath blinded his Eyes.

12 I write unto you, little Chil-

by his admirable Love declared and exhibited to us; *because the Darkness of Heathenism, and Twilight of the Jewish State, is now passed away, and the true Light now shineth,* and in Proportion to our Knowledge, he may reasonably expect that our Care to act suitably should be awakened. *He that*

*saith, he is in the Light* that he enjoyeth, that he understands and receives the Gospel, *and hateth his Brother,* and does him any designed Injury, *is in the Darkness even till now.* And his ineffectual Acquaintance with some Principles of Religion, which do not influence his Heart to Charity and Beneficence, will, as to his real and final Happiness, stand him in no Stead.

But *he that loveth his Brother, abideth in the Light,* he improves the Advantages which he enjoys by the Christian Religion, and as he answers its End, he will continually share the Pleasure *and* the Security, which it gives; for *there is no Occasion of stumbling in him;* this will secure him from giving any just Cause of Offence; whereas the malevolent Passions turn a thousand Circumstances into Temptations, which prove fatal to a Man's Credit and Repose in this World, and his Salvation in the next.

But on the contrary, as I said before, *he who hateth his Brother, is in Darkness, and walketh in Darkness;* and the Consequence of that is, that as one who walketh in the Night, without any Light to guide him, *knows not whither he goeth,* so such an one, while he flattereth himself with Hopes of Salvation, on Account of his Knowledge and Profession, is really ignorant of his own State, *because Darkness hath blinded his Eyes;* and so he is in the utmost Danger of falling before he is aware, into the bottomless Pit from whence there is no Redemption.

These Things I say unto you, and they are of universal Concern; I hope therefore you will all attend to them, and improve them

T t 2

Sect. 2.

1 John II. 8.

9

10

11

12

Sect. 2. them for your own Advantage. *I write unto you, little Children,* amongst the rest, to guard the least and weakest of you against Sin: *because by his Name,* even the Name of the Lord Jesus Christ, who has made an Atonement for them, *your Sins are forgiven you,* and I am very solicitous that you may make all due Return for so inestimable a Favour, as a Pardon purchased at the Expence of such sacred Blood. [ *I write to you, Fathers, because ye have known him that is from the Beginning ; because ye have heard of his divine Dignity and Glory, who was in the Beginning, who was with God, and himself God ; that ye may behave aright towards that divine Saviour, who submitted to such Abasement for us, though originally he was so exalted and glorious. I write to you, young Men, because ye have overcome the wicked one, have bravely bid Defiance to his Allurement and Terrors, in taking upon you in so solemn a Manner, the Christian Profession ; and I would by no means have you disgrace the Victory you have already gained. I write to you, little Children (c), ] because even the*

Children, because your Sins are forgiven you for his Names Sake.

13 I write unto you, Fathers, because ye have known him, *that is* from the Beginning. I write unto you, young Men, because ye have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little Children, because ye have known the Father.

(c) *To you little Children &c.]* There is such an apparent *Tautology* in these three Verses, as cannot, that I know of, be equalled in any other Part of *Scripture*. Some have imagined, that the Signification of *Little Children* here, (in the *Original* *παιδία*,) is different from that in the *12th Verse*, (where the Word is *νενητα*, which *Wolfius* says, is used to signify *Christians* in general ; whereas *παιδία* refers either to those, who were young in Years, or lately converted to Christianity. See *Curæ Philolog. Vol. v. pag. 259.*) And they have supposed the Meaning of the *Apostle's* Exhortation here is, that as one of the first Persons *Children* become acquainted with, is *their Father*, so they should know God, and improve more and more in a practical Acquaintance with him : And each of these *Congratulations* contains a tacit *Exhortation* to go on in that which he commends them for, or congratulates them upon. But on the whole, comparing the *Beginning* of the *13th* with the *14th Verse*, where the *same Words* are repeated, I am ready to conjecture, that if they were written in the *Original*, they were left out again, and were written more perfectly afterwards in the *14th* ; and consequently, that all that should be retained, is the *last Clause* of it, in Connection with the *12th. Your Sins are forgiven — because ye have known the Father.* Thus all *Tautology* is avoided, and every Sentiment and Expression, in either of the *Verses*, is preserved. I have therefore enclosed in a *Parenthesis* all that Part, both of the *Text* and *Paraphrase*, which may be left out without taking away any thing from the Sense, or burthening it with an unnecessary Repetition.

(d) In

the youngest of you have known God, as Sect. 2. *the Father* of his People, have been taught to call upon him as your Father in Heaven; and I desire you may, with all filial Reverence and Love, approve yourselves dutiful and grateful to him under that Relation.

*John II. 14.*

<sup>14</sup> I have written unto you, Fathers, because ye have known him *that is* from the Beginning. I have written unto you, young Men, because ye are strong, and the Word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.

And, (as I before said,) *I have written to you, Fathers, because ye have known him who is from the Beginning*; so also *I have written to you, young Men, because ye are strong*, you are in the full Vigour of Nature; and may God preserve your Hearts in a right Frame, and lengthen out your Lives to do him much Service in future and distant Years. *And this may the rather be expected, as the Word of God abideth in you*, as you have been instructed in the Principles of divine Truth by your pious Parents, and other Teachers, *and many of you have given noble Specimens of the good Effects of their Instructions*, in that ye have already overcome the *wicked one* in many of his Attacks; for otherwise ye could not have assumed the Profession of the Christian Faith in these Circumstances, nor have retained it for such a Length of Time.

<sup>15</sup> Love not the World, neither the Things that are in the World. If any Man love the World, the Love of the Father is not in him.

And now whatever your Age, Station and Circumstances may be, suffer me to address to you one farther Word of Exhortation; which is this, *Love not the World, nor the Things [which are] in the World*, in an irregular and excessive Degree (*d*); for if any one love the World with too great an Attachment, and have his Heart chiefly set on its Interests, or its Pleasures, it may justly be concluded, that *the Love of the Father is not in him*; for there is a real Inconsistence between the Love of the

(*d*) In an irregular and excessive Degree.] It is plainly necessary to attend to such a Limitation; for otherwise there is a Degree of Love to worldly Enjoyments which is rational, and which we must have for them, or we cannot in a proper Manner attend to the Duties of Life.

(*e*) The



Sect. 2. the World in this Sense, and that of God :

Which will easily appear, when we consider what we may justly understand by the  
 1 John II. 16. World;      *For all that is in the World,*

when it comes to make up the largest Catalogue of good Things, which it can promise to those who eagerly and idolatrously pursue it, [*is*] to be comprehended under these three well-known Particulars, *The Lust of the Flesh*, that is, the pleasurable Indulgence of our carnal Appetites; *and the Lust of the Eyes*, that is, the Acquisition of Money, which if not expended for other Purposes for which it is designed, only serves us to behold and count over; *and the Pride of Life (e)*, some ambitious Pursuits, in Consequence of which we may make a Parade in the Eyes of our Fellow-Creatures for a little while, in our Way to the Grave, which is to strip us of it all. Now it is evident, that [*these Things*], considered as the Food of Luxury, Avarice and Ambition, *are not of the Father, but of the World*. It plainly appears, that God, considered as the Author of all good, cannot be pleased with such Affections and Pursuits; and it would be prophane to suppose that they are produced or excited by him, or that the Prevalence of them can be acknowledged by him, as consistent with his Love in the Heart.

17

Endeavour therefore, my Brethren, to get more and more above such Snares and Entanglements as these; *and so much the rather, as the World and all the  
 Luxury*

16 For all that is in the World, the Lust of the Flesh, and the Lust of the Eyes, and the Pride of Life, is not of the Father, but is of the World.

17 And the World passeth

(e) *The Pride of Life*: *αλαζονεία τῆ βίῃ.*] *Erasmus Schmidius* understands this of that vain and empty Boasting of the Continuance of Life, and of Projects to be executed in some future Part of it, which *St. James* condemns. (*James* iv. 16.) *Raphelius* seems to have been at first of the same Opinion; (See *Annot. ex Xenoph. in loc.*) but afterwards from the Use of the Word *αλαζονεία*, in *Polybius*, (see *Annot. ex Polyb. in loc.*) he was disposed to understand it in general, of the *Splendor and Luxury*, which vain Persons affect in their whole Manner of Living. But more strictly, the Phrase, *αλαζονεία τῆ βίῃ*, refers to that ambitious Turn of Mind, which prompts Men to engage in all those Pursuits, which will supply Materials for their Vanity, and enable them to make a Figure in the World. See *Wolfii Curæ Philolog. in loc.*

seth away, and the Lust thereof: but he that doeth the Will of God, abideth for ever.

*Luxury of it*, and whatever belongs to it Sect. 2. which can serve to the Gratification of our Desires, *passes away*, like a glaring Pageant, <sup>1 John II. 17.</sup> which only amuses the Eye for a few transient Moments, and then disappears. *But he, that doth the Will of God* faithfully and steadily, *abideth for ever*: He hath built his Happiness upon a Basis, which nothing can remove, and accordingly finds it secure, even when he quits this momentary World, and enters on an eternal and unalterable State.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

**O**FTEN let us be lifting up our Eyes, and our Hearts to him, who is our great *Advocate with the Father*: Too frequently do the Infirmities of our Lives demand our Application to him under that Character. Let us rejoice that he is *Jesus Christ the Righteous*, that he is the *Lord our Righteousness*. While we joy in him, as the *Propitiation for our Sins*, let it comfort our Hearts to think, how wide the Efficacy of his Atonement extends. Oh; that *all the World* might be engaged to apply to him under this important Consideration! Oh, that all those who profess so to apply to him, might remember how necessary it is, that if they would shew they *indeed know him*, they should keep his *Commandments*: This, rather than any of those passionate Transports of Mind, on which some are ready to lay so great a Stress, is the *Perfection of Love to God*. May the Spirit of *Christ* impress upon us more of our *Master's Image*, and teach us with greater Care and Exactness to order our *Walk and Conversation* by his Example. Since we have an illustrious *Light* to direct our Path, let us make use of it to this Purpose, lest eternal *Darkness* come upon us. Let us learn the divine Lesson we are here taught, *to love our Brethren*, and gradually to rise higher above that *Love of the World*, that Attachment to temporal and present Interests, which is *inconsistent with the Love of the Father*! When we are tempted too fondly to admire, or too eagerly to pursue, this gaudy Pageant, let us survey the *Inventory* here given, of its boasted *Treasures*. Let us compute the most it can even pretend to confer upon us, and impartially weigh all that can gratify the *Lust of the Flesh; the Lust of the Eye, and the Pride of Life,*

Ver. 1.

Ver. 2.

Ver. 3, 5.

Ver. 6.

Ver. 9.

Ver. 15.

Ver. 16.

Sect. 2. *Life*, against these solid Pleasures which arise from the *Love of God*, against those infinite Benefits which will finally result from it.  
 Ver. 17. *They who do his Will, abide for ever*, nor is their Removal from this empty and transitory World any Objection against it. Yea, rather, how would it be possible, or how desirable, they should *abide for ever*, were not a *Removal* from such a mutable, such an unsatisfying, and in many Respects afflicting World, to make a Part of the *Plan*, formed by divine Providence and Grace in their Favour!

## S E C T. III.

*The Apostle discourses of the Antichrists, which then began to arise in the World, and directs Christians to the best Preservatives against their seducing Doctrines. I John II. 18,—28.*

I JOHN II. 18.

I JOHN II. 18.

Sect. 3.  
I John II. 18.

**A**ND now, my beloved, dear to me, as *little Children* to the most affectionate Parents (a), attend to my Cautions against those many Seducers, with which not only the World, but even the Church, abounds. *It is indeed the last Time* (b); the last Dispensation God will ever give to the World, is now promulgated, and it is no Wonder if Satan endeavour to the utmost to adulterate a System from which his Kingdom has so much to fear. *And as you have heard,*

**L**ittle Children, it is the last Time: and as ye have

(a) *Little Children.*] *Mr. Cradock* has observed, that *little Children* are not so apt to *love the World*; but seem by Reason of the Weakness of their Understandings more likely to be seduced by artful and designing Men; and therefore he imagines, that in this Place there is a peculiar *Propriety* in this Appellation. See *Crad. Apost. Hist.* pag. 489.

(b) *The last Time.*] Some explain this of the *last Age* of the *Jewish Church* and Commonwealth, because it was the Period, in which our Saviour had foretold the Rise of many *false Christs*; and this Observation, to be sure, is material: But the Expression of *the last Time*, from comparing other Scriptures, seems to be more extensive.

(c) *May*

have heard that Antichrist shall come, even now are there many Antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last Time.

heard, that one great Seducer, from his Opposition to Christ called *Antichrist*, is coming, so I must assure you, that *even now there are* <sup>1 John II. 18.</sup>

*many* aspiring and interested Men, who act in such Opposition to the Redeemer's Cause, and the whole Purpose of his Appearance, that, though they profess his Name, they may not improperly be called *Antichrists (c)*; by which indeed we may know that this is the last Time; for when we compare this Event with the Predictions of our Lord, it is so far from contradicting them, that indeed it is a great Accomplishment and Illustration of them. Once indeed they pretended to

19 They went out from us, but they were not of us: for if they had been of us, they would, no doubt, have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest, that they were not all of us.

19 join themselves to us; but that it was only an hypocritical Pretence to Christianity, which they made, appears from the Issue of it: *They went out from among us*, and yet *they were not* upon the whole of us, nor did truly belong to our Number, while they seemed to adhere to us. For if they had ever been sincerely of us, so as to feel the inward Power of our Gospel on their Hearts, they would doubtless have continued with us: Upright Men would never have seen any Cause to leave us, and divine Grace would have preserved such from the Temptations, by which these artful Deceivers have been insnared. But [this hath happened], that they might be made apparent, and that we might also reap an Advantage from the Detection of their Hypocrisy, because it would thereby appear, that all who join with us in external Forms, are not indeed of us (d); but that even in the purest

(c) *Many Antichrists.*] Dr. Whitby explains these *Antichrists* of unbelieving Jews opposing Christianity. I rather understand them to be *Apostates*, who had once professed themselves *Christians*, and brought in pernicious heretical Notions.

(d) *That they might be made apparent, because all are not of us: οτι ου εισι παντες εκ ημων.*] Thus, I think, these Words may be rendered; and the Meaning is, that as there are some, who only pretend to be *Christians*, when they are not, and for some secular End mingle themselves with us, God has suffered these to be discovered, to awe and alarm others, who may yet be concealed.

Sect. 3. purest Churches, there may be a Mixture of Tares among the Wheat, which it will be Prudence to remember, and to guard against.

<sup>1</sup>John II. 20. *And as for you, I hope and trust you will not be seduced by them; for ye have an inward anointing of the holy one, even the Spirit of Purity and Joy, which Christ the holy one of God hath poured forth upon us; and ye know all Things relating to Christianity, in such an experimental Manner, as will effectually preserve you against those Snares of this vain World, which have been ruinous to those unhappy Apostates I have just mentioned.*

21 *And as to what I have now said, I have not written to you, because ye know not the Truth, nor have I entered so largely into the Discussion of this Matter, as would then have been necessary; but on the contrary, have contented myself with these short Hints, because you know it, and I am desirous to confirm you in it, and to awaken your Zeal to join with me in testifying it to others, and opposing the many false Doctrines which are taught in Opposition to it: For every Lye is not of the Truth; there is an irreconcilable Inconsistence between Truth and Falsehood, and the the more you are confirmed in the one, the more faithfully will you guard against and oppose the other.*

22 *And who is a Liar, and a Seducer in the most dangerous Sense that can be imagined, but he that denieth, that Jesus is the Christ (e)? This is the most pernicious of all Errors, and tends most directly to overthrow all Virtue and*

20 But ye have an Unc-tion from the holy One, and ye know all Things.

21 I have not written unto you, because ye know not the Truth: but because ye know it, and that no Lie is of the Truth.

22 Who is a Liar, but he that denieth that Jesus is the

(e) *Denieth that Jesus is the Christ.*] Some are of Opinion, this was written against Cerinthus, who in his Doctrine separated Jesus from Christ, maintaining them to be two distinct Persons, and denied him to be the Son of God. See Dr. Berryman's Hist. of the Trin. pag. 38. Compare Dr. Whitby's Preface to this Epistle. Mr. Baxter also takes in the Simonians, Menandrians and Carpocratians, with other Hereticks in those early Ages. Baxter's Works, Vol. iii. pag. 218.

(f) He

the Christ? He is Antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son.

23 Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: [*but*] he that acknowledgeth the Son, hath the Father also.

and Religion in the World, and utterly to subvert and destroy Men's Souls; and he who maintains *this* detestable Doctrine, is in a Sense *Antichrist*, who in Effect denies both *the Father and the Son*: For how- ever some may pretend a Zeal for the Honour of God, while they are crying down that of our Lord Jesus Christ, yet so it is that *every one who denieth the Son, hath not any real Regard to the Father*, nor any Interest in him: For God hath declared with an Evidence which all who sincerely love and honour him, will not fail to receive, that no Man cometh to the Father but by Christ; that he is well pleased in him as his beloved Son, and maintains a favourable Intercourse with sinful Men only by him. [*But he who acknowledgeth the Son, hath the Father also (f)*] and taketh the most effectual Method to secure the Continuance of his Favour.

Sect. 3.  
John II. 22.

23

24 Let that therefore abide in you, which ye have heard from the Beginning. If that which ye have heard from the Beginning, shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father.

*As for you therefore to whom I now address myself, let what I here say be improved by way of Caution to yourselves; be on your Guard against the numerous Artifices of those who would ensnare and seduce you, and let that Word which you have heard from me, at the Beginning of the Gospel, abide in you so steadily, that no Man may ever wrest it from you. And if it be indeed so, and that Word which ye have heard from the Beginning, thus abide in you, you also will abide in that State of blessed Union, in which you are, with the Son and the Father; you will dwell under their united*

24

(f) *He who acknowledgeth the Son hath the Father also.*] These Words, which I have included in *Crotchets*, are generally printed in our *Version* in *Italick Characters*; but they are to be found in so many good *Manuscripts*, that I cannot but believe they made a Part of the *Original*, by whatever Accident they were omitted in some early Copy, to which, as it seems, too much Regard has been paid. See *Mills and Wetstein in loc.*

U u 2

(g) *Those*

Sect. 3. nited Protection, and find a Source of De-  
 light springing up in your Souls from Com-  
 1 John II. 24. munion with them, to which there is no-  
 thing comparable in any of the Enjoyments  
 25 of the present World. *And this will rea-  
 dily be acknowledged, if you only consider,  
 with what exalted Hopes you will then be  
 supported; for this is the Promise which he  
 hath promised to us, (which while I mention,  
 I cannot but exceedingly rejoice in the Con-  
 sideration of my own Interest in it,) even the  
 Possession of that invaluable Treasure, eter-  
 nal Life, in Comparison of which, whether  
 we consider its Excellence, or its Duration,  
 all the Glories of the World, and even the  
 World itself, are lighter than Vanity, and  
 unworthy the Reflection of a single Mo-  
 ment.*

25 And this is the Pro-  
 mise that he hath promised  
 us, even eternal Life.

26 *These things therefore I have written unto  
 you concerning those who would deceive you (g),  
 and rob you of that inestimable Treasure, that  
 you may guard against them with the utmost  
 27 Vigilance. And, I trust, this will indeed be  
 the Case; for as for you in general, I esteem  
 you sincere in the Profession of your Re-  
 ligion, and therefore may reasonably say,  
 that the Unction of the holy Spirit, which  
 you have received from him (b), who hath  
 given*

26 These Things have I  
 written unto you concerning  
 them that seduce you.

27 But the anointing  
 which ye have received of  
 him,

(g) *Those who would deceive you.*] It is in the Original, *they who do deceive you*; but it is plain, as has often been observed, from the Commendations given them elsewhere, that it signifies no more than an *Endeavour to seduce*; and there are many Passages, both in sacred and profane Authors, in which a Person is said to *do a thing*, which he *attempts*. See *Mr. Blackwall's Sac. Class. Vol. i. pag. 121.*

(b) *The Unction which you have received from him &c.*] The Spirit of God is compared to an *anointing*, because of his precious and cheering Gifts which rendered Christians more fit to encounter with their spiritual Enemies; as *Wrestlers were anointed with Oil* to make them fitter for their various Exercises, and to prevent the Advantages which might otherwise be taken against them. Whether this Passage will be less capable of yielding Support to the *popish* Doctrine of *Chrism*, or that of the *Quakers*, which asserts such an *Inspiration* of all Christians as renders the Office of a stated *Ministry* unnecessary, it is hard to say. Compare *Limborch's Theol. v. 77. 4.* and *Barclay's Apology, pag. 52.* With relation to the latter, it may be of some Moment to observe, that the *Christian Ministry* was in the highest Repute in the *Church*, when the *Gifts* of the Spirit were poured down upon it in the greatest Abundance.

(i) *Unction*

him, abideth in you: and ye need not that any Man teach you: but, as the same anointing teacheth you of all Things, and is Truth, and is no Lie: and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.

given you the Promise of eternal Life, *abideth in you* perpetually and powerfully; and in Consequence thereof *you have no such Necessity* as others, *that any one should teach you* the first Principles of true Religion. But let it be your Care, uprightly and humbly to yield up your Souls to the superior Instructions of this divine Spirit; and *as this same Unction from him teacheth you concerning all Things (i), and it is true, and has no Mixture of Falsehood in it, even as that has taught you, abide in him* to whom by that Spirit ye are so thus vitally united. *Yea,* 28

Sect 3.  
1 John II. 27.

28 And now, little Children, abide in him; that when he shall appear, we may have Confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his Coming.

let me *now* repeat it again, as a Matter of the highest Importance, comprehending in one Word the whole of our Duty and Happiness; my dear christian Friends, dear to me as *little Children* to their affectionate Parents, *abide in him, that when he shall appear, as he assuredly will, in all his Pomp and Glory, we may have humble Boldness, and may not be put to Shame and Confusion, before him at his Coming; but may welcome him with Chearfulness, as those who have approved their Fidelity to him, and expect, by his Grace, an abundant Reward.*

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

**L**ET us not be surprized, if there are some who revolt from *Christianity* in our Days; evincing thereby the Infincerity of their former Professions; since even the *Apostolick* Age produced some Instances of this Kind. But notwithstanding this, *the Foundation of God standeth firm, and the Lord knoweth them that are his: (2 Tim. ii. 19.)* They will continue united with his Church in Faith

Ver. 18, 19.

(i) *Unction teacheth you all Things.*] It seems manifest from hence, that every *Christian* is supposed to have been *anointed* by the *Holy Ghost*. But as it would be most absurd to pronounce it impossible, that a Man in any Degree of Error should be a *true Christian*, it plainly shews, in how *restrained* a Sense many *general Expressions*, occurring in *Scripture*, may be taken, and in that View is well worth our attentive Regard.



Sect. 3. Faith and Love, and no Temptation will be able intirely to separate them from it.

- Ver. 22, 23. Vain are all Pretences to adhere to the *Father*, if we desert the *Son*. To his Gospel therefore let us steadfastly cleave, animated
- Ver. 25. by the infinitely important Promise of *eternal Life*. Can we go to *another* Saviour? Can we expect from any other Hand a *nobler*, or even an *equal* Reward? May we all, who profess a Relation to him, receive an *Anointing from above*, which may teach us all those Things, it is of Importance for us to know, and which may engage us to
- Ver. 27. *abide in him* with inseparable Fidelity. Yet a little while, and *he will again come*, will appear with a Glory which will warrant, and will reward the firm Attachment we have manifested to his Interests. May we not, at that important Period, have Reason to be *ashamed before him*, may he not be ashamed of us; but having *confessed him before Men*, may we be *confessed by him before his Father, and his holy Angels*. (Luke xii. 8.)
- Ver. 28.

## S E C T. IV.

*The Apostle discourses concerning the exalted Privileges of the Children of God, to which all true Christians are intitled, and urges the Necessity of a holy Temper, and of a holy Life, in order to demonstrate that we are of that happy Number. I John II. 29.— III. 10.*

I JOHN II. 29.

Sect. 4. **I** Have before been discoursing of the divine Holiness and Purity: Now the Consideration of this may enable you to judge, whether you are, or are not, in the happy Number of the Children of God. For *since ye know, that he is perfectly righteous, ye may know, that every one that practiseth Righteousness, is born of him*; as the Production of Righteousness in the Mind argues a divine Agency upon it, therefore he, in whom

I John II. 29.

I JOHN II. 29.

**I**F ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one that doeth Righteousness, is born of him.

whom it is produced, is, by Regeneration, Sect. 4.  
the Son of God.

III. 1. Behold, what Manner of Love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the Sons of God: therefore the World knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

Now on this View I would entreat you <sup>1</sup>John III. 1. attentively to dwell; as indeed no Subject can be more worthy of your serious Regard. *Behold*, my Brethren, behold with Delight and holy Admiration, *what Manner of Love*, what immense, unutterable, inconceivable Condescensions of Love, *the Father* of universal Nature, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, *hath bestowed upon us* sinful Mortals, *that we should be* honoured with so sublime an Appellation, should be *called the Children of God (a)*; as he hath himself expressed it, I will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my Sons and my Daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. (2 Cor. vi. 18.) It is true indeed this is a Dignity which only attracts the Observation of very few, and *in this Respect the World knows us not*, and doth not acknowledge us for what we really are; *because it knoweth not him*, who is God's eternal and first-born Son, the Head of the Family, through whom we have received the Adoption. Such are the unhappy Prejudices of apostate Men against the divine Will and the divine Image, that Christ himself was unknown while he dwelt in human Flesh; and therefore it is no Wonder that we are so, in that Respect in which we resemble him. Nevertheless, my *beloved*, <sup>2</sup> it is a most certain, and a most joyful Truth that *now we are the Children of God*, and a Truth which draws after it a long Train of glorious Consequences; for *it doth not yet per-*

<sup>2</sup> Beloved, now are we the Sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall

(a) *We should be called the Children of God.*] The original Word is *τεκνα*, not *υιοι*, and therefore should be rendered *Children*, rather than *Sons*. It is worth observing upon this *Text*, that when the *Danish Missionaries* appointed some of their *Malabarian* Converts to translate a *Catechism*, in which it was mentioned as the Privilege of Christians to become *the Sons of God*, one of the *Translators* was startled at so bold a Saying as he thought it, and said, *It is too much; let me rather render it, They shall be permitted to kiss his Feet.* *Let. of Dan. Mission. N<sup>o</sup>. 7. pag. 56.*

(b) *It*

Sec̄. 4. perfectly appear, what we shall be (b); the Inheritance we expect, is far beyond what we can at present conceive. But this we know in the general, that if he, by whom we have received the Adoption, be revealed (c), as he will certainly at length be, we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is (d); we shall have so clear and distinct a View and Discernment of him, as shall transform us into his Image, even the Image of his Holiness, the brightest and most illustrious of the various Glories with which he is invested.

shall be: but we know, that when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.

3 But let not any imagine, this is an Exhortation indiscriminately to be entertained by all who stile themselves Christians, or in any Measure consistent with an unprofitable and wicked Life. No, it is of the most generous Tendency, and produces the most happy Effects; for every one who hath this Hope in him on a solid Foundation, purifieth himself from every Pollution, with a sincere Desire to advance daily in every Branch of moral Perfection and Excellence, till at length

3 And every Man that hath this Hope in him, purifieth

(b) *It doth not yet appear &c.*] It is observable that these are the Words of John, of him who had not only so familiarly conversed with Christ on this sublime and delightful Subject, but had seen his Transfiguration, when Moses and Elias appeared in such refulgent Glory. He also, as Mr. Baxter observes in this Connection, (see his Works, Vol. iii. pag. 16.) saw a most glorious Vision of the New Jerusalem. But it may be doubted, whether this Epistle were not of an earlier Date than the Apocalypse, and it seems most probable that it was, both considering the great Age of the Apostle, when banished to Patmos, and how naturally some Things on which he touches in this Epistle, especially relating to Antichrist, might have been illustrated by what he saw there.

(c) *If he be revealed.*] This is one of the many Places, wherein the Particle, *ean*, or *ei*, which is nearly equivalent to it, does not imply any Uncertainty of the Event, but is put for *when*.

(d) *We shall see him, as he is.*] Archbishop Tillotson well observeth, and proves at large, that the Sight of God is put to express the Knowledge and Enjoyment of him, because of its Excellency and Dignity, its Largeness and Comprehension, its Spirituality and Quickness, its Evidence and Certainty. (See his Works, Vol. iii. pag. 194.) Seneca has some most sublime Passages in his third Epistle, relating to that divine Light which good Men shall behold in a future State; the very Thought of which, he says, will prohibit any thing sordid, base or malevolent from settling in the Mind that entertains it.

(e) *Sin*

rifieth himself, even as he is pure.

length he becomes pure, even as he is pure, Sect. 4. so far as the divine Holiness can be resembled by any Creature in this mortal and imperfect State. <sup>1</sup> John III. 3:

4 Whosoever committeth Sin, transgresseth also the Law: for Sin is the Transgression of the Law.

On the other Hand, every one who practiseth Sin, practiseth also the Violation of the divine Law; for this is the very Nature and Essence of Sin, and what is common to every Kind, and every Act of it, that Sin is the Violation of the Law (e), either natural or revealed. Hence ye know, 4

5 And ye know that he was manifested to take away our Sins; and in him is no Sin.

that he who is so familiar to our Thoughts, and our Discourses, even our divine Master and Saviour, was manifested, that he might take away the Guilt and Power of our Sins by his Atonement, and by the sanctifying Influences of his Spirit; and there is no Kind or Degree of Sin in him, nothing but what is of the most opposite Nature. It 5

6 Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth, hath not seen him, neither known him:

is plain therefore, that every one who abideth in him, sinneth not, cannot make a Trade and Practice of it; and that every one who thus habitually and allowedly sinneth (f), hath not seen him, nor known him: His Views and Knowledge of him have been so superficial, as that they deserve not to be mentioned, since they have not conquered the Love and Prevalence of Sin, and brought the Man to a holy Temper and Life. 6

7 Little Children, let no Man deceive you: he that doeth

My dear little Children, let no one deceive you on this important Matter by vain Words, with 7

(e) Sin is the Violation of the Law.] I choose Violation, as rather a more expressive Word, than Transgression, and so answering more exactly to *ὑπερβασία*, which implies not only *ὑπερβασία*, a passing the Bounds of God's Law, but an Attempt, if possible, to annihilate and destroy it.

(f) Every one who habitually and allowedly sinneth.] It seems absolutely necessary to interpret the Expression thus, not only to prevent some of the best of Christians from falling into Despair, on Account of those Reminders of sinful Imperfection, which their very Eminence in Religion causes them to discern, and to lament; while others, evidently their Inferiors, are vain and ignorant enough to conclude themselves perfect and lacking nothing; but likewise to make one Scripture consistent with another, (compare Jam. iii. 2.) and even to reconcile this Assertion to other Passages in the Epistle before us. See Chap. i. 8, — 10.

- Sect. 4. with whatever Pomp, or Solemnity, or Plausibility they may be attended. A Being himself immutably holy, can never dispense with the Want of Holiness in his reasonable Creatures. *He who practiseth Righteousness, is righteous (g), even as he himself is righteous*: It is his own Image, and he must invariably love and delight in it, and must as invariably abhor Sin, as utterly contrary to his Nature. For indeed *he who practiseth Sin, is of the Devil*: He imitates his Character, and complies with his Instigations; *for the Devil sinneth from the Beginning*; he introduced Sin into the Creation of God, and he continues still to promote it ever since, to the utmost of his Power and Influence (*b*): *Whereas* the Appearance of the *Son of God* was to a quite different and contrary Purpose; for he *was manifested* in human Flesh *that he might dissolve and destroy the Works of the Devil (i)*, that he might recover
- doeth Righteousness, is righteous, even as he is righteous;
- 8 He that committeth Sin, is of the Devil; for the Devil sinneth from the Beginning. For this Purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the Works of the Devil.

(g) *He that practiseth Righteousness, is righteous.*] It is very necessary to interpret the Phrase *thus*, to avoid an *Indulgence*, as extravagant as the *Severity* we have opposed above. For certainly it is not every one who performs *some one* just or righteous Action, that can be denominated *righteous*; nor can any Man be intitled to that Character, who doth not in the main Course of his Life, practise *universal* Righteousness.

(b) *Sinneth from the Beginning &c.*] *Mr. Limborch* imagines, this Phrase refers to repeated Acts of Sin, and a continued Course of it which preceded *Satan's* Expulsion from Heaven. See *Limb. Theol. Lib. ii. Cap. xx. Sect. 4.* But it seems, that the Use of the *present Tense* implies a *Continuance* in a Course of Sin; which is indeed the Case with respect to this malignant and unhappy Spirit, who continues incorrigible, notwithstanding all he has already suffered, and all which he certainly knows, he has farther to endure.

(i) *Destroy the Works of the Devil: λυσθη.*] This expressive Word leads us to look on Sin and Misery as a *Fabrick*, of which the Devil is the great *Architect*, and which *Christ* is come to *overthrow* and demolish. Accordingly he has already broken, as it were, the *Compages* and Strength of it; and we may hope it will gradually be levelled, and its very *Ruins* removed. He has certainly done, what has a most powerful Tendency to produce such an Effect. But it seems driving Matters to a very unjustifiable Extremity, to argue from hence, as some have done, the utter *Extirpation* of all moral and penal *Evil* from the Universe. And were not the *Judgment* so palpably byassed by the *Affections*, as we see it to be in many Instances, it is not to be conceived, that Men of Penetration should have laid any Stress on so precarious an Argument.

(k) *He*

recover Mankind from the Apostacy into Sect. 4.  
which they were seduced by the Temptations of Satan; and delivering them from the Bondage of Sin, might restore them to the Practice of universal Righteousness, and thereby to the Favour and Enjoyment of God. *Every one who is born of God, who*

John III. 8.

9 Whosoever is born of God, doth not commit Sin; for his Seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

is regenerated by divine Grace, and adopted into the Number of his Children, *doth not practise Sin, because his Seed abideth in him; there is an immortal Principle implanted by God in the Heart, which will not suffer a Man, who hath received it, intirely to overbear it; and he cannot sin, in such a Manner and to such a Degree as others (k), because he is thus born of God.*

9

10 In this the Children of God are manifest, and the Children of the Devil: Whosoever doeth not Righteousness, is not of God, neither he that loveth not his Brother.

*In this therefore, and by this, as the grand Characteristic, are the Children of God manifested on the one Hand, and the Children of the Devil, on the other. Every one who doth not practise Righteousness, is not of God; and I may add, as a Matter of great Consequence, that he who loveth not his Brother, as he cannot practise Righteousness, a great Part of which consists in Brotherly Love, is not of God; neither can he, without great Presumption, pretend to claim a Place amongst his Children.*

10

(k) *He cannot sin.*] It is certain these Words must be taken in something of a qualified Sense, or they would prove not only the *sinless Perfection* of every Child of God, but also the *Impeccability* of every such Person, or the *Impossibility* of his sinning, which none have been wild and enthusiastical enough to assert. It must therefore, I think, be understood only as expressing a *strong Disinclination* to Sin, in the Kind and Degree referred to before. And it is certain, there are many Passages of Scripture, in which the Word, *cannot*, must be taken in such a Latitude. Compare Luke xiii. 33. Heb. ix. 5. Neh. vi. 3. Numb. xxii. 18. And this Phraseology Raphaelius well illustrates by similar Passages from the *Classicks*. See *Annot. ex Polyb. in loc.*

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

- Sect. 4. **H**OW inestimable a Privilege is it to be *born of God*! What infinite Reason have those that possess it, to rejoice and be exceeding glad! With what Astonishment should we reflect upon the Divine *Condescension*, in admitting us to such an endearing Relation! Let us *behold* with Admiration and Joy, *what Manner of Love the Father has bestowed upon us*, that we sinful wretched Mortals, should be called *the Sons of God*! Let us behold how high it rises, how wide it diffuses its Effects! How glorious the *Inheritance*, to which in Consequence of this we are intitled! *The World indeed knows it not*; nor do we ourselves *completely* know it. Even *John*, the *beloved Disciple*, who lay in the Bosom of *our Lord*, and drank so deep out of the Fountain-Head of Knowledge and Holiness, even he says, *it doth not yet appear what we shall be*. But let us in sweet Tranquility of Soul, depend on our heavenly Father, that he will do, whatever is becoming his perfect Wisdom and Goodness, in respect to the Advancement and Felicity of *his own Children*. During our State of *Minority*, let us be contented to be at *his Allowance*, and rejoice, that we are in the general told, that *when Christ*, the First-born of the Family, shall make his second triumphant Appearance, *we shall also appear with him in Glory*, new dressed from the Grave, to adorn his Train, and transformed into his illustrious Image, not only with respect to the Glories of the *Body*, but the brighter Glories of the immortal *Spirit*. With him we shall have an abundant Entrance into his everlasting Kingdom, and for ever experience the Efficacy of that near and intimate *Vision* of him, which we shall there enjoy, to transform us into the same Likeness *from Glory to Glory*. Oh, that, in the mean Time, we may all feel the Energy of *this blessed Hope to purify our Souls*, that our Hearts and Dispositions may correspond to our Expectations! When *Christ* came in human Flesh, it was with this important Purpose, *that he might take away Sin*, that he might *destroy the Works of the Devil*, and reduce to Order and Harmony that Confusion and Ruin, which *Satan* by his malicious Insinuations had introduced into the World. *Blessed Jesus!* may this thy benevolent Design be more and more effectual. May the Empire of Sin and Corruption, which is the Empire of *Hell*, be entirely subdued, and thy celestial Kingdom of Grace and Holiness advanced. And may none *deceive themselves*, nor forget, that *he alone is righteous, who practiseth Righteousness*.
- Ver. 1.
- Ver. 2.
- Ver. 2.
- Ver. 3.
- Ver. 5.
- Ver. 8.
- Ver. 7.
- By

*They are reminded, that they should love one another :* 349

By this let us judge of ourselves, whether we are the *Children of God*, or of the *Devil*. And instead of flattering ourselves that tho' we do *commit Sin* with Allowance, yet there may be some secret *Seed of God* still concealed in our Hearts, let us judge of our having received this *regenerating Seed*, by its Tendency to preserve us from *Sin*, and the Victories it enables us to gain over its destructive Wiles and insufferable Tyranny.

Sect. 4.  
Ver. 9, 10.

## S E C T. V.

*The Apostle discourses of the Necessity and Importance of Brotherly Love, as a distinguishing Mark and Characteristic of the Children of God. I John III. II, to the End.*

I JOHN III. II.

FOR this is the Message that ye heard from the Beginning, that we should love one another.

12 Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his Brother: And wherefore slew he him? Because his own Works were evil, and his Brother's righteous.

I JOHN III. II.

I Mentioned the Want of Brotherly Love, as an Argument of not belonging to God; and a little Consideration may persuade you, that it is indeed so. *For this*, as you know, is the Message which you heard of us the Apostles and Ministers of Christ, from the Beginning of our Appearance among you, as our Lord had frequently in Person inculcated it, and almost with his dying Breath, that we should love one another; And that we should not be as Cain, [who] was most apparently of the wicked one, and barbarously slew his own innocent and pious Brother. And for what Cause did he slay him? truly for this, because his own Deeds were evil, and those of his Brother righteous; in Consequence of which he was disapproved, and his Brother approved by God; and this excited not his Repentance, but his Envy and Hatred, which at length settled into the most rancorous Malice, and produced that horrible

Sect. 5.  
I John III.  
II.

12



Sect. 5. horrible Effect. And as there is a great deal of the same malignant Temper remaining in the World, and there are many, in that Sense, though not by natural Descent, of the Seed of Cain, *wonder not, my Brethren, if, under this Influence, the World hate you.* But we, on the other Hand, know that we are passed over, from the Boundaries and Territories of *Death*, to those of *Life* (a), because we unfeignedly love the Brethren; as they are the Children of God, as well as ourselves, and the Members of one Body with us. *He that loveth not [his] Brother, can have no good Principle, but necessarily abideth in spiritual Death, and must for ever continue in that miserable State, if the Frame and Temper of his Mind be not intirely changed.*

1 John III.  
13.

14

15

16

13 Marvel not, my Brethren, if the World hate you.

14 We know that we have passed from Death unto Life, because we love the Brethren: he that loveth not his Brother, abideth in Death.

15 Whosoever hateth his Brother, is a Murderer: and ye know that no Murderer hath eternal Life abiding in him.

16 Hereby perceive we the Love of God, because he laid down his Life for us:  
and

(a) *Passed over from Death to Life.*] This is said even of the best of Men; which implies by a strong Consequence, that they are, as it were, *born* in the Land and Territories of *Death*; or that the *Gospel* finds them in such a Condition, as to be liable to Condemnation and Destruction, to the Execution of a *capital Sentence*. And it seems to me, that such *oblique* Expressions speak such *Truths* as these, in a Manner peculiarly convincing and affecting.

(b) *We*

and we ought to lay down our Lives for the Brethren.

for us (b): And we in Imitation of such an Example ought to be ready to lay down [our] Lives for the Brethren (c), when the Good of his Church, or of any Number of our Fellow-Christians, requires it. And if

Sect. 5.  
John III.  
16.

17 But whoſo hath this World's Good, and ſeeth his Brother have Need, and ſhutteth up his Bowels of *Compaſſion* from him, how dwelleth the Love of God in him?

we ought to be willing to die for the Good of others, how much more to relieve them in any of thoſe Neceſſities, which require us only to impart to them a little of our Substance? *Whoſoever therefore hath the good Things of the preſent World, and when he ſeeth his Brother in Neceſſity, ſhutteth up his Bowels from him; ſo that he will not impart any Thing out of his own Abundance for his Relief; how dwelleth the Love of God in him, or with what Face can he preſume to call himſelf a Chriſtian?*

17

18 My little Children, let us not love in Word, neither in Tongue, but in Deed and in Truth.

*My little Children, let me ſpeak freely to you on this Head, and let us not love, meerly in Word, or in Tongue, not content ourſelves with any external and complimental Expreſſions of Regard; but let our Actions approve the Sincerity of our Profeſſions, and ſhew that we love in Deed and in Truth.*

18

19 And hereby we know that we are of the Truth, and ſhall aſſure our Hearts before him.

*And in this we know, that we are of the Truth, and that we are real Chriſtians, and in the Conſciouſneſs of this ſhall aſſure our Hearts before him, when we draw nigh in the Exerciſes of Devotion.*

19

20 For if our Heart condemn

*For if our own Heart*

20

(b) *We know his Love, as he hath laid down his Life for us* ] This Text, as it ſtands in our *Verſion*, has generally been mentioned as equivalent to *Acts xx. 28.* in which, as he who laid down his Life for us, is *God*, as well as *Man*, *God* is ſaid to have done that which the *Man* united to him did. But it is not to be denied, that many Copies, which I here follow, read only *αὐτῆς* inſtead of *αὐτῆς*: *Hereby we perceive his Love.* And there are many Places, where the Relative evidently refers to a remote Antecedent. Compare *Heb. vii. 2.* Note (a).

(c) *Lay down our Lives for the Brethren.* ] That is, when the Life and Happineſs of many is concerned, we ought to be willing to ſacrifice our own. If one only were to be reſcued on ſuch Terms, the Argument would in a great Meaſure fail, unleſs that one were of ſo great Importance, that in dying for him we died for many; and the *Heathens* themſelves ſaw the Obligation to ſubmit to Death in ſuch a Caſe, tho' they were unacquainted with that noble Motive, to which the *Apoſtle* here refers. Compare *Cicero de Officiis, Lib. i. Cap. iii. pag. 34.*

- Sect. 5. Heart condemn us of any Evil, which we secretly indulge, while we preserve our Characters in the Sight of Men unfulfilled, we may well be thrown into Terror and Anxiety; knowing that *God is infinitely greater than our Heart, and knoweth all Things* without Exception; so as continually to view numberless Follies, which we never observed, or have entirely forgotten, and numberless Aggravations attending each, which it was impossible for us fully and distinctly to conceive. But, *beloved, if our Heart condemn us not*, but we have the Testimony of our Consciences before him, as to the Sincerity of our Repentance and Faith, and the Integrity of our general Walk and Conversation, [*then*] *have we that Confidence and Freedom of Speech before God* in our Addresses to him, which nothing else could give us, and which it is impossible we should have, while we know that we deal deceitfully in any Instance, either with him, or our Fellow-Creatures. *And* we know, that *whatever we ask, we shall receive of him*, if subservient to our truest Good, *because we are conscious of a prevailing Care to keep his Commandments, and to do the Things which we have Reason to apprehend, are pleasing in his Sight*; which he, as the righteous God, will be pleased with, when proceeding from a sincere Principle of Faith in Christ, and attended with those humble Regards to him, which the Imperfections of our own Obedience, in its best Estate, will require. *And this is his great Command, that we should believe in the Name of his dear Son Jesus Christ*, and endeavour to grow more in that blessed Principle of Faith in him; *and that we should unfeignedly and cordially love one another, as he hath so strongly and affectionately charged us to do.* *And this is the true Way to have that Communion with*
- demn us, God is greater than our Heart, and knoweth all Things.
- 21 Beloved, if our Heart condemn us not, then have we Confidence towards God.
- 22 And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his Commandments, and do those Things that are pleasing in his Sight.
- 23 And this is his Commandment, that we should believe on the Name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us Commandment.
- 24 And he that keepeth his

his Commandments, dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we know that he abideth in us by the Spirit which he hath given us.

with God, to which I expressed, in the Beginning of my Epistle, such a Desire to introduce you: For *he that keepeth his Commandments, abideth in him, and he, that is, God abideth in that Man: And in this we farther know, that he abideth in us* by such an intimate Union, even from the Spirit which he hath given us, and which is the Token and Effect of his Habitation in us; producing in our Souls by his gracious Operation, the Image of God, and forming us to an Intimacy with, and Nearness to him.

Sect. 5.  
John III. 24.

I M P R O V E M E N T.

OH, that the divine Spirit which God hath given to dwell in Believers, and by which *he himself* resides in them, may teach us more effectually this great Lesson of Love, which is so agreeable to the Purposes for which he was conferred! Let us abhor the Temper of Cain, as much as we abhor the Actions it produced, and dread the Doom they incurred. As for that Hatred of the World, which, in a steady Adherence to our Duty, may probably fall to our Lot, let it by no Means surprize or discourage us. It is surely enough to support our Spirits under the Malice and Outrage of a wicked World, that if we are steady and consistent Christians, we may know, that we are passed from Death to Life. O blessed Transition! Oh the adorable Riches of divine Grace to which it is owing! May the Ardor of our Love to our Brethren render this happy Change more and more apparent: And may this Christian Benevolence be so ardent in our Hearts, as to make us willing; when certain Duty requires it, even to lay down our Lives for them; having been ourselves distinguished with the like Token of the Love of our divine Master, who spared not his own Life for us; and Oh, what are even Thousands of our Lives in Comparison of his! And shall we then, while our Brethren in the Lord are in Necessity, be tenacious of our Substance? When we are surrounded with Plenty, shall we be unwilling to impart a little of our Abundance for their Relief, or content ourselves with the Charity of Words, which cost us nothing, while we withhold the Things that are needful for them? How will such shameful, detestable Hypocrisy

Ver. 11, 24.

Ver. 12.

Ver. 13.

Ver. 14.

Ver. 16.

Ver. 17.

Ver. 18.

*Sec. 5.* disgrace all our Pretensions to the *Love of God* : But let us treat all Hypocrisy, either towards God or Man, with Detestation and Abhorrence. Let us *love, not only in Word* and in Profession, but *in Deed and in Truth*, and rather chuse that our Actions should exceed our Engagements, than disappoint in any Instance the Expectations we have raised.

*Ver. 19.* Of what infinite Importance is it to have *Confidence towards God* in all our Addresses to his heavenly Majesty ! And if we desire this to be the Case, let us reverence our own *Consciences* ; avoiding every Thing, which would cause *our Hearts to condemn us*, in the

*Ver. 20, 21.* Presence of him who is *greater than our Hearts, and knoweth all Things*. And while we rejoice in this; that they do not *condemn us*, let us be very careful that we examine them *thoroughly*, that we be not imposed on by a false Answer, as it is to be feared many, through a superficial Inquiry, are, whose Expectations are the most sanguine, and whose Pretensions are the loudest. Let us re-

*Ver. 23.* member this great Summary of Christian Duty, *that we believe in the Name of the Lord Jesus Christ, and that we keep his Commandments, and do the Things that are pleasing in his Sight*. An Obedience, springing from such a Faith, a Faith, verified by such an Obedience, will give us a comfortable Hope, that our Prayers shall be accepted of God now, and our Persons accepted hereafter to eternal Life. *Amen.*

*Ver. 22.*

## S E C T. VI.

*The Apostle cautions the Christian Converts against being deceived by seducing Spirits ; and directs them, how they may distinguish between the Spirit of Truth, and the Spirit of Error. I JOHN IV. 1,—12.*

I JOHN IV. 1.

*Sec. 6.* **I**T is necessary, my *beloved*, that in the Circumstances in which we are placed, I should caution you against credulously submitting to every one, who pretends a divine Inspiration for what he says : *Believe not,*

*1 John IV. 1.*

I JOHN IV. 1.

**B**eloved, believe not every Spirit, but try the Spirits

Spirits whether they are of God: because many false Prophets are gone out into the World.

not, therefore, every pretended Spirit (a); Sect. 6. but make Trial of the Spirits, whether they be indeed of God, or not: For it is certain, that many false Prophets are gone forth into the World, boasting a divine Mission, and thereby laying Snares for the Souls of Men, with such Artifice, that might, as our Lord expresses it, (Mat. xxiv. 24.) deceive the very Elect, if it were possible. Now

John IV. 1.

2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: every Spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the Flesh, is of God.

in this ye know and may distinguish the Spirit of God, which is the Spirit of Truth, from that of Error. Every Spirit, that confesseth Jesus Christ, who is come in the Flesh (b), that pays a becoming Deference to his Authority, and the divine Discoveries which he hath made, is of God: There cannot, in the general, be any better Attestation of any Spirit than this, that it tends, in its Agency and Operations, to promote the Honour of the great Redeemer. And you

3 And every Spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the Flesh, is not of God: and this is that Spirit of Antichrist, whereof

may, on the other Hand, be sure of this, that every pretended Spirit of Revelation, that doth not confess and do Homage to Jesus Christ, who is come in the Flesh, is not of God: And indeed this is, on the contrary, the very [Spirit] of Antichrist (c), of whom you

(a) Believe not every Spirit.] Many pretended to the Character of the Messiah, and others, in an extraordinary Manner to be sent and inspired of God; and this they did with a View of turning away Christians from their Faith and Hope. The Apostle here, by a short Turn of Argument, demonstrates that they were indeed Impostors, from this very Attempt.

(b) That confesseth Jesus Christ, 'who is come in the Flesh.] So the Words, ο ομολογει Ιησυν χριστον εν σαρκι εληλυθοντα, may very well be rendered; and indeed they must be so in this Connection, for the bare Confession of Christ's Incarnation, would not have been sufficient to have cleared them from the Suspicion of being Impostors. To confess Jesus Christ seems to mean, not barely professing some Kind of Regard to him, but yielding a regular, consistent Homage, and, as it were, harmonizing and falling in with his Design.

(c) This is the Spirit of Antichrist.] From hence some have argued, that the Pope cannot be Antichrist, because he confesses Christ; and that it must necessarily be some entirely opposing Person or Sect, and which does not bear the Christian Name: But the Interpretation above obviates this Objection; for it is certain Popery is an Usurpation intirely inconsistent with a due Homage to Christ, and founded upon Principles most opposite to those of his Government and Religion. It is said to have been al-

Sect. 6. *you have heard, in the divine Oracles and Predictions which our blessed Lord delivered concerning this last Time, that he is coming, and is now in some Measure already in the*

1 John IV. 3.

4 *World.* But, my dear Children, ye are of God, and have overcome them in all their Snares and Delusions (*d*), because greater and more powerful by far is he that is in you, than he that is in the World: The Son of God, who stands at the Head of that Interest in which you are embarked, and who aids you by the mighty Communications of his Spirit, is infinitely too strong for Satan, the great Head of the Apostacy, and for all his Confederates.

5 *They, of whom I have now been speaking, are of the World, and they know how to manage their Affairs in a Manner which will be pleasing to it: Therefore they speak as of the World, as taking their Instructions from it, they give their Followers worldly Hopes and Expectations, and the World greedily bears them, and drinks in their fallacious Maxims, to the unspeakable Detriment of the Interests of true Religion.*

6 *Whereas, on the contrary, we are of God, and have approved ourselves to be so, by such irresistible Evidence, that I may now venture to say, that he who knoweth God, and experiences the governing Influence of divine Fear and Love, beareth and regardeth us (e); but he who is*

*not*

whereof you have heard that it should come, and even now already it is in the World.

4 Ye are of God, little Children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the World.

5 They are of the World: therefore speak they of the World, and the World heareth them.

6 We are of God: he that knoweth God, heareth us;

*ready in the World, as the ambitious, imposing, persecuting Spirit, which is the very Essence of Antichristianism, did then greatly prevail.*

(*d*) *Ye—have overcome them.*] That is, your Doctrines have prevailed against some who deserve the Name of *Antichrist*, as undoubtedly all who opposed the *Christian* Interest in some Measure did; and as you have the true *miraculous* Gifts of the Spirit, to which they falsely pretend, it is soon seen, that the Advantage is clearly on your Side.

(*e*) *He who knoweth God beareth us.*] *Bishop Bull* thinks, the Meaning of this is, “*Regard our Temper and Conduct, and compare it with that of those who oppose us, and you will find a carnal Principle continually prevailing in them, and a spiritual Principle governing us: In Consequence of which you may know assuredly that we*”  
“*are*”

us; he that is not of God, heareth not us. He by whom we know the Spirit of Truth, and the Spirit of Error.

not of God, doth not attentively and obediently bear us; and by rejecting our Testimony, attended with such Evidence, proves himself destitute of all true Religion. After such a Series of Miracles, as have been wrought in Confirmation of the Gospel, and other Proofs attending it in their Days, it may be laid down as a Test; so that by this we may sufficiently know, and discern between the Spirit of Truth, and the Spirit of Error, as the one receives, and the other rejects, this divine System.

Sect. 6.  
John IV. 6.

7 Beloved, let us love one another: for Love is of God; and every one that loveth, is born of God, and knoweth God.

But think it not enough, speculatively to admit its Authority. Let it be your great Care practically to acknowledge it; and especially, to the Purposes of mutual Benevolence. Yes, my beloved, let us love one another (f); for Love is as really from God, as Truth itself; and every one who loveth, every one in whose Heart this divine Principle reigns and triumphs over the selfish and contrary Passions, shews by it that he is born of God by his regenerating and transforming Grace, and that he truly knoweth God; he makes it appear, that he judges rightly of God's Nature, and Will; and that his Acquaintance with him has made deep and powerful Impressions on his Heart. Whereas he who loveth not, whatever he may pretend, hath not truly known God; for God is Love, its great Fountain and Exemplar; he

8 He that loveth not, knoweth not God; for God is Love.

Whereas he who loveth not, whatever he may pretend, hath not truly known God; for God is Love, its great Fountain and Exemplar; he

"are of God, and they of the World." Compare Bull's Sermon. i. pag. 11. I rather think, as Archbishop Tillotson has stated it, (Vol. iii. pag. 501.) He considers the Christian Religion as now so abundantly demonstrated, that it might be made a Test by which other Doctrines and Pretences might be tried; and to those who have received it upon full Evidence, it must be so. Thus the Jews were directed to judge, and obliged to condemn, a pretended Prophet, as, ipso facto, proved an Impostor, if he attempted to turn them aside from the Revelation which God had given by Moses. Deut. xiii. 1, — 3.

(f) Let us love one another. It is reported, that when the Apostle John was grown old, and past preaching, he used to be led to the Church at Ephesus, and only say these Words to the People, Little Children love one another. And the Importance of the Argument by which he here enforces Love, justifies the Repetition of it so frequently.



Sect. 6: he recommends it by his Law, and produces and cherishes it by his Influences; and the due Contemplation of him will naturally inflame our Hearts with Love to his divine Majesty, and to our Fellow-Creatures for his Sake, whose Creatures they are.

John IV. 8.

- 9 And in this great Instance is the Love of God, of which I now speak, when I say that God is himself Love, in the most illustrious Manner *manifested*, and displayed in and towards us, that God sent Jesus his only begotten and well beloved Son into the World, that we, condemned and miserable Sinners, *might live through him*; that the Sentence of Death, to which we were obnoxious, might be reversed; that we might be quickened to a Principle of spiritual Life, and so conducted to the Possession of Life everlasting. Yes, Sirs, I must repeat it again, that your Hearts, and my own, may be the more deeply affected with it, *Herein is Love, not indeed that we loved God*, for we were, on the contrary, in a State of Enmity to him, in which, unthought and untouched by his Love and Grace, we should have perished and perished; *but that he loved us, and, in boundless Compassion to our Necessities and our Miseries, sent his Son [to be] a Propitiation for our Sins*; to make Atonement to his injured Justice for our Offences, and so to introduce us on honourable Terms to his Favour. And let me make this important Inference from it, *my beloved, if God so loved us, how ought we to love one another*, in Imitation of his divine Example, from a Sense of the happy State into which we are brought, and in Gratitude to him for so inestimable a Favour? And the Inference has the greater Weight, as *no Man hath ever seen God or can see him*, since he is in his own Nature invisible, and possessed of such essential Perfections,

9 In this was manifested the Love of God towards us, because that God sent his only-begotten Son into the World, that we might live through him.

10 Herein is Love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the Propitiation for our Sins.

11 Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another.

12 No Man hath seen God

God at any Time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his Love is perfected in us.

fections, that it is impossible that any Expressions of Love and Duty from any of his Creatures should in the least Degree increase his Happiness. But as he is the great Fountain of Benevolence, *if we love one another*, it appears, that *God dwelleth in us, and that his Love is perfected in us*; for this is the best Proof we can give of our Love to him, and of the Prevalence of his Grace in our Hearts, transforming us into his Image.

Sect 6.  
John IV.  
12.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

THE Spirit of Error has been working, in some Measure, in all Ages of the Church; nor are we to wonder, if having infested that of the Apostles, it be transmitted to our own. It is necessary therefore to try the Spirits, whether they be of God: And we may safely try them by the Homage they pay to Christ; and this not merely to his Name, but to the Genius of his Religion, and to the great Standard of it which he hath left upon Record in his Word, that it might not be that uncertain Thing, which the Fancies or Traditions of fallible Men might have rendered it. Antichristian Principles and Powers have arisen, but God has enabled, and he will enable, the Remnant of his People to conquer them; for the Spirit in them, is greater than that which is in the World. That may hearken to Seducers as they accommodate their Doctrine to its prevailing Lusts and Passions; but let us remember that the Gospel is now established as a Test, and may we admit, or reject, all human Teachings, as they agree, or disagree, with it.

If we read and hear it to any valuable Purpose, it will teach us to love one another: That great Lesson of our divine Master, with Relation to which we have Line upon Line, and Precept upon Precept. If we value ourselves in any Degree upon knowing God, let us give this Proof of it, without which all our most subtle Speculations or Debates concerning his Nature and Perfections, will be utterly vain. And that we may attain to this, let us frequently contemplate that incomparable Display of his Love towards us, in sending his only-begotten Son into the World, that we might live through him. Let us daily consider our Lives, as derived from that great Act of Mercy and Grace; and that it is through Christ alone,

as

- Sect. 6. as thus given us of God, that we can obtain and secure Life eternal, since in him we receive the only appointed *Propitiation* for those *Sins*, which would otherwise have obstructed the Passage of all Good to us, even from the great eternal Fountain of Felicity. He hath prevented us with the Blessings of his Goodness: We did not love him, but he first loved us. Oh that this Love on his Part, may produce the warmest Return on ours! And let us testify the Sincerity of this Affection, by remembering how it ought to influence our Hearts to *Benevolence*, as well as *Devotion*. And as we cannot see God at any Time, nor extend any Act of Beneficence to him, let us see his Image with due Regard in every *Christian*, and in some Degree in every *human Creature*, that we may express our Love to him, by doing Good to them, for his Sake.
- Ver. 10.
- Ver. 11.
- Ver. 12.

## S E C T. VII.

*The Apostle farther urges the Excellence of Love, as a substantial Proof of our knowing God, and dwelling in him; and as bringing the greatest Honour to God, and affording the truest Composure and Confidence to the Soul. I John IV. 13, to the End.*

I JOHN IV. 13.

Sect. 4. I Have been mentioning Love, as an Argument of our Union to God; and I must now add, that in this also we know, that we abide in him, and that he dwelleth in us, because he hath given to us the Communication of his Spirit, which operating in us by its gracious Influences, sets, as it were, the Mark of God upon us, and thereby assures us that he owns us as his, and is become our God: And animated and sealed by this Spirit, as we have seen and known by undoubted Evidence ourselves, so we courageously testify to others, how hazardous soever the bearing that Testimony may

1 John IV. 13.

14

I JOHN IV. 13.

Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.

14 And we have seen, and do testify, that the Father

ther sent the Son to be the Saviour of the World.

may be, that the great Almighty Father of Sect. 7. all bath sent Jesus the Son, under the high Character of the Saviour of the World, and that it is in, and by him alone, how proudly-foever the infidel World may reject and disdain him, that eternal Salvation can be obtained.

John IV. 14.

15 Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

Whosoever, in a steady and uniform Manner, shall confess, that Jesus is the Son of God (a), maintaining this Profession of Faith with Resolution and Zeal, and acting in Conformity to it, gives the happiest Proof, that God dwelleth in him, and that he dwelleth in God: There is a blessed Union between God and his Soul; so that it is, in the Language of Scripture, (Isai. lvii. 15.) the Habitation of God, and he may be said to be, as to his Affections and Hopes, with God in Heaven, and shall ere long, in his compleat Person, reside there.

15

16 And we have known and believed the Love that God hath to us. God is Love; and he that dwelleth in Love, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

And we have known and firmly believed the Love which God hath unto us; for as we have again and again taught you, and know not how to cease inculcating it, God is himself Love, and he that dwelleth in Love, dwelleth in God, and God in him (b); this is the Bond of Union, and the Pledge of its Perpetuity. (Compare Ver. 8. and 12.)

16

17 Herein is our Love made perfect, that we may have Boldness in the Day of Judgment: because as he

is And herein is Love perfected in us, that, notwithstanding all our acknowledged and lamented Imperfections, we may have Boldness and Confidence in the great Day of universal Judgment (c), in that as he our

17

(a) Whosoever shall confess &c.] Bishop Hopkins accounts for this, and such Passages, by observing, that in the Primitive Times there were no temporal Inducements to embrace Christianity; and consequently most of the Professors of it acted upon Conscience, and it might be charitably hoped they were indeed regenerate. See his Works, pag. 520.

(b) Dwelleth in God, and God in him.] Perhaps when John wrote this Epistle, he might refer to that excellent Prayer of our blessed Lord, which he has recorded in his Gospel, and to such Passages of it as John xvii. 22, 23.

(c) In the Day of Judgment.] Some by this Phrase understand the Day in which Christians were judged: As if it had been said, The Perfection of Love is, when it induces

Sect. 7.  
1 John. IV.  
17.

our Father and our God is, so are we in is, so are we in this World. some prevailing Degree, even while we reside in this World, so far as the Imperfections of that mortal Life, to which we are here confined, will admit.

18 And happy are they, who are arrived to such a Temper and Character as this; for there is no servile and abject Fear in Love, but perfect Love casteth out such Fear from the Soul, in which it resides. And this is a very desirable Effect; because Fear hath Torment, it throws the Mind into a most uneasy Situation; but he that feareth, is not made perfect in Love. Study therefore to increase more

18 There is no Fear in Love; but perfect Love casteth out Fear: because Fear hath Torment: he that feareth, is not made perfect in Love.

19 And more in that noble Affection of Love to God, and you will find your Self-Enjoyment rising in Proportion to it. And reflect upon this with all Humility, that if we do indeed experience any Thing of that divine Principle in our Hearts, we must freely acknowledge, that we love him, because he first loved us. He hath not only given us Natures capable of these sublime Actings, and poured in upon us, from their first Original, numberless providential Bounties; but hath also appointed his Son, to lay a Foundation for our Happiness in his own Blood, and his Spirit, to diffuse that Grace in our Hearts, by which they are formed to every Sentiment of pious Gratitude.

19 We love him, because he first loved us.

20 And let this also be remembered, as of the last Importance, that if any one say, I love God, and hateth his Brother, how high

20 If a Man say, I love God, and hateth his Brother,

foever

induces us to maintain the Cause of *Christ* before *Judges* and *Persecutors*, that we may be conformed to him, whose Life was in a Manner a continued Series of Sufferings; whereas the violent *Fear of Death*, which where it prevails, is a tormenting Passion, is inconsistent with the perfect Love of *Christ*. This is the Sense which *Dr. Bates* gives to this Passage. *Bates's Works*, pag. 924. But the *Day of Judgment* has generally a different Signification from what this Explication gives it; and therefore I chuse to paraphrase the Words after the Manner in which they are usually understood.

(d) How

ther, he is a Liar: for he that loveth not his Brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen?

soever his Pretences to Devotion may be, and to whatever Fervors he may carry his Zeal, *he is a Lyar*; for it is impossible, that the Love of God should be sincere in the Soul, which is destitute of this brotherly Affection; as will appear, if you consider, what peculiar Advantages we have for engaging our Hearts, towards those with whom we are conversant; *for how can he, who loveth not his Brother whom he hath seen, love God whom he hath not seen (d)?* The invisible Nature of the Divine Being is, in this Respect, an Obstacle, which our weak and carnal Minds cannot be expected easily to conquer; *And it is certain, that the Neglect of this benevolent Disposition would be an high Instance of Disobedience to him, since we have this express Commandment from him, that he who loveth God, and professeth himself religious, should also love his Brother.* And God hath hereby, in Effect, declared, that he will treat those as his Enemies, who pretend to devout Zeal, while they are destitute of Brotherly Love.

21 And this Commandment have we from him, that he who loveth God, love his Brother also.

21

*I M P R O V E M E N T.*

**T**HAT all these repeated Exhortations may not be entirely in vain, let us now call our Hearts to a deep and affectionate Contemplation of the astonishing Love of God, that he hath sent even his Son to be the Saviour of the World, according to the Testimony of this divine Herald, who beheld his Glory, and witnessed it

Ver. 14.

to

(d) *How can he, who loveth not his Brother, whom he hath seen, love God &c.]* Mr. Howe observes, that the Apostle seems to take it for granted, that we are more disposed to the Love of our Fellow-Creatures, than to the Love of God. Mr. Seed has charmingly illustrated this Text, (Ser. Vol. i. pag. 390.) and observes, that we rise to the Love of God from the Love of our Fellow-Creatures; as to the Knowledge of God, by the Knowledge of the Creatures.—Hardly any Text was ever more fully illustrated, than this, in those Posthumous Sermons of the great Mr. Howe, which were published by Mr. Fletcher.

Sect. 7. to be such a Glory, as became *the only-begotten of the Father, full of Grace and Truth.* (*John i. 14.*)

- Let us think of the World as *lost*, of the whole Race of rational Creatures in it as *perishing*, as going down to eternal Perdition. But a *Saviour* is provided: And Oh, what a *Saviour*? *The Son of God*, that Almighty Deliverer, to whom our Salvation was dearer than his own Life. So dear, that he was willing to be invested with mortal Flesh, in order that he might be capable of enduring Pain and Death for our Redemption. Have we not herein *seen and known the Love of God to us*? That Love, wherewith he has so graciously prevented us: For surely nothing can be more apparent than this, that if we do indeed *love him* sincerely and faithfully, *it is because he hath first loved us.* And therefore, instead of boasting of our Love to him, as if we could make him our Debtor, let us humbly acknowledge that he is the great Original and Support of that beatifying Affection of the human Mind; and that our Obligations *to him* are *great*, in Proportion to the Degree in which we feel it working in us. Let us be encouraged boldly to *confess Christ as the Son of God.* Let us seek after more *perfect Love* to him, and to the Father, as that which tends to make the Mind happy by *casting out* every *tormenting* Passion, and to establish it in a humble *Boldness* amidst the most awful Prospects. It is Matter of deep Lamentation, that our Spirits should be so degenerate, as while we are strongly impressed by *sensible* Objects, we should be the less inclined to love the blessed *God*, because he is an *invisible* Being. Let us adore his Goodness, that in Condescension to our Weakness, he hath made himself *visible* in the Person of *his Son*; and as *Christ* has constituted our Brethren, in some Degree, *his Representatives*, to receive, as in his Name, the Tokens of our Kindness and Affection, let us be studious, by our *Love to them*, and particularly to the *poor* among them, who have peculiarly this Honour; let us, I say, be studious to approve the Sincerity of that *Love to him*, which we so universally profess, and the Absence of which were so inexcusably criminal.
- Ver. 16.
- Ver. 19.
- Ver. 15.
- Ver. 17.
- Ver. 20.
- Ver. 21.

S E C T.

S E C T. VIII.

*The Apostle farther discourses of the Character of those who are born of God, particularly describing them as Lovers of Christ, as Conquerors of the World, and as couragiously maintaining the Gospel; on the Witnesses to which, both in Heaven and on Earth, he more especially enlarges. I John V. 1, —12.*

I JOHN V. 1.

Whoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ, is born of God: and every one that loveth him that begat, loveth him also that is begotten of him.

I JOHN V. 1.

HAVING been discoursing of the Privileges of the Children of God, let me a little farther illustrate, and remind you of, the great Essentials of their Character; that you may judge the better of your own Concern in what is said. And here nothing is of more Importance than to observe, that every one who truly believeth that Jesus is the Christ, so as to have his Heart duly affected with the Belief, without which Faith does not deserve its Name, *is born of God (a)*: He is brought to that divine Temper by the Influences of the Spirit of God upon his Heart, and in Consequence of this he may be assured of his Adoption. *And every one who loveth him that begat, loveth him also that is begotten by him*: We naturally love the Children of our common Friends, and much more will the Children of our heavenly Father be dear to us, if we bear a  
be-

Sect. 8.  
I John V. 1.

(a) *Is born of God.*] It is probable the Apostle may here refer to the vain Boasts which the Jews made of being the Children of God, while they set Christ at Defiance; and poured the greatest Infamy on his Name and Cause. Mr. Locke quotes this Place to prove that this was the only Fundamental of the Gospel; but it is evident, this Proposition may be understood in very different Senses; and consequently there is no Room to lay all the Strefs that he supposes may be laid, on such an Expression.

(b) *In*



Sect. 8. becoming Affection to him. And we may take the same Truth likewise the other

1 John V 2.

Way, and say, that *in this we know that we love the Children of God, if we love God, and keep his Commandments (b)*. For certainly if our Love to the Children of God arise from truly religious Motives, it will be an uniform Thing, and all the other Precepts of God will have a suitable Influence upon our Hearts and Lives: Whereas any pretended Benevolence of Temper, which leaves us Rebels to the Authority of the common Father of the Family, is a mere natural Impulse, and deserves not the noble Name of Brotherly Love. Wonder not, that I insist so much on the Influence of religious Principles on the Life and Conversation. *For this is the Love of God, this is the great Evidence we are to give of it, that we impartially keep all his Commandments, without allowing ourselves in the Violation of any one of them. And to a Mind influenced by true Love, his Commandments are not grievous*: As they are all most equitable, reasonable and gracious in themselves, all adapted to promote the true Happiness of our Lives, so we shall find, that fervent Love will make them all pleasant and delightful to us. *Because*, whereas the great Obstruction to keeping God's Commandments is the Influence of worldly Motives

2 By this we know, that we love the Children of God, when we love God, and keep his Commandments.

3 For this is the Love of God, that we keep his Commandments: and his Commandments are not grievous.

4 For whatsoever is born of

(b) *In this we know that we love the Children of God &c.*] Dr. Clarke supposes this Clause to be transposed, and that it should be read, "*By this we know that we love God and keep his Commandments, because we love his Children.*" *Post. Ser. Vol. ii. pag. 102.* To the common Reading it has been *objected*, that the Medium is more *obscure*, than the Thing to be learnt from it. Dr. Bates answers, that the Apostle speaks concerning our knowing that our Love to the Brethren is of the true *Christian* Stamp: Now a strong internal Principle of *Love to God* may be more self-evident to the Mind, as less in Danger of being confounded with a merely human Affection, or benevolent Instinct. *Bates's Works, pag. 695.* Some have queried, whether it might not be translated, *Hereby, even in that we love the Children of God, do we know that we love God, and keep his Commandments.*

(c) *Came*

of God overcometh the World: and this is the Victory that overcometh the World, *even* our Faith.

Motives and Considerations on the Mind; Sect. 8. *whatever is born of God, every Son and Daughter of his, not excepting even the feeblest, conquers the World, and would despise and trample upon all the Glories of universal Empire, if opposed to the Favour of his heavenly Father. And this is the great Victory that conquers the World, the grand triumphant Principle which accomplishes Things which appear so incredible, [even] our firm Faith in the great Articles of the Christian Religion; particularly, that Christ is the Son of God, that he came into the World to redeem us from its Lusts and Vanities, and that he will assuredly conduct all his People to Seats of infinitely greater and nobler Felicity.* And indeed, as this is

John V. 4.

5 Who is he that overcometh the World, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

And indeed, as this is the Happiness of true Christians, so only of them; for *who is he that conquers the World, except it be he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?* The great Principles peculiar to our divine Religion, a Sense of redeeming Love, and the Prospect of such a sublime and perpetual Happiness as the Gospel opens upon us, can alone be sufficient to teach us to triumph over these transitory Vanities, and to establish a uniform Character, superior to the Variety of Temptations with which we can be assaulted: While the boasted Triumphs of others, upon meaner Principles, have been very partial and imperfect, and they have evidently been subdued by one Vanity, while they have gloried in despising another.

6 This is he that came by Water and Blood, *even* Jesus

*This* Jesus, of whom we have now been speaking, *is he who came by Water, and by Blood (c), even Jesus the Christ, whose great Design it was both to cleanse and purify his People,*

(c) *Came by Water and Blood.*] I think it a great Mistake of Mr. Cradock and some others, to imagine that this relates to *external Washing* and *Jewish Sacrifices.*

(d) *There.*

Sect. 8. People, and to make an Atonement to God for their Sins. He came *not by Water only,*

1 John V. 6.

did not only instruct Men in the purest Morals, or set them the most perfect and compleat Example; *but by Water, and Blood.* He shed his most precious Blood to expiate our Offences, and God gave, as it were, a sensible Intimation of these united Purposes, when there came out of his wounded Side, a Stream of Blood and Water, which descended in such a Manner, as that each might evidently be distinguished from the other. *And the Spirit is that which witnesseth,* the extraordinary Communication of the Spirit to his Servants is the most glorious Attestation of all; *for we well know, that the Spirit is Truth;* and when we consider the wonderful Manner of its Interposition, can no longer doubt of the Truth of whatever shall be attested by such an Authority.

7 And indeed, when I consider this, I may say, that whereas the Law admitted the concurrent Testimony of two Witnesses as valid, we have as it were a double Trinity of Witnesses, one in Heaven, and the other on Earth, to support this most momentous Truth. *For there are three, who bear Witnesses to it (d), [in Heaven, the Father,* by whom the Scheme of our Salvation was originally projected, and who revealed it so early to the Church by the Prophets; *the divine Word,* whose great Business it was, by such Humiliations, Labours and Sufferings

Jesus Christ; not by Water only, but by Water and Blood: and it is the Spirit that beareth Witness, because the Spirit is Truth.

7 For there are three that bear Record in Heaven, the Father, the Word, and

(d) *There are three who bear Witnesses &c.]* It would be altogether unfit, to introduce into such short Notes as these are intended to be, a *critical* Dissertation upon the Authority of this *celebrated Text*; I shall content myself with referring to what so many learned Persons as have engaged in the Controversy, have written on each Side; but I thought myself obliged to intimate such a remaining *Doubt* at least, concerning its Authority, as I have done by inclosing it in *Crotchets*. I am persuaded the Words contain an important Truth; but whether they have been added by some, or omitted by others, contrary to the *Original Copy*, I will not pretend to determine.

(e) *The*

and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one.

ings to bring it into Execution; and the holy Spirit (e), who seals and applies it to Believers: And these three are one, as in the Agreement of their Testimony; so likewise in the Perfections of their Nature, and each worthy of those divine Honours, which cannot be communicated to any Creature.

Sect. 8.  
John V. 7.

8 And there are three that bear Witness in Earth, the Spirit, and the Water, and the Blood: and these three agree in one.

And there are three on Earth, who bear Witness,] the Spirit, sent down from Heaven in its sanctifying and miraculous Operations, which still continue to produce the noblest Effect; and the Water of Baptism, and the Representation made of Christ's Blood in the Sacramental Wine (f), which are intended, throughout all Ages, to keep up the Remembrance of these wonderful Facts, and to bear, as it were, their Testimony to this mysterious Person, who united in himself Humanity and Deity, and came by Water, and by Blood; and these three agree in one; they join to advance the same End, by establishing the Gospel in the World.

8

9 If we receive the Witness of Men, the Witness of God is greater: for this is the Witness of God, which he hath testified of his Son.

And if we receive the Testimony of Men, which in many Cases we cannot, without the most palpable Absurdity, reject, surely the Testimony of God is worthy of infinitely greater Credit; for this is the Testimony of God, which he hath witnessed concerning his Son, recommending him thereby to our most dutiful and obedient Regard; that by a firm

9

(e) The Father, the Word and the holy Spirit.] The Father, Mat. iii. 16, 17. xvii. 5. John xii. 28. The Word himself, Act. vii. 55, 56. ix. 3. 4. Rev. i. 10, &c. The Holy Ghost, John i. 32, 33.

(f) The Water and the Blood.] By the Water, Mr. Jeffries understands the Baptism of Christ, and the Miracles which were wrought on that Occasion, as the Descent of the Spirit, and the Voice from Heaven; and by the Blood, the Death of Christ, which he willingly suffered, and demonstrated thereby that he was no Impostor, especially as he predicted so many extraordinary Circumstances attending it. See his Review of the Controversy with Collins. Others interpret the Blood here spoken of, of the Blood of the Martyrs shed in Confirmation of Christianity, and the Water, of the Purity of the Lives of Christians. I confess it is a distinct Text; but, on the whole, prefer the Sense given in the Paraphrase.

Sect. 8. a firm Faith in him, and Adherence to him, we may conquer the World, and all the

John V. 10. Enemies of our Salvation. *He, who upon this Testimony believeth in the Son of God, hath not only an external Evidence to produce, which may suffice for the Conviction and Condemnation of the unbelieving World, but from the Time in which he experiences the Efficacy of his Faith, hath also the Witness within himself (g):* The happy Change it makes in the whole State of his Soul, manifests the Excellence and Reality of its Object. But *he that believeth not God, offers him the grossest and most insufferable Affront, for he in Effect makes him a Liar; charges him with attesting the most notorious Falsehood in the most solemn Manner; because he hath not believed in the Testimony, which God hath testified concerning his Son by so many Prophecies, and other miraculous Interpositions, to demonstrate the Truth of his Mission.* So that if this may be rejected, it cannot be conceived, how he should ever be able to give any convincing Proof, that he testifies any thing at all.

11 *And this is, in one Word, the Substance and Abridgement of this Testimony, that the blessed God hath, in his infinite Condescension and Bounty, given unto us the Promises of eternal Life; and this Life is in his Son; purchased by him, and laid up in him, to be bestowed according to his Pleasure; and therefore only to be obtained through him.*

12 So that *he who hath an Interest in the Son by a lively*

10 He that believeth on the Son of God, hath the Witness in himself: he that believeth not God, hath made him a Liar, because he believeth not the Record that God gave of his Son.

11 And this is the Record, that God hath given to us eternal Life: and this Life is in his Son.

12 He that hath the Son, hath

(g) *Hath the Witness within himself.*] Some have considered and explained this, as if the Meaning were, that every Christian did in those Days receive some miraculous Proofs of his Religion; by some Communication of the extraordinary Gifts of the Spirit; in Consequence of which he might, by looking within himself, know the Certainty of the Gospel. But I think this Assertion incapable of being proved, either from this Passage, or any other; and can prefer no Sense of this celebrated Text, to that which Dr. Watts has so largely established and illustrated in his Sermons upon it; to which therefore I refer my Reader with the utmost Satisfaction. *Watts' Sermons, Vol. i. Sermon i.—iii.*

hath Life; and he that hath not the Son of God, hath not Life.

a lively and operative Faith, *hath* this eternal Life in the sure Pledges and Beginnings of it in his own Heart, and shall shortly enter on the compleat Enjoyment, tho' in himself acknowledged to be ever so unworthy of it; and *he who hath not* an Interest in the Son of God, *hath not Life*, whatever proud Conceit he may entertain of his own Merits and Excellencies; but, on the contrary, remains exposed to the righteous Displeasure of God, and under a Sentence of eternal Death.

Sect. 5.  
I John V.  
12.

### I M P R O V E M E N T.

LET us regard the grand Question, on which our Life, our eternal Life is suspended! I mean, *Whether we have, or have not, the Son of God!* Let us then examine into this important Matter with the greatest Attention. Let us hearken to, and receive the *Testimony of God*, as comprehended in this one Word, that *God hath given, even to us, dying, perishing Men, eternal Life; and this Life is in his Son.* Let us receive this transcendent Gift with all Humility and Thankfulness; and so much the rather, as it is given us *in him.* By firmly *believing* this, we shall *conquer the World*, and gain a Victory of an infinitely different and more exalted Nature, than they, who are Strangers to *Christ*, or who reject him, ever have done, or can possibly do.

Ver. 12.

Ver. 11.

Ver. 10.

Ver. 4.

May our stedfast *Faith in him* furnish us with a substantial Attestation that we are *born of God*; and may we prove it to be sincere, by *loving the Children of God, and by keeping all his Commandments.* We must surely acknowledge, that his Commandments are reasonable; and if we have a genuine *Love to God* existing in our Hearts, it will render the Observance of them *pleasant* and delightful. And if we are not possess of that Evidence of Love, which arises from a Disposition to Obedience, let us remember, he hath fairly and frequently warned us, that *no other* Expressions of Love, how fervent and pathetick soever, will be accepted, or allowed by him. That our Faith may be confirmed, and our Love awakened, let us often look to *Christ*, as coming *by Water, and by Blood.* Let us meditate on *that mysterious Stream of Blood and Water*, which came forth from his wounded Side. Let us solemnly

Ver. 1.

Ver. 8.

Ver. 6.

372 *St. John wrote, that they might believe on the Son of God:*

Sect. 8. remind ourselves of the *Baptismal Water*, in which we were washed, and of the *sacred Cup, the Communion of the Blood of Christ*, referring to this great important Event. And while we are contemplating the *Memorial* of his Humility, let us also consider him as *one* with the *Father*, and the *Holy Spirit*; and as each of the *sacred three* join their *Testimony* to the Truth of the Gospel, and join their kind Offices for supplying to us the invaluable Blessings of it, let us joyfully ascribe *Glory to each, World without End. Amen.*

Ver. 7.

---

## S E C T. IX.

*The Apostle concludes his Epistle; declaring its general Design to be the Confirmation of their Faith; and reminding them of the Encouragement they had to hope, that their Prayers should be heard, for themselves, and for others, who had not sinned unpardonably. And he then adds a Reflection on the happy Difference, which the Knowledge of God in Christ made between them, and an ignorant and wicked World. I John V. 13, to the End.*

I JOHN V. 13.

Sect. 9. *AND* now, to draw towards a Conclusion; *these Things have I written to you, who believe on the Name of the Son of God, to confirm your Faith, and establish your Joy, that ye may know; that, if your Attachment to him is of the right Kind, you have, in Consequence of it, an Interest in eternal Life; and that, this Hope operating to produce the substantial Fruits of genuine and universal Obedience, ye may yet more fully and stedfastly believe on the mighty and divine Name of the Son of*

I JOHN V. 13.

*THESE* Things have I written unto you, that believe on the Name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal Life, and that ye may believe on the Name of the Son of God.

of God (a). Then you may be assured of Sect. 9. the certain Truth of his Religion, in Proportion to the Degree, in which you inwardly experience its noble Effects; and may in Consequence of this, keep your Hearts continually fixed upon him, in the many important Views, in which Faith exhibits him.

John V. 13.

14 And this is the Confidence that we have in him, that if we ask any thing according to his Will, he heareth us.

And this is the Confidence, which we have towards him, as our prevalent Intercessor and mighty Saviour at God's right Hand; that if we ask any thing according to his Will, he heareth us (b) graciously; that he observes and takes Notice of all our Petitions.

14

15 And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the Petitions that we desired of him.

And we are sure his is not an ineffectual Notice; for if we know that he heareth us, whatsoever we ask, we know, as a farther Consequence, since he is ever able to carry all his gracious Purposes into immediate Execution, that we shall certainly have an Accomplishment of those Petitions which we have asked of him (c); supposing as I said before,

15

(a) That ye may believe on the Name of the Son of God.] It is manifest, the Apostle does not in this Epistle, to establish their Faith, produce the Evidences of Christianity, and argue upon them. But the good Dispositions, which his whole Discourse has a Tendency to promote, would certainly have a strong Influence to confirm their Faith; as such Dispositions would appear to be the Effect of the Gospel; and as an ardent Zeal in the Teachers of the Gospel to promote them, was a strong Confirmation of their being faithful Witnesses to the great Facts, which had before been received upon their Credit. — I look upon this as a strong Text to prove, in Opposition to what Dr. Whitby has advanced, that Christians are urged in the New Testament, to believe in Jesus Christ.

(b) That if we ask any thing according to his Will, he heareth us.] Archbishop Tillotson supposes this refers particularly to the Apostles. (Compare Mat. xviii. 18, 19. John xiv. 13, 14. xvi. 23, 24.) But so few of the Apostles could be concerned in this Advice of St. John, and there are so many Promises of the Answer of Prayer scattered up and down in the Old and New Testament, (See Dr. Clark, on the Promises, Cap. iii. Sect. vi.) that I would by no Means thus confine the Interpretation.

(c) If we know that he heareth — we shall have the Petitions.] Hearing cannot in the preceding Verse, signify merely knowing what we say; for then there would be no Reason to limit the Assertion to our asking any thing according to his Will: And it may seem, that if we take it for answering our Petitions, it is a mere Tautology: It is therefore necessary to interpret the former Clause of taking Notice of us, the other of operating in Consequence of that Notice. The Almighty Power of God to fulfill all his gracious Purposes in Favour of his People, seems to be the Medium, on which the Infirmitude is grounded.

(d) I say.



Sect. 9. before, they are agreeable to his Will; and it is always his Will, that his People should  
 1 John V. 15. be truly happy, and be supplied with every necessary Good.

16 And let me now add one Precaution, with regard to the Cases, in which it may be proper to remember Offenders in our Prayers: *If any one see his Brother commit a Sin, [which is] not unto Death, that is, any Sin, but that which is marked out in the awful Words of our Lord Jesus Christ as unpardonable; he shall ask, and may hope that, through the divine Goodness, he shall give him Life: He may cheerfully expect, that God will return in Mercy to those, who sin not unto Death. There is indeed a Sin, [that is] unto Death, I mean, such an Apostacy from Christianity, as is attended with blaspheming the Operations of the Spirit of God, and ascribing them to Satan: And I say not, that he, whose Aid may be requested on such a sad Occasion, should pray concerning that (d); for Christ has told us it shall never be forgiven in this World, or the next. And as nothing but a Miracle of divine Grace, never to be expected, can recover a Person in such Circumstances, it is better to wave the Petition,*  
 how

16 If any Man see his Brother sin a Sin *which is* not unto Death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto Death. There is a Sin unto Death: I do not say that he shall pray for it.

(d) *I say not that he should pray concerning that.*] It seems to be intended as a Brand set on a Person who had been guilty of the Sin here specified, that he was not to be prayed for by his converted Fellow-Christians. Some indeed would interpret this Sin of the more heinous Kind of Offences punishable with Death by human Laws: But I can see no Sort of Reason for refusing the Charity of our Prayers to Persons in such Circumstances. Others think it refers to the Case of *Illness*; but there is no express Mention of it here; and it seems to have been taken for granted without Reason, that *this Text* is parallel to *Jam. v. 14, 15*. It is certain, that *Illness* in Case of a capital Crime would not delay the Execution. — The *Pepish* Distinction between mortal and venial Sins will however appear to have no Foundation in this Text upon the Interpretation we have given, or indeed upon any we have mentioned. The chief Difficulty remaining is, how it could be known, that the *Apostacy* in Question, was attended with such Circumstances as made it the *unpardonable Sin*? Where it was most difficult to distinguish, the *Gift of discerning Spirits* might infallibly decide it: Where it was dubious, *Charity* would incline to the milder Extreme; and *conditional* Prayer might however be offered.

(e) *The*

Sect. 9.

17 All Unrighteousness is Sin: and there is a Sin not unto Death.

how much soever we may be disposed to lament the Misery of the unhappy Creature who is fallen into it. Every Instance of Unrighteousness is indeed Sin, and every Breach of his Law must be displeasing to God, and be esteemed Matter of just Censure and Lamentation: *But there is a Sin, not unto Death*, in the Sense just assigned.

18 We know that whoever is born of God, sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

There are indeed many, from which it evidently appears, that Persons may be recovered; and in all such Cases, Christian Charity will require you to pray for your Brethren. And from this dreadful Evil divine Grace will preserve every good Man; for we know that whoever is born of God, does not sin, in this terrible and ruinous Manner; but he who is born of God, diligently keepeth himself from it, and Satan the wicked one, who is the great Abetter of all Evil, doth not touch, or come near him, but is immediately repelled in his first Assaults.

19 And we know that we are of God, and the whole World lieth in Wickedness.

Christians do indeed know, that we are of God; and the whole World lieth in Wickedness (e): It is in Subjection to the wicked one, and lies wounded and slain under him.

20 And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an Understanding that we may know him.

But we know, that, when the whole human Race was in this helpless and miserable Condition, the Son of God is come, and hath given us an Understanding, that we may know him.

(e) *The whole World lieth in Wickedness*: ο κοσμος ολος εν τω πονηρω κειται.] The whole World here, as the whole Creation, Rom. viii. 22. signifies that Part of the World, in which Christianity was not received. — Some imagine, that by the World's lying in Wickedness, εν τω πονηρω, the Apostle refers to the abandoned Wickedness of the Roman Emperors, by whose Means the most enormous Impiety and Immorality was propagated through the whole Empire by Præfets, Officers and Soldiers. Goss. Truth vindic. pag. 174. Mr. Reynolds, who supposes that Hell is situated in the Air, observes that the Earth, on that Hypothesis, lies, as it were, in the Suburbs and Frontiers of it. See his Inquiries concerning the Angelic World, pag. 191. But I rather think, the Word κειται alludes to the Circumstance of a Body which lies slain; in which Sense it is often used by Homer; and on this Interpretation it gives us a most compassionate Idea of the great Misery and helpless State of Mankind, fallen by the Stroke of this formidable Enemy, the wicked one, (ο πονηρος,) and insulted over by him as his Prey.

(f) This

Sect 9. *him that is true; and we are in him that is true, even in the Father, and in his Son Jesus Christ: He is the true God and eternal Life (f); he partakes with the Father in proper Deity; and our immortal Life is supported by Union with him.*

1 John V. 20.

know him that is true: and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal Life.

21 See to it therefore, my dear *little Children*, that you adhere to the Worship of this true God alone, and *keep yourselves from Idols (g)* of every Kind; whom the jealous God will not suffer to share with him, either in the Offices of religious Worship, or in the supreme Affection of the Mind. *Amen: May you be so kept and preserved to eternal Life.*

21 Little Children, keep yourselves from Idols. Amen.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

LET us thankfully own the divine Goodness, in giving us so many Helps for the Confirmation of our *Faith*; and learn the Importance of its being thus confirmed, from that Variety of Provision made for its Establishment. The declared End of the *Apostle* in writing this Epistle was, that *they who believed in the Name of the Son of God, might more firmly believe in it. Lord, encrease our Faith*, and with it our Zeal for him, in whose Name we believe, and our Love to each other, for his Sake: Then shall we have *eternal Life, the Gift of God in Christ Jesus our Lord*; and in the mean Time may address the Throne with Cheerfulness, and present *our Petitions* in a pleasing and confident Hope, that *asking what is agreeable to his Will*, (and all that he knows to be subservient to our truest Interest is

Ver. 13.

Ver. 14, 15.

(f) *This is the true God.*] To paraphrase this of the *true Religion*, as a very celebrated *Divine* does, is quite enervating the Force of Scripture, and taking a Liberty with plain Words by no Means to be allowed. It is an Argument of the *Deity of Christ*, which almost all those who have wrote in its Defence, have urged; and which, I think, none who have opposed it, have so much as appeared to answer.

(g) *Keep yourselves from Idols.*] *Archbishop Tillotson*, (Vol. ii. pag. 488.) who interprets *the Sin unto Death*, as signifying total *Apostacy* from the *Christian Religion* to the Heathen Idolatry, urges this Clause, the Connexion of which with the Context he thinks not else to be accounted for, as a Proof of it. But a Man might commit *the Sin unto Death* by falling back into *Judaism*, though guilty of no *Idolatry*; and the Caution here suggested, may be very well accounted for, from the general Circumstances of the *Church* near that Time, even though there should be no such immediate Connection between *this Clause* and the *preceding Context*, as the *Archbishop* supposes.

is so,) he will bear us, and we shall receive the Things that we ask. Sect. 9.

Encouraged by this Promise, with what *Boldness* may we come to the Throne of Grace, that we may receive Mercy, and Grace to help in every Time of Need! (Heb. iv. 16.) Let his Compassion to us

teach us to have Compassion on our Brethren, on our afflicted Brethren; yea, on those, whose *Miscarriages* have evidently brought their Afflictions upon them. Let us not too soon pronounce the

Case of a Sinner *hopeless*; but rather subject ourselves to the Trouble of some *fruitless* Attempts to reclaim him, than omit any Thing, where there may be a *Possibility* of succeeding. May divine Grace

awaken all to stand at the remotest Distance, not only from the *unpardonable Sin*, but from whatever might dishonour God, and endanger our own Souls: For every Sin is deadly and malignant, though every one be not *the Sin unto Death*. May we keep our-

selves, and be kept by divine Grace, in such a Manner, that *the wicked one may not touch us*; but all his Attempts be turned into his own Shame and Confusion!

And Oh, may God excite our Pity to a *World which lies in Wickedness*; and animate us to use our utmost Endeavours, to recover those out of the Snare of the Devil, who are led captive by him at his

Pleasure. (2 Tim. xi. 26.) May we be made sensible of the rich and distinguishing Grace of God, if we can say that we are, not only by an external Profession, but an inward Union, *in him that*

*is true, in the Lord Jesus Christ*. Him let us adore, as, with the Father, and the Holy Spirit, *the true God*. Him let us seek, as *eternal Life*, and let us keep ourselves from all those *Idols*, which would alienate our Regard from God, and by the Pursuit of which our

*eternal Life* might in any Degree be endangered.

The END of the FAMILY EXPOSITOR on the First Catholic EPISTLE of  
St. JOHN.



# The Family Expositor:

OR, A

P A R A P H R A S E

ON THE

SECOND EPISTLE

O F

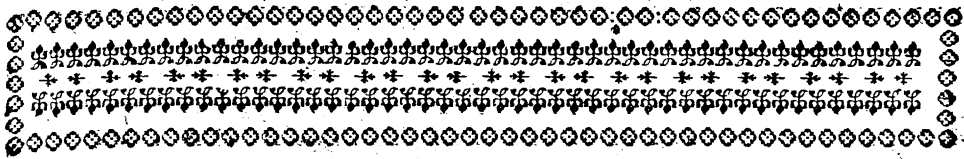
St. *J* *O* *H* *N*.

W I T H

Critical N O T E S, and a practical I M P R O V E M E N T  
of each S E C T I O N.

B b b 2





A

# GENERAL INTRODUCTION

TO THE

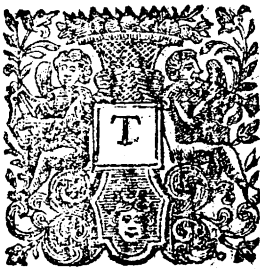
# PARAPHRASE and NOTES

ON THE

Second and Third EPISTLES

OF

St. *J* *O* *H* *N*.



THESE Epistles have been both very improperly ranked under the Denomination, *general* or *catholic*; since each is inscribed to a single Person; one to a Woman of Distinction, stiled here the *elect Lady*; and the other to *Gaius*; probably the same Person with *Gaius* of *Corinth*, who is stiled by *St. Paul* his *Host*, and is celebrated for his Hospitality to the Brethren; a Character very agreeable to that which is here given of *Gaius* by the Apostle *John*.

There is no fixing the *Date* of these two Epistles with any Certainty. It in a great Measure depends on the Date of the *first* Epistle; soon after which, it is generally agreed, both these were written,



written. And this indeed appears exceeding probable, from that Coincidence both of Sentiment and Expression, which occurs in all these *Epistles*; and from hence it is inferred, that the State of Things in the *Christian Church*, referred to in these *smaller Epistles*, was very much the same, as it was at the Time of writing the *first Epistle*, and that the Apostle having *lately* written it, had it now particularly in his View, and the Sentiments and Expressions of it present to his Mind. And possibly about the same Time that he sent his *first Epistle* to Christians in *general*, he might send his *second* to this honoured Lady, and his *third* to his Friend *Gaius* in particular, as a Mark of peculiar Regard. I shall not here enter into the Debate concerning the *Authenticity* of these two *Epistles*, especially as I have already suggested on some former Occasions, such general Sentiments as are very applicable on this.

The Brevity of these *Epistles* renders it needless to give any other Analysis of them than I have done in the *Contents* prefixed to each respectively; to which I refer the Reader.



A P A R A -

A

# P A R A P H R A S E

A N D

# N O T E S

O N T H E

S E C O N D E P I S T L E

O F

St.     *J*     *O*     *H*     *N.*

---

## S E C T. I.

*The Apostle John addressing himself to a worthy Christian Lady, expresses his Joy in her good Character, and that of her Children; exhorts to continued Love, and to guard against Deceivers, whom it would be dangerous to countenance and encourage; referring what he had farther to say, till he should make her a Visit. 2 John throughout.*

2 JOHN I.

THE Elder unto the elect Lady, and her Chil-

2 JOHN I.

THIS Letter is addressed by John, Sect. I. well known in these Parts by the Name of *the Elder* (a), called, under that Cha-

(a) *The Elder.*] The Concealment of the Name of the Author can be no Object of Contention against ascribing it to *St. John*; since his Name is also concealed in the *first Epistle*, which is universally allowed to be his. Nor was it customary with *this Apostle*, in

Sect. I. Character, to preside in the Churches, *to the Elect Lady (b)*, whom I need not name, as her excellent Christian Graces render her so gloriously distinguished; and *to her Children, whom I love in the Truth*, on those Principles which the Gospel, the great System of Truth, requires with respect to those who so remarkably support and adorn it. Nor indeed do I only love her and them, but they are beloved also by all those who know the Truth, and who have had any Opportunity of forming any intimate Acquaintance with them.

2 John 1.

- 2 These amiable Persons are justly dear to us all, *because of the Truth which dwelleth in us, and I doubt not shall be in us for ever*. And particularly, so deeply is it grounded in your Mind and Heart, that I am persuaded the Relish of it will never be lost, be the remaining Years of Life ever so many, or the Events of them ever so trying. May a rich Assemblage of every desirable Blessing, *Grace, Mercy [and] Peace, be with you all from God the Father of all, and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father*; and may it animate you to walk in Truth, and in universal Love, according to the Tenor of that

Children, whom I love in the Truth; and not I only, but also all they that have known the Truth;

2 For the Truth's Sake which dwelleth in us, and shall be with us for ever:

3 Grace be with you, Mercy, and Peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ the Son of the Father, in Truth and Love.

in any of his Writings, to be free in mentioning his own Name. His styling himself the *Elder* in this and the following Epistle, is probably the Reason, why they were ascribed by some of the *Ancients* not to the Apostle *John*, universally acknowledged to be the Author of the *first* Epistle, but to *John*, an *Elder* or *Presbyter* of *Ephesus*. He who would see the Testimonies of the *Fathers*, that the *Apostle John* was the Author of these two Epistles, may consult the second Part of *Dr. Lardner's Credibility of the Gospel History*. There can hardly be stronger internal Arguments, that the three Epistles, now commonly ascribed to *St. John*, were the Production of the same Author, than may be derived from that very remarkable Similarity of Sentiment and *Phraseology* which appears in them all, on the slightest Attention.

(b) *The Elect Lady.*] *Lord Barrington* is of Opinion the *Lady*, here spoken of, is the Church at *Jerusalem*, Sister to that at *Ephesus*. *Barr. Miscell. Sacr. pag. 51.* and the Notion seems to have been taken from *Dr. Whitby*. Compare *Isa. liv. 1. Gal. iv. 24, &c.* But the Arguments are by no Means convincing; and *ver. 10.* seems a strong Objection against it. It is probable that this *Lady*, (stiled here *ἐκκλησία κυρια*, from whence some have fancied her proper Name was *Εκκλησία*, and others *Cyria*) was a Person of considerable Distinction.

(c) *Come*

that glorious Gospel, with which he hath Sect. 1.  
favoured you.

4 I rejoiced greatly, that I found of thy Children walking in Truth, as we have received a Commandment from the Father:

*I rejoiced greatly, when, in some of those* 2 John 4.  
Excursions which I made for the Service of the Gospel, *I found some of thy Children, walking in a Manner agreeable to the System of divine Truth, and according to the Commandment which we have received from God the Father.*

5 And now I beseech thee, Lady, not as though I wrote a new Commandment unto thee, but that which we had from the Beginning, that we love one another.

*And now I beseech thee, my* 5  
dear and honoured Lady, *not as writing to thee a new and unknown Commandment, but that which we had from the Beginning of our Acquaintance with our divine Master, and the Religion he came to introduce, that we may all love one another.*

6 And this is Love, that we walk after his Commandments. This is the Commandment, that as ye have heard from the Beginning, ye should walk in it.

*And this is that* 6  
*Love, which alone can prove acceptable to him, that we should constantly walk according to his Commandments; and this is the Commandment, as ye have heard from the Beginning, that ye should walk in it:* This was the great End of the Gospel, to give us proper Directions for our Conduct, and Motives to engage us to act accordingly. And these Rules and Principles have been so plainly and faithfully delivered to you, that I need not now say any thing more in Relation to them.

7 For many Deceivers are entered into the World, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the Flesh. This is a Deceiver, and an Antichrist.

*I refer you to those sacred Lessons into* 7  
which, at your first Conversion to Christianity, you were initiated; *because many Deceivers are gone out into the World, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the Flesh (c).* And *this is a most certain Mark of a Deceiver and an Antichrist;* and if any would go about to refine upon the Doctrine of the Incarnation and Passion of our blessed Redeemer, as if they were allegorical, and expressed mere Appearances, and not Realities,

(c) *Come in the Flesh.*] The *Apostle* here alludes to the Rise of those *Hereticks*, who affirmed that *Christ* only came in *Appearance*.

Sect. 1. Realities, whatever sublime Notions he may pretend, he is to be rejected with Abhorrence. Let me therefore beseech you, and all my Christian Friends to whom this Letter may come, that ye *look to yourselves*, and let us all attend to the Caution, *that we may not lose the Things we have already wrought* in the Service of Christ, *but persevering and abounding in it, may receive the ample Reward* which I trust through divine Grace is laid up for us. For it is certain that *every one who in this Respect transgresseth, and remaineth not in the Doctrine of Christ, hath not an Interest in God*; but *he that remaineth in the Doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son*, whose Cause and whose Favour are inseparable. And *if any one come unto you, under the Character of a religious Teacher, and bring not this Doctrine, receive him not into [your] House* to give him Countenance and Support, *neither wish him good Success (d)*. For he that thus supports and maintains him, and *wisheth him good Success*, in a Case like this, though he does not actually engage himself to labour in it, *is Partaker of his evil Deeds*, and in the Sight of God and Man, accessory to the Damage, which such a Seducer may in Consequence of such Encouragement, bring upon the Church.

12 *Having many other Things to write unto you, which might have employed my Pen in*

8 Look to yourselves, that we lose not those Things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full Reward.

9 Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the Doctrine of Christ, hath not God: he that abideth in the Doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son.

10 If there come any unto you, and bring not this Doctrine, receive him not into your House, neither bid him God speed.

11 For he that biddeth him God speed is Partaker of his evil Deeds.

12 Having many Things to write unto you, I would not

(d) *Wish him good Success.*] Thus the Jews, Dr. Lightfoot and Dr. Whitby observe, were forbid to say *אשר*, or *God Speed*, to an *excommunicated* Person, or to come within *four Cubits* of an *Heretick*. But the Apostle must not be here understood, as excluding the common *Offices of Humanity* to such Persons; for that is contrary to all the *general Precepts of Benevolence* to be found in the Gospel. But to have received a seducing Teacher *into their Houses*, and have given him suitable Accommodations, would have been shewing him such Regard, and affording him such Support, as indeed in some Measure, would have made them answerable for the Mischief he might do in the Church; such Favours being not merely *Offices of common Humanity*, but of *Patronage and Friendship*; and in the general, at least, a *Testimony of their Approbation*, as well as *Kindness*.

not write with Paper and Ink; but I trust to come unto you, and speak Face to Face, that our Joy may be full.

in a much longer Epistle, *I would not [do Sect. 1. it] with Paper and Ink; but break off here,* <sup>2 John 12.</sup> as *I hope ere long to open my Mind much more largely, when I come to you, and speak Face to Face, that our Joy may be fulfilled;* and may we have mutual Reason to acknowledge, that we have received much greater Satisfaction than this imperfect Method of Converse can afford. In the mean Time, I shall only add, that *the Children of thine elect Sister salute thee,* and I join with them in the kindest Wishes, which the sincerest Friendship can form: And may God accomplish them! *Amen.*

13 The Children of thy elect Sister greet thee. Amen.

13

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

LET us observe this Delineation of a *Love truly Christian*; the Love, which the *Apostle*, and all who *knew the Truth*, are said to have had towards this *elect* and excellent *Lady, for the Truths Sake which dwelt in her.* Adored be that Grace, which preserved her in so a high Rank of Life, from Temptations which could not fail to surround her! that Grace, which rendered her an Example of Wisdom and Piety, great and eminent in Proportion to her exalted Situation!

Nor can we forbear reflecting, how *happy*, in Consequence of this, she herself was, possessed of *Grace, Mercy and Peace from God the Father, and Jesus Christ our Lord, in Truth and Love!* What were all the secular *Honours* by which she was distinguished! What the Possession of *Riches*, which in their own Nature, and unimproved to the pious and charitable Purposes to which *she* improved them, are very empty and unsatisfactory; what are *these*, when compared with such important *Blessings!* We cannot but rejoice, at this Distance of Time, and ignorant as we are of the Name, Situation and History of this *worthy Lady*, that *her Children walked in the Truth.* It was a singular Joy to JOHN, and may be so in a Degree to *all*; and may teach us to lift up our Hearts to God in Prayer, that all *Christian Parents*, especially pious *Mothers*, and more particularly those, whose Character in Life is so eminently distinguished, may enjoy this Happiness, and see the *Seed* they are,

C c c 2

with

Sect. 9. with such commendable Industry, *sowing* in the Minds of their tender Offspring, *growing up*, and bringing forth much *Fruit*.

Ver. 5, 6. We have, in the beloved *Apostle*, an excellent Pattern of a becoming Care, to make a *Correspondence* with our Christian Friends *useful*: which we shall do, if, like him, we are exhorting them to the Cultivation of *mutual Love*, and to a constant uniform Care in *keeping the Commandments of God*: If we continue *warning* them against the *prevailing* Sins and Errors of the Day, and urging them to a holy Solitude, that they may *not lose what they have already attained*; but *may receive full Reward* for every Work of Faith, and Labour of Love, in Consequence of a Course of resolute and persevering Piety.

Persons of the most distinguished Goodness have Need to be cautioned against that *Excess* of Generosity and Hospitality, which Ver. 10, 11. might sometimes make them *Partakers with Seducers in their evil Deeds*, by giving them their Audience, and *wishing them good Success*, while by their *fair Speeches* they impose upon the Simplicity of open and upright Hearts, who, because themselves void of *Fraud*, are often void of *Suspicion* too. But there is a *prudent* Caution to be observed upon this Head; and it is the Part of *faithful* Friendship to suggest it; for *many Deceivers are come out into the World*. For our Security against them, let us be always upon our Guard, and take Care to *continue in the Doctrine of Christ*; that so we may *have the Father, and the Son*; and if we are interested in *their Favour*, we shall stand in *Need* of nothing, and shall have nothing of which to be *afraid*. Amen.

The END of the FAMILY EXPOSITOR on the SECOND EPISTLE of  
St. JOHN.

The

# The Family Expositor:

OR, A

P A R A P H R A S E

ON THE

T H I R D E P I S T L E

O F

St. *J* *O* *H* *N*.

W I T H

Critical N O T E S, and a practical I M P R O V E M E N T.





A  
P A R A P H R A S E  
A N D  
N O T E S  
O N T H E  
T H I R D E P I S T L E  
O F  
S t . J O H N .

---

*The Apostle John in this short Epistle to Gaius expresses his Concern for his Prosperity, his Joy in the honourable Character he maintained for Christian Candour, Hospitality, and Zeal; cautions him against the ambitious and turbulent Practices of Diotrephes; and recommending Demetrius to his Friendship, refers what he had further to say, to a personal Interview. 3 John throughout.*

3 JOHN I.

THE Elder unto the well-beloved Gaius, whom

3 JOHN I.

THE Elder addresses this Epistle to the beloved and hospitable Gaius (a), whom I love

(a) Gaius.] We read of one Gaius of Corinth, Rom. xvi. 23. who hospitably received the Apostle, when he went out to preach the Gospel gratis; and if this were, as

- 3 John 1. *love in the Truth*, and hold dear as in the Bowels of Christ, from a Regard to the Advancement and Honour of his Gospel. whom I love in the Truth.
- 2 Beloved, I pray, that in every Respect (b) thou mayest prosper; and particularly, that thou mayest be in Health; as I have Reason to believe, that thy Soul prospereth; for I doubt not, but that Religion flourishes in thy Heart, and abundantly justifies my wishing thee as healthful and prosperous as thou art good. For I rejoiced greatly, when the Christian Brethren came from that Part of the World in your Neighbourhood, and testified concerning thy Truth (c), as thou walkest in the Truth, and adornest the Gospel by an exemplary Behaviour. For indeed I have no greater Joy, than this Thing gives me, that I may bear (d) my Christian-Friends, whether converted by me, or others, whom I look upon as my dear Children, are walking in the Truth, and according to those Directions which our Lord Jesus Christ himself, who is the Way, the Truth and the
- 2 Beloved, I wish above all Things, that thou mayest prosper and be in Health, even as thy Soul prospereth.
- 3 For I rejoiced greatly when the Brethren came and testified of the Truth that is in thee, even as thou walkest in the Truth.
- 4 I have no greater Joy than to hear that my Children walk in Truth.

as he seems to have been, the same, he was *St. Paul's* Convert: Nor is *St. John's* calling him *his Child* an Argument to the contrary; since in the general he addresses *all Christians* in the same tender and affectionate Stile, agreeably to the Sweetness of his Temper, and suitably to his advanced Years. Compare *Dr. Whitby in loc.*

(b) *In every Respect*: *περι παντων*.] Our *English* Translation is, *above all Things*. *Mr. Hallet* would render it, *above all Persons*: As if he had said, you are *the Person*, for whose temporal and spiritual Advantage I am concerned more than any other. *Hallet's Notes and Discourses*, Vol. i. pag. 61—2. But the Words may so justly bear the Translation I have given them, by which all Manner of Difficulty is removed, that I think it much preferable to either of the former. And it hath the Sanction of so good an Authority as *Erasmus Schmidius*, who translates it *de omnibus*.

(c) *Testified concerning thy Truth*: *σε τη αληθεια*.] Some have supposed the *Apostle* here means, that they bore Witness to *Gaius's Sincerity*, and that this is the Idea we should affix to *αληθεια* in this Place, in order to avoid that Tautology which there would be in the next Clause, if we understood him here to speak of his *Faith in the Gospel*. But though it is allowed that *αληθεια* may signify *Sincerity*, yet if we suppose that to be the Case here, it will be necessary to understand it in two different Senses in the same Sentence; and I think the latter Clause, *walking in the Truth*, may have a further Idea than merely his *Faith*, which I have expressed in the *Paraphrase*.

(d) *That I may bear*.] *Dr. Whitby* takes Notice of it here, as an Observation which many have made, that the Use of the Particle *ωσ* for *ε* and *εω* is a *Peculiarity* in *St. John's* Stile.

(e) *Bring*

5 Beloved, thou doest faithfully whatsoever thou doest to the Brethren, and to Strangers;

the Life, has given us. And, Beloved, I must declare my entire Approbation of thy Conduct, and can openly bear my Testimony to it, that *thou dost faithfully, whatsoever thou performest, towards the Brethren, and towards Strangers*; thy Behaviour to thy Fellow-Christians known to thee, and to those with whom thou hast little Acquaintance; yea, to all who have Occasion to cast themselves upon thy Hospitality, is much to the Credit of the Gospel, and I doubt not but it proceeds from a Principle of true Faith, and overflowing Love to our common Redeemer. And indeed many

3 John 5.

6 Which have borne Witness of thy Charity before the Church: whom if thou bring forward on their Journey after a godly Sort, thou shalt do well:

of the Christian Strangers, *who have been thus generously entertained by thee, have testified very honourably concerning thy Love before the Church; whom thou dost well in bringing forward in their Journey (e), in a Manner worthy of God, proceeding from a Principle of divine Love, and correspondent to the Relation in which you, and they, stand to him.* And whatever thou dost

7 Because that for his Name's Sake they went forth, taking nothing of the Gentiles.

for them, our great Lord will take as done to himself; *for it was on his Account, and out of Zeal for his Honour and Interest, that they went out, abandoned their Habitations, Possessions and Callings, that they might spread his Gospel; receiving nothing of the Gentiles (f), among whom they laboured;*

(e) *Bringing them forward in their Journey.*] This may possibly be understood in a spiritual Sense, of assisting them in their Travels through this Wilderness to the heavenly World. Or it may have a literal Signification, and then *one Kind of Hospitality and Charity is put for the rest.* But I rather prefer the former Sense.

(f) *They went out, receiving nothing of the Gentiles:* Εξηλθον, μηδεν λαμβανουσες απο των εθνων.] Beza refers απο των εθνων to εξηλθον, and understands it that the Persons here spoken of, *went out from their respective Countries and native Places (απο των εθνων) leaving all their worldly Possessions (μηδεν λαμβανουσες) to go and preach the Gospel.* And in Support of this Construction, he observes, that παρα should have been used after λαμβανουσες, and not απο. But Matt. xvii. 25, 26. and 1 John ii. 27. are evident Confirmations of this Remark. And, whereas he thinks it absurd to imagine, the *unbelieving Gentiles* would contribute to the Support of the *Preachers of the Gospel*, it is an obvious Reply, that των εθνων may mean the *believing Gentiles*; as it is certain the Word fre-

3 John 8. { boured; that they might take off all Suspicion of these mercenary Views, above which divine Grace had so far raised them. *We ought therefore* all of us, who have any Habitation of our own, hospitably and respectfully to receive such; that, if divine Providence do not give us an Opportunity of laying ourselves out, as they do, in the ministerial Office, *we may become*, as it were, *Fellow-Labourers* with them in the Service of the Truth, and, through divine Grace, may be entitled to a Part in their Reward.

9 I have lately written to the Church, about which I know you are so much concerned; but I sometimes fear, lest it should not be with so good Success as I could wish; for Diotrophes (g), who affects the Pre-eminence among them, even above the Apostles of Christ themselves, hath not received us with becoming Regard; and his Interest with some of the Members, is much greater than it ought to be.

10 Therefore if I come, as I hope I quickly shall, I will be mindful of the Works which he does; many of which are very irregular, while he is continually prating (h) against us, with idle, petulant, and malicious Words; and not content with this, goes yet further in his Opposition; for he receives not the Brethren himself, though he knows they come from us, and hinders those who would receive them, from doing it; and casts [them] out of the Church, forbidding them either to officiate, or communicate,

where

quently does. *Wolffius*, who agrees with *Beza*, in referring *απο των εθνων* to *εξελθεις*, understands it of their being driven and forced out by the Gentiles, having been stripped of their Possessions; which would render them the more proper Objects of Kindness and Hospitality. But there is nothing of this in the Idea suggested by the Word *εξελθεις*, and the more common Signification of it is to go out voluntarily. See *Wolffii Curæ Philolog. Vol. v. pag. 334.*

(g) *Diotrophes.*] It is uncertain who he was. *Grotius* thinks he was a Gentile Convert, who would not admit the Jews; but it seems rather more probable that he was a Jew, who opposed the Admission of the Gentiles, and set himself up as the Head of a Party, in Opposition to the Apostles.

(h) *Prating:* *φλυαρον.*] Compare 1 Tim. v. 13. Note (l).

8 We therefore ought to receive such, that we might be Fellow-Helpers to the Truth.

9 I wrote unto the Church: but Diotrophes, who loveth to have the Pre-eminence among them, receiveth us not.

10 Wherefore, if I come, I will remember his Deeds which he doeth, prating against us with malicious Words: and not content therewith, neither doth he himself receive the Brethren, and forbiddeth them that would, and casteth them out of the Church.

11 Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doeth good, is of God: but he that doeth evil, hath not seen God.

where his Influence extends; than which nothing can be more tyrannical or intolerable.

As for thee, my beloved Brother, *imitate not that which is evil, but that which is good*; behold such a Conduct as his with a just Abhorrence; and act according to that Model of Humility and Condescension; which you have seen in others, who may justly claim an Authority much superior to his. *He that doeth good, is of God*; he knows him, and he imitates his most amiable and spotless Pattern: *But he that does evil, that harbours such malignant Passions, and behaves in so injurious a Manner, whatever high Notions he may pretend to, has not seen God, but is plainly ignorant of his Perfections and of his Will.*

3 JOHN II.

12 Demetrius hath good Report of all Men, and of the Truth itself: yea, and we also bear Record, and ye know that our Record is true.

*Demetrius, on the contrary, is a most excellent Person, who has a good Testimony from all Men, and even from the Truth itself; and we have also, upon all Occasions, borne, and do bear, [the same] Testimony; and ye know that this our Testimony is true.*

12

13 I had many Things to write, but I will not with Ink and Pen write unto thee:

*I have many other Things, which I should be glad to write to you; but I will not write them to you by Ink and Pen, as it would take up too much Time, and I should not be able after all, fully to express myself.*

13

14 But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speak Face to Face.

*But I hope quickly to see thee, and to speak Face to Face, with all the Freedom we could desire; till that Time therefore, I refer what I might now further say: And only add, Peace [be] to thee, and every desirable Blessing from God our Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord. The Christian Friends, who are here with me, salute thee: And I desire, that thou wouldst salute the Friends that are with thee, by Name, and assure them of my most cordial and entire Respect.*

14

15 Peace be to thee. Our Friends salute thee. Greet the Friends by Name.

15

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

- Ver. 1. **H**OW happy was Gaius in the Friendship of that *Apostle*, whom *Jesus* had honoured with such a distinguishing Degree of *his* Friendship. How much happier still was he, in a *Soul* so thriving and *prosperous*, that even such a Friend, who could not but hold Flattery in Detestation, should be able to make the good State of his *Soul*, a *Standard*, by which to adjust his Wishes in relation to his *temporal* Affairs. Oh what a *Curse* would this be upon many, that they might *prosper even as their Souls prospered!* And yet what is *all other* Prosperity without this, but like that of *Fools, which destroys them.* (*Prov. i. 32.*) How agreeable is it to a true *Christian*, to hear well of the Behaviour of those who are dear
- Ver. 2. to him in the Bonds of peculiar Friendship; to hear of their *walking in the Truth*; and especially, when these are *our own Children*, or those whom God has made us the means of *converting*, or those whom we have been concerned in *training up* for him. Oh that those especially, to whom the Education of *many* has been committed, may have this great Happiness. "Visit each of our Children, and young Friends, O *Lord*, with thy Mercy; animate them to *walk in thy Truth*; and entail thy Blessing upon them, when nothing remains, of all the Offices of Love we have bestowed; but the *Memory* of our Exhortations and Examples."
- Ver. 3, 4. May Sentiments of true *Generosity*, fill and expand our Hearts more and more. May we act toward Strangers, and especially our Brethren, in all the Instances in which they need our Assistance, in a Manner *worthy of God*, worthy of the Relation in which we, and they, have the Honour to stand to our *heavenly Father*; and especially, let our Love abound to those who have a Desire to *spread the Gospel*. And Oh, that it were more universal! Oh, that divine Grace would excite more to quit the Indulgence of their *Homes*, or their *Countries*, if there be no Bond of Duty to detain them there, that they may go and *preach to the Gentiles!* And tho' there be no Prospect of any Requit from *them*, God will open to them the inexhaustible Stores of his celestial Treasure, *and they shall be recompensed in the Resurrection of the just.* Let them but see to it that their Intentions are *pure*, that they do it *for his Sake*; and *their Labour shall not be in vain in the Lord.*
- Ver. 5. But alas, how much more common even to this Day, and that among the *Ministers* of the Gospel, is the Character of *Diotrephes*, who
- Ver. 6. Ver. 7. Ver. 8. Ver. 9.

*who loved to have the Pre-eminence!* How has the Spirit of *Opposition* and *Ambition* prevailed in the *Church*, as well as in the *World!* How does it *still* prevail! And in this *View*, how many *malicious* Ver. 10.  
*Words* have been uttered against those, who have, with the greatest *Simplicity*, desired to *follow the Apostles!* With what *Contempt* have they often been *cast out of the Church!* Yea, in a thousand *Instances*, with what *savage Cruelty* hunted out of the *World!* How long, O *Lord, holy and true!* Let us not however be *impatient*, but glorify *God*, in the most *humble or painful Station* he shall allot, by doing, or suffering all his *Will:* Still *imitating that* Ver. 11.  
*which is good*, as becomes those *who are of God*, who hope to see him, and enjoy him, for ever.

Let us endeavour, like *Demetrius*, to secure to ourselves a *good Re-* Ver. 12.  
*port of all Men;* but especially, let us see to it that we reverence *our own Consciences*, and that we secure *their Testimony*, which will be agreeable to that of *the Truth* itself. So will our *Honour*, and our *Happiness*, be secured; and if any *Vapour* should now rise to obscure it, the *Day* is near, when *the Sun of Righteousness* shall undoubtedly chase it away.

The END of the FAMILY EXPOSITOR on the THIRD EPISTLE of  
St. JOHN.

The





# The Family Expositor:

OR, A

P A R A P H R A S E

ON THE

CATHOLIC EPISTLE

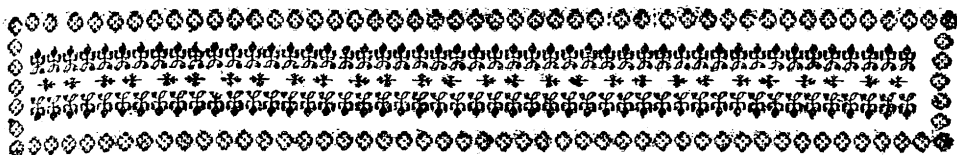
OF

*St. J U D E.*

WITH

Critical N O T E S, and a practical I M P R O V E M E N T  
of each S E C T I O N.





A

# GENERAL INTRODUCTION

TO THE

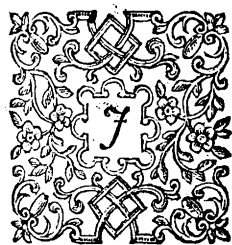
# PARAPHRASE and NOTES

ON THE

# CATHOLIC EPISTLE

OF

St. *J* *U* *D* *E*.



*U* *D* *E*, or *Judas*, the Author of this Epistle, is often mentioned as one of the *Apostles* of our Lord, and the Brother of *James the less*. The *canonical* Authority of this Epistle hath been disputed; but it is not the Business of these Commentaries to enter largely into such Questions. Probably its Authenticity would never have been doubted, had it not been for an Imagination, ill-grounded indeed, that the Author hath quoted a *spurious* Book, called the *Prophecy of Enoch*. The Reader may consult what learned Men have written upon this Argument; particularly, *Dr. Lardner* in his *Credibility of the Gospel History*, *Dr. Whitby*, and *Dr. Twells*, in the second Part of his *critical Examination of the new Text and Version of the New Testament*. The latter hath collected the principal Materials with Accuracy, and set them in a clear and convincing Light.

There is a remarkable Similarity between *this Epistle*, and Part of the *second Epistle* of *St. Peter*, which, (as we observed in the

VOL. VI.

E e e

Intro-

*Introduction* to that Epistle,) was probably owing to this, that both the *Apostles* drew their Character of the false Teachers, against whom they cautioned their Readers, from the Character given of the false Prophets in some ancient *Jewish Author*; and it is very possible too, (as Bishop *Sherlock*. observes,) that *St. Jude* might have the *second Epistle* of *St. Peter* before him.

*Dr. Mills* fixes the *Date* of this Epistle about the Year 90; (see his *Prolegomena*, pag. 17. Sect. 145. Edit. *Kuster*.) and his principal Argument is, that the false Teachers, which *St. Peter* describes as *yet to come*. *St. Jude* mentions as *already come*. But, on a Comparison, there does not appear that remarkable *Difference* in their Phraseology, which will be sufficient to prove that *St. Jude* wrote his Epistle so long after *St. Peter's* second Epistle as is here supposed; though, I acknowledge, it will prove that it was written after it.

The *Design* of the Apostle is plainly, “ By describing the Character of the false Teachers, and pointing out the divine Judgments which Persons of such a Character had Reason to expect, to caution *Christians* against listening to their Suggestions, and being thereby perverted from the Faith and Purity of the Gospel.”

For the *Analysis* of the Epistle, I refer my Reader to the *Contents* prefixed to the *two Sections*, into which I have divided it.

A P A R A

A

## P A R A P H R A S E

A N D

## N O T E S

O N T H E

C A T H O L I C E P I S T L E

O F

St. *J* U D E.

## S E C T. I.

*The Apostle Jude, after a general Salutation, exhorts the Christians to whom he wrote, strenuously to assert the Purity of their common Faith; reminding them of the Destruction which came on God's professing People, yea, on the Apostate Angels for their Sins; as well as on the Inhabitants of Sodom and Gomorrah; and then he begins the Description of some seditious and abandoned Persons, from whom he imagined them in peculiar Danger. Jude Ver. I,—II.*

JUDE I.

JUDE the Servant of  
Jesus Christ, and Bro-  
ther

JUDE I.

**Y**OU receive this Epistle from *Jude*, Sect. I.  
who, like his Brethren the other A-  
postles, cannot but rejoice and glory in the *Jude I.*  
Title of *a Servant of Jesus Christ, and who*  
E e e 2 is

- Sect. I. is the Brother of James, so well known by his distinguished Services and Sufferings in the Cause of our divine Master ; and he inscribes it to those who are sanctified in God the Father, devoted to his Service through the Influence of his Grace ; who are also the called and preserved in Jesus Christ, brought into the Fellowship of his Religion, and guarded by his Grace in the Midst of a thousand Snares, which might have tempted them to have made Shipwreck of their Faith.
- Jude 1.
- 2 May Mercy, and Peace, and Love, from our heavenly Father, and our compassionate Saviour, be multiplied to you ; and may you increase in all the happy Fruits of divine Favour and Mercy ; and especially, in that Spirit of Candor and Charity, which is to be numbered among the most precious of them. My beloved, giving all Diligence to write to you concerning the common Salvation (a), to the Hope of which we are brought by the Profession of the Gospel, I judged it necessary to direct my Pen, particularly with respect to those unhappy Attempts that have been made, to adulterate Christianity, by some who continue to profess a Regard to it. I now therefore write to you, exhorting and beseeching [you] to strive earnestly for the Faith which was once for all delivered to the Saints, for the Instruction of every future Age ; and not to suffer any by Violence or by Fraud, to rob you of so inestimable a Treasure. For some
- ther of James, to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, and called ;
- 2 Mercy unto you, and Peace, and Love be multiplied.
- 3 Beloved, when I gave all Diligence to write unto you of the common Salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you, that ye should earnestly contend for the Faith which was once delivered unto the Saints.
- 4 For there are certain Men

(a) Giving all Diligence to write to you concerning the common Salvation &c.] Some have supposed the Meaning is, that whereas he intended to write them a practical Letter, he was compelled to go into some controversial Subjects. I rather think he intends to declare by this Expression, that the Exhortation he now gives them, to contend earnestly for the Faith, was indeed subservient to promote that common Salvation he designed to lead them to the Pursuit of. — Bishop Sherlock thinks the Faith delivered to the Saints, is the same with the holy Commandment delivered 2 Pet. ii. 21. that is, with the Directions and Instructions which the Council of the Apostles had sent them, with regard to these pestilent Teachers. *Sherlock on Propb. pag. 200. 5th Edit.*

(b) Who

Men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this Condemnation, ungodly Men, turning the Grace of our God into Lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

some crafty and pernicious Men have, as it were, with a serpentine Art glided in among us, who were of old as it were described and registered to this Condemnation (b), by God's righteous Sentence denounced against Crimes like theirs, long before they appeared in the World. Impious and ungrateful Men, who presume to turn even the Grace of our God itself, which ought to be an everlasting Source of Love, and Engagement to Sanctity and Obedience, into an Oecasion of Lasciviousness; as if they thought they might with Impunity go on to sin, that Grace might abound; and denying God the only original Sovereign (c), and our Lord Jesus Christ, whom he has invested with universal Dominion, to be acknowledged by all who would not be found Rebels against himself!

Sect. 1.

Jude 4

5 I will therefore put you in Remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord having saved the People out of the Land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not.

But I would remind you, as you once knew this, that having been taught it, you may never forget it; even that the Lord, having saved the People of Israel from out of the Land of Egypt, and rescued them by so glorious an Interposition of his almighty Power, afterwards destroyed those that did not believe, though they had once experienced

5

(b) *Who were registered to this Condemnation.*] The Word *απογεγραμμενοι* may well signify described and put upon Record; that is, whose Character and Condemnation may be considered as described in the Punishment of other notorious Sinners, who were a Kind of Representatives of them. Which Interpretation I prefer to any other, as it tends to clear God of that heavy Imputation which it must bring upon his moral Attributes, to suppose that he appoints Men to sin against him, and then condemns them for doing, what they could not but do, and what they were, independent on their own Freedom of Choice, fated to. A Doctrine so pregnant with gloomy, and, as I should fear, with fatal Consequences, that I think it a Part of the Duty I owe to the Word of God, to rescue it from the Imputation of containing such a Tenet. Bishop Sherlock thinks, the Word refers to the Description given of such Kind of Persons by an antient Writer of the Jewish Nation, cited as he supposes in this Epistle, and in the second Chapter of the second Epistle of Peter. *Sherl. on Proph.* pag. 181. 5th Edit. Compare Ver. 14, 5, 7, 8.

(c) *God the Sovereign and our Lord &c.*] Some would render it, *our only Master; God and Lord.* See *Dr. Watts on the Trin.* pag. 113. But it seems most agreeable to the general Doctrine and Phraseology of Scripture, to retain our Translation. Compare *John xvii. 3.*

(d) *Their*



Sec. 1. ended so wonderful a Deliverance. And thus should we have Reason to fear, that notwithstanding our Christian Profession, he would destroy us, if we adulterate and pervert his Religion, after a Manner contrary to its original Design.

Jude 5:

6 *The Angels also who kept not their first State (d), but suffering their Minds to be transported with ambitious and irregular Passions, were discontented in that high Rank of Being which Providence assigned them, and left their proper Abode in the Region of Glory; instead of permitting them to advance themselves by their Rebellion, he has by his righteous Vengeance precipitated into the Pit of Destruction, and reserved in perpetual Bonds, under Darkness, in the infernal Prison, to be brought forth at the Judgment of the great Day, and then to receive their final Sentence.*

7 And Earth has produced many awful Scenes, in which the divine Vengeance has had its Triumph over sinful Mortals; as particularly, *Sodom and Gomorrah (e), and the Cities about them, in like Manner*

6 And the Angels which kept not their first Estate, but left their own Habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting Chains under Darkness, unto the Judgment of the great Day.

7 Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the Cities about them, in like Manner giving

(d) *Their first State: τῆν ἀρχὴν ἐσθλῶν.* Some translate these Words, *the Government of themselves.* But Dr. Scott interprets it of that Place in Heaven which was assigned them, and which they were not content with; and their *leaving this first Habitation* he takes to have been a voluntary Thing, and that they chose to come down to the Neighbourhood of this Earth, that they might seduce Mankind to join with them in their Revolt. But this does not seem to suit the Phrase of their being cast out, 2 Pet. ii. 4. Mr. Boyse would translate it, *their own Head,* that is, *Christ.* Boyse's Serm. Vol. iii. pag. 406. Compare Hof. i. 11. in the Seventy.

(e) *Sodom and Gomorrha, and the Cities about them, in like Manner with them: τοῦ ὁμοίου τῆσιν τρεσπον* ] Some have pleaded, that this seems to imply, that the Sin of the Angels was *Fornication*; and consequently, that this *Epistle* is not *authentic.* But there seems no Necessity for interpreting the Expression with such extreme Rigor, as if it must mean that their Sin was of the same Kind; it is sufficient that the Comparison holds in this, that they were both guilty of very great *Wickedness.* — There are some who refer τῶν ὁμοίων τῆσιν τρεσπον, in like Manner with them, to the Cities about them, who sinned in the same Manner with Sodom and Gomorrha; nor is it any Objection to this, as some have supposed it is, that τῆσιν cannot agree with Σοδομα καὶ Γομορρα; for in Reality these Nouns are of the Neuter Gender, see Luke xvii. 29. Mark vi. 11. Gen. xiii. 10. in the Seventy. And if they were not, nothing is more common than an *Enallage* of Gender, in such a Case as this, where τῆσιν must refer to the Men who inhabited these Cities.

(f) *Vengeance*

giving themselves over to Fornication, and going after strange Flesh, are set forth for an Example, suffering the Vengeance of eternal Fire.

Manner with them, committing Fornication, and, by yet grosser and more unnatural Licentiousness, going after strange and detestable Gratifications of their pampered and indulged Flesh, are set forth for an Example to other presumptuous Sinners; suffering that, which really appears a most lively Emblem of the Vengeance of eternal Fire (f), having their lovely and fruitful Country turned into a Kind of Hell upon Earth. So these Dreamers also (b), in their luxurious Indulgencies, suffer their Thoughts to be amused with vain and polluted Imaginations, whereby they defile the Flesh, which ought to be sacred, together with the Spirit, to the Service of God. They make light of Dominion, and Authority derived from the supreme Sovereign, and speak evil of Dignities, of Persons in the most honourable Stations: Whereas we have heard in Tradition, that Michael the Arch-angel, when contending in Dispute with the Devil, concerning the Body of Moses (h), which the Angel was to bury privately, and he would have revealed, did not presume to bring against him a railing Accusation (i), but had so much Reverence for

Sect. 4.

Jude 7.

8 Likewise also these filthy Dreamers defile the Flesh, despise Dominion, and speak evil of Dignities.

9 Yet Michael the Arch-angel, when contending with the Devil, he disputed about the Body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing Accusation, but said,

(f) Vengeance of eternal Fire.] Dr. Whitby has brought many Arguments to prove, that the Vengeance here spoken of must be the Loss of their Cities, rather than their Souls, and produces Instances to show, that *αιωνιος* is used in a Sense consistent with this Interpretation.

(g) Dreamers: *ενοπιναζουμοι*.] Our Translators render this, *filthy Dreamers*. The Context shews they deserve the Epithet; but as the Greek does not express it, I judged it most faithful to the Original to omit it.

(h) Body of Moses.] Archbishop Tillotson, (see his Works, Vol. ii. pag. 158.) and many other good Writers, think this illustrated by Deut. xxxiv. 6. He supposes that had the Devil been able to discover to the Jews the Place where Moses was interred, they would afterwards have paid an idolatrous Honour to his Remains; and it would have gratified his Malice exceedingly, to have made him an Occasion of Idolatry after his Death, who had been so great an Enemy to it in his Life. To prevent this, he thinks Michael buried the Body secretly. This proves, by the Way, that good Angels are sometimes concerned in limiting the Power of Devils, which must no Doubt be a great Vexation to those malignant Spirits. But Mr. Baxter suggests it as a Doubt, whether it were about the dead Body of Moses, or Moses exposed on the Water that there was this Contention. Baxter's Works, Vol. ii. pag. 341.

(i) A railing Accusation.] Archbishop Tillotson suggests, that the Archangel was afraid the

- Sect. 1. for the divine Presence, as to speak with Moderation and Gentleness, even to that great Enemy of God and Men; and *said, the Lord rebuke thee* (k) for this Outrage, and teach thee to restrain such shocking Expressions. (Compare *Zach. iii. 2.*) But these daring and impious Men blaspheme what indeed they know not; and what they naturally, as the irrational Animals, know (l), the Things which tend to the Gratification of their inferior Part, the low Circle to which their Knowledge and Care is confined; in these they are corrupted, by the gross and scandalous Abuse of them, to the Dishonour of God, and to their own Infamy and Destruction. Woe be unto them, and Woe will attend them; for they have gone in the Way of Cain, that Persecutor and Murtherer, while, like him, they have despised the appointed Method of God's Mercy; and they have run on with prodigious Eagerness in the Deception of Balaam's Reward; inflaved, like him, to mean secular Views, they have abandoned themselves to Sin
- 10 But these speak evil of those Things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute Beasts; in those Things they corrupt themselves.
- 11 Woe unto them; for they have gone in the Way of Cain, and ran greedily after the Error of Balaam for Reward, and perished in

the Devil would have been too hard for him at railing. The Words seem to me to intimate, that the Angel thought it a Part of the Reverence due to God, not to mention his Name and Judgment, in a furious passionate Manner, but mildly and gently. *Witsius* thinks the Devil blasphemed, and that the Angel did not accuse him, but referred the Matter to the Judgment of the great Day. *Witsii Miscel. Vol. ii. iv. 6. § 28.* See also the *Commentary* of this learned Author *in loc.* whose Remarks on all the Verses are framed with great Erudition and Accuracy. Perhaps *κα ἐλομσα κρισιν επενεγκεν βλασφημιας* may signify, that he did not pass Judgment upon his Blasphemy, but referred him to God.

(k) *The Lord rebuke thee.*] It is highly probable the Apostle refers to some ancient Book, in which this Fact was thus mentioned, and speaks upon the Supposition of its Truth, which the Persons he reasoned against, did not dispute. And the Argument does not lie in any Regard shewn to the Devil as a Dignitary, and one who exercises Dominion over subordinate evil Spirits; for to be a Leader of a Band of such execrable Rebels could entitle him to no Respect; but it seems to arise from the detestable Character of the Devil; as if he had said, If the Angel did not rail even against the Devil, how much less ought we against Men in Authority, even supposing them in some Things to behave amiss? To do it therefore when they behave well, must be a Wickedness yet much more aggravated.

(l) *Naturally know.*] Compare the Notes on the parallel Texts in 2 *Pet. ii.* for the Illustration of this and other Passages which occur here.

(m) *Have*

in the Gainsaying of Core.

Sin and Ruin, till at length they have perished (m) in the Contradiction of Korah; like him, they have opposed God's appointed Messengers, and his Son, to whom he has devolved the Conduct of his Church; and methinks, like him and his Company, I see them already struck by the Lightning of God's Wrath, and overwhelmed with remediless Destruction.

Sect. 1.

Jude 11.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

HOW happy are the People of our Lord *Jesus Christ*, who in him are called, sanctified and kept by the divine Omnipotence, through Faith unto Salvation? For Mercy and Peace shall be multiplied upon them, till Mercy hath, as it were, finished its Commission, and conducted them to *Eternal Peace*. We learn from the Example of the *Apostle* before us, of how great Necessity it is, in some Circumstances, if *Ministers* would promote the common Salvation of their Hearers, to guard them against the prevailing Errors of the *Day*, and to excite them earnestly to strive for the Faith once delivered to the *Saints*, as for a Prize of the highest Importance. May we rightly discern its Nature, and be very careful, that while we are attempting to exert a *Christian Zeal*, we do not mingle with it our own Mistakes, and our own irregular Passions, in such a Manner as to tear in Pieces, what we are so eager to preserve. In short, let us learn from *Scripture*, what that Faith is, and what the Importance of its respective *Articles* are; and let us always be endeavouring to maintain it in the Spirit of Love.

Ver. 1, 2

Ver. 3

May all who would disturb the *Church* by pernicious Doctrines, or scandalous Practices; and especially, they who would ungratefully turn the Grace of God into *Lasciviousness*, and thereby deny the only true God, and our Saviour, reflect upon the awful Judgment of God on the Rebel *Angels*, and on sinful Men, not on the *Cities of Sodom and Gomorrha* only, but even on his own People, whom he had delivered from *Egypt*, when they proved obstinate and

Ver. 4.

Ver. 6, 7.

Ver. 5.

unbe-

(m) *Have perished.*] This is a genuine Trace of a prophetic Spirit, which speaks of Things certainly future, as if they were past. And as such I thought proper to illustrate it in the *Paraphrase*.

- Sect. 1. *unbelieving*; and as we dread an Exclusion from the heavenly *Canaan*; yea as we dread the *Chains of Darkness*, and the *Vengeance of eternal Fire*; let us avoid and abhor the Character described in the following Verses: The *Dream of Lewdness*, the *brutal Indulgence of Sensuality*, the *Contradiction of Korah*, the *Covetousness of Balaam*, and the *Malignity of Cain*. God has written down their *Condemnation and Destruction* in the eternal Records of his Word; that they might be for a *Sign*, and that others may *bear and fear*, and take Heed that *they do not so wickedly*.
- Ver. 8, &c.
- Ver. 11.
- Ver. 4.

## S E C T. II.

*The Apostle pursues the Character of the scandalous Professors he had mentioned before; and concludes with exhorting the Christians to whom he wrote, to endeavour to secure their own Edification in Faith and Love, and to do their utmost for the Preservation and Recovery of others. Jude, Ver. 12, to the End.*

## JUDE 12.

Sect. 2. *I MUST* further proceed to caution you, my Brethren, against those wicked and seducing Men, who are so desirous of insinuating themselves into the Christian Church, and whose Attempts to corrupt it are so unwearied, and, in many Instances, so fatal. *These are Spots in your Love-Feasts (a)*, which tend to expose them to the

## JUDE 12.

*THESE* are Spots in your Feasts of Charity, when

(a) *Love-Feasts.*] So I chose to render *αγαπαις*, as it is well known the primitive Christians had such Feasts, though it seems that from the Abuse of them by Persons of a Character like those here described, they were soon laid aside. See Mr. Hallet on the Subject, *Notes and Disc. Vol. iii. Disc. 6.* Dr. Lightfoot, and Dr. Whitby who follows him, are not for referring the *αγαπαις* here mentioned to the Christians Feasts of Charity; in Opposition to whom the learned Reader may consult *Witius's Commentary* on the Place.

(b) *Whose*

when they feast with you, feeding themselves without Fear: Clouds they are without Water, carried about of Winds; Trees whose Fruit withereth, without Fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the Roots:

the Reproach of the Adversary; [*who*] when they banquet with you, feed themselves without Fear, and will run into Excesses, which if they be not resolutely suppressed, will be imputed to the whole Body. They make indeed a great Profession of their Desires of Usefulness in the Church, but they are *Clouds without Water*, from which no Refreshment or Fruitfulness is to be expected; borne about by the Winds of Temptation, hither and thither, without any Command of themselves; and if when they first took upon them the Christian Profession, they gave some better Hopes, as many of them perhaps did, they are like *Trees, whose early Buddings are withered (b)*, and so now remain *without Fruit*; yea, not only so, but are *twice dead (c)*; successive Summers and Winters have passed over them, and they have been continually growing more fit for Fewell, and so are now good for nothing but *to be utterly rooted up*, to be taken away from the Plantation, which they only cumber, dishonour, and deform, and cast into the Fire. Their Passions are violent and impetuous, like so many *fierce Waves of the Sea*, furiously foaming out the irregular Tumults of their Hearts; and, in them, *their own Shame; wandering Stars (d)*, which though for a while they may glitter, will soon have ended their Course, will be found, notwithstanding all their Blaze, destitute of

Sect. 2.  
Jude 12.

13 Raging Waves of the Sea, foaming out their own Shame; wandering Stars,

13

(b) *Whose early Buddings are withered.*] We render this, *whose Fruit withereth*; but it seems to me, that *σθινωσθησθαι* is much more exactly rendered, as in *this* Version; and the Appearance of a *Tautology* avoided.

(c) *Twice dead.*] Some explain this of *natural Corruption* and *Apostacy*; but the Gloss in the *Paraphrase* seems much more easy and genuine. There is an admirable Strength and Spirit in the Description given in the following Verses.

(d) *Wandering Stars.*] The *Jews* are said to have called their Teachers *Stars*; and they are represented under that Emblem, *Rev. i. 16. ii. 1*. And as the *Planets* seem to have a very *irregular* Motion, being sometimes *stationary*, and sometimes *retrograde*, they are proper Emblems of Persons so *unsettled* in their Principles, and so *irregular* in their Behaviour, as these Men were.

Sect. 2. any real and permanent Light of their own, and in the Number of those to whom *Blackness of Darknes is reserved for ever*, and will soon be driven to an eternal Distance from the great Original of Light and Happiness, to which they shall never return.

Jude 13.

14

And indeed, when I consider their Characters and their Actions, I may say that according to the antient Tradition, *Enoch also, the seventh in lineal Descent from Adam, prophesied (e) against them (f)*, described their Crimes and their Condemnation, when he said, *Behold the Lord comes with Myriads of his holy ones*, attended with Legions of Angels in his Descent for this important

15

Purpose: For he comes to execute Judgment upon all according to their respective Works; and by Witnesses that cannot be confronted, particularly to convict all the Ungodly among them, of all their impious Works which they have impiously committed; and he will then be mindful, not only of their cruel and oppressive Acts, but of all the hard and irreligious Things which impious Sinners have spoken, against him and his People: And certain it is, that these Words

are

Stars, to whom is reserved the Blackness of Darknes for ever.

14 And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten Thousands of his Saints,

15 To execute Judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them, of all their ungodly Deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard Speeches, which ungodly Sinners have spoken against him.

(e) *Enoch prophesied.*] A precious Fragment of *Antideluvian History* is here preserved to us, as it seems, by the special Providence of God, who taught the Apostle Jude to distinguish between what was genuine and spurious in the Tradition. It can by no Means be proved, that this is a Quotation from that foolish Book, called *Enoch's Prophecy*, as Bishop Sherlock has very rightly urged; nor would it prove the Inspiration of the Book from whence it was taken, but only the Truth of this particular Passage. Sherlock on Propb. pag. 188, 189. 5th Edit. Compare 2 Tim, iii. 8. and the Note there.

(f) *Prophesied against them.*] Mr. Blackwall, (*Sacr. Class. Vol. i. pag. 164.*) has shewn by adequate Authorities, that *ἠγορευσε τῶν αἰωνῶν* may be rendered *prophesied against these*. Perhaps this may explain what was said before, of their being registred to this Condemnation, Ver. 4. Some have thought the Coming of the Lord here mentioned, was his coming attended with Angels, to bring on the Deluge. If it refers to his coming to the universal Judgment, it is a most remarkable Testimony to a future State, not indeed in the Mosaic OEconomy, but previous to it. And perhaps Moses's omitting this, (as I think it almost certain he knew it,) is to be resolved into the Restriction under which he wrote, agreeable to the Principles, which the learned Dr. Warburton has so largely stated in his *divine Legation &c.*

(g) *Extra-*

16 These are Murmurers, Complainers, walking after their own Lusts; and their Mouth speaketh great swelling Words, having Men's Persons in Admiration because of Advantage.

are as suitable to their Case, as if it had been particularly intended. *These are* Sect. 2.

*Murmurers*, that can never be contented with the Allotments of Providence, or with the Conduct of any about them; *that find Fault continually with their Lot, walking according to their own unbridled Lusts; and their Mouth speaks extravagant Things (g)*; some, by way of Exclamation against those they disapprove, and others in the Height of Encomiums and Panegyrics, on those who are their Favourites, and the Leaders of their Party; *having [such] Persons in Admiration, not so much for the Sake of their real Excellencies, as of some present Gain which they meanly propose to themselves as the Reward of their servile Flattery.* But 17

17 But, beloved, remember ye the Words which were spoken before of the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ:

*you, my beloved, instead of following these wandering Guides, remember the Word which were formerly spoken by the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ (b), who have preached his Gospel to you in all its Purity and Energy.* 18

18 How that they told you there should be Mockers in the last Time, who should walk after their own ungodly Lusts.

*For they have told you, that in the last Time prophane Mockers shall come, walking according to their own ungodly and wanton Lusts (i), and making a Jest of those who do not run with them to the same Excesses of Riot.* 19

19 These be they who separate

*These are they, who, in many Places separate themselves from the Church, as of a purer Stamp, and more refined Attainments*

(g) *Extravagant Things.*] So I think *υπεροχλα*, may very properly be rendered; and if we may judge of the extravagant Things, by those which *Irenæus* in particular has recorded in his Account of some *early Hereticks*, the Expression was applied with the utmost Propriety. See the same Phrase *Dan. xi. 36.* in the *Seventy. Witsius in loc.*

(b) *Apostles of our Lord &c.*] The Resemblance between this Text and *2 Pet. iii. 2.* is very remarkable. *Bishop Sherlock* observes it to be such as would incline one to think, that *St. Jude* had the Text in *Peter* before him, and omitted what hath a peculiar Reference to the former Part of *St. Peter's* Epistle, and to which there was nothing in his own to answer. See his *Discourses on Prophecy*, pag. 193. 5th Edit.

(i) *Ungodly Lusts.*] For *ασεβειων* ungodly, some would read *ασελευειων*, lascivious or wanton. See *Phil. Lipsi. against Collins*, pag. 73. But as this Reading is not absolutely necessary to the Sense, I cannot persuade myself to alter the Word merely on Conjecture.

(k) *Garment*



414 *They were therefore to keep themselves in the Love of God.*

Sect 2. tainments than others; *sensual*, and entirely  
Jude 19. addicted to the low Gratifications of their  
animal Life; by which they make it too ap-  
parent, *that they have not the Spirit*, what-  
ever high Pretences they may make to its

separate themselves, sensual,  
having not the Spirit.

20 extraordinary Communications. *But I*

have the pleasing Persuasion, that *you*, my  
*beloved Brethren*, will not only guard against  
being seduced by them, but, according to  
the Exhortations so often given you, will  
still be *edifying yourselves* and one another,  
*in your most holy Faith*; that understanding  
its Articles more clearly, and feeling their  
happy Efficacy to promote the Work of  
Holiness in your Souls, you may be more  
and more established against the Attacks of  
these Deceivers: Especially, *praying in the*  
*holy Spirit*, and under his Influence, vouch-  
safed in Answer to your Prayers, making

20 But ye, beloved, build-  
ing up yourselves on your  
most holy Faith, praying in  
the Holy Ghost,

21 swifter Advances in the divine Life. And  
be careful thus to *keep yourselves in* the Ex-  
ercise of that sacred Affection, *the Love of*  
*God*, which ought always to rule in your  
Hearts; *looking for the Mercy of our Lord*  
*Jesus Christ to eternal Life*, to which this  
compassionate Saviour will assuredly conduct  
all those who confide in him.

21 Keep yourselves in  
the Love of God, looking  
for the Mercy of our Lord  
Jesus Christ unto eternal  
Life.

22 *And* while you are yourselves animated with  
this chearful Hope, do your utmost for the  
Preservation of others; and in this Respect, *on*  
*some have tender Compassion*, and apply to them  
with the softest and most endearing Offices of  
Christian Friendship; *making a great Differ-*  
*ence* between them, and the Case of others,  
who have drunk deeper of the Poison, and  
are become active in the Mischief. It may

22 And of some have  
Compassion, making a Dif-  
ference:

23 seem to have an unkind Appearance, *but* it  
is most certain, there are *some*, whom if you  
would *save* at all, you must attempt it *with*  
*Fear* and trembling, by severe Methods; as  
alarmed yourselves, and terrifying them, with  
the Apprehensions of God's Judgments; as if  
you were *snatching [them]* with Eagerness *out of*  
*the*

23 And others save with  
Fear, pulling *them* out of  
the

the Fire; hating even the Garment spotted by the Flesh.

the Fire, into which they were fallen, or just ready to fall. And if you desire, that

Sec. 2.

your Efforts, in either of these Cases, should be successful, you must take great Care to preserve your own Purity, *bating even the Garment that is spotted with the Flesh* (k), lest by the Touch of it you yourselves be polluted. I am sensible, this will require

24

strenuous Vigilance and Resolution; but I hope the Grace of God will animate you to it. To this therefore now I solemnly commit you; *even to him, who is able to keep you from falling*: Rugged and dangerous as the Ways of Life are, and feeble as you know yourselves to be, he is able at length to present [you] blameless, and in the full Perfection of Holiness, before the Presence of his Glory, in his final Appearance, with exceeding great and unutterable Joy. To him, as the only wise God, which is now become our Saviour, our Guardian, our Friend, and our Father, [be] Glory, and Majesty, Dominion, and Power, ascribed; and Obedience, Reverence and Love rendered, thro' Christ Jesus, both now and through all Ages, World without End. Amen.

25

24 Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the Presence of his Glory with exceeding Joy:

25 To the only wise God our Saviour, be Glory and Majesty, Dominion and Power, both now and ever. Amen.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

LET those, who have the Honour of being numbered among the Disciples of Christ, stand at the remotest Distance from the Evil with which these unhappy Creatures are branded by the *Apostle* in this *Epistle*. And may divine Grace preserve all his Churches from such Spots in their Feasts of Charity! May our Horizon be secured from those dark and gloomy Clouds without Water; the Plantations of God among us be free from the Incumbrance and Disgrace of those withered and fruitless Trees, twice dead, and plucked up by the Roots! How illustrious was the Prophecy, with which Enoch

Ver. 12, 13.

Ver. 14.

the

(k) *Garment spotted with the Flesh.*] Mr. Cradock interprets this of the Caution, with which a Man would avoid a Garment, which had been worn by one who had a Plague Sore; but perhaps there may be a Reference to such Passages in the *Mosaic Law*, as *Levit. xv. 4, 10, 17*. See *Witsius* on the Place, who well defends this Sense against *Erasmus*; whose Opinion it was, that the *Apostle* alludes to the white Garment, which those who were newly baptized, put on in Token of Innocence.

416 *Reflections on our Obligation to Faith, and the Love of God.*

- Sect. 2. *the seventh from Adam* was inspired; and how precious is that Fragment of *Antediluvian History*, which is here preserved, and which
- Ver. 15. shall surely be accomplished in its Season! The Day is now much nearer, when *the Lord will come with ten Thousands of his Saints*: May the *Ungodly* remember it, and suppress in Time the *Speeches* which will then assuredly be reprov'd, and repent of the *Deeds*, which if unrepented of, however forgotten now, will be brought into open View, and draw down upon their Heads the Destruction which at present seems to linger. That we may have *Confidence* before him at his coming, let us *remember the Words of the Apostle*, and implore the Influences of the divine *Spirit*, which *Sensualists*,
- Ver. 18, 19. *who walk after their own Lusts*, quench and stifle, and which they
- Ver. 20. mock and deride. Let us, however, be concerned to *edify* ourselves in our most holy *Faith*, and to *pray in the Holy Ghost*, under his Influence, Direction, and Assistance. The Security of the Heart amidst so many Temptations, and its richest Cordial in all its Afflictions,
- Ver. 21. is *the Love of God*: But how soon does the celestial Flame languish and die, if it be not constantly fed with new Fuel! Let it then be our Care, in humble Dependance upon divine Grace, to *keep ourselves in the Love of God*; which will be cherished in Proportion to that Degree of Faith and Hope, with which we *look for the Mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal Life*: For what can so powerfully excite our Love to God, as such a Consideration?
- If we do expect it, let us express our Regard to the *Salvation of others*, as well as to our own; and apply ourselves to those, who seem to be in Danger, with such *different Addresses of Awe or Tendernefs*, as their different Circumstances and Tempers may require. But some
- Ver. 22. Way or another, let us exert ourselves to *pluck them out of the Fire*, who are in Danger of falling into it, and perishing for ever.
- A Care to preserve our own Characters and Consciences *unspotted*, will be necessary to our Courage, and Hope of Success, in such Efforts as these. Let us therefore be more frequently looking up to him, who is
- Ver. 24. *able to keep us from falling*, and to improve as well as maintain the Work he has wrought in us, till we shall be *presented blameless before the Presence of his Glory*. Then shall our Hearts know a Joy beyond what Earth can afford, beyond what Heaven itself shall have given us, in the separate State; then shall God also *rejoice* over us, and the Joy of our compassionate Saviour be compleated, in seeing the full Accomplishment of the *Travail of his Soul*. To him who has so wisely formed the Scheme, and will faithfully and perfectly accomplish it, *be Glory, and Majesty, Dominion, and Power, both now and for ever. Amen.*
- Ver. 25.

*The END of the FAMILY EXPOSITOR on the CATHOLIC EPISTLE of St. JUDE.*

The

The Family Expositor:  
OR, A  
P A R A P H R A S E  
ON THE  
R E V E L A T I O N

OF  
St. *J O H N.*

WITH  
Critical N O T E S, and a practical I M P R O V E M E N T  
of each S E C T I O N.

VOL. VI.

G g g





A

# GENERAL INTRODUCTION

TO THE

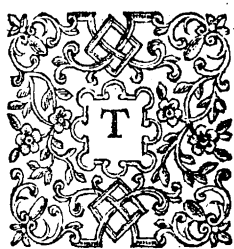
# PARAPHRASE and NOTES

ON THE

# REVELATION

OF

St. *J* *O* *H* *N*.



HOUGH the Authority of this Book was called in Question in the Beginning of the *third Century*, yet this is no reasonable Objection against receiving it into the sacred Canon; for perhaps no Part of the *New Testament*, though of unquestionable Authenticity and Credit, was more universally acknowledged or mentioned with higher Respect, during the *two preceding Centuries*. *Dr. Mill* observes, that in a few Years after it was written, it was numbered among the *Apostolical Writings*, by the Churches of *Asia*, the neighbouring Churches of *Syria* and *Samaria*, the more distant ones of *Africa*, *Egypt* and *Rome*, and the other Churches of *Europe*. According to *Mr. Lowman*, citing this Remark of *Dr. Mill*, makes the following additional Observation, "That hardly any one Book hath received more early, more authentick, or more satisfactory Attestations."

Its *canonical Authority* being debated so late as the *third Century*, when it had been universally admitted before, appears to have arisen, from the Opposition made to those absurd Opinions, which it is well known were entertained by several *Fathers*, concerning the *Millennium*. These being entirely grounded upon an injudicious and mistaken Interpretation of some *Prophecies*, contained in this sacred Book, *Caius*, with some others, to end the Controversy as speedily and effectually as possible, weakly and indiscreetly, ventured to deny the *Authority* of the Book, which had given Occasion to it. If the Reader would see this Argument handled at large, and the Sentiments of the *Antients* represented fully and distinctly, he may consult *Dr. Mill's Prolegomena*, *Sir Isaac Newton's Observations on the Apocalypse*, *Dr. Twells's third Part of his critical Examination of the new Text and Version*, and *Dr. Lardner's second Part of the Credibility of the Gospel History*, passim.

This *Prophetic Book* is entitled, *The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which he sent and signified by his Angel to his Servant John*. There is, in my Opinion, very little Reason to doubt, that the *John* here mentioned, was the *Evangelist* of that Name, and the *Author of the three Epistles*. For concerning *this John* Antiquity agrees, that he was banished to *Patmos* in the Reign of *Domitian*, for his Adherence to the *Christian Faith*. And the Author of this Book informs the Churches of *Asia*, (*Chap. i. ver. 9.*) that *he, their Brother and Companion in Tribulation, and in the Kingdom and Patience of Jesus Christ*, received these Revelations, when he was in the Isle called *Patmos, for the Word of GOD, and the Testimony of Jesus Christ*. And if, with some learned Men, we apprehend, that the Tradition of the *Evangelist John* being banished to the Isle *Patmos*, was occasioned by this Passage of the *Revelation*, it shews at least, that it was the most *early*, as well as most generally received, Opinion of the *Antients*, that the *Author of this Book* was the same with *St. John the Evangelist*. This Book is commonly called, *The Revelation of St. John the Divine*. But this Appellation of its Author is not of *canonical Authority*; it was first given to *St. John* by *Eusebius*, not to distinguish him from any other Person of the same Name, but on Account of those mysterious and sublime Points of Divinity, with the Knowledge of which he seems to have been favoured above his *Fellow-Apostles*.

If the Account of *Eusebius* is to be credited, that *St. John* was banished into *Patmos*, and there received his Revelation, in the last Year of the Reign of *Domitian*, we may fix the *Date* of this Book, with great Probability, about the Year 96. I am aware,

aware, that some Authors of very distinguished Character, and particularly the great *Sir Isaac Newton*, place it earlier, and even before the Destruction of *Jerusalem*. The learned *Wolfius*, (in his *Prolegomena* to the *Revelation*, in the *fifth Volume* of his *Curæ Philologicæ*.) hath examined and refuted this Opinion. I shall here only observe, that perhaps the *seven Churches* of *Asia* were not founded so early as this Opinion supposes, or at least they were not then become so considerable, much less had undergone such Changes and Revolutions, as the respective *Epistles* to them recorded in this Book, represent them to have done.

At the Close of the magnificent Description of our blessed Lord's Appearance to *St. John*, contained in the *first Chapter*, he is ordered to *write the Things which he saw*, (that is, the glorious Vision he then beheld,) and *the Things which are*, or the State of the Churches at that Time, and *the Things which shall be hereafter*, or the future State and Condition of the Church, to the End of the World. Accordingly this Book may properly be divided into *three Parts*,

The *first* containing the *Introduction*, or a Preface and Dedication to the seven Churches in *Asia*, and an Account of the glorious Vision of our Lord, with which *St. John* was favoured during his Banishment in *Patmos*, where he also received a divine Revelation concerning the State of the Church: (*Chap. i. throughout.*)

The *second Part* containing the *Epistles* which Christ commanded him to write to the seven Churches of *Asia*, relating to their present Circumstances, and to the Duties resulting from them: (*Chap. ii. and iii.*)

The *third Part*, which describes the Condition of the Church in After-times, from the *third Chapter* to the *End* of the Book; begins with a sublime Description of the Deity enthroned in Glory, surrounded with Angels, and with the heavenly Church; and then proceeds, to represent a *sealed Book*, or the Volume of God's Decrees, given to the *Lamb*; who only was worthy to open it, and who, on that Account, receives the Acclamation of the whole Choir of Saints and Angels, (*Chap. iv. v.*) After this sublime Apparatus, the *Lamb* is represented as opening the *Seals* of the Book; one after another; and with this the Scene of *Prophecy* begins; — which may very properly be divided, (as it is by the learned *Mr. Lowman*, who is undoubtedly the best Commentator extant, on this Part of the *New Testament*;) into *Seven Periods*.

The FIRST PERIOD is that of the *Seals*.

The



The *first* Seal represents a white Horse, his Rider having a Bow in his Hand, and a Crown of Gold on his Head, going forth to conquer.

The *second* represents a red Horse; and to his Rider is given a great Sword, and Power to take Peace from the Earth.

The *third* represents a black Horse, whose Rider hath a Pair of Scales in his Hand, to weigh Corn and Provision.

The *fourth* represents a pale Horse, whose Name is Death, to whom is given Power to slay the fourth Part of the Earth with the Sword, and with Famine, and with Pestilence, and with wild Beasts of the Field.

The *fifth* represents, under the Altar, the Souls of those who were slaughtered on Account of the Word of God; and the final Reward of their Constancy.

The *sixth* represents an Earthquake, the darkening of the Sun, the Moon becoming as Blood, and the Stars falling from Heaven.

After the Description of the opening of these *Six Seals*, and of the consequent Visions, an *Angel* is represented as sealing *one hundred forty and four thousand* with the Seal of the living God: After which is introduced the Choir of the *heavenly Church* blessing the Almighty; and one of the *Elders* shews *St. John*, the Happiness of those who had patiently endured Tribulation. (*Chap. vii. throughout.*)

The *Lamb* is then represented as opening the *seventh Seal*, which is succeeded by a Silence in Heaven for the Space of half an Hour; introductory to the

SECOND PERIOD, which is that of the *Trumpets*, given to the seven Angels, already mentioned. And upon the Sounding the

*First Trumpet*, there is Hail and Fire mingled with Blood cast down upon the Earth, representing bloody and destructive Wars. On the Sounding of the

*Second Trumpet*, a great Mountain, as it were, burning with Fire, is cast into the Sea; by which a third Part of it becomes Blood, and a third Part of the Creatures in the Sea die, and a third Part of the Ships are destroyed. On the Sounding of the

*Third Trumpet*, a great burning Star falls from Heaven upon a third Part of the Rivers, and of the Fountains of Waters, and a third Part of the Waters become bitter. On the Sounding of the

*Fourth Trumpet*, a third Part of the Sun, and of the Moon, and of the Stars, is darkened. And a Woe is denounced by one of the Angels against them that dwell on the Earth, for the Trumpets of the three Angels who are yet to sound: On the Sounding of the

*Fifth*

*Fifth Trumpet*, the bottomless Pit is opened, and from thence issue forth *Locusts* in great Multitudes, not to destroy the Fruits of the Earth, but to torment its Inhabitants. These *Locusts* are described like *Horses* prepared for Battle, with Crowns on their Heads like Gold, and their Faces like the Faces of Men, their Hair like the Hair of Women, their Teeth like Lyons, their Breast-plates like Iron, the Noise of their Wings like that of Chariots and Horses, their Tails like Scorpions, and armed with Stings; having the Angel of the bottomless Pit for their Leader. On the Sounding of the

*Sixth Trumpet*, the four Angels, which were bound by the great River *Euphrates*, are loosed, and lead up mighty Armies of Horsemen for the Destruction of Mankind. (*Chap. viii. ix.*)

After the *sixth* Trumpet had sounded, *St. John* relates the marvellous Vision, of an Angel who appeared to him in great Glory, and brought him a little Book, which he is commanded to eat; and then he is ordered, again, to prophecy to many People, and Nations, and Tongues, and Kings. (*Chap. x. throughout.*) And thus the

THIRD PERIOD is introduced, which is pointed out by various Representations:

1. By the Measuring of the Temple; Part of which is given to, and trodden under Foot by the Gentiles; and two Witnesses are represented as prophesying in Sackcloth 1260 Days, and then, having been put to Death, are raised again from the Dead; and upon the sounding of the Trumpet of the *seventh* Angel, their Triumphs over their Enemies are celebrated by the heavenly Hosts! (*Chap. xi. 1,—18.*) And the Temple of God being opened in Heaven, and the Ark of the Covenant displayed, the State of the Church in *this Period*, is described

2. As a Woman clothed with the Sun, with the Moon under her Feet, and on her Head a Crown of twelve Stars; and, while she was in Travail, assaulted by a fiery Dragon, with seven Heads, and ten Horns, and on his Heads seven Crowns; and when she is delivered, her Child is caught up to God, and she flies into the Wilderness to avoid the Dragon, where she is supported 1260 Days; and the Dragon is vanquished by the Angels. (*Chap. xi. 19,—xii. throughout.*) The deplorable Condition of the Church in *this Period* is described further,

3. By

3. By the Faithful being exposed to the Ravages of a wild Beast, whom *St. John* saw in Vision rising out of the Sea, having seven Heads, and ten Horns, that is ten Diadems, and on his Heads Names of Blasphemy, to whom the Dragon gave his Power and Authority; so that the Inhabitants of the Earth worshipped the Beast, as well as the Dragon; and the Beast had Power to make War with the Saints 42 Months, or 1260 Days; (which is the same space of Time, during which the Woman, in the *preceding Vision*, is said to have been supported in the Wilderness, and during which, in the *first Vision*, the two Witnesses are said to prophecy in Sackcloth: A Circumstance, which plainly demonstrates these Visions to be descriptive of the State of Things in the *same Period*, and not in *successive Periods*.) And the Power and Authority of this Beast is supported by another Beast, which arose after it, and which is also particularly described. And the Mark, or the Name of the Beast, or the Number of his Name, which is also said to be the Number of a Man, is *Six Hundred and Sixty Six*.—After which follows a sublime Description of the *Lamb* standing on Mount *Zion*, surrounded with the *One Hundred Forty Four Thousand*, who had the Name of his Father written in their Foreheads, while the heavenly Church celebrates the Happiness of those who had continued faithful and persevered to the End.—The next Vision is of an Angel flying through the midst of Heaven, with the everlasting Gospel in his Hand, denouncing the Judgment of God to be approaching on the Beast, and on them who worship him: Which is likewise set forth by some succeeding Representations:—And particularly,

By an Order given to the *Seven Angels* to pour out their *VIALS*, full of the *seven last Plagues*, in which the Wrath of God is completed on the Beast and his Votaries.

The *first Vial* is poured out upon the Earth, and produces a grievous Ulcer on them who had the Mark of the Beast.

The *second Vial* is poured out upon the Sea, which becomes Blood, and every living Thing in the Sea dies.

The *third Vial* is poured out on the Rivers, and on the Fountains of Water, which also become Blood.

The *fourth Vial* is poured forth on the Sun, which hath Power given to it to scorch Men with Fire.

The *fifth Vial* is poured out on the Throne of the Beast, and his Kingdom is darkened, and his Votaries gnaw their Tongues, and blaspheme the God of Heaven, for their Pains and their Ulcers.

The

The *sixth* Vial is poured out on the River *Euphrates*, and the Water of it is dried up, so that a Way is prepared for the Kings of the East; against whom the Worshippers of the Beast are drawn up in Order of Battle. And then upon the pouring out of

The *seventh* Vial, a Voice is heard from Heaven, accompanied with Thunder and Lightning, saying, "It is completed;" that is, *Babylon* the Great hath drank of the Cup of the Wine of God's fiercest Indignation.

After the pouring out of these *Vials*, one of the Angels, who had executed that Commission, further explains what had been represented, by describing the Character of the great *Harlot* who sitteth on many Waters, and with whom the Kings of the Earth committed Fornication. And then follows an Account of another Angel descending from Heaven, declaring with a loud Voice, that *Babylon* the Great is fallen, and pointing out the Lamentation of her Friends and Merchants over her. Upon which is described the Triumph of the heavenly Host on Account of the Fall of *Babylon*; which is further illustrated by the Representation of an Attack made by *Christ* and his Army on the Beast, ending in an entire Victory over him. (*Chap. xiii,—xix.*)

The **FOURTH PERIOD** represents an Angel descending from Heaven, to confine the great *Dragon*, or *Satan*, in the bottomless Pit for the Space of a *thousand Years*; during which the Church is in a very peaceful and flourishing Condition. (*Chap. xx. 1,—6.*)

The **FIFTH PERIOD** represents *Satan* loosed again for a little Season, and making a fresh Attempt for the Establishment of his Kingdom, which shall issue in its utter Destruction. (*Ver. 7,—10.*)

The **SIXTH PERIOD** represents the general Resurrection, the last Judgment, and the utter Destruction of the Wicked. (*Ver. 11, to the End*)

The **SEVENTH PERIOD** represents the Vision of new Heavens, and a new Earth, or the Happiness of the *Jerusalem* above, described by the sublimest Figures which can enter into the human Imagination. (*Chap. xxi, xxii. —5.*)

In the Conclusion of this truly marvellous Series of *Prophecy*, with which the *Canon* of Scripture closes, our blessed Lord in the most awful Manner charges his faithful Servant and Apostle *John*, to re-

veal to the Churches what had been thus revealed to him, and declares his own speedy Approach to the final Judgment; denouncing a very dreadful Sentence of Condemnation, on those, who should *add to or diminish* the Words, of the Prophecy of this Book. And then the Sacred Writer concludes the whole with a solemn Benediction. (*Chap. xxii. 6, to the End.*)

After all the Labour and Pains, which learned Men have been at, to explain and illustrate this Book, so many Articles are contained in it, which are dark and mysterious, that I remained some Time undetermined, whether I should publish any Commentary upon it at all. But on a more devout and attentive Review, I resolved, to offer to the Reader what Assistance I could, to enable him to comprehend its *general Design*, and lead him to those practical and important *Instructions*, which it suggests with great Plainness and Energy; without entering very deeply into critical Enquiries concerning those particular Events to which the several *Prophecies* may be supposed to refer. It is an excellent Observation of *Monsieur Saurin*, that *this is a very mortifying Book to a Mind greedy of Knowledge and Science, but a very satisfying and agreeable one to a Heart solicitous about Maxims and Precepts*, for regulating our Tempers and Lives; or, in his own expressive and elegant Words, *L'Apocalypse, qui est un de plus mortificans Ouvrages, pour un Esprit avide de Connoissance & de Lumiere, est un des plus satisfaisans pour un Cœur avide de Maximes et de Precepts.* *Saurin's Serm. Vol. xii. pag. 234.*

A P A R A

A

## P A R A P H R A S E

A N D

## N O T E S

O N T H E

## R E V E L A T I O N

O F

## St. J O H N.

## S E C T. I.

*The Preface, and Dedication to the seven Churches in Asia; including an affecting Display of the divine Glory of our Lord Jesus Christ, and sublime Songs of Praise to him for Redeeming Love. Rev. I. 1,—8.*

## REVELATION I. I.

THE Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his Servants Things which must shortly come to pass; and

## REVELATION I. I.

THIS is the Book of *the Revelation* Sect. 10. *of Jesus Christ*; even that Revelation, Rev. I. 1. *which GOD his Father gave to him for wise and holy Purposes, to shew to his Servants the Things which must shortly be; many of which are to be very quickly accomplished, and the rest within a Period of Time, which, when compared with his Reign in*

H h h 2

the

- Sect. I. the Heaven of Heavens with all his Saints and People, is only a short and very inconsiderable Duration. *And sending* the Discovery of these Things *by his Angel*, whose Office it was to raise extraordinary Signs and Representations in his Imagination, *he signified them to his Servant JOHN*, who had indeed been distinguished by his Master's Affection, in the Days of his Flesh; insomuch that he even lay in his Bosom, and was stiled, by Way of Eminence, the Disciple
- 2 whom Jesus loved: And *who*, being honoured with so important a Message, failed not faithfully to declare it; but *testified the Word of GOD*, which in those prophetick Visions came unto him, *and the Testimony of Jesus Christ*, (whose Messenger the Angel was,) exactly reporting *whatever he saw*. *Happy [is] he that attentively readeth, and they that obediently bear the Words of this Prophecy, and who keep the Things that are written in it, fixing their Mind upon them, and duly regarding them; for the Time of their Accomplishment [is] at Hand.*
- 3
- 4 And considering the particular Manner in which they were addressed by our blessed Lord, in some of the first of these Revelations, *JOHN* dedicates and inscribes this Account of the whole, *to the seven Churches which are in the Proconsular Asia*, at Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamos, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia, and Laodicea; wishing that *Grace* in the richest Abundance, *and Peace* in all the Variety of its Blessings, may [*be*] *with you* all from the great God, the Fountain of all Blessings, even *from him, who is, and who was, and who is to come (a)*, possessed of invariable divine
- and he sent and signified it by his angel unto his Servant-John :
- 2 Who bare Record of the Word of God, and of the Testimony of Jesus Christ, and of all Things that he saw.
- 3 Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the Words of this Prophecy, and keep those Things which are written therein : for the Time is at hand.
- 4 John to the seven Churches which are in Asia: Grace be unto you, and Peace, from him which is, and which was, and which is to come ; and from the seven

(a) *From him who is, and who was, &c.*] The learned *Grotius* is of Opinion, that the *Nominative Case* not being varied into what the *Grammarians* call a *Genitive*, as the

seven Spirits which are before his Throne ;

5 And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful Witness, and the first-begotten of the dead, and the Prince of the Kings of the Earth : Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own Blood,

divine Attributes and Perfections ; and from the seven Spirits, which are before his Throne (b), and appear as Emblems of the various Operations and Endowments of that one blessed Spirit, by whom they are actuated ; And from Jesus Christ, the true and faithful Witness, whose Testimony is ever to be received with the most religious Regard, as being the first-born from the Dead, the first who rose to die no more, and who as the eldest Son of the Family of God, is gone to take Possession of the Inheritance for himself, and in the Name of his Brethren ; even from him, who is the supreme Ruler of all the Kings of the Earth, and who knows how to humble them in their proudest Career, and defeat their mightiest Opposition to his Kingdom, by deposing one, or exalting another, at his sovereign Pleasure ; and even removing them by a single Act of his Will, not only from the Thrones they fill, but from the World they inhabit. This glorious Person let us all adore, conscious of our infinite Obligations to him ; and say to him who hath loved us with the most unparalleled Affection, and hath condescended so low, that he hath washed us from the otherwise indelible Stains of our Sins in his own most precious Blood, having shed it to make Satisfaction and Atonement for them ; And in

Sect. 1.

Rev. I. 4.

6 And hath made us Kings

6 in

common Rules of Grammar require, is designed to represent the everlasting Veracity and Invariableness of GOD, and the unchangeable Majesty of Christ in the Testimony of his Gospel, and the Glory of his Kingdom.

(b) *The seven Spirits before his Throne.*] Some have explained this of the seven Arch angels, and urged it as an Instance of Invocation to them ; but we may rather suppose the Spirit of GOD to be symbolically represented by the seven Spirits before the Throne ; as it is a View very agreeable to the Genius of this emblematical Book. This, as Bishop Burnet observes, in Support of this Opinion, (see Burnet on the Articles, pag. 39.) is most consistent with the Prohibition of Prayer to the Angels. And if we do not suppose this to be the Case, it will be a great Difficulty to account for the Omission of the Spirit, whose Dignity must, on almost every Hypothesis, be allowed far superior to that of the highest created Angels. See Mr. Lowman in loc.

(c) He



Sect. I. in Consequence of this *batb made us Kings and Priests to his GOD and Father*, that we should reign with him in eternal Life, and enjoy the perpetual Pleasure of worshipping before him in his heavenly Temple, and in the mean Time be trained up for it, by offering spiritual Sacrifices: *To him [be] Glory and Dominion for ever and ever*, throughout the endless Ages of Eternity: *Amen*: So let it be, for the Honour of our Lord, as well as the Comfort of his People, to whom he is more dear, than it is possible any separate

Kings and Priests unto God and his Father; to him be Glory and Dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

7 Interest of their own can be: And so it shall be; for *behold* and observe with suitable Regard, *he is*, as it were, even now *coming in* that Pomp and Majesty in which he himself described his Appearance, with *the Clouds* of Heaven, in Power and great Glory; the Day is so near at Hand, that it may be said to be already come; and however Men may affect to overlook and neglect him, and his Interest now, *every Eye shall then see him (c)*, and every other Object, which at present invites their Regard, shall utterly vanish; *even all they who have pierced him* shall behold him, and they that condemned him shall be arraigned at his Tribunal; *and all the Tribes of the Earth*, who have rejected his Government, and opposed his Interest, *shall mourn because of him (d)*, shall lament that fatal Opposition,

by

7 Behold, he cometh with Clouds; and every Eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all Kindreds of the Earth shall wail because of him: even so, Amen.

(c) *He is coming in the Clouds, and every Eye shall see him.*] It is surprizing, that Dr. Whitby should interpret these Words, as relating to the *temporal Calamities* to befall the *Jews*, when the Destruction of *Jerusalem* was long since past. And whatever Slaughter was made of the *Jews* in *Lybia, Smyrna, Alexandria*, and other Places afterwards, could by no Means be called, *the Coming of Christ in the Clouds* by way of Eminence; even though that *Phrase* might be allowed applicable to remarkable *temporal Vengeance*, inflicted by the Providence, and in the Cause, of *Christ*.

(d) *All the Tribes of the Earth shall mourn because of him.*] In this *Vers*e, is prefixed the *great Moral*, which the whole Book is designed to illustrate; *namely*, that though there should be great Opposition made against the Cause and Kingdom of *Christ*; yet it should be utterly in vain; and his Kingdom should triumph in the most illustrious Manner; so that all who had opposed it, should have the greatest Reason

to

Sect. I.  
Rev. I. 7.

by which, instead of prevailing in the least against him, they have only effected their own Destruction. "Yea, Lord, we repeat our joyful Assent: Amen: Come, Lord Jesus, in the Clouds of Heaven; take to thyself thy great Power and reign; thy People shall lift up their Heads with Joy and Triumph, being infallibly assured, that their compleat Redemption is approaching." And to confirm their Faith and Hope, let them hear him speaking, as it were, by his own majestick Voice from Heaven, and saying, *I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End: I was before all Worlds, and shall continue the same, when all the Revolutions of this World are over, and the final Scenes relating to it shall be concluded. I am the First and the Last; I am he, saith the Lord Jehovah, who is, and who was, and who is to come, the eternal, the unchangeable, the Almighty (e) Author, Supporter, and Disposer of all Things.*

8

8 I am Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the Ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.

to mourn. And as this Series of Divine Prophecy begins, so it ends with this Sentiment, and with the joyful Consent of his faithful Servants to this glorious Truth, which should fill the Enemies of Christ with such Terror and Dismay. Compare Chap. xxii. 20.

(e) *I am the Alpha, &c.*] This has been interpreted by many as spoken by the Father; but it will be very difficult to give sufficient Proof of it. Most of the Phrases, which are here used concerning this glorious Person, are afterwards used concerning our Lord Jesus Christ; and *πρωτογενής*, though in ecclesiastical Writers of the earliest Ages, generally, so far as I can find, appropriated to the Father, may, according to the Syriack Version, be rendered, *He who holds*, that is, superintends, supports, and governs all; and then it is applied to Christ, Col. i. 17. Heb. i. 3. But if after all the Words should be understood, as spoken by the Father, our Lord's applying so many of these Titles afterwards to himself, plainly proves his partaking with the Father in the Glory peculiar to the Divine Nature, and incommunicable to any Creature. See Bishop Pearson on the Creed, pag. 175.—Dr. Clark contends that the Word *πρωτογενής* is peculiar to the Father; (Compare Clark on the Trinity, Num. 414. and Posth. Sermon. Vol. i. pag. 70.) yet he intimates, that Christ may have the Title of Alpha and Omega, as Author and Finisher of our Faith, Beginner and Completer of our Salvation. Heb. xii. 2.

IMPROVE-

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Sect. 1. **W**ITH what Sublimity doth this *wonderful Book* open! which, though pregnant with inexplicable *Mysteries*, is, at the same Time, pregnant with *Instruction*; which the weakest of *Christ's* humble Disciples may peruse with sacred Complacency and Delight. For surely we are not to imagine that divine *Book* to be unfit for our Perusal, and undeserving our Regard, concerning which its divine *Author* expressly declares, *Blessed is he that readeth, and they that bear the Words of this Prophecy!* Thanks be to our heavenly Father, that he gave it to his Son *Jesus Christ*. Thanks to the Son of GOD, that he gave it to his *Servant John*, to be transmitted down to future Generations.

Ver. 3.

Ver. 1.

Ver. 4.

Ver. 5.

Ver. 8.

Ver. 5.

Ver. 7.

Let us attentively view the *divine Glory* of the Father, and of his *only begotten Son*, who is the *Brightness of that Glory*, and the *express Image of his Person*; and of the *Holy Ghost*, who is here represented by the *seven Spirits, before the Throne*. From us, and from all created Nature, let there be *Glory to him that is, and that was, and that is to come*, and to the *first-born from the Dead*, who is *superior to all the Kings of the Earth*, and to all the *Angels of Heaven*, who is so intimately united with the Father in divine Perfections and Glories, that he also is the *Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End*; that he also is *Almighty*; able by his mighty Power to *subdue all Things to himself*; and is the same *Yesterday, To-day, and for ever*. Never let us be unmindful of the *Condescension of the Son of GOD*, in becoming for our Redemption and Salvation the *Son of Man*. Let the great Things he has done for us, the great Things he has taught us to expect from him, be ever familiar to our Minds. How astonishing was that *Love*, which engaged him to *wash us from our Sins in his own Blood!* How glorious is that *Exaltation* to which he is raising us! rendering us, even in the present World, *Kings and Priests to GOD*, and inspiring us with the ardent Hope of an immutable Kingdom, and an everlasting Priesthood in the Temple of our God above. This is the sublime and transcendent Happiness of all who with lively Faith *look for that blessed Hope, and the glorious Appearance of the great GOD, and our Saviour Jesus Christ*. This illustrious Personage is *coming in the Clouds*, and our Eyes shall *see him*: Too often already have we *pierced* him; let us now look up to him with a humble and lively Faith; let us *mourn* over our Sins at present, that we may not pour

pour forth Floods of unprofitable Tears in that awful Day ; as all the Tribes of the Earth shall do, who have dared to set themselves against the Kingdom of Christ ; a Kingdom which shall then be triumphant over all Opposition ; the last of its Enemies being vanquished and destroyed.

Sect. 1.

S E C T. II.

St. John gives an Account of the Circumstances and Manner of our Lord's Appearance to him, when he received the Revelation in Patmos. Rev. I. 9,—16.

REVELATION I. 9.

I John, who also am your Brother, and Companion in Tribulation, and in the Kingdom and Patience of Jesus Christ, was in the Isle that is called Patmos, for the

REVELATION I. 9.

I JOHN, who was formerly distinguished by the Name of the Disciple whom Jesus loved (a), who am also your Brother, O ye Christians, and who have the Honour to be a Partaker with you all in the Tribulation, and in the Kingdom and Patience of Jesus Christ ; with all, I say, who are called to the Hope of his Kingdom, and in the patient Expectation of that, endure with Cheerfulness the Afflictions, which his infinite Wisdom is pleased to appoint us : I was in the Desert and disconsolate Island of the Ægean Sea, called Patmos (b), to which I was banished by Domitian the Emperor, for the

Sect. 2.  
Rev. I. 9.

(a) I John the Disciple whom Jesus loved.] So I boldly paraphrase these Words, trusting to the general Tradition of the Church upon this Head, of which I have taken Notice in the Introduction ; and I think, there is some Similarity in the Phraseology, here and in the Gospel of St. John, though I am sensible at the same Time, there is a greater Elevation of Stile in some Parts of this Book, than is to be found in the other Writings of this Apostle : Which is not to be wondered at, considering the extraordinary Nature of the Scenes he records ; which had a very natural Tendency to raise the Stile, and perhaps might have elevated it in any future Writings, in Consequence of the wonderful and sublime Ideas, which now passed through his Mind.

(b) Island called Patmos.] Ecclesiastical History tells us, that St. John was here employed in digging in a Mine, being banished hither by Domitian the Emperor, after he had come unhurt out of a Chaldron of boiling Oil. But the historical Evidence produced for this great Event, is very uncertain.

Sect. 2. *the Sake of the Word of GOD, manifested* the Word of God, and for  
 in the Gospel, *and for the Testimony of Jesus* the Testimony of Jesus  
 Rev. I. 9. *Christ, which I had endeavoured faithfully* Christ.

10 *to maintain. I was on a sudden in the* 10 I was in the Spirit on  
*Spirit, under his miraculous Energy, on that* the Lords Day, and heard  
 blessed Day which we Christians are accus- behind me a great Voice, as  
 tomed to call *the Lords-Day (c), the first Day* of a trumpet,

11 *of the Week, which our dear Redeemer has*  
 rendered sacred and venerable, by his Re-  
 surrection from the Dead on the Morning of  
 it; *and though I was then incapable of*  
 joining in any worshipping Assembly, the want  
 of that Privilege was amply made up, by that  
 Manifestation with which the Lord of the  
 Day was pleased to favour me; for I heard  
 a great Voice behind me, as loud as the Sound  
 of a Trumpet, *Which said in distinct and*  
 articulate Accents, *I, who am going to ap-*  
 pear to thee, O John, *am the Alpha and the*  
 Omega (d), *the first and the last; I boast di-*  
 vine Perfections and Glories, and assume  
 without Robbery and Usurpation, the pecu-  
 liar Titles and Prerogatives of the one eter-  
 nal, infinite, and unchangeable Jehovah;  
 and I am now descended from Heaven, to  
 give thee a Revelation of the most astonishing  
 and important Events. *And, as even the re-*  
 motest Ages are concerned in *what thou seest,*  
*write an exact Account of it in a Book, and*  
*send*

11 Saying, I am Alpha  
 and Omega, the first and  
 the last: and, What thou  
 seest, write in a Book, and  
 send

(c) *In the Spirit on the Lord's-Day.*] It is so very unnatural, and contrary to the Use of the *Word* in all other Authors, to interpret this of the *Jewish Sabbath*, as *Mr. Baxter* justly argues at large, (see his *Works, Vol. 3. pag. 798.*) that I cannot but conclude, with him, and the Generality of *Christian Writers* on this Subject, that this Text strongly infers the *extraordinary* Regard paid to the *first Day of the Week* in the *Apostle's* Time, as a Day solemnly consecrated to *Christ*, in Memory of his Resurrection from the Dead.

(d) *I am Alpha and Omega.*] That these Titles should be repeated so soon, in a Connection which demonstrates they are given to *Christ*, will appear very remarkable, whatever Sense be given to the *eighth Verse*. The Argument drawn, in the *preceding Note* upon it, would have been strong, wherever such a Passage as this had been found; but it's immediate Connection with this, greatly strengthens it. And I cannot forbear recording it, that *this Text* has done more than any other in the Bible, towards preventing me from giving into *that Scheme*, which would make our *Lord Jesus Christ* no more than a *deified Creature*.

(e) *Seven*

send it unto the seven Churches which are in Asia; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea.

12 And I turned to see the Voice that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden Candlesticks;

13 And in the midst of the seven candlesticks, one like unto the Son of Man, clothed with a Garment down to the Foot, and girt about the Paps with a golden Girdle.

send Copies of [it] to the seven Churches in Sect. 2. Asia (e), to Ephesus, and to Smyrna, and to Pergamos, and to Thyatira, and to Sardis, and to Philadelphia, and to Laodicea, that each may receive its own Lesson, and at the same Time, enjoy the Benefit of those which are intended for all the rest. And 12

I turned to see the Person who uttered that wonderful Voice which spake unto me; and being thus turned, I saw an astonishing Scene, the Particulars of which I shall now relate: There were seven golden Lamps on their Stands, which gave a bright and beautiful Flame; And in the midst of the seven golden Lamps, there was [one] in a human Form, a glorious and majestic Person, like him who appeared to Daniel under the Title of the Son of Man, and in whom I traced the Lineaments of that blessed Redeemer, whom I had so long known under that endearing Name and Character: He appeared clothed in a long Robe, not unlike the Priestly Vestment, and like Persons of that holy Order, girted, not about the Middle, but something higher, about the Breasts, with a golden Girdle (f), which being properly fastened 13

(e) Seven Churches in Asia.] I presume not to enquire, Whether these were the only Asiatic Churches. To be sure they were the Principal. Nor will I enquire, why the Epistles were appropriated to the Churches of that Province. It is certain they contain many Things of universal Concern; and as there is plainly an Intention, to represent the Regard of Christ to Ministers, and Churches, by his walking among golden Candlesticks, and holding Stars in his right Hand, the Number Seven may be mentioned, as it seems best to harmonize with some other Parts of this Book, namely, with the seven Seals, seven Trumpets, seven Vials, seven Thunders, and seven Spirits before the Throne.

(f) A golden Girdle.] These Girdles were a kind of Sash, which first went over the Neck like a Tippet, were crossed on the Breast, and then went round the lower Part of the Breast, two or three Times, like a modern Circingle, and then they fell down almost to the Feet. And as they were sometimes embroidered, and sometimes fringed with Gold, they must make a very ornamental Part of Dress. The Priests were required, for Coolness and Decency, to wear linnen Garments, and gird themselves higher than others. Compare Ezek. xlv. 17, 18. And this is one of the many Allusions to the Temple, and its Forms and Customs, with which we shall find this Book so greatly to abound. Compare Exod. xxxix. 5.

Sect. 2. ened there, hung down to his Feet. And  
 his Head, even [his] Hairs which adorned it,  
 Rev. I. 14. and flowed round his Shoulders, [were] white  
 as Wool, or to speak more properly, as white  
 as Snow; (Dan. vii. 9) and his Eyes [were]  
 vivid and piercing as a Flame of Fire;  
 15 And his Feet were resplendent like fine Brass,  
 when purified in a Furnace from all its  
 Dross, and polished by the Hands of some  
 skilful Artificer; and his Voice was loud as  
 the Voice of many Waters, so that I imagined  
 it might have been heard as far as the found-  
 ing Noise of the Billows of the Sea, when  
 they beat against the rocky Shores; And  
 16 he had in his Right Hand seven luminous and  
 very beautiful Stars, the Motions of which  
 he seemed to direct and govern, at the same  
 Time that he supported them; and out of  
 his Mouth there went a sharp two-edged Sword;  
 or Dagger, capable of piercing and wound-  
 ing every Way; and his Countenance [was]  
 radiant and glorious as the Sun, [when he]  
 shineth in all his meridian Power and Lustre,  
 and beams forth his Rays, vigorous and un-  
 clouded.

14 His Head and his  
 Hairs were white like Wool,  
 as white as Snow; and his  
 eyes were as a Flame of  
 Fire;

15 And his Feet like un-  
 to fine Brass, as if they  
 burned in a Furnace; and  
 his Voice as the Sound of  
 many Waters.

16 And he had in his  
 Right Hand seven Stars:  
 And out of his Mouth went  
 a sharp two-edged Sword:  
 And his Countenance was  
 as the Sun shineth in his  
 Strength.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Ver. 9. **W**HAT unspeakable Happiness can our blessed Redeemer con-  
 fer on his faithful Servants, while suffering in his Cause!  
 How wretched was Cæsar on his imperial Throne, compared  
 with this despised and persecuted Disciple of Christ, in his old  
 Age banished to the desolate Island of Patmos! There his Lord  
 condescended to visit him, opened his Eyes to Prophetick Visions,  
 and diffused around him celestial Glories. May we in no Case  
 be ashamed of the Word of GOD, and the Testimony of Jesus Christ,  
 a Zeal for which was so graciously acknowledged, so gloriously re-  
 warded.

Ver. 10. It was on the Lord's-Day, that the Apostle was in the Spirit: How  
 often has the Spirit of GOD visited his People at that sacred Sea-  
 son, visited them as well in their secret Retirements, as in the pub-  
 lick

lick Assembly; when the Hand of Providence, as in the Instance before us, and not their own Negligence, and Indifference to divine Ordinances, occasioned their Absence from them: Otherwise we might fear that those Raptures of Mind, which in the Contempt of Ordinances some make their Boast and Glory, arise from the Artifices of the great Enemy of Souls, and are to be numbered among the most-dangerous Engines by which he attempts our Ruin.

Let our Souls again bend, in humble Veneration, to him who is the First and the Last, the Alpha and Omega. As if we heard his awful Voice proclaiming himself by these illustrious and divine Titles, let us turn, as it were, to behold him; and by these marvellous Visions in which he manifested himself to St. John, let us endeavour to form some imperfect Ideas of our blessed Lord, and the Magnificence and Glory with which he appears to the Inhabitants of the heavenly Regions. Every Circumstance, not excepting the minutest and most inconsiderable, attending this Appearance of Christ to his beloved Apostle, seems designed to convey some divine Truth, some important Lesson, for the Contemplation and Instruction of future Ages. It was, in general, beyond all Question, intended to impress us with the lowliest Reverence of our glorified Redeemer, that we may pay him our humble and devout Adoration, and thus in some Degree anticipate the Pleasure with which we hope to appear in his immediate Presence above.

Sect. 2.

Ver. 11.

Ver. 12.

V. 13,—16.

---

### S E C T. III.

*Our Lord Jesus Christ addresses himself to the Apostle John, and charges him with an Epistle to each of the seven Asiatick Churches already mentioned; and, in the first Place, with the Epistle to the Church of Ephesus. Rev. I. 17.—II. 7.*

REVELATION I. 17.

REVELATION I. 17.

AND when I saw him, I fell

I HAVE just been describing the Appearance of Jesus Christ to me, with which I was favoured on the Lord's-Day, in the Island of Patmos, while I was engaged in such devout Sentiments as were suitable to the



Sect. 3.

Rev. I. 17.

the Time and Occasion : *And I now add, that when I saw him in this awful, this glorious and resplendent Form, I was perfectly overwhelmed with the Majesty of his Appearance, so that I fell down at his Feet, as dead ; and he immediately condescended to raise me up, with great Indulgence ; for he laid his Right Hand upon me, [and] said to me, Fear not, John, for I appear to thee for Purposes of Mercy ; I am, indeed, as I have proclaimed myself, the First, and the Last, possessed of divine Perfections and*  
 18 *Glories ; And yet I still wear the human Form, which I assumed for the Redemption of human and fallen Creatures, like thyself ; I [am] he who lives, and have Life immortal, and Glory immutable in myself, though I was once dead, as thou knowest ; and now behold it both with Joy and Wonder, I am living for ever and ever : (Amen (a) : Be it so then, O Lord ; mayest thou for ever live and reign !)* *And he added, I have the Keys of the unseen World (b), and of Death ; I have a supream Dominion over it, and remove the Souls of Men from World to World, calling them out of the Body, and fixing them in the invifible State, according*

fell at his Feet as dead ; and he laid his Right Hand upon me ; saying unto me, Fear not ; I am the First and the Last :

18 *I am he that liveth, and was dead ; and behold, I am alive for evermore : Amen ; and have the Keys of Hell and of Death.*

(a) *Amen.*] As this Word appears to have additional Force, if understood as expressing the joyful Assent of John to what was delivered, I have inclosed it and the Paraphrase upon it in a Parenthesis.

(b) *Unseen World.*] It must be allowed, that *adns* sometimes signifies *the Grave*, when the *Body* only is spoken of. But, as *Mr. Howe* has largely proved in his excellent Discourse on this *Text*, the Interpretation I have here given, is most reasonable. That which would refer it to *Hell*, as the Seat of the *damned*, limits the Sense in a Manner very derogatory from the Honour of our blessed Redeemer, as he there shews unanswerably. *Howe's Works, Vol. ii. pag. 61, &c.* According to *Grotius*, (see his Note on *Matt. xvi. 18.*) the Word, *Hades*, always denotes either *Death*, or *the State after Death* ; and they who are of Opinion, that *Luke. xvi. 23.* is an Exception, may consult this learned Author's judicious *Notes* on the Place. Our *English*, or rather *Saxon* Word, *Hell*, in its original Signification, (though it is now understood in a more limited Sense,) exactly answers to the *Greek* Word, *Hades*, and denotes a *concealed*, or *unseen* Place ; and this Sense of the Word is still retained in the *Eastern*, and especially, in the *Western* Counties of *England* ; to *helle* over a Thing, is to *cover* it. See *Lord King's History of the Creed, Chap. iv.*

(c) *Respective.*

19. Write the Things which thou hast seen, and the Things which are, and the Things which shall be hereafter,

20 The Mystery of the seven Stars which thou sawest in my Right Hand, and the seven golden Candlesticks. The seven Stars are the Angels of the seven Churches: and the seven Candlesticks which thou sawest, are the seven Churches.

Chap. II. 1. Unto the Angel of the Church of Ephesus, write, These Things saith he that holdeth the seven Stars in his Right Hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden Candlesticks;

according to my Pleasure, till at length I shall exert my Power of raising the Dead. Sect. 3.  
*Write therefore the Things which thou now seeest, and those which will be opened to thy View, in which there will be, in Part, a Reference to the Things which already are, and a further Reference to the Things which shall hereafter be.*

And, as a general Key to what I am now going to dictate, observe, that as to the Mystery of the seven Stars, which thou here seeest as in my Right Hand, and of the seven Lamps which are of Gold; the seven Stars are an emblematical Representation of the Angels, or presiding Ministers, of the seven Churches; and the seven Lamps which thou seeest, are a Representation of the seven Churches themselves, to which I have directed thee to inscribe and transmit the important Epistles, I am now about to dictate, according to what I observe of their respective Circumstances and Necessities (c).

And in the first Place, address to the Angel, or presiding Officer (d), of the Church at Ephesus, and write thus, *These Things saith he, who holdeth the seven Stars in his Right Hand, to signify that he is the great Support of his ministering Servants, and directs their several Situations and Motions in the Churches; and who walks in the midst of the seven golden Lamps; to intimate thereby his*

(c) Respective Circumstances and Necessities.] How exactly the Address in each Epistle, suits the State of the Church to which it was sent, and what Condescension is implied in our Saviour's giving them these distinct Notices and Admonitions; is in some Measure, though very imperfectly, illustrated in my *ten Sermons on the Power and Grace of Christ*. See *Serm. vii. pag. 182,—184.*

(d) To the Angel, or presiding Officer.] That there was one Pastor, who presided in each of these Churches, is indeed evident from the Expression here used; but that he was a Diocesan Bishop, or had several Congregations of Christians under his Care, can by no Means be proved. Nor is there the least Hint of it, that I know of, in any of these Epistles. Many have shewn from antient Jewish Writings, that there was an Officer of the Synagogue who had the Name of Angel. See *Vitring. de Synag. Vet. Lib. 3. P. ii. C. 3.* And *Dr. Lightfoot* adds, that from his Office of overlooking the Reader of the Law, he was called  $\eta\gamma\gamma$ , or *Episcopus*. Compare *Mal. ii. 7.*

(e) Canst

Sect. 3. his Presence among Christian Societies, and  
 Rev. II. 2. his particular Inspection over them. My  
 Eyes have been carefully fixed upon thee,  
 and I have observed many Things in thy  
 Conduct with Pleasure. *I know thy Works,*  
*and thy Labour, and thy Patience,* with  
 which thou hast endured the Trials and Suf-  
 ferings, to which thou hast been called out ;  
 and I know thou hast such a Zeal for the  
 Honour of my Gospel, and Establishment  
 of my Kingdom, *that thou canst not bear*  
*those who are evil (e).* And, as false Preten-  
 sions to a divine Mission and Inspiration are so  
 common, I know *thou hast tried those, who say*  
*they are Apostles, and are not, and hast found*  
*them [to be] Liars,* and rejected their Preten-  
 sions with a becoming Disdain. And I know  
 3 *thou hast sustained,* with exemplary Fortitude,  
 the Trouble they have given thee ; *and hast*  
 exercised invincible *Patience* under all thy  
 Sufferings and Trials in my Cause ; *and thou*  
*hast laboured* constantly and tenaciously for  
 my Name's sake, and to establish the Faith  
 of my People ; *and hast not fainted* under thy  
 4 Toils or Tribulations. *Nevertheless, I*  
*have [something] to alledge against thee,* ex-  
 traordinary as thou art in many Respects ;  
 and it is this, *That thou hast lost* the Zeal and  
 Fervour of *thy first Love (f)* to me and my  
 Cause ;

2 I know thy Works,  
 and thy Labour, and thy  
 Patience, and how thou  
 canst not bear them which  
 are evil: and thou hast tried  
 them which say they are  
 Apostles, and are not; and  
 hast found them Liars :

3 And hast borne, and  
 hast Patience, and for my  
 Names sake hast laboured,  
 and hast not fainted.

4 Nevertheless, I have  
 somewhat against thee, be-  
 cause thou hast left thy first  
 Love.

(e) *Canst not bear those who are evil.*] This has been pleaded by Lord Barrington, as an Argument that the Church of Ephesus, in the early Days of Christianity, recovered itself from those Corruptions which some endeavoured to bring into it; (2 Tim. i. 15. ii. 17,—26. iii. 6,—10.) and which St. Paul, in his first Epistle to Timothy, endeavoured, it seems, with some happy Success, to prevent. Misc. Sac. Vol. i. pag. xlii. Limborch has sufficiently shewn, (see his Theol. Lib. v. Cap. 37. §. 19.) the Absurdity of opposing such a Text as this to the great Christian Doctrine of Toleration, which some have madly endeavoured to prejudice by trifling Inferences from such detach'd and perverted Clauses, in Opposition to the Tenor of the whole New Testament. But the pretending to enforce such ecclesiastical Censures, as the Laws of Christ do indeed in some Cases require, with those secular Terrors which the Magistracy, by Virtue of his Office, is to inflict on Immoralities prejudicial to Society, has been the Destruction of Christian Discipline, in Popish Countries universally, and generally in all Protestant Establishments too.

(f) *Lost thy first Love.*] It is very plain, that these Epistles, though inscribed to the  
 Angels

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first Works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy Candlestick out of his Place, except thou repent.

6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the Deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.

7 He that hath an Ear, let

Cause; and this cannot but be very displeasing to me.

*Remember therefore from what thou art fallen; recall those better Days to thy Memory, and in the View of them set thyself seriously to repent of the Decay which hath so much prevailed; and do the first Works, or rather endeavour to exceed them. Otherwise thou must expect, that I will come unto thee quickly, in some awful Dispensations of Providence, and take away thy Lamp out of its Place, unless thou repent (g); no longer shalt thou continue to be a Church, if thou dost not endeavour to recover thy lost Ground, and to shine at least with thy former Lustre. Nevertheless, thou hast this*

*Honour and Praise remaining, that thou hatest the impure Works of the lewd Nicolaitans (h), which I also hate, as having brought so great a Reproach upon the Christian Name: To conclude; Let him that hath an Ear, hear what*

Sect. 3.

Rev. II. 5.

6

7

*Angels or Pastors of the Churches, are directed to the Churches themselves, as represented by them. Just as the Jewish Church was represented by Joshua, their High-Priest, Zech. iii. 1. But it is not improbable, that where some of the Churches are blamed, there might be in their Ministers some Faults correspondent to those charged upon the Society; and particularly, that the Zeal of this Minister of Ephesus might be declining. There is, I think, no Reason to be anxious with Regard to Timothy's Character on this Account; for it can never be proved that he was a stated Pastor of the Church of Ephesus, though such confident Things have been said concerning it on very slender Foundations.*

*(g) Take away thy Lamp out of its Place.] As this Threatning is addressed to the Church of Ephesus, tho' much better than some other Churches; it is reasonable to believe, that it, like other Denunciations, was intended to awaken the rest. It intimates, how terrible a Thing it would be to have the Gospel taken away from them. And indeed it has been executed upon them all, in a very awful Manner. For though there be a little Congregation, if I remember right, at Smyrna; yet most of these Churches are quite ruined, and with them the Cities in which they stood, though they were once very celebrated. And it is hardly possible, even for one who is not a Christian, to view the Account which Sir Paul Ricaut, and the learned and ingenious Mr. Smith, have given of them, without being tenderly affected with so lamentable a Catastrophe.*

*(h) Nicolaitans.] Some have thought these Hereticks derived their Name from Nicolas, one of the seven Deacons; and some antient Writers have asserted it. But the Name was so common among the Jews, that little Argument can be drawn from thence. See Eus. Eccl. Hist. L. iii. C. 26. The Substance of what antient Writers say concerning them is, that they taught the Lawfulness of Lewdness and idolatrous Sacrifices, esteeming them Things indifferent in their own Nature; and their Practices were suitable to such Principles. Compare ver. 14, 15.*

Sect. 3. *what the Spirit saith to all the Churches for*  
 their Encouragement; and to that of Ephe-  
 Rev. II. 7. *sus in particular: To him, who conquers the*  
 Enemies, which lie in the Way of his Duty  
 and Happiness, and manfully breaks thro'  
 all Opposition, *I will give to eat of the Tree*  
*of Life, which is in the midst of the Paradise*  
*of God; the Fruit of which gives Immor-*  
 tality; and it is situated in the Paradise above;  
 so that he who resides within its Reach, is  
 possessed of such Felicities and Delights as  
 are far superior to those, which Adam en-  
 joyed in an earthly Paradise, though in a  
 State of uncorrupted and perfect Innocence.

let him hear what the Spirit  
 saith unto the Churches, To  
 him that overcometh will I  
 give to eat of the Tree of  
 Life, which is in the midst  
 of the Paradise of God.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

WITH whatever humble and holy Reverence this awful Re-  
 presentation of our *blest Redeemer* may strike us, let us be en-  
 couraged to look up to him by a lively Faith, and to hear with Joy,  
 and with Purposes of the most grateful Obedience, the gracious Decla-  
 ration he makes of that amazing *Contrast* of divine Perfections and Cha-  
 racters, and of human Weakness and Infirmities, which met in him.  
 Chap. i. 17, *The Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last, is he who lives and*  
 18. *yet was dead, but is now alive for evermore: For us he became li-*  
 able to Death, but is now risen to a divine and immortal Life; in  
 which Consideration let us continually rejoice, on his Account, and  
 on our own, It is exceedingly reviving to the Heart of a sincere  
*Christian*, that *Jesus* has the *Keys of the unseen World, and of Death*;  
 so that whenever we are removed by the Stroke of this our last Ene-  
 my, it is only to be considered as his turning the *Key* which will let  
 us out of this World, into another, of Happiness and Glory ever-  
 lasting. How delightful to reflect that *Heaven* is under the Com-  
 mand of our Redeemer, and *Hell* is under his Controul! What  
 have his faithful Servants to fear from *the one*? What have they  
 not to hope from *the other*? How does this chearing Sentiment dis-  
 arm both *Life*, and *Death*, of their respective Terrors!

Let us attend to each of these excellent *Epistles*, which *Christ* con-  
 descended himself to dictate, and to address by the Hand of his *Ser-*  
*vant John*, to these *Asiatick Churches*. Let us attend to his *Titles*,  
 his *Admonitions*, his *Promises*, that we may be awed with holy Re-  
 verence,

verence, that we may be animated to humble Hope, and steady Sect. 3.  
 Courage, in every Encounter with the Enemies of our Salvation.

Let the *Ministers of Christ* rejoice, that they are as *Stars in the* Chap. II. 1.  
*Right Hand* of their Redeemer. “Support them, O Lord, by thy  
 “Almighty Power, and guide all their Motions by thine infinite  
 “Wisdom.” Let all the *Churches of Christ* remember, that he  
*walks in the midst of the golden Candlesticks*: May they be *pure Gold*;  
 may their Lamps *shine* with unfulfilled Lustre; that their Father may  
 be glorified, and their Saviour delighted with the Survey.

He *sees our Labour, our Patience, our Fidelity, and our Zeal.* Ver. 2, 3.  
 May he see that we *cannot bear* those who would corrupt our Re-  
 ligion, without exerting ourselves to silence their false Pretensions,  
 and to guard the *Churches*, to which we are related especially, from Ver. 6.  
 the *Venom* they might diffuse over them! In all these Respects,  
 may we daily approve ourselves to him in a more perfect Manner.  
 But, *alas!* does he not perceive in many of us, what he complained  
 so early of, in the Church of *Ephesus*; that we have *lost our first* Ver. 4.  
*Love*, and that much of that Zeal with which we set out in Religion  
 is declined? If so, let us take the Alarm: For dreadful indeed  
 would it be, to have our *Candlestick removed out of its Place*; to have Ver. 5.  
 the Gospel and all its Privileges taken away from us. To prevent  
 this awful Judgment, let us *recollect from whence we are fallen*, if  
 we are indeed in a backsliding and declining State; and humbly and  
 heartily *repent*, and vigorously exert ourselves against the Enemies of  
 our Salvation: That *overcoming* the Difficulties of this howling  
 Wilderness, we may be received to the Enjoyments of the hea- Ver. 7.  
 venly Country; and when we can no longer share in the Bounties  
 of Providence in this inferior State, be feasted with the Fruit of the  
*Tree of Life, which is in the midst of the Paradise of GOD.*

## S E C T. IV.

*The Epistles which Christ orders St. John to write to the Churches of Smyrna and Pergamos. Rev. II. 8,—17.*

## REVELATION II. 8.

Sect. 4. *AND to the Angel, or Minister, of the Church of Smyrna, write, These Things saith the First and the Last; that glorious and divine Person, who having assumed the human nature into a Union with Deity, is able to say, he was dead and is alive; who therefore demands by all Considerations of Reverence, Gratitude, and Love, thy most attentive Audience, and most obedient Regard: I know thy Works to have been in many Respects very extraordinary; and I am well acquainted with thy Tribulation and Poverty (a), with the humble Opinion thou hast of thyself; but I know also that thou art rich in Faith, and in all its genuine Effects, and art daily laying up for thyself an increasing Treasure in Heaven. And [I also know] the Blasphemy of those, who say they are Jews, and are not (b), but while they boast their Relation to the Synagogue of Moses, [are] indeed the Synagogue of Satan, whose*

## REVELATION II. 8.

AND unto the Angel of the Church in Smyrna, write, These Things saith the First and the Last, which was dead, and is alive;

I know thy Works, and Tribulation, and Poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the Blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the Synagogue of Satan.

(a) *And Poverty.*] Archbishop Wake supposes, this refers to the extraordinary Character of Polycarp, Bishop of Smyrna; who had, as ecclesiastical History tells us, reduced himself to a voluntary Poverty, as many of the primitive Bishops did, by selling his Estate, and distributing it to the Poor. But I much question, whether the Personal Character of the Bishop, or Pastor, of these Churches, be referred to in this Address; and the very next Verse seems to demonstrate it is not. Compare also ver. 5.

(b) *Say they are Jews, and are not.*] There were great Numbers of Jews in the proconsular Asia; and their Inveteracy against the Gospel there, and elsewhere, is well known. This is an Instance, in which the Word *Jew* signifies one of God's peculiar People; and it is not improbable, that many prophetick Phrases, in which Jewish Rites are mentioned, are to be interpreted with as great a Latitude; that is, for those Rites of Worship which God's peculiar People should use.

(c) *Cast*

r 10 Fear none of those Things which thou shalt suffer; behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have Tribulation ten Days: be thou faithful unto Death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

whose Temper they breathe in their Opposition to my Gospel, and to my People, while they blasphemously pretend a Zeal for my Name, even in their Impieties. But let all my faithful Servants be encouraged boldly to face their Opposition; and I say to each of them, in addressing to thee, *Fear none of the Things which thou shalt suffer*; for, *Behold*, I inform you, that *the Devil*, acting in and by these Instruments, the Men of his Synagogue, *will* indeed have a Permission to *cast some of you into Prison (c)*; that you may be tried, and by these Trials more remarkably approved; and ye shall have *Tribulation ten Days (d)*; for a certain limited Time, he shall be permitted to afflict you; but bear up courageously against his Assaults, as becomes my valiant Soldiers: *Be thou faithful unto Death (e)*, persevere in thy Attachment to me, and thy Zeal for my Interest, even to the last, though Death in its most terrible Form should assault thee, for thou fightest under a General, who, though thou fall by the Stroke of this last Enemy, can raise thee again; and, instead of losing by thy Fidelity to me, thou shalt be richly rewarded; for *I will give thee a Crown of eternal Life*, and advance thee to such Glory and Felicity, as shall be infinitely more

(c) *Cast some of you into Prison.*] Whether the Power of the *Synagogue* extended so far as to *imprison*, I do not certainly know; to *Scourging* it undoubtedly extended.

(d) *Tribulation ten Days.*] *Mr. Fleming*, (*of the Resurrection*, pag. 129.) with many others, thinks this refers to the Persecution under *Domitian*, which continued about *ten Years*, and was begun when *John* was banished into *Patmos*, and saw these *Revelations*. But it may only signify a short and limited Time. Compare *Gen. xxxi. 7. 1 Sam. i. 8. Eccl. vii. 19. Dan. i. 12. Zach. viii. 23.*

(e) *Be thou faithful unto Death, &c.*] I have endeavoured at large to illustrate the great Force of this noble Text in my *Funeral Sermon* for that illustrious *Christian Hero*, *Colonel Gardiner*; whose Name I could not forbear recording here; and the *Memoirs* of whose *Life*, which from the most intimate Knowledge of him I have written, will, I hope, promote the Admiration, Love, and Imitation of all who peruse them.

(f) *Anti-*



Sect. 4. more than an Equivalent for the utmost thou  
 canst possibly suffer in my Cause. *He*  
 Rev. II. 11. *that hath an Ear to hear, let him be all At-*  
*tention to hear what the Spirit saith unto the*  
*Churches: The valiant Conqueror shall be se-*  
*cured from Evils, which are beyond all*  
*Comparison greater, than any he can endure*  
*on Earth. In this World, he may indeed*  
*encounter the first Death for my Sake; but*  
*he shall not be injured hereafter by the Se-*  
*cond; he shall rest in everlasting Security*  
*and Peace, while those who desert and re-*  
*nounce their Duty for the preservation of*  
*this transitory Life, shall be consigned to*  
*that State of Misery, where they shall seek*  
*Death, but it shall for ever flee from them.*

12 *And to the Angel, or Minister, of the*  
*Church, which [is] in Pergamos, write, These*  
*Things saith he, who in Token of the pen-*  
*etrating and efficacious Nature of his Word,*  
*is represented as one who has the sharp two-*  
*edged Sword coming out of his Mouth; even*  
*that Word, which is quick and powerful,*  
*and sharper than any two-edged Sword.*  
 13 *I know thy Works, and thy Circumstances,*  
*in every Respect; and particularly, where*  
*thou dwellest; [even] where the Throne of Sa-*  
*tan [is] fixed, in the midst of Superstition,*  
*and in the midst of Persecution, by the*  
*Union of which the Kingdom of Darkñess*  
*is supported; and thou holdest fast the Ho-*  
*nour of my Name, and hast not denied and*  
*renounced my faith, even in those Days of*  
*extream Difficulty and Danger, in which*  
*Antipas [was] my faithful Martyr (f), and*  
*sealed*

11 He that hath an Ear,  
 let him hear what the Spirit  
 saith unto the Churches, He  
 that overcometh, shall not  
 be hurt of the second Death.

12 And to the Angel of  
 the Church in Pergamos,  
 write, These Things saith  
 he, which hath the sharp  
 Sword with two Edges;

13 I know thy Works,  
 and where thou dwellest,  
 even where Satans Seat is:  
 and thou holdest fast my  
 Name, and hast not denied  
 my Faith, even in those  
 Days wherein Antipas was  
 my faithful Martyr, who  
 was

(f) *Antipas my faithful Martyr.*] *Ecclesiastical History* has not informed us who  
 this *Antipas* was. Perhaps he was some zealous *Minister*, who died for the Faith he  
 had preached; or some private Christian of *obscure* Birth, Rank, and Circumstan-  
 ces, enabled by enduring *Martyrdom* in the Christian Cause. But we may be sure,  
 that such condescending Notice taken of him by his divine Master, who mentions his  
 Name with Affection and Regard, would be, instead of a thousand Arguments, to ani-  
 mate

was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.

sealed his Fidelity to me with his Blood; even that dear and resolute Christian, *who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth,* and seems to take up his Residence, as might be inferred from the Enormities which are continually practising there. *Nevertheless, I have a few Things to alledge against thee, that thou hast there, them,* who remain uncondemned in your Societies, *who hold what is, in Effect, the detestable Doctrine of that infamous Balaam, who taught Balak, King of Moab, to cast a Stumbling-Block before the Children of Israel,* by which they fell into Sin and Ruin; encouraging and seducing them *to eat Things sacrificed unto Idols, and to commit Fornication.* These Practises are tolerated by some among you; whom therefore it becomes you to search out, and to treat with due Severity; for *thou in like Manner hast those that hold the Doctrine of the accursed Balaamites, or wicked Nicolaitans (g), which I hate.* Repent

Sect. 4.  
Rev. II. 13.

14 But I have a few Things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the Doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balak to cast a Stumbling-Block before the Children of Israel, to eat Things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit Fornication.

14

15 So hast thou also them that hold the Doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which Thing I hate.

15

mate the Courage and Fidelity of *other Christians*, who might be called out to the like Extremities.

(g) Balaamites, or Nicolaitans.] As *Balaam* has the same Signification in *Hebrew*, which *Nicolaus* has in *Greek*, and both signify *Conquerors of the People*, (which Name might probably be given to the celebrated *Balaam*, on Account of the great Influence which he had in the Place where he lived;) it seems not improbable, that the *Doctrine of Balaam*, and of the *Nicolaitans*, might be the same; (or the latter might be more strenuous in justifying and propagating their Doctrine, and acting upon it.) As if he had said, *Balaam* taught *Balak* to lay a Stumbling-Block before the Children of *Israel*; and *thou hast also them that hold the Doctrine of the Balaamites*. Probably this *Doctrine* might be like that of some *modern* Seducers, that it was lawful to dissemble the *Christian* Faith, and to conform to established Superstition, to prevent Persecution: A *fatal Error*, which tends most effectually to overthrow *Christianity*; the Existence of which, in these later Ages, is owing to the contrary Doctrine and Practice. And I greatly fear, that Millions of Souls are continually sacrificed to it, especially in *France*, and other Countries, in which *Protestant* Churches were once planted, but are now overthrown. Nor can it be hoped, that the *reformed* Interest will ever revive, 'till a few of its Professors at least, have the Courage to die for the Truth, and scatter their Blood as the *Seed of the Church*. An anonymous Writer (in the *Memoirs of Liter. Vol. 5. pag. 258.*) thinks, that by *Balaamites*, or *Nicolaitans*, (which he also supposes the same,) we are, in general, to understand *lewd and profligate Persons*, who aim at nothing but their own *secular* Advantage, and pleads in Favour of his Opinion *ver. 20. iii. 9. viii. 11. ix. 11. xi. 8.* in all which Places

Sect. 4. *Repent* therefore of these Irregularities; or  
 Rev. II. 16. *otherwise*, thou mayest depend upon it, that  
 I will come unto thee quickly in a Way of  
 Chastisement, and I will fight against them  
 with the sharp Sword [that cometh out] of my  
 Mouth; I will pronounce terrible Calami-  
 ties against you, and execute upon you what  
 17 I have threatened in my Word. *He that*  
*hath any Ear* at all, capable of hearing;  
*let him hear* with the greatest Attention;  
*what the Spirit saith to the Churches*: To  
 the Conqueror I will give the Priviledge of  
 being, as it were, admitted into the most  
 holy Place; and there he shall have Liberty  
 to eat of the hidden Manna; and shall be en-  
 tertained with those sacred Pleasures, which  
 God's Sanctuary above affords, and of which  
 the Manna that fell in the Wilderness, and  
 was laid up in a golden Vessel before the  
 Lord, was only an imperfect Type. And I  
 will give him a white Stone (b), in Token of  
 full Absolution from all his Crimes; and in  
 the Stone a new Name written, which no  
 Man knoweth, except he who receiveth it (i);  
 I will

16 Repent; or else I  
 will come unto thee quick-  
 ly, and will fight against  
 them with the Sword of my  
 Mouth.

17 He that hath an Ear,  
 let him hear what the Spirit  
 saith unto the Churches,  
 To him that overcometh  
 will I give to eat of the  
 hidden manna, and will  
 give him a white Stone, and  
 in the Stone a new Name  
 written, which no Man  
 knoweth, saving he that re-  
 ceiveth it.

ees proper Names, are used in such a figurative Manner, to express Characters resembling theirs, whose Names are thus used.

(b) *A white Stone.*] It is well known, that among the Greeks, a white Stone was a Token of Absolution, as a black Stone was of Condemnation; but the Writing a new Name upon this Stone is not, that I know of, illustrated by any antient Practice. And the Connection between the two Ideas seems to be this, That in the great Day, on which the Absolution of Christ's People was to be declared publicly, they were to be admitted into that intimate Converse, and high State of Favour, which is signified by the new Name; which last Circumstance plainly alludes to the Custom of Princes, who give new Names to those whom they have raised to very extraordinary Dignity; of which we have many Instances in the Old Testament; particularly, Gen. xli. 45. 2 Sam. xii. 25. Dan. i. 7. Dr. Goodman thinks this is an Allusion to the Token, or Ticket, given to the Conqueror in the Olympick Games, expressing his Name, and signifying the Reward he was to receive for his Achievements. See his Par. of the Prod. pag. 307.

(i) *No Man knoweth, except he who receiveth it.*] I have sometimes thought, ο λαμβανων, may signify, one that hath received it, as it seems a Name given to any Person, must be known to others, or it would be given in vain; and then it intimates, that Honour shall be conferred on such an one, which shall only be known to the Inhabitants of that World, to which he shall be admitted, and who have already received it. Other-  
 wise, it must refer to a Custom which has sometimes prevailed among Princes, of  
 giving

I will admit him to that Intimacy of sacred Friendship, from whence results a Joy which the Stranger intermeddles not with, and which can be only conceived by those who happily experience it.

Sect. 4.

I M P R O V E M E N T.

**A** GAIN let us direct our Eyes to that glorious Person, who is *the First and the Last*; and who, though it may appear incompatible with that divine Title, was once *dead, and is alive again*: and since he is here awfully represented as with *a sharp Sword going out of his Mouth*, let us be greatly concerned, that we do not incur his Displeasure by our irregular Conduct, lest he smite, or even destroy us. Let us observe and imitate what he commends in the Churches whom he here addresses; their *Humility* in being sensible of their *Poverty*, when enriched by his *Grace*; their *Patience*, their *Diligence*, and the Resolution with which they *retained the Honour of his Name*, notwithstanding the *Throne of Satan* was in the Midst of them, and the Rage of Persecution had destroyed *Antipas* before their Eyes; that blessed, that triumphant Hero, whose *Fidelity* and Constancy his divine Saviour commemorates with Approbation, and even with Satisfaction and Pleasure. Who would not be ambitious of dying in the same Manner, were it ever so severe and terrible, to be thus honoured and celebrated by our Lord *Jesus Christ*, or any of his faithful *Apostles*? Let us not be terrified at the Apprehension of what we may suffer from the Malice of *Satan*, and by his Instruments, even though not merely *Imprisonment*, but *Death* itself were to await us. It is only for a *limited* Time that he can occasion *Tribulation* to any of the People of GOD; and our blessed Lord will never be unmindful of that gracious Promise, *Be thou faithful unto Death, and I will give thee a Crown of Life*. Oh! let us by Faith survey that innumerable Company, who, though they have fallen by the Stroke of the *first Death*, have been, and shall for ever be, *unhurt by the Second*: That blessed Society who are encircled with immortal Crowns, which their triumphant

Ver. 8.

Ver. 12.

Ver. 9.

Ver. 13.

Ver. 10.

Ver. 11.

giving particular Names, expressing *Familiarity* and *Delight*, to distinguished Favourites, by which to call them in the greatest Intimacy of Converse, whether by *Discourse*, or by *Letter*; and which have not been communicated to others, or used by them at other Times. I have hinted at both in the *Paraphrase*, not being able in my own Mind certainly to determine, which is the peculiar and more exact Sense.

- Sect. 4. umphant *Leader*, whom they followed with such undaunted Fortitude, hath bestowed upon them : who, though they partake no longer of the Bread that perisheth, nor are feasted with earthly Viands, are yet *eating of the bidden Manna* : who have received the *white Stone*, in Token of their *Absolution* ; and while the *Names* and Memory of many of them have sunk into Oblivion, and the Honours attending others are of little Consequence, they are known in the heavenly Regions by a *new Name*, conferred as a Mark of Favour and Distinction by the *King of Kings*, and *Lord of Lords*. We are drawing on, if we are true Christians, to the Completion of that blessed Hope. And, that we may not be disappointed, may we, by divine Grace, be preserved from the Artifices of those who call themselves the *People of GOD*, while they are indeed of the *Synagogue of Satan*, and from whatever, like *the Doctrine of Balaam*, would insnare our Consciences, and defile our Souls.
- Ver. 9.
- Ver. 14, 15.

## S E C T. V.

*The Epistles, which Christ charges St. John to write to the Churches of Thyatira and Sardis. Rev. II. 18, to the End. Rev. III. 1,—6.*

## REVELATION II. 18.

Sect. 5. *AND to the Angel, or Christian Minister, of the Church in Thyatira, write, These Things saith the Son of GOD, who hath his Eyes bright, and penetrating as a Flame of Fire, and his Feet shining like fine Brass ; I know and approve thy Works of Piety, which are many, and which, I am well apprized, are the Effects of ardent Love to me ; and I am acquainted with the Service thou art performing for my Cause and Interest, and with thy Faith and thy Patience ; and that, with Respect to thy Works, the last [are] more, greater and better, than the first. Very far art thou from that declining State of Religion, of which I have*

Rev. II. 18.

19

## REVELATION II. 18.

*AND unto the Angel of the Church in Thyatira, write, These Things saith the Son of GOD, who hath his Eyes like unto a Flame of Fire, and his Feet are like fine Brasses ; I know thy Works, and Charity, and Service, and Faith, and thy Patience, and thy Works ; and the last to be more than the first.*

20 Notwithstanding, I have a few Things against thee, because thou sufferest that Woman Jezabel, which calleth herself a Prophetess, to teach and to seduce my Servants to commit Fornication, and to eat Things sacrificed unto Idols.

21 And I gave her Space to repent of her Fornication, and she repented not.

22 Behold, I will cast her into a Bed, and them that commit Adultery with her into great Tribulation, except they repent of their Deeds.

23 And I will kill her Children with Death; and all the Churches shall know that

I have had Reason elsewhere to complain. Sect. 5. *Nevertheless, I have a few Things against thee; and particularly, that thou permittest that Woman Jezabel (a), (for she deserves no better Name, than of that infamous and idolatrous Harlot,) who audaciously and falsely says, that she is a Prophetess, to teach and to seduce my Servants, in order to avoid Persecution, to commit Fornication, and to eat Things sacrificed to Idols (b). And she is the more inexcusable, as I have given her sufficient Time to repent of her Fornication, and she repented not; but continued her enormities with increasing Aggravation. But behold, at length I will execute Judgment upon her. And let the Process of my righteous Vengeance be observed: I am just preparing to cast her into a Bed; and will bring those who commit Fornication with her, who suffer their Consciences to be debauched by such licentious and detestable Principles, into great Tribulation, unless they speedily repent of their wicked Works. And I will slay her Children, those that presume to follow her in her Wickedness, with sudden and inevitable Death; and all the Churches shall know, that though I am very*

Rev. II. 20.

21

22

23

(a) *That Woman Jezabel.*] When the Description of the Followers of Jezabel, in this Verse, is compared with what was before said of the Nicolaitans, (Ver. 14, 15.) the Resemblance appears so great, that I am induced to believe, it is the same Heresy, which is represented under both these Views; namely, the Doctrine of those who taught, it was lawful to dissemble our religious Principles, and occasionally to conform to Superstition and Idolatry, in order to avoid Persecution. And as Jezabel was so infamous an Idolatress, and so great a Mistress of seducing Arts, there was an evident Propriety in such a Representation. 1 Kings xvi. 31. xxi. 25. Some have fancied this was some female Heretick. Dr. Scott thinks it to have been Helena, the Harlot of Simon Magus, the great Ringleader of the unclean Sect of the Gnosticks. (See Scott's Christian Life, Vol. I. pag. 231.) Whether these Words refer to any Woman, who was in the Plot, or only mean to describe a Person of such seducing and dishonest Practices, I cannot determine, though I rather incline to the latter. Compare ver. 15. Note (g).

(b) *Commit Fornication, and eat Things sacrificed to Idols.*] Perhaps both of these might be the same; as it is well known Idolatry is in many Places in the Old Testament, and in several Passages in this Book, represented as Adultery and Fornication.

Sect. 5. very long-suffering with Respect to many Sinners, and am unwilling immediately to come to Extremities; yet I am not to be mocked and trifled with; that my Eyes are indeed as observant, as they are bright and piercing, and *that I am he who searcheth the Reins and the Hearts (c)*. And I will at length approve the Justice of my Proceedings with respect to this Society, as well as all others, and will give to every one of you according to your Works, and according to those Principles from which I know they have proceeded.

Rev. II. 23.

24

But I say to you who are faithful, even to the rest of those that are in Thyatira, As many as do not hold this pernicious Doctrine, and who have not known the Depths of Satan, as they proverbially speak, nor make themselves the Instruments of accomplishing the Designs of his infernal Policy; I will lay upon you no other Burden (d), will not severely reprove you for that Mixture of human Infirmity, which is to be discerned always every where.

25

Nevertheless, what you have received, as of divine Revelation and Command, hold fast till I come, and let nothing prevail upon you to make a Sacrifice of your Regard for me and my Cause, for neither my Ability, nor Inclination, to reward those who are faithful, will ever be diminished.

26

And as for him that conquers, and keeps my Works unto the End, notwithstanding the vigorous Efforts of the Enemies of my Gospel, to wrest

that I am he which searcheth the Reins and Hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your Works.

24 But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, As many as have not this Doctrine, and which have not known the Depths of Satan, as they speak, I will put upon you none other Burden.

25 But that which ye have already, hold fast till I come.

26 And he that overcometh, and keepeth my Works unto the End, to

(c) *I am he who searcheth—the Hearts.*] This Manner of Speaking, is much more remarkable, than if it had only been said, that *I search the Heart*: which Remark answers the Train of Mr. Emlyn's Reasoning against the Argument brought from this Text, to prove Christ's proper Deity.

(d) *No other Burden.*] Lord Barrington imagines this refers to the Gospel Decree addressed to Gentile Profelytes, now abolished with the Jewish Polity. As if it had been said, though *Things strangled*, and *Blood*, were formerly forbidden, as well as *Idolatry* and *Fornication*; yet I will not subject you to this Injunction. Bar. Eff. iv. pag. 20.

(e) *Power*

to him will I give Power over the Nations :

wrest it from him, or induce him to deny it, though he should be ever so much exposed and overborn now, *I will*, at length, *give him* compleat Power and Victory over all the Nations that have combined against my People (e). *And I will raise him* Sect. 5.  
Rev. II. 26.

27 (And he shall rule them with a Rod of Iron : as the Vessels of a Potter shall they be broken to Shivers) even as I received of my Father.

to the Dignity and Glory of sharing with me in my final Triumph ; and *he shall rule them with a Rod of Iron*, and *they shall be at once dashed in Pieces* with it, like a Potter's Vessels : In like Manner, as I have also received the Promise of my Father in that antient Oracle, (Psalm ii. 9.) the Accomplishment of which all my faithful Subjects shall see ; for they shall behold all their Enemies, however numerous and mighty, laid prostrate at their Feet in the Dust, and covered with everlasting Confusion. *And* 27

28 And I will give him the Morning Star.

*I will give him*, even every one who approveth his Fidelity to me, such Lustre and Glory, that he shall shine in my Presence like the Morning Star, when its sprightly and chearful Beams break through the Shades of Night, and proclaim the approaching Sun. *He, therefore, that hath an* 28

29 He that hath an Ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the Churches.

*Ear, let him attentively hear, what the Spirit saith unto the Churches ;* for all the Churches are concerned in the Message I send to each ; and the Importance of the Contents make them worthy of universal Regard. 29

Chap. III. 1. And unto the Angel of the Church in Sardis, write, These Things saith

*And to the Angel, or Minister, of the Church in Sardis, write, These Things saith he,*

(e) Power over the Nations.] This Power over the Nations, of breaking them to Pieces like a Potter's Vessel, &c. cannot, I think, be understood of temporal Dominion ; for as the Promise is made to every Conqueror, and many Christians fell by the oppressive Power of the Enemy, and would, considering their present Circumstances, be degraded rather than exalted, if raised to the Possession of any earthly Dominion and Triumph, it appears to be much more properly explained of that final Triumph of Christ over his Enemies in the last Day, when he shall crush them all to utter and irrecoverable Ruin, and all his Saints raised from the Dead, and clothed with Robes of Glory, shall sit down with him on his Throne, and constitute that illustrious Body, which in ; and with their exalted Head, shall subdue every opposing Power.

(f) Walk



454 *They are ordered to watch, and strengthen what remained.*

Sect. 5.  
Rev. III. 1.

be, that hath the seven Spirits of GOD; he who presides over, and orders the Dispensations of the Spirit, with respect to his various Gifts and Graces, and produces thereby such wonderful Events, as shall astonish all future Ages; and that hath in his Hand the seven Stars, which represent the Ministers of the Churches, all whose Motions he continues to govern and direct, according to his all-wise and gracious Pleasure: *I know thy Works*; that thou dost not answer that Character which thou generally maintainest in neighbouring Churches, for Religion, and Piety. I know, *that thou hast a Name that thou livest*; thou makest a splendid Profession, and many of thy Brethren are deceived by thy apparent Zeal; *but thou art indeed Dead*; there is little real Religion lying at thy Heart, nor do the uniform Fruits of it prevail in thy Life and Conversation.

- 2 *Be watchful*, therefore, that the whole may not be lost; *and strengthen the Things which remain*, and *which are ready to die*; for I have not found thy Works filled up, in the Sight of GOD, with that Care and Fidelity, with which they ought to have been discharged; and he, therefore, cannot behold thee with the same Approbation and Delight, as he does more active, more diligent, and more resolute Christians. And this thy Declension in Religion is the more aggravated, as thou hast had so many Advantages for Improvement.
- 3 *Remember, therefore, how thou hast received, and heard*; for though thou mayest forget these Advantages, they are all distinctly in my View; and let it therefore be thy Care to *hold fast* what yet remains; and to *repent* of that Negligence by which thou hast lost so many Opportunities: *therefore, unless thou art watchful*, I do now solemnly warn thee, that *I will come upon thee* by some alarming and

faith he that hath the seven Spirits of GOD, and the seven Stars; I know thy Works, that thou hast a Name that thou livest, and art dead.

2 Be watchful, and strengthen the Things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy Works perfect before God.

3 Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on

on thee as a Thief, and thou shalt not know what Hour I will come upon thee.

4 Thou hast a few Names even in Sardis, which have not defiled their Garments; and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy.

5 He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white Raiment; and I will not blot out his Name out of the Book of Life, but

and awful Interposition of my Providence, Sect. 5. on a Sudden, as a Thief, on those that are buried in Sleep; and thou shalt not know, at what Hour I will come upon thee; and the Surprize will throw thee into the greatest Consternation and Distress. But I will do thee the Honour, and the Justice, to say, that *thou hast a few Names*, and People, *even in Sardis*, corrupt and indolent as the general State of it is, *who have not polluted their Garments*, with the Abominations by which so many have contracted gross Defilements. And, as they have been distinguished by their Fidelity and their Zeal, I will distinguish them by my special Favour, and raise them, e'er long, to those Seats of compleat Purity and Glory, where *they shall walk with me in white (f) Robes*, and attend my joyful and triumphant Train; for they are worthy of such distinguished Honour, as they have been especially careful to keep themselves from those Evils, which have been generally prevailing around them.

As for the Conqueror, he shall be clothed in white Raiment; every Victor shall wear the Habit of Festivity and Triumph; and I will not blot out his Name, from the Book of Life (g); but,

(f) *Walk with me in White.*] It is well known, that *white Robes* were worn on Occasion of great Joy, and sometimes in *triumphant Processions*; to both which here is, probably, a *Reference*, as indeed it seems that *Triumph and Feasting* would naturally go together. *Priests* also were clothed in *White*; and the Addition of that Dignity may also be implied, as certainly coming within the Scheme of *Christ* with Regard to his People. (Compare *Rev. i. 6.*) Some think here is an Allusion to the Custom of the *Sanhedrim*, when they examined the Candidates for the *High-Priesthood*; if they judged him worthy, they gave him a *white Garment*; if unqualified, he was sent out from among them in *Mourning*. *L'Enf. Introd. pag. 86.* See *Ainsworth's Pref. to Gen.*

(g) *I will not blot out his Name, &c.*] I think this plainly implies, that *some Names* shall be blotted out from the *Book of Life*; and consequently, as nothing can occasion an Alteration in the *Decrees of God*, I think it proves, that *the Book of Life* does not signify, the Catalogue of those whom *God* has *absolutely purposed* to save; but rather, the Catalogue of those who were to be considered as *Heirs of the Kingdom of Heaven*, in Consequence of their *Christian Profession*, till by *Apostacy* from it, they throw themselves out of that *Society* to which they before belonged; and it seems to intimate,

- Sect. 5. *but*, as he is inrolled among my faithful People, he shall ever continue in their Number; and when the Register shall be read over in the Presence of GOD in the great Day, *I will confess his Name before my Father, and before the full Assembly of his glorious Angels*, and not be ashamed to acknowledge him as my Friend and my Favourite.
- Rev. III. 5. *He that hath an Ear to hear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to all the Churches; and let every one that hears, be animated by so glorious a Hope, to exert his utmost Efforts in this holy and honourable Warfare.*
- 6 He that hath an Ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the Churches.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

- Ver. 18. **L**ET the Disciples of *Christ* always remember, that *his Eye* penetrates the most hidden Recesses; that he *searcheth the Hearts, and trieth the Reins*, of the Children of Men: Accordingly, let them take heed to cherish nothing, even *in their Hearts*, which their great Master will behold with Displeasure. There may *Faith, and Patience, and Charity*, erect their Throne; and may their Dominion so prevail, that our *last Works*, like those of the *Church of Thyatira*, may be *more than the First*. And surely it is most reasonable, as we approach the End of our Course, as we experience more of the Vanity of Life, and the substantial and solid Pleasures of Religion, that they should be so. But alas! how much more common is the Character of the *Church of Sardis*, and of those who have only *a Name to live, while they are dead*? Censorious and uncharitable as too great a Part of the World is, are there not some who are ashamed and humbled in the View of the *Esteem* which they are held in by their Brethren, while conscious of so many inward, though unallowed, Infirmitities, of so much Deadness and Coldness in Religion, even where they would be most zealous and lively? *Alas!* how far are *our Works* from being *filled up before GOD!* Let us often lament these our Imperfections
- Ver. 23.
- Ver. 19.
- Chap. III.  
1, 2.

intimate, that though the Imperfection even of these *Conquerors* might, in strict Justice, have *deserved* it, yet *Christ* would spare them, and suffer them to continue in the Number of those who should finally be found registered, as *free* of the heavenly City; and who, in the great Day, should be called up to *possess* it.

tions and Declensions; let us deeply humble ourselves before God on account of them; and let us be as *vigilant* as possible, that we may *strengthen those Things*, which if they do indeed remain, seem ready to die. The more general the Prevalence of such an indolent Temper is, the more let us emulate the distinguished Honour of those few Names in Sardis, which had not defiled their Garments; that we may walk with them, and with Christ, in white Raiment; that we may arrive at that happy State of everlasting Purity, of everlasting Festivity, of everlasting Triumph, which our divine Master has encouraged us to expect. We know not how unexpectedly he may come upon us: Let us be always ready, always strenuous in maintaining a holy War against the Enemies of our Salvation; and then we shall conquer, we shall triumph; our Name shall remain in the Book of Life; it shall be confessed by Christ before his Father, and his holy Angels; we shall share with him in his Triumph over all the rebellious Nations, in that Day, when he shall dash them in Pieces like a Potter's Vessel; we shall for ever wear the Lustre of the Morning Star; yea, we shall shine forth as the Sun in the Kingdom of our Father. Amen.

Sect. 5.

Ver. 2.

Ver. 4.

Ver. 3.

Ver. 5.

Chap. II. 26.

Ver. 27.

Ver. 28.

S E C T. VI.

The Epistles, which Christ orders to be written to the two remaining Churches, the Philadelphian, and Laodicean. Rev. III. 7,—22.

REVELATION III. 7.

REVELATION III. 7.

AND to the Angel of the Church in Philadelphia, write, These Things saith he that is holy, he that is

AND now to the Angel, or Minister, of the Church in Philadelphia, write, These Things saith the holy One, and the true One (a); he, who claims perfect Holiness, and invariable Truth, as necessary and essential to his Nature, in a Manner which no Creature can pretend to; he, whose Authority in

Sect. 6.

Rev. III. 7.

(a) The holy one, the true one.] This is so peculiarly the Prerogative of God, that I have sometimes wondered, no greater Stress should have been laid upon it in Proof of the Deity of our blessed Redeemer, by many Writers who have pressed other Texts, of a much more dubious Nature, to serve in the Cause. (Compare Chap. vi. 10.)

Sect. 6. in the Church of GOD is so uncontrolable, that it may truly be said, he *has the Key* of the House of David; *he, who openeth, and no Man shutteth (b), and shutteth, and no Man openeth*: infomuch that Eliakim, who is spoken of in such Terms of Honour, (Isa. xxii.

8 22.) was only a Type of him: I well know thy Works, how exemplary they are; and behold, I have used the Power of the Key which is in my Hand, in such a Manner, that *I have set before thee an open Door, and no Man can shut it*; I give thee a Power and Opportunity of spreading my Gospel, which none shall take from thee; *because thou hast, at least, a little Strength; and thou hast used it well, and hast courageously kept my Word, and hast not denied my Name,* though many Attempts have been made to drive thee to do it. Behold, I will give,

9 as it were, into thy Power, those hypocritical Wretches, [*who are*] indeed of the Synagogue of Satan, and under all the solemn Guise of religious Worship, are carrying on his Cause and Interest; *they say they are Jews,* and pretend to be my People, *and are not; but lie.* Behold, I say, I will give them into thy Power; and *I will make them to come and worship before thy Feet (c); and they*

is true, he that hath the Key of David, he that openeth, and no Man shutteth; and shutteth, and no Man openeth :

8 I know thy Works: Behold, I have set before thee an open Door, and no Man can shut it: For thou hast a little Strength, and hast kept my Word, and hast not denied my Name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the Synagogue of Satan (which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie) behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy Feet, and to know

(b) *Who openeth, and no Man shutteth.*] The Office of Lord-Steward of the Household, who hath a Power of opening and shutting what Apartments in the Palace he pleaseth, is described by these Terms.

(c) *Worship before thy Feet.*] Were we more particularly acquainted with the History of these seven Churches, in the Times immediately succeeding the Date of these Epistles, we might perhaps find many remarkable Illustrations of several Passages in them, and of this among the rest: Supposing, for Instance, Persons of considerable Rank and Dignity in Philadelphia, were converted to Christianity; and the Interest of the Synagogue, here spoken of, was so weakened, or the heathen Populace of the Place so prejudiced against them, as that the chief Members of the Synagogue should find it necessary to court the Protection of the Christians for the Security of their Persons or Effects; it will throw considerable Light upon the Place. The like Observation may be applied to the following Clause: *I will keep thee from the Hour of Temptation, &c.* Dr. Smith has observed, (in his learned and accurate Account of these Parts, pag. 134, —141.) that the City of Philadelphia was the last of all the Seven, here spoken of, which fell into the Hands of the Turks; for whereas the rest were subdued by Urban and

know that I have loved thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the Word of my Patience, I also will keep thee from the Hour of Temptation, which shall come upon all the World, to try them that dwell upon the Earth.

11 Behold, I come quickly: Hold that fast which thou hast, that no Man take thy Crown.

12 Him that overcometh, will I make a Pillar in the Temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: And I write upon him the Name of my God, and the Name of the City of my God, which is new Jerusalem,

they shall know that I have loved thee, finding Sect. 6. I have evidently supported thy Cause and Interest against all that have opposed it. *Because thou hast kept the Word of my Patience,* Rev. III. 10. that Gospel, which I have myself, by such patient Suffering in my human Nature, established in the World, and by which I at once exercise and support the Faith and Patience of my People; *I also will keep thee from the Hour of Temptation, which shall come upon all the World, to try all the Inhabitants of these Parts of the Earth:* My Hand shall remarkably appear, in sheltering thee from the Dangers, by which others fall, and in strengthening thee in Proportion to the Trial.

*Behold, I come quickly* I I to put an End to those Exercises, which are for the present so painful; *keep that which thou hast* with resolute Fidelity; *that no Man take thy Crown* from thee, even that Crown of everlasting Glory, which will be the gracious Reward of thy continued Fidelity.

*As for the Conqueror, I will* I 2 *make him a Pillar* of distinguished Ornament and Beauty; and I will not only fix him near, but *in the Temple of my GOD* above, and he shall stand there upon an unshaken and everlasting Basis, so that *he shall go out no more;* and he shall bear the Marks of immortal Honour; for *I will inscribe upon him the Name of my GOD,* under whose auspicious Influence the grand Victory has been gained, and under whose Protection this sacred Monument of it, shall for ever remain. *And I will also inscribe the Name of the City of my GOD, even the new Jerusalem,* as it is that to which he belongs, and of which he is free; even that new Jerusalem,

and Amurath; Philadelphia held out till the Time of Bajazet. So that the Remains of this Society were preserved, when those of the rest were ruined. But how far that Event might immediately be referred to in the Words before us, I cannot certainly say.

M m m 2

(d) I will

Sect. 6. *rusalem, which is come down from Heaven*  
 from my GOD, and shall soon be represent-  
 ed to thee; O John, in a most glorious Vision :

Rev. III. 12.

And he shall bear my new Name, the Name which I have acquired by that great Expedition, which brought me into the World, and carried me through so many Labours and Sufferings; even that of the Redeemer of Sinners; under which Character I will own him for one of my Redeemed, who fought under my Banner, and overcame his Enemies by my Influence, and my Blood (d).

13 He that hath an Ear, let him attentively hear what the Spirit saith to the Churches; for Addressees of this Kind, are made, not to a particular Person, or to one Christian Society alone, but are indeed of more extensive, and even universal Concern.

14 And to the Angel of the Church, which is in Laodicea, write, These Things saith he, who is the AMEN, the faithful and true Witness; attesting those Truths, which are of the utmost Importance, on the most perfect Knowledge of them, and with most unerring Exactness; yea, he, who is the beginning of the Creation of GOD (e), by whom it was produced, and who is the Head and Gover-

nor

lem, which cometh down out of Heaven from my God: And I will write upon him my new Name.

13 He that hath an Ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the Churches.

14 And unto the Angel of the Church of the Laodiceans, write, These Things saith the Amen, the faithful and true Witness, the Beginning of the Creation of God;

(d) *I will make him a Pillar, &c.*] Few Texts in the whole New Testament are more illustrated by Antiquity than this. Great Numbers of Inscriptions are yet remaining, brought from the Grecian Cities of Europe and Asia, and some from Islands in the Neighbourhood of Patmos, in which the Victories of eminent Persons are commemorated. And as some of these were placed near the Temples of their Deities, others were in those Temples, to signify their being put under the particular Protection of those Deities; whose Names therefore were inscribed upon them, and the Names of the Conquerors, and of the Cities to which they belonged; as also the Names of the Generals, by whose Conduct the Victory was gained. As all these Circumstances suit such kind of martial Victories, much more than those, obtained in the Olympick Games, so celebrated in Antiquity, and so largely and elegantly described by Mr. West in his late Dissertation on that Subject, I think this Text serves to justify the Turn I have generally given in my Paraphrase to those weighty Passages, on which so much of our Strength and Comfort as Christians depends.

(e) *The Beginning of the Creation of GOD.*] Mr. Fleming would render it, the efficient Cause of GOD's Creation. But as it is certain, that *αρχη* has not always that Signification, I judge it safe to give what is more commonly the Sense of it.

(f) So

15 I know thy Works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot.

nor of all that he has made: *I know Sect. 6.*  
*thy Works*, and all the Particulars of thy *Conduct; that thou art neither cold nor hot,* Rev. III. 15.

that thou art growing very indifferent in Religion, though thou canst not allow thyself intirely to cast it off: Now this is so disagreeable to me, that *I wish* thou wouldst determine one way or another; and that it might be said, *thou wert either cold or hot (f)*; if thou really thinkest it not worth thy Regard, reject it intirely; but, if indeed thou art convinced of its Truth and Importance, act with a steady Conformity to that Conviction. *Therefore, because thou* 16

16 So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my Mouth:

*art Lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot,* this Indifference of thine is as disagreeable to me, as Liquor, in this Condition, is to the Stomach; and therefore, to pursue the Similitude, odious as it may seem, I must tell thee, that if thou persistest in such a Disposition, *I will cast thee out of my Mouth* with Loathing. *Because thou sayest, I* 17

17 Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with Goods, and have Need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked.

*am wealthy, and have enriched myself by my own Wisdom and Virtue, and have Need of nothing;* imagining thy State in Religion to be so very prosperous and happy; and in this spiritual Lunacy into which thou art fallen, like a miserable Beggar who fancies himself a Prince, *knowest not that thou art wretched, and pitiable, and poor, and blind, and naked (g)*, in a most deplorable Condition,

(f) So disagreeable to me, *I wish* thou wouldst determine one Way or another. ] *Mr. Lowman* observes, that the Clause, *I would thou wert cold or hot*, may be understood as expressing great Dislike, not as a proper Wish, or Expression of what Men really desire.

(g) *Wretched and pitiable, &c.*] The sad Account, which is here given of the *Lacedaemonian Church*, which is placed *last*, when compared with what is said of the glorious State of *Christianity* in the *last Ages* of the World, may, I think, convince any *attentive Reader*, that these *Epistles* are not to be understood in a *prophetick* Sense, as expressive of the State and Character of the *Christian Church* in different *Periods* of Time. It may also be observed, that at that Rate the *middle Ages* of the Church, which were in Fact most *corrupt*, must have answered to *Pergamos* and *Thyatira*, which are described in these *Epistles*, as in the most flourishing and happy State.



Sect. 6. tion, destitute of every desirable Blessing;  
 Rev. III. 18. *I counsel thee, that, with an humble Sense of thy Condition, so extremely unhappy, thou apply to him who alone is capable of helping thee. And as I require no Price, or equivalent, for my Treasures, but only a Conviction of such an Incapacity to make an adequate Return for them, I advise thee, in that Way, to buy of me a full Supply for all thy Necessities; Blessings, as desirable as Gold tried in the Fire, that thou mayest indeed be rich; and white Raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the Shame of thy Nakedness may not appear. Apply to me for an Interest in my Righteousness, and sanctifying Grace; that thou mayest be absolved before God, and adorned with every Virtue which can render thee lovely in his Sight. And whereas thou art blinded with such unhappy Self-conceit, come, and anoint thine Eyes with my sovereign Eye-salve, that thou mayest see; for I can bring thee to right Sentiments of thyself, and of thy State; and can teach thee to judge of Objects according to their real Worth.*

19 In the mean Time, imagine not, that what may seem severe in this Address, proceeds from any Unkindness to thee; for *whomsoever I love, I reprove and correct.* Instead, therefore, of ungratefully quarrelling at so kind an Admonition, set thyself immediately and diligently to improve it: *Be more zealous for the future, than thou hast ever been in Time past, and deeply repent of thy prevailing Indolence and Degeneracy.*

20 *Behold, I have stood for a long Time, and I still stand at the Door, and knock; waiting for Admittance into your Hearts. If any Man hear my Voice with a due Regard, and open the Door; if he welcome me with the Affection due to such a Friend, and such a Saviour, how mean soever his Circumstances*  
 in

18 I counsel thee to buy of me Gold tried in the Fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white Raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the Shame of thy Nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine Eyes with Eye-salve, that thou mayest see.

19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: Be zealous therefore and repent.

20 Behold, I stand at the Door, and knock: If any Man hear my Voice, and open the Door, I will come in

in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

in Life may be, and how faulty soever his Character may formerly have been, *I will enter into his House*, and, like some princely Guest, will bring my own rich and delightful Entertainment along with me; *I will sup with him, and he shall sup with me*; I will treat him with the most endearing and familiar Friendship, accept the Tokens of his Affection, and give him the most solid Evidences of mine. Let this Variety

Sect. 6.

Rev. III. 20.

21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my Throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his Throne.

of Motives then engage you, O ye Laodiceans, to shake off that dull lethargick Temper which has so long given me Cause of Complaint: And for your further Encouragement, hear the last Promise which I make, to all, who exert themselves in that holy Warfare, to which I am calling you, with becoming Vigour and Resolution: *As for the valiant Conqueror, I will give him to sit down with me upon my glorious and exalted Throne in the heavenly World; as I also myself have conquered the Enemies which violently assaulted me in the Days of my Flesh, and am set down with my Father upon his Throne*: My faithful Servants shall partake, with me, of this Honour in the great Day of my appearing, and shall live and reign with me for ever. He, therefore,

21

22:

22 He that hath an Ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the Churches.

*that hath an Ear to hear, let him be all Attention on this Occasion, and bear what the Spirit saith to the Churches*; regarding what has been addressed to each, as intended to afford Matter of general Instruction.

### I M P R O V E M E N T.

**I**N what Age, or in what Place, will the Church be entirely free from this *Laodicean* Temper, which is so justly complained of by our Lord, and represented as so *loathsome* to him; I mean, an *Indolence* in Religion, often joined with *Arrogance* and *spiritual Pride*

Ver. 15.

464 *Reflections on the Epistles to Philadelphia and Laodicea.*

- Sect. 6. Pride too, as if great Attainments were made, where it is 'almost  
 Matter of Doubt, whether the very *Essentials* be remaining! Let  
 Ver. 16, 17. us not indulge to a vain *Conceit* of our own *Wisdom*, and *Riches*,  
 Ver. 18. and *Sufficiency*; but, let us thankfully hearken to that kind Invita-  
 tion, which he here gives us to come and *purchase that* of him,  
*without Money, and without Price*, by which we may be *truly* and  
 substantially enriched; *that*, by which we may attain to real Know-  
 ledge and true Discernment; and may be *cloathed* with Ornaments  
 and Glories, which shall render us amiable in the Eyes of GOD.  
 Ver. 20. How long has our *compassionate Saviour* been waiting upon us!  
 How long has he *stood knocking at the Door*! And oh, for what  
 Guests hath he been excluded! who hath filled our Hearts, and ta-  
 ken the Throne in them, while the Entrance has been denied to the  
*Lord of Glory, and of Grace*! Let us humble ourselves in the Dust  
 before him, and intreat, that he would *now enter* as into his own  
 Habitation; that he would do us the Honour to *sup with us*; that  
 he would cause us to *sup with him*; opening to us the Stores of his  
 Love and Bounty, and causing our Souls to rejoice in his Salvation.  
 Ver. 19. "Awaken us, O *blessed Jesus*, to give thee a most chearful *Admit-*  
 " *tance*; and rather show thy Love to us by *Chastisement* and *Re-*  
 Ver. 7. " *buke*, than suffer us entirely to forfeit it, by continued Insensibility  
 " and Negligence. *Holy and true, who hast the Key of David*, exert  
 Ver. 8. " thy Power, irresistible in Heaven and on Earth, in *opening* our  
 " Hearts: And oh, *set before us an open Door* of Service; and give  
 Ver. 10, 11. " us to use it to the utmost, for thy Glory. Strengthen us to *keep*  
 " *the Word of thy Patience*, and make us unshaken in our Attach-  
 " ment to thee, in every *Hour of Temptation, which may come upon*  
 " *the Earth, that none may take away our Crown.*"  
 Ver. 11. Whatever our Trials may be, let us rejoice in this, that they  
 will be only for a *short Duration*; for our Lord is *coming quickly*:  
 Whatever our Combat may be, let us arm ourselves with *Faith* in  
 these glorious Promises, which our Lord makes to them that perse-  
 vere and *overcome*.  
 Ver. 12. Have we not experienced the Pleasure of filling a Place in the  
*House of GOD* on Earth? But this sacred Satisfaction, and the  
 holy Season which affords it, is quickly over: Let us long for the  
 blessed Time, when we shall be fixed as *immoveable Pillars* in the  
*Temple* of GOD above. And oh, may we now wear, *engraven* on  
 our Hearts, *the Name of our GOD, and of his heavenly City*, and  
 the *new Name* of our triumphant Redeemer, as a Token for Good,  
 that we shall bear the Inscription in *bright and everlasting* Cha-  
 racters above. But even this most expressive Promise was  
 not

not equal to *all* the Purposes of a Saviour's Love : That nothing, Sect. 6.  
 therefore, might be wanting to enkindle the most generous Ambition, he has been pleased to speak of our *sitting down with him* Ver. 21.  
*upon his Throne, as he is sat down on his Father's Throne.* And who  
 then will ever scruple to *suffer* with him, when thus assured of  
*reigning with him, in everlasting Glory!* Oh, who would grudge  
 to resign, not merely the Accommodations of Life, but even an  
*earthly Throne, in the Hope of one, so much more radiant, ex-*  
*alted and permanent!* *Fear not, little Flock; it is your Father's, and*  
*your Saviour's, good Pleasure to give you the Kingdom, (Luke xii. 32.)*  
 and he animates you to pursue it with such compassionate Earnest-  
 ness, as if he could hardly enjoy it *himself*, unless it were communi-  
 cated to you.

S E C T. VII.

*Another Scene now opens on the Apostle John; in which  
 GOD is represented as enthroned in celestial Glory, sur-  
 rounded with the Hieroglyphical Representation of An-  
 gels, and the glorified Church. Rev. IV. 1, to the End.*

REVELATION IV. I.

AFTER this I looked,  
 and behold, a Door  
 was opened in Heaven : and  
 the first Voice which I heard,  
 was as it were of a Trum-  
 pet talking with me; which  
 said, Come up hither, and  
 I will shew the Things  
 which must be hereafter.

2 And immediately I  
 was

VOL. VI.

RÉVELATION IV. I.

AFTER these Things, and after Jesus Sect. 7.  
 had dictated to me these seven Epistles, *I saw and, behold;* Rev. IV. 1.  
*it seemed as if a Door*  
*were opened in Heaven,* near to which I was  
 brought; so that I was able to look in, and  
 see what passed, and was transacted there.  
*And the first Voice, which I heard before,*  
*[was] as loud as the Sound of a Trumpet ;*  
*and while speaking to me, it seemed to*  
*issue out from thence; and it said, Come up*  
*hither; and, having given thee this Charge*  
*relating to present Things, I will shew thee*  
*what shall be afterwards.* *And imme-*  
*diately*

N n n

Sect. 7.  
Rev. IV. 2.

diately I was in the Spirit (a), and an extraordinary Vision presented itself to my intellectual View; for behold, and observe diligently a Circumstance of so great Importance: *A Throne was set in Heaven*, to represent that of the blessed GOD; and there was *one sitting upon it*, of a majestick Form and Appearance, and arrayed in Robes of Glory, suited to the Situation in which he was.

3 And he who sat [on it] was, in the Form and Lustre of his Appearance, like a Jasper, and Sardine Stone (b); and a Rainbow, in which the bright Green, in Appearance like the vivid, though soft and agreeable, Colour of an Emerald, [was] especially prevalent, appeared round about the Throne: expressive of that Propitiousness and Kindness, and of that Covenant Relation to his People, which the blessed GOD is pleased to acknowledge in the midst of his

was in the Spirit: And behold, a Throne was set in Heaven, and one sat on the Throne.

3 And he that sat, was to look upon like a Jasper, and a Sardine Stone: And there was a Rainbow round about the Throne, in Sight like unto an Emerald.

(a) *I was in the Spirit.*] This Phrase signifies, to be under a *strong and supernatural* Impulse, caused by the *miraculous* Operation of the Spirit of GOD, acting on the Imagination in such a Manner, as to open extraordinary Scenes, which had not any exact external *Archetype*. And it is much illustrated by the View presented to Ezekiel, when he sat in his House among the Elders of the People, (Ezek. viii. 1.) who probably saw nothing but the Prophet himself, as one, in a *Trance*, or *Ecstasy*, or whose Thoughts were so attentively fixed, as to be insensible of what passed around him. We are not therefore to imagine, that the Person sitting on the Throne, or the four Animals, or the four and twenty Elders, were real Beings, existing in Nature; though they represented, in a *figurative Manner*, Things that did really exist. And though it is possible, that *aereal* Scenes might, by divine, or angelick Power, have been formed, I think it much more probable, that all that passed, was purely in the *Imagination* of St. John. This will keep us, in our Interpretation, clear of a thousand Difficulties, not to say Absurdities, which would follow from a contrary Supposition; namely, that there is in Heaven an *Animal* in the Form of a *Lamb*, to represent *Christ*; and that there are such *living Creatures*, as are here described; and that GOD himself appears in a *human* Form, &c. And this Observation I make once for all, desiring that it may be remembered, and applied as Occasions present.

(b) *Like Jasper, &c.*] I do not suppose, this refers so much to the Colour of these Stones, as to their *Lustre*, and the Radiancy of the Light as reflected from them, when perfectly polished. The *Rainbow* of *Emerald* was, no doubt, to express a *Covenant of Peace*; of which the *Rainbow* was, with *Noah*, an appointed Token. And that lively and cheering Colour seems to have been particularly mentioned, not to imply there were no other, but that the Proportion of *Green* was greater than ordinary. Compare Ezek. i. 26.

(c) *Twenty*

4 And round about the Throne were four and twenty Seats : And upon the Seats I saw four and twenty Elders sitting, clothed in white Raiment; and they had on their Heads Crowns of Gold.

5 And out of the Throne proceeded Lightnings, and Thundrings, and Voices : And there were seven Lamps of Fire burning before the Throne, which are the seven Spirits of God.

6 And before the Throne there was a Sea of Glass like unto Chrystal : And in the Midst of the Throne, and round about the Throne, were four Beasts, full of Eyes before and behind.

his transcendent Glory. (Compare Gen. ix. Sect. 7. 16.) And, in an extensive Circle, round about the Throne of GOD, [there were] twenty four other Thrones; and on the Thrones I saw twenty four Elders (c) sitting, as an Emblem of the Old Testament Church, and also of the New; and they were clothed in a Habit somewhat resembling that of the Levites or Priests, with white Raiment; and, in Token of their royal Dignity, they had upon their Heads golden Crowns. And out of the Throne there came Flashes of vivid Lightenings, and Thunders, and sometimes articulate Voices; and seven Lamps of Fire [were] burning continually (d) before the Throne; which are the seven Spirits of GOD; that is, they represent a great Variety of the Spirit's Operations, and those of good Angels, who act in Subserviency to him. And before the Throne, [there was,] correspondent to the brazen Sea in Solomon's Temple, (1 Kings vii. 23.) a great Laver, or Sea, which was made all of pure pellucid Glass, which was clear like Chrystal itself. And in the Middle of the Space between the Throne and the Circle about the Throne, [there were] four living Creatures (e); and, to signify their Intel-

(c) *Twenty four Elders.*] The Number seems to allude to that of the Patriarchs and Apostles; and they are called Elders, as the Presidency of Elders was common among the Jews. And these might be considered, as Representatives of the Church, paying Homage at the Throne in the Name of the rest.

(d) *Seven Lamps of Fire, &c.*] Some think these are the seven Spirits of GOD, that is, Angels spoken of afterwards, ver. 6. but I at present doubt, whether they may not be distinguished. Lamps of Fire, or lambent Flames, like those that fell upon the Apostles on the Day of Pentecost, (Acts ii. 3.) might perhaps be Emblems of the blessed Spirit of GOD in it's various and powerful Operations; especially those, by which the Minds of intelligent created Beings are illuminated and purified. And the Spirits standing before the Throne, might be distinct Appearances of angelick Forms; as it is certain some of them were, from the Actions they afterwards performed; sounding the seven Trumpets, &c.

(e) *Four living Creatures.*] It was a most unhappy Mistake in our Translators, to render the Word ζῶα, Beasts; it certainly signifies any other Kind of Animals, that is, of Creatures which have animal Life, as well as Beasts. The Word, Beast, not only degrades the Signification, but the Animals here mentioned, have Parts and Appearances,

Se<sup>c</sup>t. 7. Intelligence, and Quickness of Observance, they appeared *full of Eyes, both before and behind.* These four Animals, of a very extraordinary Form, seem to have been intended as Hieroglyphical Representations of the Angelick Nature (*f*): *And the Head of the first Animal, in this marvellous Composition, [was] like a Lion, to signify the Courage and Vigour with which these celestial Beings execute the Commands of GOD, and the irresistable Strength with which they encounter and vanquish all Opposition. And the Head of the second Animal [was] like a Calf, or young Bullock, to signify the Firmness, Patience, and Perseverance with which they go through the Labours, which GOD has appointed them. And the third Animal had a Face like a Man,*

Rev. IV. 7.

7 And the first Beast was like a Lion, and the second Beast like a Calf, and the third Beast had a Face as a Man,

to

pearances, which Beasts have not, and are represented as in the highest Sense *rational.*

(*f*) Hieroglyphical Representations, &c.] It is well known, the Antients, (borrowing them I suppose from the *Egyptians*;) dealt much in *Hieroglyphicks*, by which natural and moral Truths were expressed. *Dr. Middleton*, in his curious Collection of *Antiquities*, presents us with one so remarkable, that I cannot forbear mentioning it here. It is a Copy of a *Gem*, in which a *Man's Face*, an *Elephant's Head*, a *Peacock*, and a *Sceptre*, are joined together. He thinks it was intended as an *Hieroglyphick*, or emblematical Representation of *Socrates*; as the Face bears a strong Resemblance to the Pictures usually given of him. He supposes the *human Face* to represent that of *Socrates*, and the other Figures, those beautiful and divine Images, which were in his Mind. The *Peacock*, being the most beautiful Bird, may denote the Beauty of his Virtues; the *Sceptre*, his Majesty and Authority; the *Elephant*, the Strength and Fortitude of his Mind. And for the same Reason he observes, it might be used to express the Character of a *Philosopher* in general; but especially, the *Stoic's Wise-Man*, who was furnished with all Kinds of Virtues and Perfections, being the only beautiful and valiant Man, and a King, whatever his Circumstances might happen to be. *Middleton's Antiq. Tab. xxi. §. 10. p. 243, — 245.* There can, I think, be no Doubt, but these are the *Cherubim* described by *Ezekiel*, (*Chap. i.*) which therefore should be carefully compared with this Representation. To consider this Appearance as an Emblem of *Deity*, which is the Scheme of *Mr. Hutchinson*, and his Followers, appears to me a very great Absurdity. Nor can I think, with *Mr. Jackson*, that they are merely intended to signify the Homage paid to GOD by all *terrestrial* Creatures. Another peculiar and extraordinary Hypothesis, with Regard to them, has been proposed to me, and may perhaps be laid before the World; and therefore I think it most respectful to the *reverend and ingenious Author*, not to anticipate his own Design. Some have thought these Animals represent Spirits of an Order superior to *Angels*, taken up wholly in Contemplation. See *Reynolds of Angels*, pag. 6.

(g) *Holy,*

Man, and the fourth  
Beast was like a flying Eagle.

to express, by the Image of the only rational Creature on this Earth, the Clearness of Intelligence, and the Strength of Reason, with which, in a vastly superior Degree, they are endowed. *And the fourth Animal was like a swift flying Eagle, with its Wings displayed, and with Quickness in its Eye and Motion, to signify the Sprightliness, and Activity, and incomparable Velocity, with which these celestial Spirits fly from World to World, to execute the Commands they receive from their Sovereign.* *And,* 8

Sect. 7.  
Rev. IV. 7.

8 And the four Beasts had each of them six Wings about him, and they were full of Eyes within; and they rest not Day and Night, saying, Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

*though the Heads of these four wonderful living Creatures were different, yet they had in the rest of their Body, one Form; and they had each of them six Wings round about; so that their Body seemed covered with the rich Plumage of them. And within [they were] all full of Eyes, to signify their quick Discernment of every Object around them. And they rest not Day nor Night; but they stand in the Divine Presence, saying with united Voices, (as the Seraphim, represented in the Vision which Isaiah saw, Is. vi. 2, 3.) "Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God Almighty (g), who wast, and art, and art to come:" Thus giving to GOD, in continual Acts of Adoration, the Glory of his natural and moral Perfections, and acknowledging their Immutability from everlasting and to everlasting.* *And while the living Crea-* 9

9 And when those Beasts give Glory, and Honour, and Thanks to him that sat on the Throne, who liveth for ever and ever,

*tures are thus giving Glory, and Honour, and Thanks to him that sits upon the Throne, and addressing their sublime and harmonious Anthems of Praise to him, who liveth for ever and ever, with unwearied Vigour and Activity of Mind; The four and twenty Elders, whom I described before as them-* 10

10 The four and twenty Elders

(g) *Holy, Holy, Holy, &c.*] This Anthem is that which *Isaiah* tells us he heard the *Seraphim* sing; and it is observable, that many other *Hymns* recorded in this Book, are borrowed from the *Old Testament*.



Sect. 7. themselves sitting on majestick Thrones,  
 Rev. IV. 10. *fall down in the divine Presence, even before  
 him that sitteth upon the Throne, and wor-  
 ship him that liveth for ever and ever; and  
 they cast down their Crowns before the Throne,  
 in Token of their Homage to that tran-  
 scendently glorious Being; from whose sove-  
 reign Grace, and unparalleled Munificence,  
 they received them; saying, at the same  
 I I Time, *Worthy art thou, O Lord, to  
 receive the Ascription of Glory, and Honour,  
 and Power; for thou hast, by thine Almighty  
 Energy, created all Things, and for thy sove-  
 reign Will they are and were created; their  
 first Production, and continued Existence,  
 is owing to the Riches of thy free Good-  
 ness; and, therefore, they are all under the  
 strictest Obligations, according to their re-  
 spective Natures, to subserve the Purposes  
 of thy Glory.**

Elders fall down before him that sat on the Throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their Crowns before the Throne, saying,

I I Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive Glory, and Honour, and Power: For thou hast created all Things, and for thy Pleasure they are, and were created.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Ver. 1. **A**ND should not *we* likewise *fall down* with the *Angels* and *glorified Spirits*, and pay *some* Homage to the sovereign Majesty of Heaven, though it be impossible for us to equal *theirs*? For ever adored be the divine Grace, that *a Door is opened in Heaven*; in Consequence of which, even before we enter, we are allowed to *look in*, and thus to confirm our *Faith*, and to animate our *Devotion*; which alas! after all, is too ready to decline and languish. That it may be greatly invigorated, let us look up to the *Throne*,  
 Ver. 2, 3. *and to him that sitteth thereupon*; and rejoice to see that *peaceful Emblem*, with which the Seat of his Glory is surrounded; the *Rain-bow* of vivid and pleasant *Green*: Signifying, that the majestick Being who fills it, is the *Covenant-God* of all his believing and obedient People, and that *Mercy* and *Love* reign triumphant, in the whole Constitution of that perpetual Covenant.

Ver. 6, 7. Let us contemplate with Veneration the *blessed Angels*, the *Ministers of GOD*, who do his *Pleasure*, represented here under *Hieroglyphical* Characters, as possessed of amazing *Strength* and *Courage*, *Resolution* and *Patience*, of the sublimest *Reason*, of the most deep  
 and

and penetrating *Sagacity*, active and pure as *Flames of Fire*; and with these lofty Ideas in our Minds, let us ardently pray that the *Will of GOD may be so done on Earth, as it is done in Heaven.* Sect. 7.

Let us also remember the *Elders* here mentioned, the Representatives of the Church of the Redeemed, seated on glorious *Thrones, clothed in that white Raiment, which is the Righteousness of the Saints*, and adorned with *Crowns of Glory*. And let us especially consider, how the Angels and the Saints are employed: They rest Ver. 4.  
*not Day nor Night* from breathing out the most ardent Devotions; they feel nothing of that Weariness and Languor, with which we are too frequently invaded in this State of Mortality, even in our best Moments, and divinest Frames; but they cry continually, *Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God Almighty, who art, and wast, and art to come*; they give *Glory, and Honour, and Thanksgiving to him, that sitteth on the Throne*. And infinitely worthy he is to receive it: Ver. 8.  
He, who is the *Almighty Creator*, he who is the ever-present, and ever-gracious *Supporter* of all! *Thou art worthy, O Lord, thou alone art worthy*; and though thou *with-holdest from us the Face of thy Throne*, while we dwell in these *Tabernacles of Clay*; yet as we are thy *Creatures, thy rational Creatures*, we partake of thy Protection and Bounty; and, feeble as our Faculties are, and dark as the World is in which we dwell, we are able to discover thee as our *Almighty Creator, our constant Preserver, our never-failing Benefactor*. And, as such, may we *daily* worship and adore thee, with our feeble Voices in this State of Mortality; that when we are duly prepared, we may begin a nobler Song, and join in the sublimer Anthems and Hallelujahs above. Amen. Ver. 11.

SECT.

S E C T. VIII.

*The Vision of the sealed Book, and of the Lamb that was slain, who was found worthy to open it, and on that Account received the Acclamation of the whole Choir of Angels and Saints. Rev. V. 1,—14.*

REVELATION V. 1.

Sect. 8.  
Rev. V. 1.

AND, having observed the Particulars mentioned above, I saw in the Right Hand of him who sate on the glorious Throne already described, the Volume of a Book, or Scrole, written on both Sides, within and without (a); for though I saw only the Outside; perceiving it inscribed with Characters, I naturally concluded the Inside was full; and, as it was rolled up, it was sealed with seven strong Seals, each of which belonged to a distinct Leaf. *And I saw a mighty Angel, who wore, in his Appearance, the evident Marks of Dignity and Power, proclaiming with a great Voice, and saying, Who is worthy to open the mysterious Book which is in the Hand of God, and to loose its Seals, and so to disclose its wonderful Contents? And upon this I saw an universal blank Confusion upon every Countenance; so that it plainly appeared, that no one, among all the Creatures of God,*

REVELATION V. 1.

AND I saw in the Right Hand of him that sat on the Throne, a Book written within and on the Back-side, sealed with seven Seals.

2 And I saw a strong Angel proclaiming with a loud Voice, Who is worthy to open the Book, and to loose the Seals thereof?

3 And no Man in Heaven,

(a) Written on both Sides, within and without.] Mr. Lowman, after Grotius, hath observed, that there ought to be a Stop after the Word, within, (εσωθεν) and that it should be rendered, written within, and sealed on the Back-side. But the learned Dr. Hammond, hath very well defended the Sense given in the Paraphrase; observing, that it appears in the Process, that the opening of every single Seal, brings forth some new Representation; which could not be the Case, if all the Seals were on the Back-side; for then they must all be opened, before any Part of the Book could be discovered, &c. And therefore it must be concluded, that each Seal belonged to a distinct Leaf.

(b) Seven

ven, nor in Earth, neither under the Earth, was able to open the Book, neither to look thereon.

4 And I wept much, because no Man was found worthy to open and to read the Book, neither to look thereon.

5 And one of the Elders faith unto me, Weep not: Behold, the Lion of the Tribe of Juda, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the Book, and to loose the seven Seals thereof.

*in Heaven, or upon Earth, or under the Earth,* Sect. 8.  
*was able to open the Book, or to look into it:*

And, as I had an earnest Desire to know Rev. V. 4. the Contents, and had pleased myself with a secret Expectation, that some extraordinary Discovery was to be made to me, and to the Church, from thence; it grieved me exceedingly, infomuch that *I wept abundantly, because no one was found worthy to open and read the Book; nor, indeed, so much as to look into it.*

And as the grand Act of Adoration, in which the Elders had joined with the living Creatures, to him that sat on the Throne, was over, *one of the Elders said to me, Weep not; behold, the Lion, who is of the Tribe of Judah,* (that excellent Person, to whom that Oracle relating to Judah, in which he was described under the Token of a Lion, to represent his invincible Strength, by which he shall triumph over all his Enemies, (Gen. xlix. 9, 10.) principally referred;) he hath conquered this great Difficulty: He, who is *the Root*, that was to spring from the Stock of *David*, when it seemed to be withered in the Earth, *hath prevailed to open the Book, and to loose it's seven Seals;* so that thou shalt soon hear it's Contents; for he is appointed by God to penetrate and discover those secret Decrees, which are concealed from every Creature in Heaven, and on Earth, and under the Earth.

*And I beheld, and lo,* to my great Astonishment, *in the middle Space between the Throne, and the four living Creatures, and in the midst of the Elders,* who made a Kind of Semicircle about them, *there stood* this illustrious Person, whose Title I had just been hearing; and, though he was spoken of by the Name of the Lion of the Tribe of Judah, to express the Terrors of his Wrath against his implacable Enemies, the Symbol of his Person, in this mysterious Vision, was

6 And I beheld, and lo, in the Midst of the Throne, and of the four Beasts, and in the Midst of the Elders stood

O o o

very

Sect. 8.  
 Rev. V. 6.

very different; for he appeared as a *Lamb*, who had been slain for Sacrifice, and wore the recent Marks of Slaughter, in the Blood on his Throat and Breast; and this Lamb was of a very uncommon Form, *having seven Horns, and seven Eyes*, instead of two of each; and this I understood as a mysterious Representation of extraordinary Power and Knowledge, and of the wonderful Degree in which the Spirit of God was poured out upon the Person whom this visionary Lamb represented; for *these are the seven Spirits of GOD (b), sent forth into all the Earth*; they represent that divine Energy, which operates every where; and of exerting which, the most illustrious Angels have often the Honour to be the Ministers.

- 7 And he came near to the Seat of Majesty, and took the Book out of the Right Hand of him who sat upon the Throne; which I understood as a Symbol, to intimate that the Lord Jesus Christ, whom I knew to be represented by this slaughtered Lamb, was appointed to reveal the secret Decrees of GOD, and to give me those Discoveries which I so much desired to receive. And when he received the Book in the Manner I have described, *the four living Creatures, and the twenty four Elders, fell down before the Lamb*, in Token of humble Reverence and Ado-

stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven Horns, and seven Eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the Earth.

7 And he came and took the Book out of the Right Hand of him that sat upon the Throne.

8 And when he had taken the Book, the four Beasts, and four and twenty Elders fell down before the Lamb,

(b) *Seven Spirits of GOD.*] Comparing this Text with Chap. viii. 2. I must acknowledge, that this is indeed to be understood of *seven Angels*. Mr. Mede infers from hence, that there are, in Fact, *seven Archangels* who preside over all the rest. But I cannot allow the Consequence to be certain. We sometimes read of *four Spirits*, sent forth as these are said to be, (*Zech. vi. 5.*); and, I think, the whole it amounts to, is, that there are *many* celestial Spirits, who are the Instruments of that Providence which Christ exercises over the Earth, who bring to him an Account of what passes, and receive and execute his Commands. But, by the way, this will no more prove, that he is under a *Necessity* of receiving Intelligence from them, or of using their Assistance, than the *parallel Passage* of *Zechariah* will prove it of God the Father, *Zech. iv. 2. 10.* But Dr. Scott very justly argues, that as they are called *the seven Eyes of the Lord* in that Text, and here, of the Lamb, it is an Argument for the Exaltation of the Man Christ Jesus, above the highest Angel in Heaven.

(c) *Vials,*

Lamb, having every one of them Harps, and golden vials full of odors, which are the Prayers of Saints.

Adoration ; and these Elders appeared as a Sect. 8.  
Choir of humble Worshipers in the Temple of GOD, *having every one Harps of Gold,* Rev. V. 8.  
with which they played in sweet Harmony, to aid the Musick of their Voices ; and they had also *golden Vials, or Censers (c), full of Perfumes, which are the Prayers of the Saints ;* for, as I understood these Elders to be the Representatives of the Church, I apprehended that, in Allusion to the Incense offered in the Temple while the People were praying, this Circumstance had a Reference to Prayer, and was intended to shew how acceptable it is to GOD, when it proceeds from a holy and an upright Heart.

9 And they sung a new Song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the Book, and to open the Seals thereof ; for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy Blood, out of every Kindred, and Tongue, and People, and Nation ;

*And they sang a new Song,* excellent in its Kind, and composed on a much greater Occasion, and in much sublimer Strains of divine Harmony, than those which the Priests and Levites sang in the Temple at Jerusalem ; *saying, Worthy art thou to take the Book* from the Hand of GOD, *and to open the Seals thereof ; for thou, O blessed Lamb of GOD, who takest away the Sins of the World, thou wast slain to expiate our Guilt, and thou hast redeemed us to GOD by thy precious Blood, from the Dominion of Sin, the Tyranny of Satan, the Curse of the Law, and the Wrath of a justly incensed Deity ; whose Servants and Favourites we are now become, in Consequence of thy kind and gracious Interposition. And we are now assembled round his Throne, out of every Tribe, and Language, and People, and Nation, near and afar off, sacred and profane, learned and barbarous ; wherever we were dispersed, thou hast found us, and into what-*  
ever

(c) *Vials, or Censers.*] These, (as *Mr. Lowman* observes,) were not small Bottles, such as are now called *Vials* ; but Cups on a Plate, like a Tea-cup and Saucer, in Allusion to the *Censers* of Gold, in which the Priests offered Incense in the Temple.

Sect. 8. ever Bondage and Misery we were sunk, thy  
Power and thy Mercy have rescued us ;

Rev. V. 10. *And thou hast made us to our GOD, Kings and Priests ; we are robed in Purity and Majesty, we are crowned with Gold ; and here we appear in these Priestly Offices, which we perform with the Splendor of Princes ; and we shall reign on Earth : The Christian Cause shall prevail through all Ages ; while the happy Souls who have passed couragiously through their Trials upon Earth, come hither in their appointed Seasons, and share the Honours of thy triumphant Kingdom.*

11 *And I beheld this glorious Scene with inexpressible Pleasure ; and, while my Soul was all Attention, I also heard the Voice of many Angels round about the Throne, and of the living Creatures (d), which betokened in general the Angelick Nature, and of the Elders which represented the Church. And a Multitude appeared joining the Choir, so exceeding great, that the Number of them was Myriads of Myriads, and Thousands of Thousands ; I was ready to apprehend that neither Thousands, nor Millions, were sufficient to express them.*

12 *And there was not so much as a jarring Voice, or a cold and languid Heart in the whole Assembly ; but, with united Ardour and Harmony, they were saying, with a loud Voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slaughtered, to receive Power over universal Nature, and all the Riches it can boast. Worthy is he, to whom we should ascribe consummate and unsearchable Wisdom, and resistless Might, and peerless Honour, and resplendent Glory, and immortal Blessing ; even he, who once appeared under a Cloud of*

10 *And hast made us un-  
to our God Kings and  
Priests : And we shall reign  
on the Earth.*

11 *And I beheld, and I  
heard the Voice of many  
Angels round about the  
Throne, and the Beasts,  
and the Elders : And the  
Number of them was ten  
thousand Times ten thou-  
sand, and thousands of thou-  
sands ;*

12 *Saying with a loud  
Voice, Worthy is the Lamb  
that was slain, to receive  
Power, and Riches, and  
Wisdom, and Strength, and  
Honour, and Glory, and  
Blessing.*

(d) *Of many Angels, and of the living Creatures.] This plainly shews, that there was an Appearance of Angels, as well as of these Animals which represented their Natures : A Circumstance, which I do not remember in the Vision of Ezekiel.*

(e) *Ex*

of Weakness and Poverty, and under the Imputation of Folly, loaded with Dishonour and Infamy, with Reproaches and Curfes: Worthy is he, of all the Dignity and Glory, the Benediction and Homage of the heavenly World, throughout the endless Ages of Eternity! *And, while the Multitude* Sect. 8.  
Rev. V. 12.

13 And every Creature which is in Heaven, and on the Earth, and under the Earth, and such as are in the Sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, and Honour, and Glory, and Power be unto him that sitteth upon the Throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.

*And, while the Multitude of the heavenly Hosts were singing this sublime Anthem, every Creature which is in Heaven, and on the Earth, and under the Earth, and such as are in the Sea (e), even all Things that are in them, in every various Form of Nature, seemed to echo back the Voice; and I heard them saying, To him who sits upon the Throne, and to his Son the Lamb, the worthy Partaker of his Throne and Kingdom, [be] perpetual Blessing, and the profoundest Honour, and consummate Glory, and Almighty Strength, ascribed for ever and ever.* 13

14 And the four Beasts said, Amen. And the four and twenty Elders fell down and worshipped him that liveth for ever and ever.

*And the four living Creatures said, Amen, to this Hymn, to testify their hearty Concurrence; and, at the same Time, the twenty four Elders fell down before the Throne, and worshipped him, who liveth for ever and ever; acknowledging him to be infinitely superior to all those Services, which the most exalted Powers of created Nature are capable of rendering.* 14

(e) *In the Sea.*] As the Inhabitants of the watery Elements are necessarily mute, I suppose we are not to understand by this, that they seemed to grow vocal in the Praises of Christ upon this Occasion; but rather, that Heaven, Earth and Sea, is used to signify, that all Nature, in its different Ways, concurred in the Praise; that is, that the whole Constitution of it contributed to furnish out Matter of Praise; just as inanimate, as well as rational Creatures, are called upon to praise God in several of the Psalms; especially Psal. cxlvi.

IMPROVE-



## I M P R O V E M E N T.

- Sect. 8. **I**T should fill us with unutterable Joy, when we lift up our  
 Ver. 6. Eyes to the *Throne of GOD*, that we there discern the *Lamb*  
 wearing the *Marks of Slaughter*. We should then gratefully re-  
 member, his dying Love; for it is his precious *Blood which cleanses*  
*us from all Sin*, and emboldens our Addressees to *GOD*, conscious  
 as we are, that our Guilt is attended with great Aggravations.  
 Surely, had it been queried, with Respect to the great *Atonement*  
 to be made for our Transgressions, as it was with Respect to *the*  
 Ver. 3, 4. *opening these Seals*, *Who is worthy* to compleat this gracious Un-  
 dertaking? we should have seen with unspeakable Anguish, that  
*none in Heaven, or on Earth*, would have been found equal to the  
 Ver. 5. Task. But here likewise, *the Lion of the Tribe of Judah has*  
*prevailed*. How divinely is he furnished for the high Station he  
 sustains, and for all the glorious Services assigned to him! What  
 Ver. 6. amazing *Power*, what adorable *Wisdom* is implied in the *seven*  
*Horns*, and *seven Eyes*, with which he is here delineated! and oh!  
 what Love, in submitting to be *slain*, that he might redeem us to  
*GOD by his Blood!* With the *Prayers of the Saints*, which come  
 up before *GOD* as *Incense*, may they ever mingle their most ardent  
*Praises* for this divine Condescension. And out of Gratitude to  
 their Redeemer, let them rejoice to see the glorious Change in his  
 Condition, from his Humiliation and Sufferings on Earth, to his  
 Exaltation and Reward in Heaven; and let them ardently long for  
 Ver. 9. the happy Season, when the *full Choir* of the redeemed, *from every*  
*Nation, and People and Tongue*, shall unite in this joyful Accla-  
 mation, *Worthy is the Lamb that was slain, to receive Power, and*  
*Riches, and Wisdom, and Strength, and Honour, and Glory and Bles-*  
*sing.*—In this World the Disciples of *Christ* are only a *little Flock*,  
 but when they stand together upon the heavenly Mountain, they  
 Ver. 11. shall appear *ten thousand Times ten thousand, and Thousands of Thou-*  
*sands*; and all the Harmony of their Voices, and all the Ardour  
 of their Souls, inconceivably improved as all their Powers will be,  
 shall be united on this happy Occasion. Form us, *O Lord*, we en-  
 treat thee, for this divine Employment, and teach us, in some Mea-  
 sure, to anticipate its Pleasure, in these Regions below. Even now,  
 in Spirit and Intention, we prostrate ourselves before thee, and lay  
 down

down the Crowns, which Faith, as it were, hath already received, Sect. 8. at thy Feet; giving Glory to him who sitteth upon the Throne, and celebrating the Victories and Honours of the Lamb.

S E C T. IX.

An Account of the opening the six first Seals, and of the awful Events which accompanied the opening of each. Rev. VI. throughout (a).

REVELATION VI. I.

AND I saw when the Lamb opened one of the Seals,

REVELATION VI. I.

I Could not but be all Attention to this Sect. 9. wonderful Scene; and I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seven Seals of the Book, which he had taken out of the right Hand of him, that sat upon the Throne; and

(a) The Vision of the Seals.] I am vastly more obliged to that ingenious and excellent Commentator, Mr. Lowman, for what I understand of this Book, than to any other Writer whatsoever. And, as I think his celebrated and valuable Scheme of Interpretation the most satisfactory, and which indeed throws considerable Light upon this Series of Prophecy, I shall present my Readers with a short View of his Plan, under the several Visions; referring the more curious to the Commentary itself. But I would first observe, with regard to this celebrated Performance, that there is, in many Particulars, a beautiful Resemblance between the prophetick Representations, and the Events supposed to be correspondent to them; and that the historical Facts are represented with great Learning and Judgment; yet the Correspondence between the Prophecies and the Events is not, in all Respects, so clear and evident, as might have been expected; nor can we always say, why the Events in Question are represented by one of the Emblems used, rather than by another. However, he has finely illustrated many Passages, especially by similar Phrases from the prophetick Books of the Old Testament, in which he is quite unequalled; and hath made out so much, particularly with Respect to the first, and beginning of the third Period, as evidently proves this Book to be a glorious Confirmation of Christianity, and worthy our most attentive and diligent Examination.— This learned and accurate Writer, then, divides the prophetick Parts of this Book into seven Periods. The first represented by the Seals, shews the State of the Church under the Heathen Roman Emperors, from A. D. 95. to A. D. 323. II. Period, of the Trumpets, its State from Constantine, A. D. 337. to A. D. 750. III. Period, of the Vials, its State in the Times of the last Head of Roman Government, represented by the Beast, for 1260 Years, from about the Year 756. to A. D. 2016. IV. Period, the Millennium, from A. D. 2000. to A. D. 3000. V. Period, Satan loosed for a little Season, and then destroyed. VI. Period, the Resurrection and final Judgment. VII. Period, the heavenly State.

(b) First

Sect. 9. *and I heard one of the four living Creatures, which said, as with a Voice of Thunder, come and see the Wonders which are now presenting themselves.*

Rev. VI. 1.

2 *And I saw, and behold a white Horse appeared; and he who sat thereon, had a Bow in his Hand, and a Quiver of Arrows hanging at his Back; and, to express his royal Dignity as the King both of the Church and of the World, there was given to him a Crown of Gold, and he went forth conquering, and to conquer: I understood that he was to gain signal Victories, and that the Series of them was immediately to begin. (Compare Psal. xlv. 3. Rev. xvii. 14. xix. 11.) (b).*

3 *And when he opened the second Seal, I heard the second living Creature (c), saying, as the former had done when the first was opened, Come and see.*

4 *And another Horse came out (d), [which] seemed to betoken some great Slaughter and Desolation to be made by approaching Wars; for he [was] red; and it was given to him who sat upon it, to take Peace from the Earth; and that they should slay each other. And, as a further Token of this, there was given to him a great*

Seals, and I heard, as it were the Noise of Thunder, one of the four Beasts, saying, Come, and see.

2 And I saw, and behold, a white Horse; and he that sat on him had a Bow, and a Crown was given unto him, and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.

3 And when he had opened the second Seal, I heard the second Beast say, Come, and see.

4 And there went out another Horse that was red: and Power was given to him that sat thereon, to take Peace from the Earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great Sword.

(b) *First Seal, &c.] This refers to the Triumph of Christianity over Jewish and heathen Opposition by the Labours of its first Preachers.*

(c) *The second living Creature.] As each of these living Creatures is represented as speaking successively, I think it confirms what was advanced in Sect. vii. Note (f), relating to the Scheme of Mr. Hutcheson, who supposes the four living Creatures, taken together, to be an Emblem of the Deity.*

(d) *Another Horse came out.] Mr. Lowman thinks, that the Leaves of the Book were so adjusted, that on opening the first Seal, the first Leaf unfolded; and on it there was drawn, in a vivid and beautiful Picture, a Man mounted on a white Horse; and that what is described on opening those that follow, is an Account of the various Pictures which John saw delineated on the several Leaves. But as we have an Account, not only of the Appearance of these Things, but of their Motion, and their Voice; and especially, of a Change in the State of several of them, particularly of the Souls under the Altar, (ver. 9.) I conclude, that the Scene did not lie in the Leaf of the Book, but arose in Vision as the rest; and that the Events described, seemed successively to pass before the Eyes of John. And indeed, I think it apparent, that the State of the Vision he at first saw, was something altered, upon the opening of some of the Seals, especially the seventh.—The ingenious Author above-mentioned, interprets this Seal; of the Judgments of God upon the Jewish Persecutors, under Trajan and Hadrian, A. D. 100. to A. D. 138. when the Jews had 1000 Cities and Fortresses taken and destroyed, and 580,000 Men slain.*

(e) A

great Sword, or Faulchion, in his Hand, Sect. 9. by which he might make terrible Devastation.

5 And when he had opened the third Seal, I heard the third Beast say, Come, and see. And I beheld, and lo, a black Horse; and he that sat on him had a Pair of Balances in his Hand.

And when he opened the third Seal, I heard Rev. VI. 5. the third living Creature saying, as the two former had done, Come and see. And I saw, and behold there appeared a black Horse, which might betoken an approaching Famine, by the emblematical and memorable Circumstances which attended his Entrance on the Scene; for, he that sat upon him, had a Pair of Scales in his Hand, to imply, that Men should eat their Bread by Weight, and drink their Water by Measure. And 6

6 And I heard a Voice in the midst of the four Beasts say, A Measure of Wheat for a Penny, and three Measures of Barley for a Penny; and see thou hurt not the Oil, and the Wine.

I heard a great Voice in the midst of the four living Creatures, saying, A Measure of Wheat, which shall only be daily Food for one Man, shall now be sold for a Denarius, or Roman Penny, which is the Price of his daily Labour; and three Measures of Barley only shall be sold for a Denarius, or Roman Penny (e). And yet, that there may not be a total Scarcity, see that thou, who appearest as the Executioner of this Judgment, injure not the Oil, nor the Wine (f); let the Olive-Trees, and the Vines, remain unblasted, to shew, that God in Judgment remembers Mercy.

And

(e) *A Measure of Wheat for a Penny.*] This may seem, to an English Reader, a Description of great Plenty; but, it certainly intends the contrary, as I have intimated in the *Paraphrase*. The Penny was about Seven Pence Halfpenny of our Money; and it appears from Tacitus, as well as from Mat. xx. 2. (See *Fam. Expos. in loc.*) to have been the daily Wages of a Labourer. It also appears from other antient Writers, particularly Herodotus, (see *Raphelius in loc.*) and from Hippocrates, Diogenes Laertius, and Athenæus, (see *Grotius in loc.*) that this Measure, or Chænix, was no more than was allowed to a Slave for his daily Food. What would become of Families, when a Man could gain by his Labour no more, and that only of Bread, than might suffice for his own Subsistence?—Mr. Lowman interprets this third Seal of the Scarcity, in the Time of the Antonines, from A. D. 138. to A. D. 193. and produces Passages from Tertullian, and the Roman Historians, concerning the Calamity the Empire endured by Scarcity in this Period.

(f) *See that thou injure not, &c.*] The Introduction of so many allegorical Persons, as Famine, and Death, and the State of separate Spirits in this Vision, confirms what was said above, in Note (d), as to the Nature of the Things that appeared.

Sect. 9. *And when he opened the fourth Seal, I heard*  
 Rev. VI. 7. *the Voice of the fourth living Creature saying*  
 8 *to me, Come, and see a further Discovery of*  
*the Divine Will. And I saw, and be-*  
*hold a pale Horse appeared; and as for him*  
*that sat on him, his Name was called Death.*  
*He appeared like a Person entirely emaciated,*  
*and Hell followed him; he seemed to*  
*be attended with a Person, who was a pro-*  
*per emblematical Representation of the State*  
*of separate Spirits; and there was given unto*  
*him Power to slay a great Number, as it*  
*were, the fourth Part of the Earth, with the*  
*Sword, and with Famine, and with Pestilence,*  
*that most dreadful Kind of Death; and with the wild*  
*Beasts of the Field. (g).*

9 *And when he opened the fifth Seal, a very*  
*memorable Scene presented itself to me;*  
*for then I saw under the Altar, which made*  
*a Part of the View before me, a visible*  
*Representation of the Souls of those, who were*  
*slaughtered on Account of the Word of GOD,*  
*and the Testimony to the Truth of the Gos-*  
 10 *pel, which they courageously retained, in the*  
*Midst of all Opposition. And they cri-*  
*ed with a loud Voice, as making an Appeal*  
*to the injured Justice of the Divine Being;*  
*and said, How long, O thou supreme and*  
*sovereign Lord of the Universe, who art*  
*ever armed with Almighty Power and Ter-*  
*ror against all thine implacable Enemies:*  
*How long, O thou holy and true God, shall*  
*it be, e'er thou dost judge and avenge our*  
*Blood upon those who dwell upon the Earth (h),*  
 who

7 And when he had opened the fourth Seal, I heard the Voice of the fourth Beast say, Come, and see.

8 And I looked, and behold, a pale Horse; and his Name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him: And Power was given unto them, over the fourth Part of the Earth to kill with Sword, and with Hunger, and with Death, and with the Beasts of the Earth.

9 And when he had opened the fifth Seal, I saw under the Altar the Souls of them that were slain for the Word of God, and for the Testimony which they held.

10 And they cried with a loud Voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our Blood on them that dwell on the Earth.

(g) *Fourth Seal.] Mr. Lowman interprets this Seal of the Pestilence, and other Calamities, in the Reigns of Maximin and Valerian, from A. D. 193. to A. D. 270. This he supports by proper Authorities from several Christian and Heathen Writers in that Period, who particularly mention one Pestilence, that lasted fifteen Years.*

(h) *E'er thou dost avenge our Blood.] We are not to understand this as the Language*

11 And white Robes were given unto every one of them, and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little Season, until their Fellow Servants also, and their Brethren that should be killed, as they were, should be fulfilled.

12 And I beheld when he had opened the sixth Seal, and lo, there was a great Earthquake, and the Sun became black as Sackcloth of Hair, and the Moon became as Blood;

13 And the Stars of Heaven fell unto the Earth, even

who have, without Remorse, poured it out as Water. And, upon this, they appeared to be called up from the Place, where they lay as so many bleeding Victims; and there were given to each of them white Robes (i), in Token of the Triumph they had gained over Death, and all its Terrors; and it was said to them, that they should rest yet a little while, though their Blood remained unavenged, till the Number of their Fellow-Servants, and Brethren, who should be killed, as they [had been], for the Testimony of a good Conscience, and the Defence of the Gospel, should be fulfilled (k), according to the Intention of Divine Providence, in letting their Persecutors go on a while, till they had filled up the Measure of their Iniquity (l).

And I saw, when he opened the sixth Seal, and behold there was immediately a great Earthquake; and not Earth alone, but Heaven, was affected with great Consternation; for the Sun became black as Sackcloth of Hair, and the Moon became red as Blood. 12

And it seemed, as if the Stars fell from Heaven upon the Earth; Numbers of them at once, 13 as

guage of Personal Revenge, but of Zeal for the Honour of GOD, which was so intimately concerned in the Punishment to be inflicted upon those blood-thirsty Persecutors.

(i) *White Robes.*] Mr. Fleming understands this, as an Intimation of their Preference to some new Post of Honour and Service. But, I suppose, this was only a Representation, that though their Blood did cry for Vengeance in the Ears of GOD, yet that Vengeance should be delayed; nevertheless that, in the mean Time, they should be exalted to a glorious State. The Argument he draws from this Passage, in Proof of a first Resurrection, seems too precarious to be repeated. *Flem. first Res.* pag. 46, 47.

(k) *The Number of their Brethren who should be killed.*] Nothing could tend more to encourage Christians to endure their Sufferings with steady Patience, than this, that it was appointed of GOD, that a certain Number of Martyrs should be put to Death, and that the Season of their Triumph was to succeed.

(l) *Fifth Seal.*] Mr. Lowman interprets this Seal, of the severe Persecution under Diocletian, from A. D. 270. to A. D. 304. which was the most extensive and furious of all; and so many Christians suffered Death, that the Heathens boasted, in an ancient Inscription, that they had effaced the Name and Superstition of the Christians.

Sect. 9. as fast as when a Fig-Tree droppeth its untimely Figs, being shaken by the Force of a mighty Wind.

Rev. VI. 14.

And the Heavens passed away, the Clouds rolling one upon another, like a Volume of a Book when it is rolled up; and every Mountain on Earth, and every Island in the Sea, were moved out of their Places; so great and general was the Shock, to represent the Calamities approaching in those terrible Wars, which were to precede the Revolutions to which this Seal referred (m).

15 And all the Inhabitants of the World were thrown into an universal Terror; so that the Kings of the Earth, and the Grandees about their Courts, and the rich Men, and the chief Officers of Armies, who commanded their Thousands, and the powerful Men, who bore the greatest Sway in the publick Counsels, or were armed with the most warlike Prowess; and every Slave, and every Free-Man, fled as in Surprise, and hid themselves as fast as they could, even in the most gloomy Caves, and among the Rocks of the Mountains, horrid as this Retreat appeared.

16 And, not thinking themselves sufficiently secure there, they said, in wild Astonishment and Affright, to the Mountains, and to the Rocks, Fall upon us, and hide us from the Face of him, who sitteth upon the Throne, the Almighty and terrible God, and from the Wrath of the Lamb;

17 For the great Day of his Wrath is come; and, mild and gentle as he once appeared, we find it insupportably dreadful; and who can be able to stand against it? Thus it appeared, that they would have thought the Crush of a Mountain less terrible, than the Vengeance they

even as a Fig-tree casteth her untimely Figs when she is shaken of a mighty Wind:

14 And the Heaven departed as a Scroll when it is rolled together; and every Mountain and Island were moved out of their Places :

15 And the Kings of the Earth, and the great Men, and the rich Men, and the chief Captains, and the mighty Men, and every Bond-Man, and every Free-Man, hid themselves in the Dens, and in the Rocks of the Mountains ;

16 And said to the Mountains and Rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the Face of him that sitteth on the Throne, and from the Wrath of the Lamb :

17 For the great Day of his Wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?

(m) Earthquake,—Sun becoming black,—Stars falling, &c.] Awful Judgments and Calamities are often described by such Commotions and Alterations in the natural World. Compare Isa. xiii. 10. xxxiv. 4. Ezek. xxxii. 7. Joel ii. 10. and the like.

(n) Day

they expected; and had more Hope of Sect. 9. moving inanimate Nature by their Outcries, <sup>Rev. VI. 17</sup> than of prevailing upon their righteous and inexorable Judge (n).

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

**T**O whatever Event these *Seals* may refer, it is certain, that the Representations here made, are very *awful*, and very instructive. Let us consider ourselves as invited to *come up and see*, and let us observe the memorable Spectacle with Attention. Let the View of the *white Horse, and his Rider*, who went forth *conquering, and to conquer*, lead us to reflect on the peaceful Purposes of our blessed Saviour's Appearance, and the Rapidity of his Conquests; and engage us frequently to pray for the further Prosperity of his *Kingdom*, that Kingdom of Righteousness, Love and Happiness. When we think of the terrible Effects of *War*, of *Famine*, and of *Pestilence*, represented by the *three following Horses*, and their *Riders*, here mentioned, let it excite our Thankfulness, that not one of this dreadful *Triumvirate* is sent forth against us, though our national Crimes have indeed deserved, that they should invade us with united Terrors; that Peace should be taken from our Land, that our *Bread* and *Water* should be received by *Weight* and *Measure*, and that the Dead should lie unburied in our Streets, the Food of the Fowls of Heaven, and the Beasts of the Earth: Nor can any Thing more justly excite our Gratitude and Thankfulness, than that the Terrors and the Guilt of *sanguinary Persecution*,

Ver. 1.

Ver. 2.

Ver. 3, 4, 5.

Ver. 9.

(n) *Day of his Wrath come.*] As it appears, by comparing one Part of this Book with another, that the last *Seal* made Way for, and introduced the *Trumpets*; and the last *Trumpet*, the *Vials*; it is justly argued, that there is a Reference to a Series of Events, successively following each other; and consequently, this Passage cannot refer to the *final Judgment*; but to some great and spreading *Calamity*, in which the Hand of *Christ* should appear. And this Interpretation is illustrated and confirmed, by the Manner in which the Destruction of *Jerusalem* is foretold. *Mat.* xxiv. Compare *Isa.* ii. 19. xiii. 6. *Hos.* x. 8. *Zeph.* i. 14. *Luke* xxiii. 30.—*Mr. Lowman* interprets this 6th *Seal*, of the great Commotions in the Empire, from *Maximinian* to *Constantine the Great*, who put an End to the Persecution of *heathen Rome*; from A. D. 304. to A. D. 323. during which Time, there were many bloody Battles between the contending *Emperors*, till *Constantine* abolished *Paganism*, and established the Christian Religion. This Interpretation he confirms by apposite Passages from *Lactantius*, and the *heathen* Historians; and it appears the most probable.



Sect. 9. *cution*, are not to be found in the Midst of us. The History of its Horrors and Ravages in other Nations and Ages, may sometimes be an Exercise of our *Faith*; and we may be ready to cry out, with *the Souls under the Altar*, *How long, O Lord, holy and true, wilt thou not avenge the Blood of thy Saints upon the Earth*. But let us wait with Patience; let us not form a hasty and inconsiderate Judgment. The Dead, *who die in the Lord*, and those who have been persecuted to Death for his Sake, and in his Cause, are incomparably more *happy*, than those who are the happiest among the living. The *white Robes*, and golden Crowns, with which they are adorned, are an abundant Compensation, not only for every *lighter* Suffering, but even for the slow *Fire*, and the *Rack*, those most dreadful Instruments of Torture. And though their malicious and implacable Enemies may bitterly insult over them, *for a while*, yet *the triumphing of the Wicked is for a short Time*, their guilty Spirits will soon be summoned before the great *Avenger of Blood*; and the Day is coming when they shall be publicly brought forth, to suffer the utmost Demands of his Justice; even that Day, when all the *figurative* Descriptions here used shall be fully answered, in their *literal* Meaning; *when the Sun shall indeed be turned into Darkness, and the Moon into Blood; when the Volume of Heaven shall be rolled up as a Scrole, and its Stars shall fall from their Orbs*. It is no Wonder, that ungodly Sinners fly from this alarming and tremendous Scene with wild Consternation and Confusion; no wonder, that they rend the very Heavens with their Cries, and *call upon the Mountains to fall upon them, and the Rocks to cover them*: For oh! what were the sudden and irresistible Crush of a *Rock*, or a *Mountain* when compared with the Weight of the *Wrath of the Lamb*, and with the *Fire and Brimstone of this second Death*. Oh! that by the Expectation of this awful Day, Men of *all Ranks and Conditions*, may be influenced to make their Application to him, while he yet appears in the Displays of his Grace and Mercy; to *kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and they perish from the Way, even when his Wrath is only beginning to be kindled*. (Psalm ii. 12.)

Ver. 11.

Ver. 13, 14.

Ver. 15, 16, 17.

S E C T

S E C T. X.

*The Increase of the Christian Church, which was to succeed the opening of the Seals, is represented by the Vision of twelve thousand sealed, out of each Tribe of Israel; and then follows a View of the Glory and Happiness of those, who should courageously endure Persecution, while it continued. Rev. VII. throughout.*

REVELATION VII. 1.

AND after these Things, I saw four Angels standing on the four Corners of the Earth, holding the four Winds of the Earth, that the Wind should not blow on the Earth, nor on the Sea, nor on any Tree.

REVELATION VII. 1.

AND after these Things, it pleased GOD Sect. 10. to give me a Representation of the Increase which his Church should receive, after the Commotions which had been shadowed out by those Visions, which were introduced by the opening the Seals. Accordingly, I saw four Angels standing at the four Corners of the Earth; that is, the North, the South, the East, and the West; and they appeared as holding the four cardinal Winds of the Earth in their Hands, that the Wind might not blow upon the Earth, nor upon the Sea, nor upon any Tree; but that there might be the most entire and compleat Calm, to represent the peaceful State of Things, which should succeed the tumultuous and distressing Revolutions, which had been intimated to me above. (Compare Jer. xlix. 36, 37.) And I saw another Angel 2. ascending from the Rising of the Sun, to intimate the Progress the Gospel should make from the East to the West; having in his Hand the Seal of the living GOD, in order to impress a Mark upon those, whom he was graciously determined to distinguish as his own Property, and who should be inclined to dedicate themselves to his Service. And be

2 And I saw another Angel ascending from the East, having the Seal of the living God: And he cried with a loud

Sect. 10. *he cried with a great Voice to the four Angels, to whom Power was given over the*

Rev. VII. 2. *Winds, at present to restrain them, but afterwards to loose them with great Violence, and by them to injure, in a terrible Manner, the Earth, and the Sea; Saying, Injure not, by the missive Vengeance committed to you, the Earth, nor the Sea, nor the Trees, until we have sealed the Servants of our GOD in their Foreheads; that, distinguishing them by that Seal, you may know how to moderate the Force of the Storm, where their Safety and Comfort is concerned.*

4 *And I then heard the Number of those that were sealed, in all, one hundred and forty four thousand, who were sealed in an equal Number, out of every Tribe of the Children of Israel.*

5 *And I heard them mentioned in the following Order; of the Tribe of Judah (a), as the most noble and glorious, distinguished by its regal Dignity, and its peculiar Relation to Christ according to the Flesh, [were] sealed twelve thousand. And of the Tribe of Reuben, though that were so much degraded by Jacob, and comparatively so small, when the People were numbered in the Wilderness, [were] sealed twelve thousand too. Of the Tribe of Gad, whose Territories in Canaan lay contiguous to those of Reuben on the other Side Jordan,*

loud Voice to the four Angels, to whom it was given to hurt the Earth and the Sea,

3 *Saying, Hurt not the Earth, neither the Sea, nor the Trees, till we have sealed the Servants of our God in their Foreheads.*

4 *And I heard the Number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed an hundred and forty and four thousand, of all the Tribes of the Children of Israel.*

5 *Of the Tribe of Juda were sealed twelve thousand. Of the Tribe of Reuben were sealed twelve thousand. Of the Tribe of Gad were sealed twelve thousand.*

(a) *Of the Tribe of Judah, &c.]* I freely acknowledge, that it is very difficult to me to assign the Reason of that Order in which the Tribes are placed, or the Reason, why one of the Tribes is omitted; the latter of which appears much more important, than the former. However this is plain, that when *Levi* was mentioned for one Tribe, it was necessary, that, since *twelve* only were to be mentioned, one should be omitted. Some indeed have imagined, that *Dan* was omitted, to express how detestable *Idolatry* is in the Sight of GOD; as the Tribe of *Dan* was the first that fell into *Idolatry*, after their Settlement in *Canaan*. Compare *Judges* xviii. 30, 31. *Dr. Hammond* assigns another Reason, namely, that long before that Time, the Tribe of *Dan* was destroyed, or brought very low, say the *Jews*; and indeed it is not numbered among the rest of the Tribes, *1 Chron.* ii. and following Chapters. See *Ham. in loc.*

(b) *Mul-*

6 Of the Tribe of Aser were sealed twelve thousand. Of the Tribe of Nephthalim were sealed twelve thousand. Of the Tribe of Manasses were sealed twelve thousand.

And, from thence, the Angel appeared to pass over to the North-West Boundary of the Land, and to the Shore of the Mediterranean Sea, which was the Lot of the Tribe of Aser, of which there [were] also sealed twelve thousand. And of the neighbouring Tribe of Naphtali, whose Inheritance lay East of the former, [were] sealed twelve thousand. And of the Tribe of Manasseh, whose Land lay next to the East of Naphtali, [were] sealed the same Number, that is, twelve thousand. And of the

Sect. 10.  
Rev. VII. 6.

7 Of the Tribe of Simeon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the Tribe of Levi were sealed twelve thousand. Of the Tribe of Issachar were sealed twelve thousand.

Tribe of Simeon, though it had its Inheritance taken out of that of Judah, and so might seem less considerable, there [were] sealed as many as of the former, even twelve thousand. And of the Tribe of his Brother Levi, though his Posterity were scattered among the other Tribes, and had no Land that was properly their Inheritance, [were] sealed twelve thousand likewise. And of the Tribe of Issachar, to which the Angel then passed, [were] sealed twelve thousand.

7

8 Of the Tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the Tribe of Joseph were sealed twelve thousand. Of the Tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelve thousand.

of the Tribe of Zebulun, which lay contiguous to that of Issachar to the North, [were] also sealed twelve thousand. And of the Tribe of Ephraim, the other Son of Joseph, and by far the most considerable of his Descendants, [were] sealed twelve thousand too, he not being in that Respect at all distinguished from Manasseh his Brother. And to conclude, of the Tribe of Benjamin, Jacob's youngest Son, [were] sealed twelve thousand. And thus, upon the whole, the Number of one hundred and forty four thousand was compleated. Nor did I presume to enquire, why Dan was not introduced among his Brethren, on this Occasion.

8

9 After this I beheld, and

Thus did God represent to me, the extraordinary Growth of the Christian Church, which seemed to be Matter of inexpressible Joy to the

9

Sect. 10. the Inhabitants of the heavenly World.

Rev. VII. 9. *For after this, I saw, and beheld a great*

*Multitude, who made a thronged Assembly, which no one could number (b), and appeared to have come out of every Nation, and Tribe, and People, and Language; the blessed Fruit of preaching the Gospel over all the World; and they then appeared to me, as standing before the Throne, and before the Lamb, clothed in long white Robes, and having Branches of Palms in their Hands, to signify the Victory they should gain over all their Enemies, and the State of Holiness and Joy to which they should be finally conducted, notwithstanding all the formidable Opposition through which they should be called to pass.*

10 *And I heard them crying with a loud Voice, in Token of the Intenseness of their Devotion, and saying, Let all the Glory of this great Salvation which we have obtained, be ascribed to our GOD who sits upon the Throne, and from thence has graciously regarded us, and exalted us to such Dignity and Happiness, mean and miserable as we once were; and let it be also ascribed to the Grace and Blood of the Lamb, who gave himself to be slain for our Redemption.*

11 *And all the Angels stood round about the Throne, and encompassed also, at the same Time, the twenty four Elders, and the four living Creatures, and, in Token of the humblest Reverence, they fell down on their*

and lo, a great Multitude, which no Man could number, of all Nations, and Kindreds, and People, and Tongues, stood before the Throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white Robes, and Palms in their Hands;

10 And cried with a loud Voice, saying, Salvation to our GOD which sitteth upon the Throne, and unto the Lamb.

11 And all the Angels stood round about the Throne, and about the Elders, and the four Beasts, and fell before the Throne on

(b) *Multitude whom no one could number, &c.*] Some have supposed, that the hundred and forty four thousand were Jews, and that these were the Gentile Church. But it appears to me, that the sealing these Thousands, expresses the Progress of the Gospel under Constantine; and that the innumerable Multitude here spoken of, were the Spirits of good Men departed out of this World, and now with GOD in Glory; And especially those who had weathered the Difficulties and Persecutions, during the first Centuries of Christianity, when the civil Power was generally active against it; and when, I think it highly probable, that many Persecutions might have raged in various Parts of the World, whose Histories are not come down to us. And perhaps the holding the Winds, which is mentioned ver. 1. may denote the Peace in Constantine's Time.

(c) *Made*

on their Faces, and worshipped GOD,

12 Saying, Amen: Blessing, and Glory, and Wisdom, and Thanksgiving, and Honour, and Power, and Might be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.

*their Faces before the Throne, and worshipped* Sect. 10.

GOD, Saying, Amen: Thus let it be, Rev. VII. 12.

let the Blessing, and the Glory, and the Wisdom, and the Thanksgiving, and the Honour, and the Power, and the Strength, [be] ascribed to our GOD for ever and ever, Amen: May all Creatures for ever bless, and give Thanks to him, as originally and essentially possessed of supreme Glory, compleat Wisdom, of irresistible and Almighty Power, and therefore worthy of all Honour, though exalted above all Praise: We acknowledge him to be so, we rejoice that he is so, and wish that universal Nature may join with us in so reasonable, and so delightful a Homage; and pronounce the solemn Amen.

13 And one of the Elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white Robes? and whence came they?

14 And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great Tribulation, and have washed their Robes, and made them white in the Blood of the Lamb.

*And one of the Elders answered, saying to me, As for those who are clothed with white Raiment, and make such a splendid Appearance, who are they, and whence do they come?*

*And I, supposing by his Question, that he asked in order to quicken my Attention, to what he had to tell me concerning them, said to him, Sir, I conclude thou knowest, though I do not. And he said to me, It is true; and I would have thee observe, for thine own Encouragement, and that of thy Brethren, and those who may arise after thee, that, these are they who are come out of much Tribulation, which they have endured in the Cause of true Religion; and they have washed their Robes, and made them so white as you see them, in the Blood of the Lamb (c): They owe all their*

(c) *Made them white in the Blood of the Lamb.*] It looks too much like an obstinate Resolution, by no Means to acknowledge the Efficacy of Christ's Blood to our Salvation, for any to maintain, that the Blood of the Lamb here signifies Blood shed for his Sake, when it is said in Words so much resembling these, Chap. i. 5. *who loved us, and washed us from our Sins, in his own Blood: And Chap. v. 9. thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to GOD by thy Blood.* The Texts produced to palliate the other forced and unnatural Interpretation, when consulted, will appear little to the Purpose. They are chiefly Col. i. 24. and Heb. xi. 26.

Se<sup>ct.</sup> 10. their Exaltation and Glory, not to the Blood  
 they have themselves offered, but to that  
 most precious Blood of his, which he permit-  
 ted to be shed for their Sakes.

Rev. VII. 15. *Therefore,*  
 being thus redeemed to God by him, and  
 having been enabled to approve their Fide-  
 lity to their divine Master, in the midst of  
 the greatest Extremities, they now receive  
 a rich Equivalent for all they have suffered ;  
 for *they are before the Throne of GOD, and*  
*they perform divine Service to him Day and*  
*Night in his Temple ; and he who sitteth upon*  
*the Throne, pitches his Tabernacle, as it were,*  
*upon them, and displays the Tokens of his*  
 Presence all around them.

16 *They shall*  
*hunger no more, neither shall they thirst any*  
*more, for ever ; nor shall the scorching Rays*  
*of the Sun fall upon them, nor any other in-*  
 convenient and disagreeable Heat ;

17 *For*  
*the Lamb, who is in the midst of the Throne,*  
*shall himself, as it were, own the Relation*  
*of a Shepherd to them, and take Care to*  
*feed them, and he shall lead them to Fountains*  
*of living Water ; and that GOD whom*  
 they have faithfully served, and whose In-  
 terest has been so dear to them, shall act,  
 as it were, the Part of an indulgent Father,  
 and tenderly wipe away every Tear from  
 their Eyes ; comforting them with the most  
 reviving Consolations, after all the Calami-  
 ties and Distresses he has permitted them to  
 endure below.

15 Therefore are they  
 before the Throne of God,  
 and serve him Day and  
 Night in his Temple : And  
 he that sitteth on the Throne  
 shall dwell among them.

16 They shall hunger  
 no more, neither thirst any  
 more, neither shall the Sun  
 light on them, nor any heat.

17 For the Lamb which  
 is in the midst of the Throne,  
 shall feed them, and shall  
 lead them unto living Foun-  
 tains of Waters : And God  
 shall wipe away all Tears  
 from their Eyes.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Ver. 4,—8. **H**OW inexpressibly happy are the *Thousands of those who are seal-*  
*ed, those whom GOD has marked out for his own, and, in*  
 that Character, has taken them under his special Protection. What-  
 ever Storms and Tempests may arise, they are in no Danger of be-  
 ing forsaken ; they shall be preserved inviolably safe, and their Hap-  
 piness

happiness is secure. They shall be brought at length to join with the *innumerable Multitude, who surround the Throne*, and ascribe, as all Israel must do, *Salvation to GOD who sitteth on the Throne, and to the Lamb*. And *ob!* that the *Salvation of Israel were come out of Sion*, that their Praises might sound sweeter here on Earth, and that Myriads of new Voices might unite in the harmonious Concert. Those Songs of Heaven let us begin below, and say, *Amen, Blessing, and Glory, and Wisdom, and Thanksgiving, and Honour, and Power, and Might, be to our GOD for ever and ever, Amen!* If, through his Grace, we can call him *our GOD*, how cordially should we join in this sublime Ascription!

In the mean Time, we may see the Church *in Affliction*; we may feel a *large Share of Personal, or Publick, Tribulation*; but, when it presses hardest upon us, let us lift up our Eyes to that *glorious Scene* which the *Apostle* beheld, and which was so excellent and sublime, that it might well transport him, even under the *Tribulations* through which he was then making his Way to it. Let us persevere, steadily and faithfully, as they did; and the Day will come, when our *Robes* will be as *white*, and our *Crowns* as *radiant*, and our *Palms* as *verdant*, as theirs. Let us then bear with *Patience, Hunger and Thirst, Heat and Weariness*, while we travel through this *Vale of Tears*; *rejoicing in Hope* of the everlasting Refreshment and Pleasure, to which *the Lamb will lead us*; even those *Fountains of living Water*, of which he will give us to drink, when *GOD has wiped away all Tears from our Eyes*, and placed us *before his Throne*, where we shall *serve him Day and Night in his Temple*, and see his Face, and dwell with him, and have him for ever *dwell with us*, and in us. *Amen.*

Sect. 10.  
Ver. 9.

Ver. 12.

Ver. 10.

Ver. 14.

Ver. 13.

Ver. 9.

Ver. 16.

Ver. 17.

Ver. 15.

S E C T.



## S E C T. XI.

*On the opening the seventh Seal, the seven Angels appear with their Trumpets, and the four first of them sound. Rev. VIII. throughout.*

## REVELATION VIII. I.

Sect. II. **T**HUS I have given an Account of the Manner in which the Lamb proceeded in opening Six of the Seals, and of the Effects produced by them: *And I am now to add, that when he had opened the seventh Seal, there was a profound Silence in Heaven (a) for about the Space of half an Hour, to awaken, by that Means, a more earnest Attention to the extraordinary Things, that were to appear in Consequence of the opening that Seal. And I saw the seven Angels (b) which I had before mentioned, and which then stood before the Throne of GOD; and seven Trumpets were given to them, that they might each of them successively sound an Alarm; which I understood to be the Symbol of some very important and awakening Events, which were, in order of Time, to succeed those which had*

## REVELATION VIII. I.

**A**ND when he had opened the seventh Seal, there was Silence in Heaven about the Space of half an Hour.

2 And I saw the seven Angels which stood before GOD; and to them were given seven Trumpets.

(a) *Silence in Heaven.*] Some are of Opinion, here is an Allusion to the Silence, which used sometimes to be kept in the Worship of GOD in the Temple, while the People were praying, *Luke i. 10.*—I think, with *Mr. Lowman*, that the seventh Seal was only introductory to the Trumpets, and the seventh Trumpet to the Vials.

(b) *The seven Angels which stood, &c.*] The Manner in which this is expressed in the Greek, τὰς ἀγγελῶν—οἱ ἑστῶσι, is very emphatical. It seems to signify the seven Angels, who had before been mentioned as standing before the Throne; and this Form of speaking so plainly refers to what had been said before, that it does a great deal towards proving, that the seven Spirits of GOD, mentioned *Chap. v. 6.* as the Eyes and Horns of the Lamb, are the same with these Angels mentioned in the Note on *Rev. iv. 5.* though, as I have there intimated, it is not absolutely certain.

(c) *With*

3 And another Angel came and stood at the Altar, having a golden Censer; and there was given unto him much Incense, that he should offer it with the Prayers of all Saints upon the golden Altar, which was before the Throne.

had been expressed by the Seals. *And* Sect. 11. while they were preparing to execute the Orders they had received, *another Angel,* Rev. VIII. 3. whom I understood as a typical Representation of the great High-Priest of the Church, *came and stood before the Altar* which I saw in this celestial Temple, *having a golden Censer, and there was given to him much fragrant Incense,* consisting of a Variety of excellent Perfumes mingled together, *that he might present [it] with the Prayers of all the Saints, upon the golden Altar which was before the Throne (c);* just as the Jewish High-Priest used to burn Incense on the golden Altar in the Temple, while the People were praying in the Courts of it, at the Hour of Morning and Evening Sacrifice. *And* 4 *the Smoke of the Perfumes went up* in a thick and odoriferous Cloud, together *with the Prayers of the Saints, from the Hand of the Angel* as he stood before GOD; and seemed thereby emblematically to signify, how grateful to the Divine Being those Prayers were,

4 And the Smoke of the Incense which came with the Prayers of the Saints, ascended up before God out of the Angels Hand.

(c) *With the Prayers of all the Saints.*] Some have thought, that this is a plain Intimation of the Doctrine of the *Intercession of the Angels*, which is urged to have been an erroneous Jewish Notion; and those who imagine it to be taught here, have made it an Argument against the *Inspiration* of this Book. But I rather agree with those Interpreters, who consider *this Angel* as an Emblem of *Christ*. If we were indeed to consider *Christ* as appearing in the Shape of a *Lamb*, this would be a Difficulty; but it does not appear at all absurd to me, that while the *Efficacy of Christ's Atonement* was represented by a *Lamb slain*, his *Intercession*, consequent upon it, should be represented by an *Angel offering the Incense*; which seems only a *Symbolical, or Hieroglyphical, Declaration* of this Truth, that the Prayers of the Saints on Earth, are rendered acceptable to GOD by the *Intercession* of one in Heaven, who appears as a Priest before GOD: Just as the *Vision of the Lamb* represents to us, that a Person of perfect Innocence, and of a most gentle and amiable Disposition, eminently adorned and enriched with the Spirit of GOD, has been offered as a Sacrifice; and is, in Consequence of that, highly honoured on the Throne of GOD. But who this important Victim, and this Intercessor is, we are to learn elsewhere; and we do learn, that both these Offices met in one, and that this illustrious Person is *Jesus, the Son of GOD*.—As the *Golden Altar* made a Part of the Scene, there was a Propriety in its appearing to be used, and the Time of *Praying* was the *Hour of Incense*. This *Vision* may probably be designed to intimate, that considering the Scenes of Confusion represented by the Trumpets, the *Saints* should be exceeding earnest with GOD, to pour out a Spirit of Wisdom, Piety and Zeal, upon the Church, and preserve it safe amidst these Confusions.

(d) *With*

Sect. 11. were, which proceeded from holy Hearts,  
 being recommended by the Intercession of  
 Rev. VIII. 4. that great High-Priest, whom this glorious

5 the Jewish Tabernacle of old. *And*

when *the Angel* had performed this Office, in order to shew the awful Manner in which God would avenge the Injury, which his praying People upon Earth received from its tyrannical and oppressive Powers, he *took the Censer, and* advancing towards the brazen Altar of Burnt-Offerings, he *filled it with Fire of the Altar (d), and threw it upon the Earth; and* as soon as ever this Action was performed, *there were long and terrible Voices, and Thunders (e), and Lightnings,* which seemed to break out from the Shechinah, the glorious Token of the divine Presence; *and* there was also the sudden and violent Shock of *an Earthquake,* which seemed to shake the Foundation of

6 the World; *And the seven Angels, who had the seven Trumpets,* stood out in Order, and *prepared themselves, that they might sound,* as every one should receive the appointed Signal; which hereupon was given to each in his Order.

*And*

5 And the Angel took the Censer, and filled it with Fire of the Altar, and cast it into the Earth: and there were Voices, and Thundrings, and Lightnings, and an Earthquake.

6 And the seven Angels which had the seven Trumpets, prepared themselves to sound.

(d) *With Fire of the Altar.*] There was no Fire upon the *Golden Altar*, but that which was in the *Censer*, in which the *Incense* was burnt; so that we must necessarily, by this Fire of the Altar, understand that of the *Brazen Altar*, though it is not expressly declared to be so; and this may intimate, that in some other Places the same Words may, by comparing different Circumstances, have different Ideas annexed to them.

(e) *Voices and Thunders.*] If the *latter* Word be intended to explain the *former*, it might be rendered, *Voices, even Thunders*. But, if different Ideas are to be annexed to the Words, I must confess, that I know not what they are. Yet we may imagine some distinct articulate Sounds different from *Thunder*, to be mixed with it, like that which some of those present heard, *John* xii. 29. (Compare *Isa.* xxix. 6.) This Representation may be intended to intimate, in general, the Confusion and Calamities, with which the *Period*, expressed by the successive *Trumpets*, should be filled, and the Regard God would shew to his praying People during its Continuance.

(f) *Hail*

7 The first Angel sounded, and there followed Hail and Fire mingled with Blood, and they were cast upon the Earth: and the third Part of Trees was burnt up, and all green Grass was burnt up.

And the first Angel sounded his Trumpet; Sect. 11. and there was a violent Storm of Hail and Fire, and the Shower was also mingled with Blood (f), and it was cast down upon the Earth, greatly to the Detriment of its Productions; and particularly, it seemed to me, that a third Part of the Trees was burnt up, and all the green Grass of the Field was also burnt and scorched up. (Compare Exod. ix. 23.)

Rev. VIII. 7.

8 And the second Angel sounded, and as it were a great Mountain burning with Fire was cast into the Sea, and the third Part of the Sea became Blood:

And the second Angel sounded; and it was as if a great Mountain burning with Fire (g) was cast into the Sea; and it produced so great an Alteration in the Colour of the Waters, that it seemed as if a third Part of the Sea became Blood, which I easily apprehended to signify the Slaughter, which should come upon many People, by Means of some victorious Prince, and those who fought under his Banner.

9 And the third Part of the Creatures which were in the Sea, and had Life, died; and the third Part of the Ships were destroyed.

And, as a further Token of it, a third Part of the Creatures which had animal Life in the Sea died, and a third Part of the Ships were destroyed thereby, and the Persons sailing in them all perished. (Compare Jer. li. 25.)

10 And the third Angel sounded,

And the third Angel sounded; and to represent some great Destroyer that was to appear, and become very conspicuous, both for the Michief he should occasion, and the Ruin

(f) *Hail and Fire mingled with Blood.*] Grotius explains this, of the Hardness of Heart, and bloody Rage of the Jews; Mr. Mede, of the Invasion of the Northern Nations upon the Romans; and Mr. Clark, of the Arian Heresy and Persecution; whereby many Professors of Christianity were infected, and many destroyed. See his Annotations in loc. But Mr. Lowman, more probably, interprets it of the bloody Wars in Constantine's Family, which, with the Invasion of the neighbouring Nations, almost ruined the whole Strength of the Roman Empire, fell heavy on it's great Men, and particularly the Family of Constantine, which, during this Period, was quite extinguished; from A. D. 337. to A. D. 379.

(g) *Mountain burning.*] Grotius explains this of the Soldiers Rapine upon the People of Jerusalem, and firing the Towers; Mr. Mede, of the firing of Rome; Mr. Clark, of the Spirit of Ambition and Pride among the Clergy; Mr. Lowman, of the Invasion of Italy by the Northern Nations, and the taking of Rome by Alaric, General of the Goths, who plundered it, and set it on Fire; and this Calamity was followed by the Spoil of the greatest Part of Italy, from A. D. 379. to A. D. 412.

Sect. II.  
 Rev. VIII.  
 10.

Ruin in which he should be involved, *there fell from Heaven a great Star (b), burning like a Torch; and it fell upon a third Part of the Rivers, and upon the Fountains of Waters; to signify the Influence, which the Person represented by it should have upon human Affairs, and upon those Things that were the Springs of Comfort and Support to Mankind.*

And, in Reference to the Effect it was to produce, *the Name of the Star is called, Wormwood, and a third Part of the Waters became impregnated with Wormwood; but with this additional Circumstance, that it was poisonous as well as distasteful; and many Men died in Consequence of drinking the Waters, because they were become bitter.* (Compare Exod. vii. 20, 21.)

12 And the fourth Angel sounded; and the third Part of the Sun was smitten, and the third Part of the Moon, and the third Part of the Stars, so that the third Part of them, even of their Light, was darkened (i), and the Day did not appear, [with respect to] a third Part of its Lustre, and the Night also; but there was as great a Deficiency in the usual

founded, and there fell a great Star from Heaven, burning as it were a Lamp, and it fell upon the third Part of the Rivers, and upon the Fountains of Waters:

11 And the Name of the Star is called Wormwood: and the third Part of the Waters became Wormwood; and many Men died of the Waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth Angel sounded, and the third Part of the Sun was smitten, and the third Part of the Moon, and the third Part of the Stars; so as the third Part of them was darkened, and the Day shone not, for a third Part of it, and the Night likewise.

(b) *There fell from Heaven a great Star.*] Compare Dan. viii. 10. Grotius interprets it of the Egyptian Impostor, Acts xxi. 38. Mr. Mede of the Fall of the Western Empire under Augustulus; and Mr. Clark, (see his Annot. in loc.) of the Corruption of Ordinances by an heretical Churchman, of great Parts and considerable Figure, whom he supposes to be Pelagius. Some explain it of Mahomet, whose Name signifies illustrious. Mem. of Literat. Vol. v. pag. 253. But Mr. Lowman, with greater Probability, interprets it of the succeeding Ravages in Italy, founding the Gothic Kingdom there, and putting an End to the Roman Empire; from A. D. 412. to A. D. 493. Agreeably to this Historians inform us, that several Provinces of the Empire were dismembered, the City of Rome again taken, and plundered, and Italy became a Prey to the barbarous Nations.

(i) *Darkened.*] Compare Ezek. xxxii. 7, 8. Grotius interprets this of taking the South Galilaean Towns; Mr. Mede, of the Destruction of the Light of Rome, when deprived of regal and consular Majesty. And Mr. Clark (see his Annot. in loc.) of eclipsing the Light of the Church by Tradition and human Inventions. Mr. Lowman interprets it of the Wars in Italy, between the Goths and Justinian's Generals, whereby the Exarchate of Ravenna was erected, all remaining Power and Authority at Rome suppressed, and the Imperial City became subject to Ravenna, where the Exarch or Lieutenant of the Eastern Emperor resided; from A. D. 493. to A. D. 568.

usual Light of both, as when either the Sun Sect. 11.  
 by Day, or the Moon by Night, is so eclipsed, Rev. VIII.  
 that a third Part of the Body of each is 12.  
 shaded; which I understood to imply, that  
 GOD would, in the Course of his Providence,  
 draw a Veil over the whole Face of Things,  
 and obscure the Glory of the State to which  
 this Vision referred. *And I beheld, and* 13  
*heard one of the Angels flying in the midst of*  
*Heaven, saying with a loud Voice, The*  
*Things, which have already happened, are ter-*  
*rible; but, what is yet to come, is much more*  
*so: Woe, Woe, Woe, to those that dwell upon the*  
*Earth, for the remaining Sounds of the Trum-*  
*pet of the three Angels, which are yet to*  
*sound. Prepare therefore for the Manifesta-*  
 tion of these awful Scenes.

13 And I beheld, and heard  
 an Angel flying through the  
 midst of Heaven, saying  
 with a loud Voice, Wo,  
 Wo, Wo, to the Inha-  
 biters of the Earth, by Rea-  
 son of the other Voices of  
 the Trumpet of the three  
 Angels which are yet to  
 sound.

I M P R O V E M E N T.

WHILE we prepare ourselves, with *silent* Admiration, to at- Ver. 1.  
 tend the Discoveries here opening upon us, let us rejoice in  
 the *symbolical* Representation of the *Intercession of Jesus*, our great  
 High-Priest, shadowed forth, in so beautiful and expressive a Man-  
 ner, by the *Angel standing at the Altar with the golden Censer, and*  
*much Incense.* Behold, how the *Prayers of all the Saints* ascend be- Ver. 3, 4.  
 fore GOD with Acceptance! See the Method we are to take, if we  
 desire that our's should be acceptable to him; and, encouraged by  
 such a View, let us offer them up, not only with Humility, but  
 with chearful Confidence, though we are conscious of their great  
 Unworthiness.

To what Wretchedness are they exposed, who oppress and *injure*  
 those, that, through their great *Representative*, have such an Inte- Ver. 7.  
 rest in the Court of Heaven. The *Hail and the Fire* shall, at the Ver. 8.  
 Divine Command, powerfully plead their Cause; the *Mountains*  
*shall be torn from their Basis, and cast into the midst of the Sea;* Ver. 12.  
 the *Sun, the Moon, and the Stars, shall be darkened* in their Orbs, and  
 all Nature be thrown into convulsive Agonies, e'er GOD will suffer  
 them finally to be over-born, or fail to punish, with becoming Se-  
 verity, those who continue to persecute, or evil-intreat them.

R r r 2

Let

Sect. 11.

Let such awful Representations as these, remind us of the *Sovereign Almighty Power* of God, whom all the Hosts of Heaven worship with Reverence; and, at whose awful Word, when he gives forth his Voice, *Hailstones and Coals of Fire descend*; (*Psal. xviii. 13.*) *at whose Rebuke the Pillars of Heaven tremble, and the Foundations of the Earth are shaken; who speaks to the Sun, and it shineth not; who darkeneth the Moon, and sealeth up the Stars. Who would not fear thee, O thou King of Nations, so terrible in the Judgments which thou executest on the Earth? Deliver us, we intreat thee, from the multiplied and accumulated Miseries of those, who continue obstinately to oppose thee; and conduct us at length to thy Heavenly Presence, though it should be through Days of Darkness, and Waters of Bitterness, and Seas of Blood. Amen.*

Ver. 13.

## S E C T. XII.

*The Effect of the fifth and sixth Angels sounding their Trumpets. Revelation IX. throughout.*

## REVELATION IX. I.

Sect. 12.

Rev. IX. 1.

**A**ND the fifth Angel sounded; and I saw an Angel of distinguished Lustre, descending with such amazing Velocity, that he seemed like a shooting Star; (*Compare Job xxxviii. 7.*) and when he was fallen, as it were, *from Heaven to the Earth, and appeared standing upon it, there was given to him the Key of the bottomless Pit:* And he went to the Door of that infernal Dungeon, *and he opened the bottomless Pit, and a thick Smoke ascended, from the Pit, as the Smoke of a great Furnace, and it diffused itself all abroad; so that the Sun, and the whole Body of the Air, were darkened by the Smoke and gloomy Exhalations of the Pit; which I understood as intimating some terrible Calamity approaching.* And I saw a very shocking Appearance; for *out of the Smoke*

## REVELATION IX. I.

**A**ND the fifth Angel sounded, and I saw a Star fall from Heaven unto the Earth: and to him was given the Key of the bottomless Pit.

2 And he opened the bottomless Pit, and there arose a Smoke out of the Pit, as the Smoke of a great Furnace; and the Sun and the Air were darkened by reason of the Smoke of the Pit.

3 And there came out of the

the Smoke Locusts upon the Earth; and unto them was given Power, as the Scorpions of the Earth have Power.

4 And it was commanded them, that they should not hurt the Grass of the Earth, neither any green Thing, neither any Tree; but only those Men which have not the Seal of God in their Foreheads.

5 And to them it was given

*Smoke there came Locusts upon the Earth, (a)* Sect. 12. *and a destructive Power was given to them,* Rev. IX. 3. *as the Scorpions of the Earth have Power,* that they should be as pernicious to the Inhabitants of the Earth, as those terrible Animals, and should injure Men by their Stings, as well as by their Teeth. *And* 4 *there was this further remarkable Circumstance, that whereas Locusts bring along with them such general Destruction to all Vegetables, it was said to them, whom I saw on this Occasion, that they should not injure the Grass of the Earth, nor any green Thing, nor any Tree, but only (b) some human Creatures; and this, under a particular Limitation to the Men who had not the Seal of GOD in their Foreheads; from whence I inferred, that this destructive Visitation should especially affect those, who, whatever they might profess, were destitute of true vital Religion. And to signify the* 5 *lingering Vexation, which these Destroyers should occasion to the Inhabitants of the Countries they were to ravage, I was further informed, that it was given to them, that they*

(a) *Locusts upon the Earth.*] Many Protestant Writers imagine these *Locusts* to signify the religious Orders of *Monks* and *Friars*, &c. The learned *Grotius* understands by them, the Sect of the *Zealots*, which appeared among the *Jews* during the Siege, and at the Time of the Destruction of *Jerusalem*. *Mr. Mede*, the Inundation of the *Saracens*; and indeed, with considerable Circumstances of *Resemblance*. The ingenious *Mr. Lowman* confirms this Interpretation; and shews, that the Rise and Progress of the *Mahometan* Religion and Empire, till checked by internal Divisions, is a remarkable Accomplishment of this Part of the Prophecy; which is further illustrated, by the Ignorance and Error the *Mahometans* every where spread, their great Number and Hardiness, their Habits, Customs and Manners; namely, twisting their Hair, wearing Beards, their Care of their Horses, invading their Neighbours in Summer, like *Locusts*, sparing the Trees and Fruits of the Countries they invaded, &c. The Captivity of the Men, and the miserable Condition of the Women, exposed to Persons, who gave an almost unbounded Liberty to their Lusts, which was enough to make them even to *desire Death*, ver. 6. All these Circumstances are suitable to the Character of the *Arabians*, the History of this Period, and to the Particulars of the Prophecy.—The Period extends from A. D. 568. to A. D. 675.

(b) *Only those that have not.*] The Use of the Particles, *et non*, here, is very remarkable; and it is apparently necessary, it should be rendered *only*, rather than *except*.

(c) *Shall*



Sect. 12. *they should not kill them outright, but that they should be tormented five Months; which might*

Rev. IX. 5. *be intended to express a Calamity, that should endure about an hundred and fifty Years. And their Torment, that is, that which they occasioned by their Attack, [was,] extremely violent, like that of a Scorpion, when it*

6 *strikes a Man. And in these dreadful Days, to which this Vision refers, Men shall seek Death in a wild kind of Despair, (c) and shall not find it; and they shall desire to die, and Death shall flee away from them, and leave them to mourn over a Life of Wretchedness, all the Comforts and Enjoyments of which shall be utterly swallowed up in their Sufferings. And these Creatures*

7 *were not exactly of the Form of Locusts; but, tho' they bore some Resemblance to them, in many Instances, they differed from them in others, and were to be considered as a (d) Kind of Hieroglyphical Representation of Creatures which are very mischievous and terrible; and I particularly observed, that the Likeness of the Locusts [was] like Horses prepared for War, (Comp. Joel ii. 4.) especially the Form of their Heads; and whereas common Locusts have some brilliant Ornaments on their Heads, and various Parts of their Bodies, I observed, with Regard to these, that on their Heads [were,] as it were, Crowns, like Gold; and their Faces were like the Faces of Men; which two Circumstances gave me to understand, that they were intended as an Emblem of mighty and powerful Men, who were*

given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five Months: and their Torment was as the Torment of a Scorpion, when he striketh a Man.

6 And in those Days shall Men seek Death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and Death shall flee from them.

7 And the Shapes of the Locusts were like unto Horses prepared unto Battle; and on their Heads were as it were Crowns like Gold, and their Faces were as the Faces of Men.

(c) *Shall seek Death, &c.* As such great Numbers were, in Fact, slain by these Locusts, (if they signify, as is generally supposed, the *Saracens*;) this Expression must only be understood of many Survivors, who, by the Calamities they inflicted, should be made weary of their Lives. See Note (a).

(d) *A Kind of Hieroglyphical Representation.* As there are no Animals in Nature answerable to those which are here described, I take it for granted, that as the four Animals mentioned above are *Hieroglyphicks of Angels*, so are these of *mischievous Creatures*. Compare Chap. iv. 7. Note (f).

(e) *Abaddon*

8 And they had Hair as the Hair of Women, and their Teeth were as the Teeth of Lions.

9 And they had Breastplates, as it were Breastplates of Iron; and the Sound of their Wings was as the Sound of Chariots of many Horses running to Battle.

10 And they had Tails like unto Scorpions, and there were Stings in their Tails: and their Power was to hurt Men five Months.

11 And they had a King over them, which is the Angel of the bottomless Pit, whose Name in the Hebrew Tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek Tongue hath his Name Apollyon.

were to reign over various Provinces and Kingdoms. Sect. 12.

And they had on their Heads long Tresses of Hair, like the Tresses of Women; whereas common Locusts have only a Down upon their Breasts. And whereas other Animals of that Name have large strong Teeth, their Teeth were like [the Teeth] of Lions, sharp and pointed, as well as large and strong. And instead of the

fine Down on the Breasts of common Locusts, they had Breastplates like Breastplates of Iron; and whereas common Locusts make a terrible Noise with their Wings, the Noise which these strange and symbolical Locusts made, by the Motion of their Wings, [was] like the Noise of Chariots, [and] many Horses rushing to War; so that they seemed to tear the Ground with their Rage and Fury, and to shake the Air with their Neighings. And instead of being formed at the lower End of their Bodies, as other Locusts are, which have no Stings, but are quite inoffensive and innocent Animals, these Creatures had Tails like Scorpions, and their Stings were in their Tails; and their Power, as I observed above, [was] given them to hurt the Earth, and Men its Inhabitants, for about five Months, or about an hundred and fifty Years. And they had a

King over them, (wherein they further differed from the Locust Kind,) (Prov. xxx. 27.) who is the Angel of the bottomless Pit, and the great Head of their Apostate Spirits who dwell there; whose Name [is] in the Hebrew Language, Abaddon; (e) and in the Greek, he has the Name of Apollyon; both the one, and the other, expressing his destructive Nature,

(e) Abaddon.] When the Etymology is so evident, and so particularly explained by the Author, I cannot but wonder at Dr. More's Endeavour to explain it another Way, as referring to the Profession which the Mahometans should make of maintaining the Doctrine of the Unity. See More's Theol. Works, pag. 130.

(f) The

Sect. 12. Nature, and the dreadful Havock he makes, wherever his Attempts are successful. And thus, *one Woe is gone ; [and] behold yet other two Woes besides it, coming, threatening yet more terrible Calamities than these.*

Rev. IX. 12.

- 13 *And upon this, the sixth Angel sounded ; and I did not see any immediate Appearance in Consequence of it ; but I heard a Voice from the four Horns of the Golden Altar which was before GOD, (which seemed therefore to come from the most holy Place, which was directly behind it,) Saying to the sixth Angel, who still had the Trumpet which he had sounded in his Hand, Loosen now the four Angels, (f) which are bound by the great River Euphrates ; who were intended to represent some Potentates arising from that Part of the World, who, in the Period referred to, should become very famous throughout the Earth, for their Exploits and Achievements. And the four Angels were loosened, who were prepared for a certain Period of Time, signified, according to the prophetic Reckoning, by an Hour, and a Day, and a Month, and a Year ; (g) that they might make a great Slaugh-*

12 One Wo is past, and behold there come two Woes more hereafter.

13 And the sixth Angel founded, and I heard a Voice from the four Horns of the golden Altar, which is before God,

14 Saying to the sixth Angel which had the Trumpet, Loose the four Angels which are bound in the great River Euphrates.

15 And the four Angels were loosed, which were prepared for an Hour, and a Day, and a Month, and a Year, for to slay the third Part of Men.

(f) *The four Angels which are bound.] Grotius refers this to the Roman Army under four Commanders, which came from the Borders of this River. Mr. Mede, to the four Beglerbegs of the Turks ; and he interprets ver. 17. of Guns invented about that Time, and used by them in their successful War upon the Europeans. See the Passage at large in More's Theol. Works, pag. 130, 131. They, who refer this Passage to the Rise of the Turkish Ottoman Empire, suppose that the four Angels mean either four Provinces, or four Cities near Euphrates, from whence considerable Leaders arose, who pushed on, and advanced the Turkish Conquests ; and Mr. Pyle, and others, have endeavoured to confirm this Interpretation. But, as the Turkish Empire did not commence till the 13th Century, this Event seems to be too late in the successive Order of Periods, and correspondent Events. Mr. Lowman's Interpretation seems to me much more probable, which refers it to the Re-union of the divided Saracen Power, their invading and ravaging Europe, till they were defeated by Charles Martel ; and, agreeable to ver. 20, 21. the Sufferers were so far from repenting, that Image-Worship was confirmed by Order of the Pope, and the Authority of Councils in the East and West.—This Period reaches from A. D. 675. to A. D. 750.*

(g) *Of an Hour and a Day, &c.] Dr. Lloyd, Bishop of Worcester, on his Interpretation of this Passage, foretold, many Years before it happened, that Peace would*

be

Slaughter among the Inhabitants of the Sect. 12. Earth; or, as it was expressed to me in the Vision, according to the Language used before, might kill a third Part of the Men, who, after the preceding Plagues, continued upon it. They accordingly appeared, as leading on a mighty Army; and the Number of the Horsemen they led on, was immensely great, represented to me by two Myriads of Myriads, that is, no less than twenty Millions. And I heard the Number of them thus mentioned to me, as it was impossible for me to count them. And I saw the

Rev. IX. 15.

16 And the Number of the Army of the Horsemen were two hundred thousand thousand: and I heard the Number of them.

16 They accordingly appeared, as leading on a mighty Army; and the Number of the Horsemen they led on, was immensely great, represented to me by two Myriads of Myriads, that is, no less than twenty Millions. And I heard the Number of them thus mentioned to me, as it was impossible for me to count them. And I saw the

17 And thus I saw the Horses in the Vision, and them that sat on them, having Breast plates of Fire, and of Jacinct, and Brimstone: And the Heads of the Horses were as the Heads of Lions; and out of their Mouths issued Fire, and Smoke, and Brimstone.

17 Horses, and those that sat upon them thus, in [their] Appearance; that is, Having Breast-plates of Fire and Hyacinth and Brimstone, which seemed to send forth blue, burning Flames, which went devouring before them; and the Heads of the Horses [were] like the Heads of Lions, and out of their Mouths went Fire, and Smoke, and Brimstone, to represent the Courage and Fierceness of these Armies, and the irresistible Destruction they should make, where-ever they marched.

18 By these three was the third Part of Men killed, by the Fire, and by the Smoke, and by the Brimstone, which issued out of their Mouths.

18 And with the united Force of these three Things, that is, by the Fire, and by the Smoke, and by the Brimstone, that went out of their Mouths, they slew a third Part of Men, as was

be concluded with the Turks in the Year 1698, which accordingly came to pass; and that they should no more renew their Wars against the Popish Christians. His Argument was, that the Angels loosed were the Commanders of the many Turkish Squadrons, who had been before subject to the Sultan of Babylon. And as for the Time here mentioned, he endeavours to shew it to be, in the Prophetick Stile, 396 Years; and computing from their Conquests at Prousse, in 1302, by adding 396, the Number will be 1698. See Bishop Burnet's Hist. of his Times, Vol. i. pag. 204. But how lucky soever the Conjecture was, it does not convince me, that it is the true Interpretation; and so much the less, as it seems evident to me, the Year spoken of in this Book, consists only of 360 Days. Besides, the Turks have renewed their War on the Popish Christians, particularly on the Emperor, and the Republick of Venice, in 1716, and since.—As for the Phrases, an Hour, a Day, &c. I do not understand them; they may, perhaps, only signify a determined, limited Time, as such Expressions in Scripture frequently do; though they would seem most naturally, and agreeable to the Prophetick Reckoning, to denote about 391 Years.

Sect. 12. was declared above. And as the Destroyers, represented by the Locusts, appeared as having devouring Teeth, and Stings like Scorpions in their Tails, these had likewise a double Provision of mischievous Furniture; for *their Powers are partly in their Mouth*, from whence, as I have already said, the Fire appeared to issue, *and in their Tails; and their Tails also [are] like Serpents, having Heads, and with them*, as well as with  
 20 their Mouths, *they injure Men.*

Thus they were represented as bringing a most fearful Destruction on the human Species. Yet it was not productive of such a Reformation as might have been expected: *the Remainder of Men, who died not by these Plagues, did not repent of the wicked Works of their Hands*, nor reform those Abominations which had brought down Destruction on their Brethren; and particularly, did not forsake those detestable Superstitions, which had been so offensive to GOD, *that they might not worship Dæmons (b), and senseless Idols of Gold, and Silver, and Brass, and Stone, and Wood; which*, instead of having any divine Properties, are destitute of the Senses common to Men, and even to Brutes, as they *can neither see, nor hear, nor walk.*

21 *And they repented not of other Crimes, more immediately affecting their Fellow-Creatures, such for Instance, as their Murders, and their Sorceries (i); nor their Fornication, nor their Thefts and Robberies, by which they had so notoriously injured all about them,*

19 For their Power is in their Mouth, and in their Tails: for their Tails were like unto Serpents, and had Heads, and with them they do Hurt.

20 And the rest of the Men which were not killed by these Plagues, yet repented not of the Works of their Hands, that they should not worship Devils, and Idols of Gold and Silver, and Brass, and Stone, and of Wood: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk:

21 Neither repented they of their Murders, nor of their Sorceries, nor of their Fornication, nor of their Thefts.

(b) *Not worship Dæmons.*] This *Dæmon-Worship* Mr. Mede has taken great Pains to prove, to be the Worship of dead Men, which is so common in the Church of Rome. As for their *worshipping Idols of Gold, Silver, Brass, Wood, and Stone*, the Fact is as evident, as that the Heathens themselves ever practised such idolatrous Worship.

(i) *Sorceries.*] By *φαρμακείων*, Dr. Clark understands all the superstitious Methods of making Men fancy themselves to be religious, by what others can do for, or to them, or what they can do for themselves, without the Practice of true Righteousness and Virtue. *Clark's xviii Sermon. pag. 168.* But others understand by it the Arts of poisoning.

them, and bid Defiance to every Law, but Sect. 12. that of their own unruly Appetites and Passions, to which they were held in the basest Subjection. Rev. IX. 21.

I M P R O V E M E N T.

**I**T is exceeding natural to reflect, while reading this Representation, how exactly the mightiest Princes, and most savage Destroyers of Mankind, execute the *Plan* of divine *Providence*, and fulfil the Decrees of GOD; even while they are intending nothing, but the Gratification of their own Ambition, and Avarice, and Cruelty. *The Angel of GOD* holds the *Keys of the bottomless Pit*; and it is by divine Permission, that these voracious *Locusts* issue forth and infest the Earth. The Ministers of GOD's Pleasure, bind the Messengers of Destruction, and *loosen* them, at the divine Command. And the Season, wherein they shall ravage the World, is here limited to *a Year, to a Day, to an Hour*: *ABADDON, APOLLYON*, the great and mighty Destroyer, cannot effect the least of his mischievous and ruinous Purposes, without the Permission of the Preserver and Redeemer of Mankind; and cannot go beyond his Limits. And even the Mischief which he does, is intended and over-ruled to subserve the wisest and kindest Designs. But oh, how grievous is it to think of that Degree of Obstinacy and Perverseness, which so generally prevails in the World, and which renders Men so *incorrigible*, under the most painful Chastisements *Satan* is permitted to inflict. Send forth, O Lord, the gentle Influences of thy Spirit, and melt those Hearts, which will not be broken by the weightiest Strokes of thy Vengeance; and deliver us from a Temper, so much resembling that of *Hell*, and so evidently leading down to those dreadful Abodes; the Temper of those, who are hardened by Correction, and *in the Time of their Affliction* and Misery, *increase* and *multiply* their Transgressions against thee.

## S E C T. XIII.

*The Vision of a mighty Angel appearing in great Glory, who had in his Hand a little Book, which St. John was commanded to eat. Rev. X. throughout.*

## REVELATION X. I.

Sect. 13.

Rev. X. I.

**A** Most beautiful *and* wonderful Scene now opened itself to my View; for *I saw another mighty Angel*, who carried, in his Appearance, the Marks of unusual Strength and Vigour, *descending from Heaven, clothed with a Cloud (a)*, so that I could not discern the full Lustre of his whole Body; though, variegated with the Rays it either reflected or transmitted, it appeared very glorious; *and the compleat Circle of a Rainbow [was] about his Head, and his Face [was] bright as the meridian Sun*; so that I could not bear to gaze directly upon it. *And I had Reason to think, there was an extraordinary Lustre emitted from all the other Parts of his Body; for even his Feet were like Pillars of lucid Fire.* *And he had in his Hand a little Book open*, which I afterwards understood to be the Volume of the Divine Decrees, to be communicated to me. *And he put his right Foot upon the Sea, and the left Foot upon the Earth*, to signify the Divine Dominion over both, and the Concern, of both, in what was further

## REVELATION X. I.

**A**ND I saw another mighty Angel come down from Heaven, clothed with a Cloud, and a Rainbow *was* upon his Head, and his Face *was* as it were the Sun, and his Feet as Pillars of Fire.

<sup>2</sup> And he had in his Hand a little Book open: And he set his right Foot upon the Sea, and his left Foot on the Earth,

(a) *Angel clothed with a Cloud.*] The Beauties of this noble Description are finely illustrated by that most elegant and pious Writer, the Rev. Mr. James Hervey, in his *Meditations*, Vol. ii. pag. 21, 22.

(b) *Lion*

3 And cried with a loud Voice, as when a Lion roareth: and when he had cried, seven Thunders uttered their Voices.

ther to be transacted.

And he cried Sect. 13.

with a loud, solemn, and awful Voice, as a Lion roars (b); and when he had cried, the seven Thunders, which I had heard before, uttered their Voices again, responsive to his, and to increase the Terror of so tremendous a Scene. And when the seven Thunders had uttered their Voices, I was about to have written the Contents of what they had uttered; for, loud as their Voices were, there was something articulate and intelligible in the Sound; and, just in that Instant, I heard a Voice from Heaven, saying unto me, Seal up in Secrecy what the seven Thunders have spoken, and write them not; for they are, indeed, intended for thy Information, but not for that of the Publick.

Rev. X. 3.

4 And when the seven Thunders had uttered their Voices, I was about to write: and I heard a Voice from Heaven, saying unto me, Seal up those Things which the seven Thunders uttered, and write them not.

And the Angel, which I saw stand upon the Sea, and upon the Earth, lifted up his Hand to Heaven.

4

5 And the Angel which I saw stand upon the Sea, and upon the Earth, lifted up his Hand to Heaven.

And the Angel, which I saw with so many Ensigns of Distinction, standing with one Foot on the Sea, and the other on the Earth, lifted up his Hand towards Heaven, with a Gesture of Solemnity and Reverence, as appealing to the great Sovereign of the Universe, And sware by the eternal Jehovah, even by him who liveth for ever and ever, who created the Heaven, and those Things which are in it; and the Earth, and the Things which are in it; and the Sea, and the Things which are in it; that Time should be no longer (c): That the Time of the

5

6

6 And sware by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created Heaven and the Things that therein are, and the Earth and the Things that therein are, and the Sea and the Things which are therein, that there should be Time no longer:

Judg-

(b) Lion roars ] The original Word, μυαλαι, rather signifies Bellows; but that English Word has an Idea annexed to it, which appeared to me not to suit the Dignity of this Description.

(c) That Time should be no longer.] The Word χρονος sometimes signifies Delay, as well as Time. And, according to the former Version, the Meaning is, that there should be no Delay of the Destruction of the Church's Enemies, and of its prosperous and glorious Condition. In the latter View, it signifies, that the End of Time, and the Consummation of all Things, should soon come. Though the former Sense seems to be principally intended, yet I own myself not to be so certain, as absolutely to determine it. I think it is evident, that some of the concluding Prophecies of this Book, refer to the eternal State, and therefore I have taken that Sentiment into the Paraphrase, though not to the Exclusion of the former Sense; which, as I said, seems to be principally intended, considering the Connection, and that the Interval between the



Sect. 13. Judgments, to be signified by the pouring  
 Rev. X. 6. out of the seven Vials, should not be much longer delayed; and that, when it came, the whole Oeconomy of the World should soon draw to a Conclusion, and all the Periods of Time be consummated, that the more important Scenes of Eternity might open :

- 7 He sware, I say, that the Delay should not be much longer, *but* that it should hasten to its End, *in the Days of the Voice of the seventh Angel, who was about quickly to sound,* and was to introduce the Period of the seven Vials; and that, consequent on the pouring out of the last Vial, *the Mystery of GOD (d), as he had revealed its glad Tidings to his Servants the Prophets, should be fulfilled,* in the utter Ruin and Destruction of all the Enemies of the Church, and in its  
 8 happy and glorious Exaltation (e). *And the Voice, which I before heard from Heaven, now spake to me again, and said, Go and take the little Book, which, as thou perceivest, is open, out of the Hand of the Angel, which standeth upon the Sea, and upon the*  
*the*

7 But in the Days of the Voice of the seventh Angel, when he shall begin to sound, the Mystery of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his Servants the Prophets.

8 And the Voice which I heard from Heaven spake unto me again, and said, Go and take the little Book which is open in the Hand of the Angel which standeth upon the Sea, and upon the Earth.

the pouring out the seventh Vial; and the Consummation of all Things, must, at least, be more than a thousand Years; and, perhaps, a much more considerable Period. Dr. More is of Opinion, that the only Meaning of this Clause is, that the Time was elapsed, which had been marked out by the Period of *three Years and an half*. See his *Theolog. Works*, pag. 122.—Grotius refers the Accomplishment of it to the Vengeance to be taken upon the *Jews*, by *Adrian* and his Successors. Compare *Saurin's Serm. Vol. i. pag. 1, 2.*—Mr. Lowman renders the Clause, *The Time shall not be yet*; that is, the Time of the glorious State of the Church shall not be yet; but it shall not be long to it; for *in the Days of the Voice of the seventh Angel*, as it follows, *the Mystery of GOD shall be fulfilled, &c.*

(d) *Mystery of GOD.*] Dr. Butler, the present worthy Bishop of Durham, understands by this, the great *Mystery of Providence*, in suffering Vice and Confusion to prevail so much in the World, See *Butler's Anal.* pag. 40.

(e) *Should be fulfilled.*] As it is here said, that the *Mystery of GOD* should be fulfilled, it seems plainly to intimate, that the Things yet to be revealed, should extend to the End of Time; and when it is declared, that this should be fulfilled in *the Days of the Voice of the seventh Angel, who was about to sound*, it intimates, that the Remainder of Time, even to the End of the World, should be comprehended in that Period of Prophecy, to which the *seventh Trumpet*, introductory to the Vials, relates.

(f) *Again*

9 And I went unto the Angel, and said unto him, Give me the little Book. And he said unto me, Take it, and eat it up; and it shall make thy Belly bitter, but it shall be in thy Mouth sweet as Hony.

10 And I took the little Book out of the Angels Hand, and ate it up; and it was in my Mouth sweet as Hony: and as soon as I had eaten it, my Belly was bitter.

11 And he said unto me, Thou must prophesy again before many Peoples, and Nations, and Tongues, and Kings.

*the Earth; for it is intended for thy Use* Sect. 13.  
and Information. (Compare Jer. xv. 16.)

*And accordingly I went to the Angel, and* Rev. X. 9.  
*awful as his Appearance was, I said to him*  
*boldly, in Consequence of the Divine Com-*  
*mand, Give me the little Book which thou*  
*holdest in thine Hand; and he said unto me,*  
*Take [it], as Ezekiel did that which was*  
*shewn to him, (Ezek. iii. 1, 2.) and eat it*  
*up; to signify thy receiving it into thy*  
*Mind, and digesting there the Events to*  
*which it relates; and it shall imbitter thy*  
*Belly, but in thy Mouth it shall be sweet as*  
*Honey; to signify, that how pleasant soever*  
*it may be to be honoured with such Reve-*  
*lations, the Contents of these, in thine Af-*  
*ter-Reflections, shall be very bitter and*  
*grievous.*

*And, accordingly, I took the* 10  
*little Book out of the Hand of the Angel,*  
*and seemed, to myself, to eat it up; and*  
*the Event exactly answered what he had*  
*said to me; for, in my Mouth it was sweet*  
*as Honey, but when I had eaten it, my*  
*Belly was bitter.*

*And he said to* 11  
*me, Thou hast not yet dispatched the whole*  
*of thy Work, in what thou hast already*  
*registered, of these Visions of the Lord; but*  
*thou must again prophecy (f) to many People,*  
*and Nations, and Tongues, and Kings. The*  
*Oracles thou hast yet to deliver, shall be*  
*propagated through many Countries, transla-*  
*ted into a Variety of Languages, and pe-*  
*rused by Persons of various Ranks and Con-*  
*ditions, and some of them the most eminent*  
*and conspicuous; but fear not to deliver*  
*them,*

(f) *Again prophecy.*] Mr. Mede infers from hence, that the *Apostle* is about to go over the *same Period* of Time, he had before been discoursing of, giving an Account of the State of the *Church*, as he had just done of the State of the *Empire*. But the *new Descriptions*, and *new Events* to which they refer, which are introduced here, and constitute the *following Chapters*, may be sufficient, without any Peculiarity of Interpretation, to justify the Expression. See the preceding Note.

Sect. 13. them, being assured that he, by whom they  
 are inspired, will take Care they shall be  
 Rev. X. 11. punctually fulfilled.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

**I**F other Parts of this *Chapter* should seem to be less pregnant with important practical Instructions, perhaps the Design was, that we might be engaged to fix our entire and undivided Attention on the awful Words of this *illustrious Angel*; whose Appearance is described in Colours so exceeding beautiful and striking: with the Radiance of *the Sun* streaming from his *Countenance*; the variegated Colours of the *Rainbow encircling his Head*; of a Stature so vast and majestick, that he at once *bestrode the Earth and the Sea*; with his *Hand solemnly lifted up to Heaven*; with a *Voice awful as Thunder, appealing to the venerable Name of GOD, the Creator of the Heavens, of the Earth, of the Sea,* and of all their various Inhabitants, in order to add the Sanction of an inviolable *Oath*, to a Declaration, which in itself, from such a divine Messenger, was worthy of absolute and entire Credit; a Declaration, *that Time should be no longer*: which is a certain Truth, in the most sublime and interesting Sense, of which the Words are capable. *Time*, as distinguished into *Days, and Weeks, and Months, and Years*, by the Revolution of the heavenly Luminaries, when the most resplendent of *these* are extinguished in their Orbs, as they quickly will; *when the Sun shall be turned into Darkness, and the Moon into Blood*; *Time* shall then, I say, be absorbed in an immeasurable *Eternity*. And oh, *what an Eternity!* An *Eternity*, either of perfect and inconceivable Felicity, or hopeless and remediless Misery.—But, besides this general Construction, there is an important Sense in which the Proclamation of this *celestial Herald* shall be fulfilled, with Regard to Individuals; that *Time shall be no longer*; *the Time* of Divine Patience in waiting upon us; *the Time* in which we shall be continued under the Sound of the Gospel, and the Offers of Mercy, and the Means of Salvation; *the Time* in which we shall be conversant with these Scenes of Mortality, and with the Persons who are here most familiar to us, at least in the present Circumstances of their Being. *The Period*, during which we are to inhabit this Earth, and enjoy our spiritual Advantages, or our worldly Possessions and Pleasures,

Pleasures, is confined within very narrow Limits. The *Oath* of Sect. 13. this mighty Angel is, perhaps, just ready to be accomplished, and *Time is closing*, and Eternity is opening upon us. O that we may consider Time and all its Concerns, as very shortly to vanish, that our Thoughts and our Cares may be directed more and more to our own *Eternal* Interest, and to that of our Fellow-Creatures. *The Judge is even at the Door*: Let us endeavour therefore to be ready, let us improve every transient Moment to the Purposes for which it was given us; and, in these Views of the Brevity of Time, and the Importance of preparing for Eternity, let us detest all the Pleasures and Allurements of Sin; for they will soon appear like the *mysterious* Morfel of the *Apostle*, *bitter as Wormwood in the Belly*, Ver. 8,—11. though with deceitful and fatal Indulgence, we may, for a few Moments, have *rolled them*, like a sweet Morfel, *under our Tongues*; vainly desiring to prolong those Pleasures, which can serve only to add more keen and exquisite Sensibility to our future Pain.

S E C T. XIV.

*The Vision of the Angel commanding St. John to measure the Temple; and declaring that the Gentiles should tread down the outer Court: And that the two Witnesses should be slain, and raised from the Dead, and received into Heaven: After which, the Triumphs of divine Vengeance over their Enemies are celebrated.* Rev. XI. 1,—18.

REVELATION XI. 1.

AND there was given me a Reed like unto a Rod: and the Angel stood, saying,

REVELATION XI. 1.

AND when I had eaten the Book according to the divine Command, *there was given to me*, as there was shewn to Ezekiel, whose Vision bore so great a Resemblance to mine, (Ezek. xl. xliii.) *a Reed, like a [measuring] Rod; and the Angel*, which had spoken to me before, stood by

Sect. 14.  
Rev. XI. 1.

Sect. 14. by me, saying, *Arise, and measure the Temple of GOD (a), and the Altar, and the*  
 Rev. XI. 1. Space filled by *those who worship at it* in the  
 2 inner Court; *And the outer Court of the Temple, throw out of the Account, and measure it not; for there shall be such great Disorders introduced, that it shall be given to the Gentiles, and they shall trample, not only upon that, but upon the holy City, for the Space of forty two Months: Such Corruptions shall prevail in the Christian Church, though by Profession the holy City, and the Temple of God, that they who pretend to be its Inhabitants, and to worship in it, shall be no better, in the divine Account, than*  
 3 Gentiles. *And, in the mean Time, I will raise up some to bear an united Testimony against these growing Corruptions; and I will give to my two Witnesses (b) an authoritative [Commission,] and they shall prophecy all this while, that is, during the forty two Months, or a thousand two hundred [and] sixty Days, clothed in Sackcloth (c);*  
 to

saying, Rise, and measure the Temple of God, and the Altar, and them that worship therein.

2 But the Court which is without the Temple leave out, and measure it not; for it is given unto the Gentiles: and the holy City shall they tread under Foot forty and two Months.

3 And I will give Power unto my two Witnesses, and they shall prophecy a thousand two hundred and threescore Days clothed in Sackcloth.

(a) *Measure the Temple of GOD.*] From the Proportion between the Area of the Temple, and the outer Court, supposed to be as one to 3 and  $\frac{1}{2}$ ; Mr Mede, understanding by the Temple, the pure uncorrupted State of the Church; and, by the outer Court, its corrupted State, endeavours to prove, that the latter did not entirely commence till the Beginning of the fifth Century; inferring also from hence the Authority of the four first general Councils. The Argument may be seen at large in his Works, pag. 588, 589. But it does not seem to require a particular Examination, especially in the Face of so many notorious Errors, and absurd Superstitions, as were evidently introduced into the Church long before the Time in Question. How Grotius should imagine it to signify, that the Temple should not be rebuilt by Adrian, though Jerusalem should, is to me very surprizing: I doubt not but it signifies the Profanation of the Church by growing Idolatry and Superstition, tho' some few should preserve their Purity.

(b) *Two Witnesses.*] Some have strangely supposed these are Enoch and Elijah, who are to come and fight against Antichrist. See Limb. Theol. 7. xi. 31. Dr. More understands it of unpolluted Priests, and faithful Magistrates, appearing for Reformation. Others, of the Old and New Testament. But the learned Bishop Lloyd, of the Waldenses and Albigenses. Perhaps it may signify any Witnesses for Reformation, who should be raised up during this Period; illustrated by two, as that concurring Number was necessary, according to the Law, to make the Testimony valid; or to intimate, that their Number should be but small. See Mr. Lowman in loc. who proves, there has been a Succession of faithful Witnesses.

(c) *Clothed in Sackcloth.*] This was the Habit of Mourners, and suited to their prophetick Character, Isai. xx. 2. This Period is the same with that after described,

4 These are the two Olive-trees, and the two Candlesticks standing before the God of the Earth.

to denote their afflicted Condition. *These* Sect. 14. *are* dear and precious to me, as Joshua and Zerubbabel among the Jews of old; and in Reference to the Emblems under which I represented those my faithful Servants, (Zach. iv. 3, 11, 14.) I may call these, *the two Olive-Trees, and the two burning and shining Lamps, who stand before the GOD of the whole Earth*; high in his Esteem, and continually in his Presence; planted like Olive-Trees in his House, or kindled like the sacred Lamps in the Candlestick of the Sanctuary. *And if any* 5

5 And if any Man will hurt them, Fire proceedeth out of their Mouth, and devoureth their Enemies: and if any Man will hurt them, he must in this Manner be killed.

*one will* obstinately injure them, encouraged by the Gentleness of their Appearance, and the seeming Weakness of their present State, he shall find to his Cost, that they are under an Almighty Protection. Their Cries to GOD shall be heard, and such sudden and irresistible Vengeance shall follow, that *Fire shall seem to come out of their Mouth (d), and devour their Enemies* at once: It shall not merely scorch and terrify, but utterly destroy them: *And I pronounce it again, if any one will injure them, so must he be put to Death.* *These,* despised as they are, 6

6 These have Power to shut Heaven, that it rain not in the Days of their Prophecy:

*have Power with GOD, like my Servant Elijah of old, (1 Kings xvii. 1.) by their Prayers to shut Heaven (e), so that no Rain shall be showered down in the Days of their Prophecy;*

ed, as the Time of the *Woman's Abode in the Wilderness*, Chap. xii. 6. Dan. vii. 25. xii. 7.

(d) *Fire shall come out of their Mouth.*] I think it highly probable this Expression may be *figurative*, and intended to express the awful Vengeance which *Christ* will take on their Enemies in that Day, *when he is revealed in Flaming Fire*, and when the Injury received by any of his Servants, and especially his *faithful Witnesses*, shall be remembered, and their Wrongs fully avenged.

(e) *Shut Heaven, &c.*] Lord Chief Justice *Hale* seems to think it is intimated here, that the Spirit of *Moses* and *Elias* should be in them, *Elijah* having called down *Fire from Heaven*, and hindered the *Rain*; and *Moses* having turned *Water into Blood*. (See *Hale's Contemp. Vol. ii. pag. 175.*) — It indeed seems to intimate, that *GOD* would interpose for their Defence, as he pleaded the Cause of his *People* and *Witnesses* of old, in the awful Manner here described.

T t t 2

(f) *Out*

Sect. 14. *ph*ecy; and, like Moses and Aaron, (Exod. vii. 20.) they have Power over the Waters, to turn them into Blood, and to smite the Earth, as often as they will, with every Plague :

Rev. XI. 6.

Such is the Prevalence of their Prayers with God, that they may be said, as it were,

7 to be armed with his Omnipotence *And when they shall have finished their Testimony,* according to the Plan of Divine Providence, *the fierce and savage Beast, which ascends out of the Abyss (f),* and is afterwards to be described, *shall make War against them, and shall conquer, and triumph over them for a while, and carry his Success so far,*

8 as to kill them. *And their dead Corpses [shall lie] unburied in the open Street of the great City (g), which is spiritually called, on Account of its Lewdness and Persecutions, SODOM and EGYPT (b); where also our Lord was crucified; that is, in the Place, where he has suffered so much in his spiritual Members, that he may be said to*

have

cy: and have Power over Waters to turn them to Blood, and to smite the Earth with all Plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they shall have finished their Testimony, the Beast that ascendeth out of the bottomless Pit, shall make War against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them.

8 And their dead Bodies shall lie in the Street of the great City, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.

(f) *Out of the Abyss.*] By the *Abyss* Dr. More understands the Sea, and thinks this Passage is to be explained by what follows, Chap. xiii. 1. I am rather of Opinion, it alludes to what had been said before, Chap. ix. 11. where a *King of the Locusts* is mentioned as a most destructive Creature, called also *the Angel of the Abyss*; and it is certain, the Word *ἄβυσσος* is used with this Latitude. (Compare *Acts* xxviii. 4, 5.)

(g) *The great City.*] Mr. Fleming understands this of the *German*, that is, the *Roman Empire*; of which *Bohemia* was a Part. Indeed, it is probable the whole *Roman Empire* may be here represented, as *one idolatrous and impure City*; as elsewhere, the *Church of Christ* is represented by one *pure, holy, and glorious City*. It may intimate the extreme Perfection many of God's Witnesses should suffer; and that their Enemies should triumph over them so much, that his Cause should seem to be quite ruined.

(b) *Sodom and Egypt.* The *Lewdness* of *Sodom*, the *Cruelty* of *Egypt*, are so celebrated in *Scripture*, as to make them proper *Emblems* of these Evils in general. And the abominable Wickedness of *the Church of Rome*, in both these Respects, (I suppose not to be equalled in any other Society of Men, calling themselves a *Church*;) is most justly, as well as severely, expressed by these *Appellations*. When one sees their *Places of Worship* every where adorned with *Images of a crucified Saviour*, one would think, (as our Lord says with Respect to the *Garniture* which the *persecuting Pharisees* bestowed upon the *Sepulchres* of the ancient *Prophets*, that they meant to perpetuate the Memory of the Dead *with Honour*;) that these Persecutors intended to *crucify Jesus in Effigy*: A Sentiment, perhaps, not disagreeable to the original Design.

(i) *Three*

9 And they of the People, and Kindreds, and Tongues, and Nations, shall see their dead Bodies three Days and an half, and shall not suffer their dead Bodies to be put in Graves.

have been crucified over again.

And Sect. 14.

[Persons] of [various] People, and Tribes, and Tongues, and Nations, shall look on their dead Bodies three Days and an half, and maliciously insult over them; and they shall not permit their Corpses to be laid in the Graves, which should be prepared for them.

Rev. XI. 9

10 And they that dwell upon the Earth shall rejoice over them, and make Mer-ry, and shall send Gifts one to another; because these two Prophets tormented them that dwelt on the Earth.

And they who dwell upon the Earth, shall rejoice over them, and be glad, and with mutual Congratulation, shall send Gifts to each other, to testify their great Exultation, because these two Propbets, who tormented those who dwell upon the Earth, by their plain and faithful Remonstrances, shall be entirely silenced; and, as they suppose, for ever removed out of any Capacity of molesting them.

10

11 And after three Days and an half, the Spirit of Life from God entered into them:

All these Things I distinctly saw, just as the Angel had represented them to me in his Description; and while I was looking, with the greatest Concern, upon the venerable Remains of these two excellent Persons, denied the common Rites of Burial, and exposed to all the Insults of their Enemies, I saw, that after three Days and an half (i), the Spirit of Life, communicated from GOD who quickeneth all Things, entered into them.

11

(i) Three Days and an half.] Very different Interpretations have been given of this Period of Time. Mr. Fleming thinks it to his Purpose to observe, that from the Death of Andrew Pallicka, the last Bohemian Martyr, to the Appearance of Carol-stadius and Zuinglius, at the Beginning of the Reformation, was just three Years and an half. See Fleming of the Resur. pag. 144. The abovementioned Bishop Lloyd imagined it was fulfilled in the Slaughter of the Albigenses and Waldenses, in the Year 1686; and they arose in 1690. He supposes Archbishop Usber's celebrated Prophecy a Mistake of this Place; he thought the treading down the Court was the Affliction of external Professors; (whereas it was, indeed, the general Prevalence of Idolatry in the Church;) and that the Witnesses were slain by the King of France, not by the Pope; And that the Earthquake, (ver. 13.) signified the Destruction of the Kingdom of France. Some think here is an Allusion to the Time of our Saviour's lying in the Grave; and that it intimates, that the Time of the Witnesses suffering, will be in Proportion to the Time of their Prophecy, which is described as a Time of Persecution; and so it comports with three Times and an half, 1260 Days, or 42 Months. It may, in general, signify a certain limited Time; and, perhaps, three Days and an half, may be mentioned, in Reference to the State of a dead Body, which will seldom keep longer without Corruption. See Mr. Lowman in loc.

(k) Ascended



Se&t. 14: *them, and they stood upon their Feet again, to renew their Testimony; and great Fear*  
 Rev. XI. 11. *immediately fell upon those who looked upon them, when they saw so wonderful a Resurrection.*

12 *And they, that is, the Witnesses, heard a great Voice, saying unto them from Heaven, in loud Accents, which I likewise distinctly heard, Come ye up hither; and they accordingly ascended up to Heaven (k) in a Cloud, as our Lord had done in the Sight of his Apostles; and their Enemies, with infinite Surprize, and fruitless Rage, looked on them, without being able to hinder or oppose the marvellous Event.*

13 *And in that Hour, as an Earthquake attended the Resurrection of our Lord, so likewise, at the Ascension of these Witnesses, there was a great Earthquake; and a tenth Part of the Buildings of the City fell down to the Ground, magnificent and sumptuous as they were; and seven thousand Men, some of them of great Name and Figure, were killed (l) by the Earthquake; and the rest were terrified, and their Alarm wrought more kindly upon them, than Judgments had done upon some others; for they gave Glory to the GOD of Heaven, as the Author of these awful Events.*

14 *The second Woe is past, [and] a terrible one it is; but let none imagine all Ground of Alarm is over, for behold the third Woe cometh quickly, to succeed it.*

15 *And the seventh Angel sounded; and immediately there were great Voices of Thunder in Heaven, saying, At length the happy, the triumphant Period is approaching, and seems*

them: and they stood upon their Feet, and great Fear fell upon them which saw them.

12 And they heard a great Voice from Heaven, saying unto them, Come up hither. And they ascended up to Heaven in a Cloud, and their Enemies beheld them.

13 And the same Hour was there a great Earthquake, and the tenth Part of the City fell, and in the Earthquake were slain of Men seven thousand: and the Remnant were affrighted, and gave Glory to the God of Heaven.

14 The second Woe is past, and behold, the third Woe cometh quickly.

15 And the seventh Angel sounded, and there were great Voices in Heaven, saying,

(k) *Ascended up to Heaven.*] This was, no doubt, to signify, that the Cause of true and genuine *Christianity* should not only be revived, but *exalted*; and that it should have so illustrious a Triumph over all Opposition, as no *earthly* Elevation was sufficient *adequately* to represent.

(l) *Seven thousand Men were killed.*] This seems to represent some *great Calamities*, which were to befall the Enemies of the *Reformation* during the following Period, and which should be a great Means of promoting it.

(m) *The*

saying, The Kingdoms of this World are become the Kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ, and he shall reign for ever and ever.

16 And the four and twenty Elders, which sat before God on their Seats, fell upon their Faces, and worshipped God,

17 Saying, We give thee Thanks O Lord God Almighty, which art, and wast, and art to come; because thou hast taken to thee thy great Power, and hast reigned.

18 And the Nations were angry, and thy Wrath is come, and the Time of the Dead that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give Reward unto thy

seems to be even already come; when it may be said, that *the Kingdoms of the World are become [the Kingdoms] of our Lord, and of his Christ (m)*, his anointed Son; and he shall reign for ever and ever. Sect. 14.  
Rev. XI. 15.

And the twenty four Elders, that sate before the Throne of GOD on their splendid Thrones, as already described, fell prostrate upon their Faces, and worshipped GOD with profound Reverence, on hearing these glad Tidings; Saying, we give Thanks unto thee, O Lord God Almighty, who art, and who wast, and who art to come; we adore the Triumphs of thine Omnipotence, and of thy Wisdom; because, though for a while thou didst suffer the Interest of thy Kingdom to be in Part over-born, as if the Adversary were stronger than thou art, thou hast at length taken to thyself thy great Power, and hast reigned with an uncontroled Dominion. 16  
17  
18

And the Nations were wroth, and were transported with Rage and Pride, that their vain Schemes were thus powerfully opposed: And having suffered them, for a Season, to exert their impotent Efforts, thy Wrath came in its awful Turn; thou didst display the Terrors of thy superior Vengeance; and the Time of the Dead came, when they should be judged, and the Blood of thy People avenged, and when a Reward should be given to thy faithful

(m) *The Kingdoms of the World, &c.*] The learned *Gratius*, than whom no great Commentator was ever more mistaken in his Explication of this Book, strangely sinks the Importance of the Event here referred to, by expounding it of the Liberty given to the *Christians* to profess their Religion in *Judea*, when the *Jews* were banished. *Mr. Mede*, and *Mr. Clarke*, refer it to the Reformation. *Dr. Samuel Clarke* says, *Whether this, and the like Passages, shall have a literal Accomplishment by the universal Prevalency of the Gospel of Peace upon Earth, or only in the new Heavens, wherein dwelleth Righteousness, is a Secret in the Breast of Providence, which we ought not to be over confident in explaining.* See his *Posth. Sermon*. vol. iii. pag. 295. But it seems probable, that this may be designed to intimate, that in the *Period* of Time, signified by the *seventh Trumpet*, and the *Vials*, following it, there should be a Triumph of the *Christian Cause* in its Power and Purity, notwithstanding all the Attempts made to pervert and corrupt it; which has been, in Fact, the Case. Compare *Chap. vi. ver. 17. Note (n)*.

(n) A

Se&t. 14. ful Servants (n), the inspired Prophets, and  
 Rev. XI. 18. to the Saints, and, on the whole, to them  
 that fear thy Name, both small and great:  
 For, such is thy Goodness, that thou wilt  
 not forget any one of them; and the Period is  
 at length come, [when thou] shouldest interpose  
 in an awful and irresistible Manner, to de-  
 stroy those that destroy and corrupt the Earth  
 by their many Vices; and particularly, by  
 their cruel Ravages in persecuting those,  
 who were, with the greatest Integrity of  
 Heart, solicitous to have reformed it.

thy Servants the Prophets,  
 and to the Saints, and them  
 that fear thy Name, small  
 and great, and shouldest de-  
 stroy them which destroy the  
 Earth.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

- Ver. 2. **L**ONG hath the Court of GOD's Temple been trodden under Foot  
 by the Gentiles, and a Party of very corrupt and degenerate  
 Christians, (if they at all deserve the Name, though they proudly  
 arrogate to themselves the Title of the Catholick Church,) been in-  
 troducing and countenancing all the Fopperies and Absurdities of  
 Pagan Superstition, as well as more than the Horrors of Pagan  
 Cruelty, so as indeed to have disgraced, not the Gospel alone, but  
 human Nature itself. A wise and gracious Providence hath raised up  
 Witnesses for the Truth in all Ages; and it is a signal Honour to bear a  
 faithful and courageous Testimony against these enormous Corrup-  
 tions, though it were unto Bonds and Imprisonment, and even at  
 the Expence of Life. Those noble and heroic Confessors God  
 hath remarkably supported; and, even when they have been in a  
 State of Mourning and Oppression, they have borne their Testimony  
 and prophesied; their Prayers have been remembered before God,  
 and many have been smitten, who injured and oppressed them.
- Ver. 3.
- Ver. 6.
- Ver. 7. But, notwithstanding this, the Beast hath continued his War upon  
 the Saints, and their Oppressions have increased, until, in many  
 Places, they have been cast down, and trodden in the Dust, and  
 their Blood hath been poured out like Water on the Earth. Thus  
 hath that great City, the Metropolis of the World, once faithful  
 and

(n) A Reward should be given to thy Servants.] The Reward to be given to all  
 that fear GOD, both small and great, seems to be the final Reward at the Judg-  
 ment-Day. This therefore represents that Judgment-Day as now nearly approaching.

and celebrated, become even as *Sodom and Egypt*, or even as *Jeru-* Sect. 14.  
*salem*, where *Christ* himself, our divine Master, was crucified. Thus Ver. 8.  
 have the Enemies of the Truth triumphed over the Servants of the  
 Lord, and have erected *Trophies* of their Victory. But, Thanks be Ver. 9, 10.  
 to *God*, their Triumphs shall not be perpetual; *Christ* our Re-  
 deemer will revive his expiring Cause, in a Manner as glorious and  
 wonderful, as a *Resurrection from the Dead*: He will glorify the Ver. 11, 12.  
*Remnant* of his People; he will cause *the Earth to tremble*, and  
*shake down the Towers* of the Enemy; and when the *first and the se-* Ver. 13.  
*cond Woe is past*, will bring upon them a *third* and more terrible Ver. 14.  
*Woe*. In the Faith of this triumphant Event let us rejoice; and  
 though in our Day we see not this glorious Scene, let us consider  
 it as approaching, when *the seventh Angel shall sound*, and when  
 all *the Kingdoms of the Earth shall become the Kingdoms of the Lord,* Ver. 15.  
*and of his Christ*. Let our *Prayers* do all, that the most earnest  
 Prayers can do, towards promoting this great Event. *Oh Lord* Ver. 17.  
*God Almighty, who art, and wast, and art to come*, we beseech thee  
 to take to thyself thy great Power and Reign; for the proudest of  
 the Enemies who oppose thy Kingdom reign, and even live, only  
 by thy Permission. Overbear, by thy superior Rebuke, the *Rage*  
 of the angry Nations; and give *Patience* to thine afflicted Servants, Ver. 18.  
 that if they should wait even till *the Dead be judged*, they may  
 never resign the Hope of *the Reward* which thou wilt at length  
 confer upon them; not only *on the Propbets*, and most eminent and  
 distinguished of the Saints, but *on all them that fear thy glorious*  
 and tremendous Name; on the *Small*, as well as on the *Great*;  
 when the *Destroyers* of the Church, and of the Earth, shall be  
 destroyed together. Amen.

## S E C T. XV.

*On a View of the Temple of GOD, as opened in Consequence of the seventh Trumpet, a Vision appears, representing the Multiplication of the Church, and the Attempt to be made by the Devil upon it, under the Emblem of a Woman bringing forth a Son, attacked and persecuted by a great Dragon. Rev. XI. 19. XII. throughout.*

## REVELATION XI. 19.

Sect. 15.

Rev. XI. 19.

*AND* when these Acts of Adoration passed, upon the Sounding of the seventh Angel, *the Temple of GOD was opened in Heaven*; and the Veil, which seemed to separate the most holy Place, being drawn aside, *the Ark of his Covenant appeared in his Temple*; to signify further Manifestations of the Divine Presence, which were now to be made. *And* as, when the Law was given from Mount Sinai, the whole Atmosphere seemed in a violent Commotion, which was communicated to the most solid Parts of Nature, so *there were now Lightnings, and loud and awful Voices, and Thunders, and an Earthquake, and a great Storm of Hail,* which had been described as a Circumstance attending the divine Appearance, under former Dispensations. (Compare Psal. cxiv. Chap. XII. I. 4. & sim.)

Chap. XII. I. 4.

*And thus ushered in, there appeared a great Sign in Heaven, a Woman of a beautiful and majestick Form, cloathed, as it were, with the Radiance of the Meridian Sun, streaming forth on all Sides; which I understood, as an Emblem of the Church of Christ, most gloriously arrayed through the Comeliness and Lustre, which*

## REVELATION XI. 19.

*AND* the Temple of God was opened in Heaven, and there was seen in his Temple the Ark of his Testament: And there were Lightnings, and Voices, and Thundrings, and an Earthquake, and great Hail.

CHAP. XII. I. And there appeared a great Wonder in Heaven, a Woman cloathed with the Sun, and the Moon un-

under her Feet, and upon her Head a Crown of twelve Stars:

which he puts upon her: *And the Moon* Sect. 15. *was under her Feet*; to signify the Conquest, which the Church should gain over all sub-  
 Rev. XII. 1. *lunary Enjoyments and Terrors; and upon her Head there was a Crown of twelve Stars*; to represent the twelve Apostles, who had been so illustrious an Ornament to that honoured Society.

2 And she being with Child, cried, travailing in Birth, and pained to be delivered.

*And, to signify the Increase of the Christian Church, this Woman, by which she was represented, being apparently pregnant, cried out in Travail, and seemed as in violent Pangs to be delivered.*

3 And there appeared another Wonder in Heaven, and behold, a great red Dragon, having seven Heads and ten Horns, and seven Crowns upon his Heads.

*And, while she was in these Circumstances of Extremity, there appeared another Sign in Heaven: And behold!* for it was a very memorable Phænomenon, there was a great red fiery Dragon, having seven Heads, and ten Horns (a); and upon his Heads, seven Crowns, on each of them one; which represented Satan, the great Enemy of the Church, as animating a People, who were to answer, in a remarkable Manner, to these mysterious and symbolical Characters.

4 And his Tail drew the third

*And he appeared as having a long Tail; and with it he took an horrible Sweep over the Compass of a considerable Part of the Heaven, on which he seemed to stand; and as it then appeared as decked with*

(a) *Dragon having seven Heads, and ten Horns.*] I suppose most of my Readers will know, that a *Dragon* is a vast *Serpent* of enormous Bulk; there is one of them, about 23 Feet long, preserved in the *Repository* of the *Royal Society*. And *Job*, the celebrated *African*, assured me, that one of them carried away a live Cow in it's Mouth, before his Face. Nothing could be a more proper Emblem of the *persecuting Power*, that by the *Instigation* of *Satan* attacked *Christians*; or rather, of *Satan*, as *instigating* these persecuting Powers, and those especially of *Rome*, under it's different States, as *Heathen* and *Christian*; for the *directing Agent* was still the same. I apprehend therefore, that the *Church* is here represented, *first*, as *pregnant*, to signify it's State while the *Empire* was *Heathen*; the more *vigorous* State it afterwards arrived to, when such large *Accessions* were made to the Number of *Christians*, is described by the *Birth of the Child*; and it's State, when an almost *universal Corruption* was introduced, by it's *Abode in the Wilderness*. *The Dragon*, in the mean Time, in all these various Successions, labours, if possible, to destroy it; at least to prevent the Propagation of it's Interests.

U u u 2

(b) *Maf-*

Sect. 15. with Stars, whereby Christian Ministers were especially represented, *his Tail drew down*  
 Rev. XII. 4. *a third Part of the Stars of Heaven, and cast them to the Earth*; which signifies, that many, whose Business it was to enlighten and preserve others, should themselves be corrupted, by the Attempts of this great and subtle Deceiver, whose Artifice and Rage were so aptly represented, by the seducing Nature of this vast and voracious Dragon. *And the Dragon stood directly before the Woman, who was about to bring forth, that when she was delivered, he might immediately devour her Child, for whose Appearance he seemed eagerly to wait.*

5 *And, to signify the certain Success of the Church, and the Care God would take to preserve it, she, whom I saw in the Vision as the Representative of it, brought forth a masculine Son (b), a male Child who appeared of a vigorous Constitution, and likely soon to advance to Manhood; who, as I then learned, was destined by God to a most glorious Triumph over all Opposition; so as to rule all the Nations with a Rod of Iron, which they should be unable successfully to resist. And, as the Strength of this Dragon seemed vastly superior to that of the Woman, or the new-born Infant, her Child was, on a sudden, caught up to GOD, even to his Throne, there to be guarded as the Charge and Favourite of Heaven, in full Security from all the Rage of his furious and destructive Enemies. (Compare 2 Kings xi. 23.)*

6 *And the Woman, his Mother, fled into the Wilderness (c); by which Circumstance was*  
 re-

third Part of the Stars of Heaven, and did cast them to the Earth: and the Dragon stood before the Woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her Child as soon as it was born.

5 And she brought forth a Man Child, who was to rule all Nations with a Rod of Iron: and her Child was caught up unto GOD, and to his Throne.

6 And the Woman fled into the Wilderness, where she

(b) *Masculine Son.*] As it was impossible, that *non, a Son*, should be any other than *appeva, a Male*, I conclude, that the Conjunction of these two Words was intended to express the *vigorous Constitution* of the Child, and what we properly call, *a masculine Form*, which may, or may not, be joined with the *Male Sex*. Such was *Esau*, who from thence had the Name of a *Child fully made*. Gen. xxv. 25.

(c) *Into the Wilderness.*] I think I never met with a *wilder* Interpretation, than that

*And she flies from a fiery Dragon into the Wilderness.* 525

she hath a Place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore Days.

represented to me, the obscure Condition in Sect. 15. which true Christianity should long remain, while Antichristian Principles and Practices every where prevailed. There she dwelt, *where she had a Place prepared for her by the ever watchful Providence of GOD, that she might there be nourished, one thousand two hundred [and] sixty Days (d):* for GOD took Care that she should be nourished, though in a Wilderness, raising up Friends and Supporters for her, during that desolate and melancholy Time.

Rev. XII. 6.

7 And there was War in Heaven; Michael and his Angels fought against the Dragon, and the Dragon fought and his Angels:

*And there was the Appearance of a very formidable War in Heaven, and several mighty Battles seemed to be fought before my Sight; Michael the great Leader of God's Host, and therein an Emblem of the great Emmanuel, and his Angels, were marshalled on the one Side; and they made War against the Dragon: And on the other Side, the Dragon made War with him; and his Angels likewise, consisting of many Legions of infernal Spirits, in Confederacy with the great Head of the Apostacy, made War under him. Nevertheless, they did not prevail against the Armies*

8 And prevailed not, neither

7

8

that which *Grotius* gives of this Place; referring it to the Banishment of Christianity out of *Rome*, into little neighbouring Towns and Villages, (which, in Comparison of that capital City, might seem a *Wilderness*;) during the Time of the Seduction of *Simon Magus*; an Event neither certain in itself, nor, if ever so certain, by any Means answering to the Description here given, and the great and important Idea suggested and so much insisted upon in this *Prophecy*. It is on the same precarious Principles that he explains the Triumph of Heaven on casting out the *Dragon*, of *Simon's* being vanquished in his Contest with *St. Peter* at *Rome*.

(d) *One thousand, two hundred and sixty Days.*] These Days are Years of Papal Usurpation. *Mr. Fleming*, (who hath the Honour herein to be followed by *Sir Isaac Newton*, and *Mr. Lowman*, though not as I remember named by the former, whom the latter professes to follow,) supposes them to begin in the Year 756, when *Pepin of France* made a Grant to the Pope, of the temporal Dominion of *Rome*, on the Destruction of the *Exarchate of Ravenna*, to which that imperial City for a while belonged. Upon this the Pope began the eighth Head of *Rome*; and the Period of his continuing so, will end, about the Year 2016; or if (which seems most reasonable,) *Prophetical Years* be used in the Computation, consisting of 360 Days, about 2000; which he supposes will be the Beginning of the Millennium. *Flem. of Ref. pag. 120.*

(e) *Neither*



Sect. 15. Armies of GOD, *neither was Place found for them any more in Heaven (e)* ; but, being unable to stand their Ground, they seemed to be expelled, and fall down to the Earth.

Rev. XII. 8.

9 *And thus the great, furious and voracious Dragon was cast out ; [even] the old Serpent, so long experienced in the Arts of Mischief ; who, from his Falshood, is called the Devil, or the false Accuser ; and from his Malice, Satan, or the general Adversary : He, who deceives the whole World by his subtle Temptations, was cast out of Heaven, and sunk down to the Earth ; and his confederate Angels were cast out with him, following him in his Ruin, as they had done in his Guilt.*

10 *And I heard a great Voice saying in Heaven, Now is come the long-expected Salvation ; and the Power, and the Kingdom of our God, is now exerted and established ; and the Authority of his Christ shall now prevail against all Opposition ; because the malignant and perfidious Accuser of our Brethren is now cast out, who carried his Malice to such a Height, that he accused them before our GOD Day and Night : Unrestrained by a Sense of the Divine Presence, he was ready, as in the Instance of Job, (Job i. 9. ii. 5.) continually to charge them with the greatest Evils before him, who was indeed the Witnesses of their Integrity.*

11 *And now they have overcome him, formidable as he appeared, with all his confederate Angels ; and it*

is

ther was their Place found any more in Heaven.

9 And the great Dragon was cast out, that old Serpent, called the Devil and Satan, which deceiveth the whole World: he was cast out into the Earth, and his Angels were cast out with him.

10 And I heard a loud Voice saying in Heaven, Now is come Salvation and Strength, and the Kingdom of our God, and the Power of his Christ: for the Accuser of our Brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God Day and Night.

11 And they overcame him

him

(e) *Neither was Place found for them any more in Heaven.*] I once thought this referred to a Representation made to the Apostle, in the Vision, of the first Expulsion of Satan from Heaven ; but upon considering that he, who is represented as cast out of the Divine Presence, is described as *the Accuser of the Brethren*, who had before been accusing them Day and Night before GOD ; I was induced to change my Mind. On the whole, I am extremely dubious about this, and refer it to further Consideration, whether this may not signify the Conquest of Satan by Christ, by the first Publication of the Gospel. Mr. Lowman interprets it of the Victory over Satan and his Power, when Christianity had fully prevailed over Heathenism in the Empire, and when an effectual Stop was put to the Mahometan Imposture in these Western Parts.

(f) Fly

him by the Blood of the Lamb, and by the Word of their Testimony ; and they loved not their Lives unto the Death.

is by the Blood of the Lamb they have gained this glorious Victory : It's sacred Efficacy has procured them divine Strength and Grace ; and the Remembrance of it has wrought powerfully on their Souls. *And* their Victory has been, under this, in a great Measure, occasioned by the Word of their Testimony ; by that Word of the Gospel, to which they have borne their Testimony with so much Fidelity, and at so great an Expence ; for they loved not their Lives, unto the Death : They exposed themselves to the greatest Dangers, and many of them actually met their Death in this glorious Conflict ; but they fell to rise, and triumph, and reign. *And therefore rejoice ye*

Sect. 15.  
Rev. XII.  
II.

12 Therefore rejoice, ye Heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Wo to the Inhabiters of the Earth, and of the Sea : for the Devil is come down unto you, having great Wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short Time.

And therefore rejoice ye Heavens, and ye who inhabit them, and, as it were, pitch your Tents there : Let all the Celestial Armies proclaim the Victory with Joy. But Woe to those that inhabit the terraqueous Globe, consisting of the Earth and the Sea ; for the Devil is come down to you, having great Wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short Time ; and, therefore, is maliciously bent to make the most he can of it, exerting one powerful Effort more to establish and confirm his Cause. *And when the Dragon saw that he was cast out on the Earth, I perceived him to be greatly enraged ; and saw, that, mindful of the Original of the late War, he persecuted the Woman, who had brought forth a male Child.* *And, to signify the extraordinary Provision that should be made for her Deliverance, there were immediately given to the Woman two Wings, like those of a great and strong Eagle, that she might fly into the Wilderness (f), unto her Place, which,*

12

13 And when the Dragon saw that he was cast unto the Earth, he persecuted the Woman which brought forth the man-child.

as

13

14 And to the Woman were given two Wings of a great Eagle, that she might fly into the Wilderness into her Place : where she is nourished.

as

14

(f) Fly into the Wilderness.] This is the same Event, that was represented ver. 6.

(g) A Flood

Sect. 15. as I observed before, was appointed for her ;  
 where, as I said, she is nourished for one  
 thousand two hundred and sixty Days ; that  
 is, for a Time, or one Year, and Times, or  
 two Years, and half a Time, or Year, that  
 is, for three Years and an half, which is  
 the same Period. And thus she was hid  
 from the Face of the Serpent, and preserved

Rev. XII.  
 14.

15 from his destructive Efforts. And the

Serpent threw out of his Mouth a Flood of  
 Water, like a River (g), after the Woman,  
 as she was winging her Flight from him,  
 that he might cause her to be carried away  
 by the Stream. And the Earth assisted

16 the Woman ; and the Earth opened its Mouth,  
 and drank up the Flood which the Dragon  
 threw out of his Mouth (h), so that it sunk  
 as fast as it fell, and could not swell into  
 such a formidable Current, as he seemed to  
 have intended it should. And the Dra-

17 gon was enraged against the Woman, to see  
 all his Efforts against her defeated by a su-  
 perior Power ; and he went away to excite  
 new Troubles, and to make War against the  
 Woman, and against the Remainder of her  
 Seed, even as many as might by any Means  
 be brought within his Reach ; nor did he  
 spare any of those who keep the Command-  
 ments of GOD inviolable, and have the Cou-  
 rage to retain, at the greatest Expence or  
 Hazard, the Testimony of Jesus Christ, in his  
 pure uncorrupted Gospel.

nourished for a Time, and  
 Times, and half a Time,  
 from the Face of the Serpent.

15 And the Serpent cast  
 out of his Mouth Water as  
 a Flood, after the Woman ;  
 that he might cause her to  
 be carried away of the Flood.

16 And the Earth helped  
 the Woman, and the Earth  
 opened her Mouth, and swal-  
 lowed up the Flood which  
 the Dragon cast out of his  
 Mouth.

17 And the Dragon was  
 wroth with the Woman, and  
 went to make War with the  
 Remnant of her Seed, which  
 keep the Commandments  
 of God, and have the Tes-  
 timony of Jesus Christ.

(g) A Flood of Water like a River.] Perhaps this is one of the *Artifices*, which these enormous Creatures make Use of to *beat down* their Prey, when flying from them ; though I cannot, at present, remember any Passage that illustrates it.

(h) The Earth assisted the Woman, &c.] This may intimate, that notwithstanding all the violent and cruel Attempts of *Satan*, and of those persecuting Powers whom he instigates, GOD will raise up some Persons, (and perhaps, as *Mr. Lowman* observes, it may mean, some Persons of Power and Authority in the World,) to protect his *Witnesses*, and secure many of those who faithfully retain the Testimony of *Jesus* ; and to prevent pure Religion from being entirely overborne and lost. And this has been, in Fact, the Case in many Nations ; and particularly, in this.

IMPROVE-

I M P R O V E M E N T.

Whatever concealed and unknown Wonders may be intimated Sect. 15.  
 in *some* Parts of this grand and awful Vision, in *others* it contains very obvious and important Instructions.—While we are beholding this emblematical Representation of the Christian Church, let us adore the great original Sun of Righteousness, who has decked her with his glorious Beams, and will at length cause every faithful Member of this blessed Society, to shine forth as the Sun in his Father's Kingdom. And let us be desirous of treading this changeable and uncertain World under our Feet.—Let us thankfully own the Hand which has crowned the Church with the Apostles, as with a Diadem; and, taught by their Precepts, and inspired by their Example, let us prepare ourselves for that sacred War, to which we are called, the War against the Devil, and his confederate Hosts. It is, indeed, under a very formidable Type, that he is here represented: — His Cruelty, his Subtilty, his Experience in all the Arts of Destruction, are painted out with dreadful Propriety, in the old Serpent, the great Dragon; but, formidable as his Violence, or artful and potent as the Confederacy of infernal Spirits may be, here is a Victory gained over him, which calls for the Congratulation of all the Armies of the Lord: The Dragon and his Angels are cast out; the Saints are enabled to triumph over him, feeble and impotent as they are. But, in what Way are they able to overcome him? It is by the Blood of the Lamb, and by the Word of their Testimony. Instructive and edifying Admonition! Let this be our Confidence, even the Banner of the Cross, the Blood of the Saviour, who died upon it; and, in this Signal, we shall come off Conquerors too; Faith in him shall be our Shield; the Word of God shall be our Sword, the Sword of the Spirit; and Satan, thus resisted, shall flee before us. (James iv. 7.) In vain are the Floods of Temptation, which he may attempt to throw out of his Mouth, to debauch our Principles, or Practices; they shall be entirely swallowed up. And though the Church be for a while in the Wilderness, it shall be happily sheltered, and tenderly nourished; there, it's Members shall be in Safety, as if they were taken up to GOD, even unto his Throne, till the Time which he has appointed for it's Triumph. In the meanwhile, however the Sons of Malice, under the Instruction and Influence of the great Accuser of the Brethren, may defame them;

Ver. 1, 2.

Ver. 7.

Ver. 3.

Ver. 9.

Ver. 10.

Ver. 11.

Ver. 15, 16.

Ver. 14.

Ver. 5.

Ver. 10.

Sect. 15. however *Persecution* may attack and harrass them; let them be courageous and undaunted, not *loving their Lives even to the Death*, in the Cause of *Christ*; for, though *they fall, they shall rise again* to certain *Victory and Glory*; nor shall *Death* bring down their *Heads* so low, as to render them unworthy of wearing a *Crown of eternal Life*.

Ver. 11.

## S E C T. XVI.

*The Vision of the two Beasts, and the Outrages committed by them. Rev. XIII. throughout.*

## REVELATION XIII. I.

Sect. 16.  
Rev. XIII.  
1.

AND I stood upon the Sand of the Sea, as I apprehended in the Vision, and saw a fierce and savage Beast (a) ascending out of the Sea, having seven Heads, and ten Horns; to intimate the City of Rome standing upon seven Hills, and the ten Kingdoms, into which its Dominions were to be divided: And upon his Horns [were] ten Diadems; to signify the royal Power that was to be found in each: And on his Heads [there were] Names of Blasphemy (b), such Names as it was most profane and blasphemous to assume.

2 And the Beast which I saw, was, as to the Form of the greater Part of it's Body, like a Leopard; and it's Feet [were] like those of a Bear, to signify it's exceeding great Fierce-

## REVELATION XIII. I.

AND I stood upon the Sand of the Sea, and saw a Beast rise up out of the Sea, having seven Heads and ten Horns, and upon his Horns ten Crowns, and upon his Heads the Name of Blasphemy.

2 And the Beast which I saw was like unto a Leopard, and his Feet were as the Feet of a Bear, and his Mouth

(a) *Savage Beast.*] This I understand of the *Papal Power*, as exercised by the *Bishop of Rome*, supported by his *regular Clergy*, and by those *secular Princes*; who have given up their Name and Power to him, And when the *Dragon* is said to give him his *Power and Throne*, &c. ver. 2. it intimates, that he should have his *Seat or Residence* there, where the *Dragon* had reigned, even at *Rome*; which had been the *Seat of Idolatry and Persecution* during its *Pagan State*.

(b) *Names of Blasphemy.*] They must have very little Acquaintance with the *arrogant Titles*, which have been assumed or admitted by the *Popes*, who discern not in them a very remarkable Illustration of this Circumstance of the *Prophecy*.—Instead of *ονομα*, the common Reading, I think *ονοματα*, *Names*, in the *Plural*, which is supported by the Authority of the *Alexandrian*, and other *Manuscripts*, to be preferable.

(c) Never

Mouth as the Mouth, of a Lion: and the Dragon gave him his Power, and his Seat, and great Authority.

Fierceness; and it's Mouth was like the Mouth of a roaring and furious Lion: And the Dragon, who still appeared on the visionary Scene, that is, the Devil, gave him, by solemn Delegation, his Power, and his Throne, and great Authority in his Kingdom; so that this Beast seemed to be constituted his Vicegerent, however he might pretend to represent a very different Person.

Sect. 16.

Rev. XIII.

2.

3 And I saw one of his Heads, as it were wounded to Death; and his deadly Wound was healed: And all the World wondered after the Beast.

And I saw one of his Heads wounded, as it were, to Death; that is, in such a Manner, that a Recovery seemed impossible; to signify those early Efforts, which should be made, to put a Stop to the Usurpation, Cruelties, and Blasphemy, represented by these Heads, and the Names written on them. And yet it's mortal Wound, as one would have thought it must have proved, was unaccountably healed. And the whole Earth wondered at so strange an Event, [and] they [followed] after the wild Beast, thinking a greater Argument of its extraordinary Power arose from its Cure, than could have taken Place, had he never been wounded at all (c).

3

4 And they worshipped the Dragon which gave Power unto the Beast: And they worshipped the Beast, saying, Who is like unto the Beast? Who is able to make War with him?

And they, that is, the Inhabitants of the Earth, worshipped the Dragon, who gave his Authority to the wild Beast; and they worshipped the wild Beast, even as with God-like Adoration, saying, Who, that pretends to Deity in Heaven, or Earth, [is] like unto the Beast? or who can ever presume to make War against him, since his Power is so well established, without Hazard of immediate or certain Destruction?

4

5 And there was given unto

And there was given to it, that is, to this Monster, a Mouth,

5

(c) Never been wounded at all.] It is certain that ineffectual Efforts, to recover the Liberty and Purity of the Church, have sometimes been improved into Occasions of further Usurpation; and many have been intimidated by them from making any further Attempts. Yet they are not entirely destitute of their good Effects, as they at least deliver the Souls of those, who have exerted their utmost Ability in making them; and may afterwards be productive of better Fruits and Consequences.

X x x 2

(d) Power

Sect. 16. *Mouth, speaking great Things and Blasphemies, as with a human Voice; to signify that it was influenced by that Being, who, assuming the Form and Organs of a Brute, had used the Power of Speech for the most mischievous Purposes. And there was also given unto it Power to make War (d) with the Saints, with some apparent Advantage, for the Term above-mentioned, of forty two Months; that is, one thousand twelve hundred and sixty prophetick Days or Years.*

Rev. XIII.

5.

6 *And he opened his infernal Mouth to utter Blasphemy against GOD, even to blaspheme his holy and venerable Name, and his Tabernacle pitched among Men; and, not only did he speak malignant Things against the Inhabitants of the Earth, but even against those that dwell in Heaven (e). (Compare Dan. xi. 36.)*

7 *And it was, by divine Permission, given unto him to make War with the Saints, and to overcome them for a Time; and so universal was the Success of his pernicious Undertakings, that it seemed, as if there was given to him Power over every Tribe, and Tongue, and Nation.*

8 *And all the Inhabitants of the Earth shall be so deluded with his Artifices, or intimidated by his Terrors, that they shall worship him (f), that is, all whose Names are not written in the Book of Life of the Lamb, who was slain, for some were registered in that Book even*

*from*

(d) *Power to make War: πολεμὸν ποιῆσαι.*] Our Translators have followed those Copies, which omit the Word πολεμὸν, and have rendered ποιῆσαι, *continue*; a Sense which, it must be owned, it sometimes bears, particularly, *Acts xv. 33. xx. 3.* but I have chosen to rely on those Copies, which retain the Word πολεμὸν. See *Ver. 7.*

(e) *Those that dwell in Heaven.*] It is very injurious to the *Saints* and *Angels*, when they are represented as desirous of attracting to themselves that *Worship*, which ought to be appropriated to *GOD*; and nothing worse can be imagined of them, than that they should be delighted with such Services as are paid them in the *Romish Ritual*.

(f) *The Inhabitants of the Earth shall worship him.*] The extravagant *Idolatry* here mentioned, is very suitable to the *Temper* and *Practice* of those, who, in order to avoid Persecution, comply with the Claims and Demands of the *Papal Power*, contrary to their Conscience; for, it is the Language of such a Compliance, that the *Wrath of Men* is more to be dreaded than that of *GOD himself*.

unto him a Mouth, speaking great Things, and Blasphemies; and Power was given unto him to continue forty and two Months.

6 And he opened his Mouth in Blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his Name, and his Tabernacle, and them that dwell in Heaven.

7 And it was given unto him to make War with the Saints, and to overcome them: and Power was given him over all Kindreds, and Tongues, and Nations.

8 And all that dwell upon the Earth shall worship him, whose Names are not written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the Foundation of the World.

(g) Re-

9 If any Man have an Ear, let him hear.

10 He that leadeth into Captivity, shall go into Captivity: He that killeth with the Sword, must be killed with the Sword. Here is the Patience and the Faith of the Saints.

11 And I beheld another Beast

from the Foundation of the World (g); and Sect. 16, they shall, by a secret Energy, be preserved in the midst of so general and ruinous a Defection. *If any one has an Ear to hear,* Rev. XIII.

let him attentively bear this; for it is a Matter of a most important Nature, and the most surprizing Phenomenon which can be imagined, that such an idolatrous and persecuting Power should arise in the Christian Church, and that GOD should suffer it so far to prevail.

Nevertheless, GOD will not forget the Injuries his People sustain; but, *if any one lead [them] into Captivity, he shall be led into Captivity himself* by a superior Power, which he shall not be able to resist; and, *if any one slay others with the Sword of Injustice and Cruelty, he shall himself be slain with the Sword of divine Vengeance,* when GOD comes to make Inquisition for Blood. In the mean Time, while they are waiting for his Appearance, *here is a sufficient Exercise for the Patience and the Faith of the Saints:* It is the greatest Trial to which they were ever brought; let them, therefore, consider themselves as called out by GOD to it, and be assured that he will limit it both as to its Duration and Degree, in a Manner answerable to the Purposes of his infinite Wisdom, and of his peculiar Love to them. *And,* to represent a

very crafty and insidious Power, which should join

(g) Registered from the Foundation of the World.] I am well aware of what has been said to justify the Sense which these Words must have, if taken in Connection with those which immediately precede them; but, after all, it is very harsh to say, *Christ was slain from the Foundation of the World.* He is in another Place called simply, *the Lamb slain,* Rev. v. 12. and a Kingdom is said to be prepared for good Men from the Foundation of the World, Matt. xxv. 34. And, laying these Things together, I think it abundantly sufficient to justify the Interpretation I have here given, especially when compared with another Passage in this Book, Chap. xvii. 8. *whose Names were not written in the Book of Life from the Foundation of the World.* Mr. Pierce thinks, it is an Allusion to the Custom of registering the Actions of worthy Persons, as Mal. iii. 17. undoubtedly is; and, that *this Book of Life* is, as it were, the Catalogue of good Men that have lived in all Ages. *Pierce on Phil.* iv. 3. But I cannot be of Opinion, that this exhausts the full Meaning of the Expression.

(b) Another



Sect. 16.  
Rev. XIII.  
II.

- join with the former, and greatly abet its sanguinary Persecutions, I saw another Beast (b) ascending out of the Earth (i); and it had two Horns, like a Lamb; but, whatever Gentleness there might be in that Circumstance of its Appearance, it spake like a Dragon.
- 12 And, such is the Nature of their Alliance, that it exercises all the Power of the first Beast, in its Presence; and it makes the Earth, and those that dwell in it, to worship the first Beast, whose deadly Wound was healed, whose Interest, which seemed so much endangered, was greatly revived, being thus powerfully abetted and supported.
- 13 And he, in order to confirm his subtle Pretences to lord it over the Consciences of Men, does great Miracles (k), so as even to make Fire come down from Heaven to Earth before Men; strange Artifices he has, to persuade them, of his being endowed with more than natural Powers, and that the Vengeance of Heaven will be armed against all that oppose him!
- 14 And he deceiveth the Inhabitants of the Earth by the Signs which it is given him to do before the Beast; commanding the Inhabitants of the Earth, to make an Image of the Beast, that had the Wound of the Sword, and yet lived; that is, he teaches Men to extol, and almost adore, that, which in itself is most contemptible and detestable.
- 15 And it was given

Beast coming up out of the Earth, and he had two Horns like a Lamb, and he spake as a Dragon.

12 And he exerciseth all the Power of the first Beast before him, and causeth the Earth, and them which dwell therein, to worship the first Beast, whose deadly Wound was healed.

13 And he doeth great Wonders, so that he maketh Fire come down from Heaven on the Earth, in the Sight of Men,

14 And deceiveth them that dwell on the Earth, by the Means of those Miracles which he had Power to do in the Sight of the Beast, saying to them that dwell on the Earth, that they should make an Image to the Beast which had the Wound by a Sword, and did live.

15 And he had Power to

(b) *Another Beast.*] As I look upon the former to be the *Papal Power*, I am ready, with the best Criticks I know, to interpret this of the *religious Orders* of the *Church of Rome*, (particularly, that of the *Jesuits*,) who have many of them *temporal Estates* and *Jurisdicitions* added to their *Spiritual*, and thus have greatly supported the *Papacy*.

(i) *Out of the Earth.*] This Beast is said to ascend *from the Earth*, whereas the other ascended *from the Sea*, to make the *Distinction* between them the more remarkable; but what other *Mystery* may be suggested, I cannot conjecture.

(k) *Great Miracles.*] The *artful Impostures*, which the *regular Clergy*, that is, the several *Orders of Monks*, and especially the *Jesuits*, have used to persuade the People of the Truth of their pretended *Miracles* and *Revelations*, seem to be finely delineated by this otherwise *amazing Description*.

(l) *Image*

to give Life unto the Image of the Beast, that the Image of the Beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the Image of the Beast, should be killed.

16 And he causeth all, both Small and Great, Rich and Poor, Free and Bond, to receive a Mark in their right Hand, or in their Foreheads.

17 And that no Man might buy or sell, save he that had the Mark or the Name of the Beast, or the Number of his Name.

18 Here is Wisdom. Let him that hath Understanding count the Number of the Beast: for it is the Number of a Man; and his Number

given to him by a divine Permission, to give Spirit and *Breath*, as it were, to the Image of the Beast (l), that the Image of the Beast might speak with an audible Voice. And, so zealous and powerful is he in abetting this Cause, that by this it's Oracle, he should cause as many as will not worship the Image of the Beast, to be put to Death. And

he causeth all, of every Rank and Condition, both Small and Great, Rich and Poor, Free-men and Slaves, to receive the Mark of this detestable Power, on their right Hand, or their Foreheads, in Token of becoming its Subjects and Property. And, so religiously is this enforced, that no one should be

able to buy, or sell, but one who has some such Trace of the Mark (m), or the Name of the Beast, or the Number, which is equivalent to the numeral Letters of his Name, and which I thought, in the Vision, I saw impressed on the Hands and Foreheads of many. Herein is a great Effort of Wisdom;

let him, therefore, whoever he be, who hath an enlarged and penetrating Understanding, beyond what is common, compute the Number of the Beast; for it is the Number of a Man (n), or the numeral Letters in the Name

(l) *Image of the Beast.*] What the Image of the Beast is, distinct from the Beast itself, I confess I know not; and therefore interpret the Expressions, making an Image, and giving it Breath, &c. of idolizing the Power of the Pope, and compelling Persons to pay Homage to it, and obey the Edicts it published. And all the enormous Fury of the Inquisition, which is managed by one of the regular Orders included in this Representation, namely, the Dominican, is a remarkable Verification of the following Part of the Prophecy, of it's causing all that would not worship it to be put to Death.

(m) *Receive the Mark.*] I have elsewhere observed, (Serm. to young People, Serm. iv. pag. 79.) that it was customary to mark Soldiers, and Slaves, with some Impression, either on their Hands, or Foreheads, by which they might be known to belong to their respective Masters, or Commanders; and Idolaters, with the Signature of the GOD they worshipped. Perhaps this may particularly refer to the Sacraments which the People are obliged, on the highest Penalty, to receive from the Romish Priests, and which none can receive without such superstitious and idolatrous Rites, as are, in Effect, worshipping the Image of the Beast.

(n) *The Number of a Man, &c.*] Of all the various Interpretations given to this Text,

Sect. 16.

Rev. XIII.

15.

16

17

18.

Sect. 16. Name of a Man, and his Number is, and amounts on the whole, to, six hundred and sixty six; which I leave to the intelligent Reader to decypher. ber is six hundred threescore and six.

Rev. XIII.  
18.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Ver. 6, 7. **W**hoever is the *Beast* intended, and whatever be meant by his *Image*, his *Character*, beyond all Controversy, is very odious and detestable; for he is represented as *blaspheming the Name of GOD, and his Tabernacle, and as making War with the Saints*. There have arisen such impious Monsters in the *Christian Church*, and none among them have been more openly and enormously wicked and profane, than those who have made the loudest Pretensions to be the *Vicegerents of Christ*, and invested with his whole Authority. Many of the *Saints of GOD* have seemed to have been overcome by this *Antichristian Tyranny*; many have been led into *Captivity*; many have been slain with the *Sword*: But those who took them *captive*, continuing impenitent, shall be taken, and the *Slayers, slain*. Oh, may our Names be written in the *Lamb's Book of Life*! then shall we be secure in the Midst of all these formidable Evils; and, from every Trial of our *Faith and Patience*, shall come out as *Gold seven Times purified*.—Let us not be troubled and offended, to discern these *Usurpations* in the Course of Divine Providence prevailing, and the Time actually come, in many Parts of the World, in which Men can neither buy nor sell, nor are permitted

Ver. 10. *overcome by this Antichristian Tyranny; many have been led into Captivity; many have been slain with the Sword: But those who took them captive, continuing impenitent, shall be taken, and the*

Ver. 8. *Slayers, slain. Oh, may our Names be written in the Lamb's Book of Life! then shall we be secure in the Midst of all these formidable Evils; and, from every Trial of our Faith and Patience, shall come out as Gold seven Times purified.—Let us not be troubled and offended, to discern these Usurpations in the Course of Divine Providence prevailing, and the Time actually come, in many Parts*

Ver. 17. *of the World, in which Men can neither buy nor sell, nor are permitted*

Text, which it would be endless to enumerate, and much more to canvas, I find none that pleases me so well, as that of *Sir Isaac Newton*; that the Words *λαλεω*, and *רומית*, the *Man of Latium*, or of *Rome*, whose numeral Letters, taken together, make 666, are here referred to. And I suppose this Number is mentioned to signify, that the *Appearance of that Power*, whose Efforts were to continue 1260 Years, (*Compare Chap. xii. 6. Note (d)*), was to happen about 666 Years after the Date of the *Revelations*, A. D. 96. And this I take to be the *grand Key*, by which the *Æra of the Fall of Babylon* is to be calculated, as it fixes the *Rise of the Beast* to the Year 756, or thereabouts, when, upon the Destruction of the *Exarchate of Ravenna*, the *Pope* became a *temporal Monarch*; that is, in prophetick Language, a *Beast*. See many other Conjectures in *Limborch's Theol.* 7. xi. 19. *Mr. Potter* thinks the Number referred to is the *cube Root of 666*, namely, 25, (which has led *Dr. More* to fix upon Number 12, relating to the Church of *Christ*, and Number 25 relating to *Antichrist*;) and concludes further, that the *exact Cube* is not mentioned, to prevent too sudden a Discovery. Compare *More's Theol. pag. 134.* *Grotius's* referring it to *Trajan* is very ungrounded, in every View.

mitted to enjoy any other *natural* or *civil* Priviledge, if they will not give up their Names to the Beast, receive his Mark, and implicitly submit to his Authority. The Prophecy justly removes all Offence which might be taken at the Event; and, discerning it's Accomplishment, we may embolden our Hopes, that the Triumphs of Divine Justice over these Ministers of the Dragon, as they are also foretold, will be fulfilled with the like Punctuality. And oh, may the Church of GOD be secured from their Artifices, and fortified against their Terrors; and, in his own due Time, may he break the Jaw-bone of the wicked! May he utterly disarm all the Power and Policy of those who take Council together against the Lord and his Anointed; and though their Confederacies may seem to mock all human Opposition, yet, at his Appearance, they shall melt away as Snow before the Sun, when the Time to remember Sion, yea, the Set-Time is come. (Psal. cii. 13.)

Sect. 16.

Ver. 11.

Ver. 13, 14.

Ver. 12.

S E C T. XVII.

*The Vision of the Lamb standing upon Mount Sion, surrounded with those whom he had redeemed; and of several mighty Angels, proclaiming his Vengeance upon the Beast, and upon those that worship him. Rev. XIV. throughout.*

REVELATION XIV. I.

AND I looked, and lo, a Lamb stood on the Mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having

REVELATION XIV. I.

AND, while these terrible Objects were before me, I looked, and beheld another Object, which animated my Heart under the Alarm and Distress they gave me; for behold, the Lamb was standing upon Mount Sion, which was represented to me also in my Vision, as the Place on which the Temple, that had been opened in Heaven, stood; and with him were one hundred forty four thousand, who, in Opposition to the Name of the Beast, which was so rigorously imposed,

Sect. 17.

Rev. XIV.

I.

Sect. 17.  
 Rev. XIV.  
 I.

- posed, and by many received with so base a Submission, *had the Name of God his Father written on their Foreheads*, in Token of their inviolable Submission, and entire Dedication to him. *And I heard a Voice out of Heaven, which was loud as the Sound of many Waters, when tossing themselves in the Ocean, and like the Sound of great Thunder: And, loud and awful as it was, it was accompanied with a most delightful Harmony; for I heard as the Voice of Harpers playing upon their Harps, aiding their Instruments with the Melody of their Voices.*
- 3 *And they sung, as it were, a new Song, before the Throne, and before the four living Creatures, and the twenty four Elders, who, in this Vision, still appeared to be present; and none could learn the Song, unless the one hundred and forty four thousand, who are redeemed from the Earth, and are as the Representatives of the whole Body of the redeemed.*
- 4 *These are pure and unspotted Souls, free from the Idolatries and other Abominations, which have been so prevalent in the Age in which they live; or, to speak in the prophetick Language, these are they, who have not been polluted with Women; for they are chaste Virgins (a): These are they, who follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth; and, having humbly traced his Footsteps upon Earth, shall be led by him to the Possession of various and ever-new Delights in the celestial World. These are they, who were redeemed from among Men, [as] the first Fruits, consecrated to GOD, and to the Lamb; most excellent in their Kind, and separate from every unclean or profane Use, to the immediate Honour of GOD, and of their*  
 Re-

having his Fathers Name written in their Foreheads.

2 And I heard a Voice from Heaven, as the Voice of many Waters, and as the Voice of a great Thunder: and I heard the Voice of Harpers harping with their Harps:

3 And they sung as it were a new Song before the Throne, and before the four Beasts, and the Elders: and no Man could learn that Song, but the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the Earth.

4 These are they which were not defiled with Women; for they are Virgins: these are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth: these were redeemed from among Men, being the First-fruits unto God, and to the Lamb.

(a) *They are Virgins.*] This probably signifies their Freedom from Idolatry, which is, in a spiritual Sense, Fornication; nor can it, with any Reason, be urged against Marriage.

(b) *First*

5 And in their Mouth was found no Guile: for they are without Fault before the Throne of God.

Redeemer (b). *And no Deceit, or Evil* Sect. 17.  
of any Kind, *was found in their Mouth, for* Rev. XIV.  
*they are entirely blameless before the Throne of* 5  
**GOD**, and exalted to that World, where he reigns in perfect Purity, as well as divine Glory; nor can any Thing unclean be admitted in his Presence.

6 And I saw another Angel fly in the midst of Heaven, having the everlasting Gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the Earth, and to every Nation, and Kindred, and Tongue, and People,

*And I saw another glorious Angel, flying* 6  
with Strength and Rapidity, *thro' the midst*  
*of Heaven (c), having in his Hand the Vo-*  
lume of a Book, which he displayed, as with an Air of Complacency and Triumph, even the everlasting Gospel, to preach to the Inhabitants of the Earth, even to every Nation, and Tribe, and Tongue, and People, dispersed over the World. And as he passed, 7

7 Saying with a loud Voice, Fear God, and give Glory to him, for the Hour of his Judgment is come: and worship him that made Heaven and Earth, and the Sea, and the Fountains of Waters.

I heard him making Proclamation of its important Contents, and *saying with a loud* 7  
*Voice, Fear God, and give Glory to him,* with becoming Reverence and Submission, *for the Hour of his Judgment is come,* when he shall execute Vengeance on his Enemies; *and worship him, who made Heaven, and Earth, and Sea, and the limpid Fountains of Waters,* which are derived from it, and flow back into it. *And another great Angel* 8

8 And there followed another Angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great City, because she made all Nations drink of the Wine of the Wrath of her Fornication.

*followed him, crying out, as with the Voice* of Exultation and Triumph, *saying, It is fallen, it is fallen, [even] Babylon, the great City,* a City famous as Babylon of old, when it was at the Height of its Power and Glory: God, in his righteous Vengeance, hath brought it down, *because it made all the Nations drink of the Wine of its raging Fornication,*

(b) *First Fruits*, most excellent in their Kind, &c.] That the *Jewish first Fruits* had this Property, will appear from comparing the following *Texts* relating to them; *Deut.* xviii. 4. *Exod.* xxii. 29. *Numb.* xviii. 12. *Micah* vii. 1. Compare *James* i. 18.

(c) *Angel flying, &c.*] The *Flight of an Angel* admirably represents the *Swiftness* of that Progress by which the *Gospel* dispersed itself over the whole World, as *Archbishop Tillotson* well observes. See his *Works*, Vol. ii. pag. 144.

Y y y 2

(d) On

Sect. 17. *tion*, 'till they were stimulated thereby to the most scandalous and furious Excesses.

Rev. XIV. 9. *And a third Angel followed them both, saying with a loud Voice, If any one, how strong soever the Temptation may have been, worship the Beast, and his Image, and receive the Mark on his Forehead, or on his Hand (d); if he subject himself to this wicked and idolatrous Form of Religion, and obstinately persist in it, notwithstanding the Light, which God is giving to discover its Errors and Superstitions;*

10 *He also shall, himself, drink of the Wine of the Indignation of GOD, which is tempered with various Ingredients of Wrath, without any Mixture of Mercy, in the Cup of his Wrath; and he shall be tormented with Fire and Brimstone, in the Day of GOD's future Vengeance, in the Presence of the holy Angels (e), and in the Presence of the Lamb (f); whose Religion has so shamefully been perverted and dishonoured, even by those, who pretend entirely to have ingrossed it.*

11 *And the Smoak of their Torment ascendeth for ever and ever, without any Period; and they have no Rest Day nor Night, who worship the Beast and his Image, and whoever, in Contempt of the Authority and Testimony of GOD, receive the Mark of his Name (g), as the Badge of their Devoted.*

9 And the third Angel followed them, saying with a loud Voice, If any Man worship the Beast and his Image, and receive his Mark in his Forehead, or in his Hand,

10 The same shall drink of the Wine of the Wrath of God, which is poured out without Mixture into the Cup of his Indignation; and he shall be tormented with Fire and Brimstone, in the Presence of the holy Angels, and in the Presence of the Lamb.

11 And the Smoke of their Torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no Rest Day nor Night, who worship the Beast and his Image, and whosoever receiveth the Mark of his Name,

(d) *On his Hand.*] Compare Sect. xvi. Note (m).

(e) *Presence of the holy Angels.*] From hence Mr. Reynolds conjectures, that possibly the Torments of the Damned may, at certain Seasons, through eternal Ages, become a Spectacle to the Inhabitants of the blessed World above. See his *Queries concerning Angels*, pag. 305.

(f) *Presence of the Lamb.*] This signifies, (as Dr. Clark well observes,) that it shall not only be appointed by the infinite Majesty of God, the righteous Judge of all, but approved moreover by Men and Angels, and by him also, who loved us unto Death, even Christ, that merciful and compassionate High-Priest. *Clark's Posth. Serm. Vol. i. pag. 341.*

(g) *The Smoke of their Torment,—who worship the Beast, &c.*] When I seriously reflect on this Text, and how directly the Force of it lies against those, who, contrary to the Light of their Consciences, continue in the Communion of the Church of Rome, for secular Advantage, or to avoid the Terror of Persecution, it almost makes me tremble; and I heartily

12 Here is the Patience of the Saints : here are they that keep the Commandments of God, and the Faith of Jesus.

votedness to him.

In the mean Time, Sect. 17.

these Deceivers shall have their Day, when all the Terrors of secular Power shall inforce their impious and iniquitous Decrees. And here is the Patience of the Saints ; here [are] the Triumphs of those, who keep the Commandments of GOD, and the Faith of Jesus, and are determined to maintain the Purity of the Gospel, amidst these formidable Efforts to corrupt it.

Rev. XIV. 12.

13 And I heard a Voice from Heaven, saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the Dead which die in the Lord, from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their Labours ; and

And I heard a Voice from Heaven, saying to me, Write this for the Instruction of Mankind in the most distant Ages ; henceforth (b) blessed [are] the Dead, that die in the Lord (i) : so numerous, and so various are the Calamities which persecuting Powers shall bring upon the Saints, that there is abundant Reason to congratulate those, who are taken out of this vexatious, oppressive, and afflictive World, whether by a natural, or by a violent Death : Yea, saith the Spirit, by whose Inspiration and Command I record it, they are assuredly blessed ; for they are removed, that they may for ever rest from their Labours, and their

13

I heartily wish, that all others, who connive at those Things in the Discipline and Worship of Protestant Churches, which they in their Consciences think to be sinful Remains of Popish Superstition and Corruption, would seriously attend to this Passage, which is one of the most dreadful in the whole Book of GOD, and weigh its awful Contents, that they may keep at the greatest possible Distance from this horrible Curse, which is sufficient to make the Ears of every one that hears it, to tingle. Compare Jer. xxv. 15, 16.

(b) Henceforth.] The learned Witsius understands this to mean, from the Time of their Death : As if it had been said, (απασι,) immediately after their Dissolution they are Blessed. Wits. Oecon. Fœd. 3. xiv. 21. And Mr. Baxter observes, their Works are said to follow with them, μετ' αυτων, not to come many thousand Years after them.

(i) Die in the Lord.] Archbishop Tillotson interprets this, chiefly, of those, who die Martyrs in the Cause of Christ ; who, no doubt, are included. But I think the Phrase more extensive. There is, perhaps, an Allusion to the Words of Solomon, Eccl. iv. 2. I praised the Dead already dead, rather than the Living, yet alive, in Time of extream Degeneracy, and bitter Persecution. See his Works, Vol. ii. pag. 183.—Bishop Burnet (on the Articles, pag. 200.) and many other Protestant Writers, have justly urged this Text, as demonstrative, against the Popish Doctrine of Purgatory.

(k) Q. 16



Sect. 17.  
 Rev. XIV.  
 13.

their Sorrows; and their Works of Piety and Goodness, though so ill requited here, shall not be forgotten, but shall follow them into the Presence of God, shall be acknowledged there in the most condescending Manner, and, through the Riches of divine Mercy, recompenced with eternal Glory. Accordingly, let this Remembrance of their Faith and Patience, in Connection with this transcendent Reward, encourage and animate their surviving Brethren, to imitate their Examples.

and their Works do follow them.

- 14 And I saw, and behold, another remarkable Appearance offered itself to my View; a white Cloud, shining with wonderful Lustre and Beauty; and on the Cloud one sitting, who seemed, by the Majesty of his Form, to be like the Son of Man, as represented in Daniel; having on his Head a golden Crown, and in his Hand, instead of a Sceptre, a sharp Sickle; so that he seemed to be going forth, as to some wonderful Harvest. And as soon as I had viewed him, another Angel came out of the Temple of God, crying, with a loud Voice, to him that sat upon the Cloud, Put forth thy Sickle, and reap, for the Season of thy Reaping is come, because the Harvest of the Earth is now fully ripe. (Compare Joel iii. 13.) Execute therefore this Judgment, O thou mighty Messenger of God, which the Wickedness of the World hath righteously deserved. And accordingly, he that sat upon the Cloud, put forth his Sickle on the Earth, with Strength and Rapidity; and the Harvest of the Earth was presently reaped; signifying, that the Execution of the threatened Vengeance should be very speedy. But it seemed that the Vintage yet remained to be gathered in. And in Reference to this, another Angel came out of the Temple, that was in Heaven; and he also

14 And I looked, and behold, a white Cloud, and upon the Cloud one sat like unto the Son of Man, having on his Head a golden Crown, and in his Hand a sharp Sickle.

15 And another Angel came out of the Temple, crying with a loud Voice to him that sat on the Cloud, Thrust in thy Sickle, and reap: for the Time is come for thee to reap; for the Harvest of the Earth is ripe.

16 And he that sat on the Cloud, thrust in his Sickle on the Earth; and the Earth was reaped.

17 And another Angel came out of the Temple which is in Heaven, he also having a sharp Sickle.

18 And another Angel came out from the Altar, which had Power over Fire; and cried with a loud Cry to him that had the sharp Sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp Sickle, and gather the Clusters of the Vine of the Earth; for her Grapes are fully ripe.

19 And the Angel thrust in his Sickle into the Earth, and gathered the Vine of the Earth, and cast it into the great Wine-Prefs of the Wrath of God.

20 And the Wine-Prefs was trodden without the City, and Blood come out of the Wine-Prefs, even unto the Horse-Bridles, by the Space of a thousand and six hundred Furlongs.

also was armed as the other, like the Son of Sect. 17. Man, and had a sharp Sickle in his Hand.

And another Angel, just at that Instant, came Rev. XIV. from the Altar, having, as it seemed, Power 18.

over the Fire of it; and he called out with a great Cry to him who had the sharp Sickle, saying, Put forth thy sharp Sickle, and lop off the Clusters of the Vine, which grows upon, and extends itself almost over the Earth, for its Grapes are ripe; and the Persons represented by it have so abused the divine Long-suffering, that it is proper the Season of their Destruction should commence.

And accordingly the Angel, with Celerity 19 and Vigour, thrust out his Sickle upon the Earth, and lopped off the Grapes from the Vine of the Earth; and he threw [them] into the great Wine-Prefs of the Wrath of GOD, which seemed to stand ready to receive them.

And the Wine-Prefs, [which 20 stood] out of the City, was trodden with great Violence; and the Blood of the Grape, which I knew, betokened the Blood of those who were Enemies to GOD and his People, came out of the Wine-Prefs in such Abundance, that it made a kind of Inundation, like a vast River, or Sea, and reached up even to the Bridles of the Horses, which attempted to pass the Channel through which it flowed, at the Distance of one thousand six hundred Furlongs (k). In such an amazing Extent

(k) One thousand six hundred Furlongs.] As a Furlong is one eighth of a Mile, this would amount to 200 Miles. This Representation, like the Dimension of that Temple which Ezekiel saw, may seem extravagantly large, and such as the Eye, in Vision, could not possibly judge of. I look upon it, therefore, as only an hyperbolical Expression, to signify its exceeding Greatness; unless possibly it may point out the Dimension of that Country, over which the Judgment should extend, which is here prophetically referred to. Though perhaps it may only intimate in general, that after the Antichristian Powers had long oppressed and persecuted the Saints, the Power of Christ should humble and destroy them; and therefore they are represented as a Harvest ripe, and fit for reaping, &c. the Measure of their Iniquities being full.

Sect. 17. tent and Quantity was the Effusion of  
 Rev. XIV. Blood represented to me in Vision. (Com-  
 20. pare Isai. lxiii. 3.)

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

V. 15,—20. **I**N what awful Characters is the righteous *Vengeance* of God here described! How quickly do his haughtiest Enemies fall before him, like *Corn* before the Sickle, or *Clusters of Grapes* before the *Knife*! *His Wine-Press* shall indeed be trodden, and the *Blood* of his Enemies shall overflow: But, *blest* are all they, that put their Trust in him, and look to him, who trod the *Wine-Press* alone, and who distinguishes himself by the Title of him, who is *mighty to save*, and *who travels in the Greatness of his Strength*. (*Isai. lxiii. 1,—3.*) Arrayed in Terror, he will vanquish all the Enemies of his People; but, to his faithful Followers, will appear with the Gentleness of the *Lamb*, of the *Lamb their Redeemer*, to whose Honour *their Voices*, and *their Harps*, shall resound. Oh, how happy are those

Ver. 1. Souls, who, by his special Love, being *redeemed from among Men*, and having humbly traced the *Steps* of his Purity and Goodness on Earth, shall, in the heavenly World, follow the *Lamb whithersoever he goes*! Let us be accordingly engaged to preserve ourselves *unspotted* from the World, and to walk worthy of so exalted a Hope and Expectation; to keep our *Mouths from every Deceit*, that we may be *found blameless* in the Presence of GOD, and of the *Lamb*.

Ver. 3, 4. God hath granted us the *everlasting Gospel*, on Purpose that we might be taught to *fear him*, and to *give Glory* to his Name; to *worship him*, as the great *Creator* and righteous Governor of the Universe: And while we are under the Conduct of his Providence, and devoted to his Service, let nothing discourage or dismay us. Though for the present we see that *Babylon is triumphant*, though its *Patrons* are *making themselves drunk with the Blood* of his Saints, a very *different Cup* is prepared for her, and will assuredly be given her to drink; even the *Cup of the Wrath of GOD*, poured forth without *Mixture*; while Blessings, inconceivable and eternal, are reserved

Ver. 5. for those that *suffer for Righteousness Sake*. Let the *Patience*, therefore, of those who *keep the Commandments of GOD*, and the *Faith of Christ*, be invincible; for their fiercest, and most formidable Enemies, can only *kill the Body*; and, having done that, can neither

Ver. 6, 7. prevent,

Ver. 8,—10.

Ver. 12.

prevent, nor delay, *the Blessedness of the Dead that die in the Lord.* Sect. 17.  
 The infallible Spirit has said it, the blessed Apostle hath, by divine  
 Command, recorded it, for the Instruction and Triumph of his Ver. 13.  
 People in all Ages, that *they rest from their Labours, and that their*  
*Works follow them*; while those that persecuted and hated them,  
*rest not Day nor Night*; but the Smoak of their Torment ascendeth up Ver. 11.  
 for ever and ever. And, oh, that Numbers of those who worship Ver. 9.  
 the Beast, and who receive its Image, may be awakened, while the  
 Day of their Visitation continues; least they also, after having  
 dealt Damnation, in their arrogant Censures, upon Men of much  
 purer Faith, and holier Lives, than themselves, *be tormented with* Ver. 10.  
*Fire and Brimstone, in the Presence of the holy Angels, and in the*  
*Presence of the Lamb.*

S E C T. XVIII.

*The Appearance of seven Angels, with seven Vials, full of the seven last Plagues; and the pouring out of the three first Vials, with their consequent Effects. Rev. XV. 1. to the End. XVI. 7.*

REVELATION XV. 1.

AND I saw another Sign in Heaven, great and marvellous, seven Angels, having the seven last Plagues, for in them is filled up the Wrath of God.

REVELATION XV. 1.

AND I saw another great and wonderful Sect. 18.  
 Sign in Heaven, which fixed my Attention, and will demand that of the Ver. XV. 1.  
 Reader: *Seven Angels, who had the seven last Plagues*; so called, because in them the Wrath of GOD was to be compleated; and, because they refer to some of the last Judgments, which he shall pour forth on the Enemies of the Church, before the Time of it's most illustrious Triumph.  
*And I saw, as it were, a Sea of Glass (a);* 2  
 a great

2 And I saw as it were a Sea

(a) *Sea of Glass.*] Some explain this in a different Manner, as if there were properly a Sea, seeming to lie before the Ground which appeared in the Vision, through  
 VOL. VI. Z z z which

Sect. 18. a great crystal Vessel, like the Sea in Solomon's Temple; and, it was so irradiated with the Reflection of that Light which fell upon it from the Throne of God, that it's Waves seemed mingled with Fire. And those who overcame the Beast (b), and his Image, and stedfastly refused, though at the Expence of their Possessions and Lives, amidst so many who were devoted to him, to receive his Mark, [and] the Number of his Name, I saw standing by the Sea of Glass, having the Harps of GOD in their Hands; with which they were celebrating his Praises, for that powerful Presence and Assistance, which had rendered them victorious.

3 And they sung the Song of Moses, the faithful and beloved Servant of GOD, and the Song of Jesus the Lamb, who had bought them with his Blood (c). They celebrated the Trumpets they had gained over the proud Enemy, with a Joy like that, with which Israel of old, at the Red Sea, celebrated the Destruction of the haughty and cruel Egyptians, by the immediate and glorious Interposition of the Divine Power, saying,  
" Great

Sea of Glass, mingled with Fire; and them that had gotten the Victory over the Beast, and over his Image, and over his Mark, and over the Number of his Name, stand on the Sea of Glass, having the Harps of God.

3 And they sing the Song of Moses the Servant of God, and the Song of the Lamb, saying, Great and mar-

which they had passed who now stood upon the Shore of it; and they suppose the Glass to represent the frail Nature of this World; and the Fire, the Mixture of Calamity and Misery to which they had been exposed, before they arrived at the State of Security and Happiness in which they then were. Many other Interpretations have also been given. But the Consideration of what I have said elsewhere, of the Reference to the Scenery of the Temple, determined me to the Interpretation I have preferred.

(b) *Overcame the Beast.*] It is, in the Original, *ἐν τῷ θύρῳ*, which Dr. Clark would translate, *out of the Midst of the Beast*; that is, adhering stedfastly to the true Religion, in the Midst of an idolatrous and corrupt Nation. See his *Posth. Serm. Vol. iii. pag. 86.*

(c) *Song of Moses—and of the Lamb.*] That is, saith Mr. Mede, upon the Conversion of all Nations from Idolatry, they sung a Song of Congratulation to Moses and Jesus, whose Doctrine had so directly opposed it. *Mede on Luke xi. 2.* But I think this a very low Interpretation. Whoever diligently observes the Contents of the Song of Moses, *Exod. xv.* will find many Expressions finely adapted to the Occasion here supposed. And if it were true, as Maimonides tells us, that the Song of Moses was sung daily in the Temple-Service, it may be considered as a beautiful Illustration of this Circumstance, agreeable to the general Plan pursued in these Visions.

(d) And

marvellous are thy Works,  
Lord God Almighty; just  
and true are thy Ways,  
thou King of Saints.

4 Who shall not fear thee,  
O Lord, and glorify thy  
Name? For *thou* only art  
holy: for all Nations shall  
come and worship before  
thee; for thy Judgements  
are made manifest.

5 And after that I looked,  
and behold, the Temple of  
the Tabernacle of the Testi-  
mony in Heaven was opened:

6 And the seven Angels  
came out of the Temple,  
having the seven Plagues,  
clothed in pure and white  
linen, and having their  
Breasts girded with golden  
Girdles.

7 And one of the four  
Beasts gave unto the seven  
Angels, seven golden Vials  
full of the Wrath of God,  
who

“ Great and wonderful [are] thy Works, both Sect. 18.  
“ of Judgment and of Mercy, O Lord  
“ God Almighty; nor dost thou use thine Rev. XV. 3.  
“ Almighty Power to oppress any, the mean-  
“ est of thy Creatures; on the contrary,  
“ perfectly righteous and true [are] all thy  
“ Ways and Administrations, O King of  
“ Saints, who art thyself supremely holy,  
“ as well as powerful. *Who should not*  
“ fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy great 4  
“ and adorable Name, because [thou] only  
“ [art] holy; and, in thy Presence, the  
“ Holiness of all other Beings disappears, as  
“ unworthy to be mentioned or remember-  
“ ed. *Surely all Nations shall come and wor-*  
“ *ship before thee, in Token of the humblest*  
“ Adoration, because thy righteous Judgments  
“ are already, in many Instances, made ma-  
“ nifest, and are about to be manifested in  
“ a yet more illustrious Degree.”

And after this I saw; and behold, the Tem- 5  
ple of the Tabernacle, in which was the Ark  
of the Testimony, was opened again in Hea-  
ven: The most holy Place, which, since  
the Vision I before described, had been veiled  
again, being now subjected to my View.

And the seven Angels, who had the seven 6  
Plagues already mentioned, came out of the  
inner Apartment of the Temple, as from the  
immediate Presence of God; and, like the  
High-Priest on the Day of his most sacred  
Ministration, they were clothed with pure  
and shining linnen [Garments]; only with  
this Difference, that whereas he had on  
this Day only his linnen Girdle on, and con-  
tinued in that Dress 'till the Time of the  
Evening Sacrifice, they were girded a-  
bout the Breasts with golden Girdles.

And 7  
one of the four living Creatures, which I have  
so often mentioned, gave to the seven An-  
gels, seven golden Vials, or Censers, full of  
the Wrath of the great and blessed GOD,

Z z z 2

who

Sect. 18. *who liveth for ever and ever*; and, therefore, is to be regarded as the most formidable Enemy, as well as the most desirable

who liveth for ever and ever.

Rev. XV. 8. Friend, to immortal Beings. *And, agreeably to that wonderful Event, which happened when GOD first took Possession of the Tabernacle, and of the Temple, (Exod. xl. 34. 1 Kings viii. 10. 2 Chron. v. 14. If. vi. 4.) the Temple was full of Smoak (d); which came from the Glory of GOD, and from the Symbol of his Power. And no one could enter into the Temple, 'till the seven Plagues, which were signified by the Vials of the seven Angels, were finished; and, 'till they had emptied them by the divine Command.*

8 And the Temple was filled with Smoke from the Glory of God, and from his Power; and no Man was able to enter into the Temple, till the seven Plagues of the seven Angels were fulfilled.

Chap. XVI.  
1.

*And I then heard a great Voice out of the Temple, saying to the seven Angels, whom I have described above, Go and pour out the Vials of the Wrath of GOD, with which you are charged, upon the Earth; for his Patience will no longer endure the Provocations they are intended to punish.*

CHAP. XVI. I. And I heard a great Voice out of the Temple, saying to the seven Angels, Go your Ways, and pour out the Vials of the Wrath of God upon the Earth.

2 *And the first Angel, in Obedience to this divine Injunction, went forth, and poured out his Vial upon the Earth; and there was a malignant and grievous Ulcer, which broke out in large and dreadful Scars, upon the Men who had the Mark of the Beast, and them who worshipped his Image, and they were extremely tormented with it, and found it incurable. (Compare Exod. ix. 8,—10.) (e).*

2 And the first went, and poured out his Vial upon the Earth; and there fell a noisome and grievous Sore upon the Men which had the Mark of the Beast, and upon them which worshipped his Image.

*And*

(d) And agreeably to that wonderful Event, &c.] Indeed it appears most surprising, and worthy of greater Notice than has generally been taken of it, that the blessed God should thus, on the Consecration of the Temple, possess it alone, and drive out, as it were, even the favourable Tokens of his majestick Presence.

(e) *First Vial.*] Mr. Lowman supposes, that this third Period of the Vials, reveals the State of the Church and Providence in the Times of the last Head of the Roman Government, represented by the Beast, for 1260 Years, from about A. D. 756. to it's final Overthrow about A. D. 2016; and he interprets each Vial of some signal Judgment upon the Papal Kingdom; supposing the five first already to be poured out, and the two others to be future. But, I must own myself not to be entirely satisfied, whether this Supposition be just, (though I am rather inclined to think it is,) or whether all the following Representations do not refer to Events yet future, and

3 And the second Angel poured out his Vial upon the Sea; and it became as the Blood of a dead Man: and every living Soul died in the Sea.

And the second Angel poured out his Vial upon the Sea; and it became a Mass of Blood and Putrefaction, like that of a dead Man; and every living Soul, [that was] in the Sea, died: The Fish were immediately destroyed; and the Sea appeared a most gloomy and terrible spectacle (f). (Compare Exod. vii. 20.)

Sect. 18.

Rev. XVI.

3.

4 And the third Angel poured out his Vial upon the Rivers and Fountains of Waters; and they became Blood.

And the third Angel bore a Commission to spread the same terrible Calamity over all the fresh Waters; and, accordingly, he poured forth his Vial on the Rivers, and on the Fountains of Water, and they also became Blood; as the Sea had done on pouring out the Vial of the former Angel.

4

5 And I heard the Angel of the Waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt be, because thou hast judged thus:

And I heard the Angel of the Waters (g), who seemed to be appointed to have the Care of them, instead of repining at what was done, adoring the Hand of God in it, and saying, Most righteous art thou, O Lord, who art, and who wast, the same immutable and everlasting Jehovah; and [thou art] holy (h), because thou hast judged these, and executed:

5

and describe the supernatural Plagues to be inflicted on the Papal Kingdom, in it's last Days. Mr. Pyle interprets the first Vial, of the abandoned Degeneracy of the Popish Clergy. Mr. Lowman, with greater Probability, refers it to the great Commotions in the whole Empire, under the Family of Charles the Great; by which that Family became extinct, and the Empire, and the Crown of France, were transferred to other Families: A. D. 830. to A. D. 988. And he shews, by what Intrigues the Popes endeavoured to weaken and diminish the imperial Power, and serve their own ambitious Designs; which proved a painful Sore, and were the Cause of innumerable Mischiefs to Europe, and especially to Italy. During this Period, the Normans invaded and plundered France, the Saracens ravaged Italy, and the Hungarians the Western Parts of Germany and Italy.

(f) Second Vial.] Mr. Pyle, and Mr. Lowman, agree in referring this to the great Effusion of Blood in the holy Wars, to recover Jerusalem from the Saracens. This romantic Project was set on Foot by the Pope, pursued by the Emperor, the King of France, our King Richard, and other Princes, and many Prelates; and about two Millions lost their Lives in the several Expeditions: from A. D. 1040, to A. D. 1190. And this appears to me a very probable Interpretation.

(g) Angel of the Waters.] From this Text, compared with Chap. xiv. 18. some have inferred, that there are certain intellectual Beings which preside over the several Elements of Water, and Fire; and, by Consequence, of Earth and Air.

(h) Thou art holy.] I follow those Copies, which read it, *ὅσιος*, whereas others have it, *ὁ ἅγιος*, as in other Places of this Book.

(i) Third



Sect. 18.

Rev. XVI.  
6.

executed such awful Vengeance upon them. Justly dost thou make these persecuting and wicked Countries, the Scene of such desolating Judgments; *because they have poured forth the Blood of thy Saints, and even of thy Prophets*, like Water; and it hath flowed in a crimson Stream, 'till their Rivers have been dyed with it. *And*, accordingly, *thou* madest them read their Crime in their Punishment, and *hast given them Blood to drink, for they are worthy* of it; worthy to find such Horrors as these, whenever they look for Refreshment and Comfort. *And I heard another Angel*, whose Voice seemed to come *from the Altar, saying, Yea, O Lord God Almighty*, it is indeed thus; *true and righteous [are] all thy Judgments*. Heaven adores the Equity of thy Proceeding; and the most impious Inhabitants of Earth, or Hell, shall not be able to find any Thing to object against them, even when they have the Appearance of the greatest Severity (i).

6 For they have shed the Blood of Saints and Prophets, and thou hast given them Blood to drink; for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the Altar say, Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are thy Judgments.

(i) *Third Vial.*] Some interpret this of the Persecution of the Church of *Bohemia*. (See *Mr. Pyle in loc.*) But this by no Means suits the Act of Adoration, *ver. 5, 6*. It seems to refer to Calamities to be brought on some Parts of the *Papal Kingdom*. According to the Order of Time, *Mr. Lowman* supposes this to refer to the bloody Wars between the *Guelphs* and *Gibellines*, or the *Papal* and *Imperial* Factions, whereby the *Popes* were driven out of *Italy* into *France*; from A. D. 1200, to A. D. 1371. During this Period, both these Parties had joined in many Persecutions, and a violent one raged against the *Albigenses*; the *Inquisition* was began about A. D. 1216; and the Council of *Lateran* established these severe and cruel Methods of supporting the *Papacy*. And *GOD gave them also Blood to drink*, (*ver. 6.*) for a violent Contest arose between the *Papal* and *Imperial* Parties, about the Right of presenting to Ecclesiastical Preferments, so that almost all the Cities in *Italy* were engaged in civil Wars, and great Multitudes destroyed. In A. D. 1282. all the *French* in *Sicily* were massacred. Thus were they, who *shed the Blood of the Saints*, punished by civil Contentions and Bloodshed, And, on the whole, this seems to be the most probable and satisfactory Interpretation.

IMPROVE-

I M P R O V E M E N T.

LET us now raise our Eyes and our Hearts above the low and Sect. 18.  
 fordid Scenes of Mortality, to those happy and exalted Spirits, Ver. 1, 2.  
*who are described as standing before the crystal Sea, with golden Harps*  
 in their Hands. Let us attentively hearken to those broken and im-  
 perfect Ecchoes of *the Song of Moses, and of the Lamb*, which a Ver. 3.  
 gracious GOD causes to descend, as it were, to this World of ours,  
 and which sometimes sweetly mingle themselves with the Clamour  
 of Strife, with the Din of Folly, with the Groans of Misery. Hap-  
 py and glorious is their Condition now, who are freed from all  
 these Evils, and who triumph over all their Enemies; whom, as  
 it was said to *Israël of the Egyptians, having beheld, they shall see*  
*them no more for ever: (Exod. xiv. 13.)* They are now acknow-  
 ledging their great Deliverer, singing everlasting *Praises* to his Name,  
 and celebrating the Wonders of his Works, and the Righteousness  
 and Truth of all his Ways. Ver. 4.  
*O Lord God Almighty, O thou King of Saints, who would not fear thee, and glorify thy holy Name? Let*  
*the Nations come, and worship in thy Presence; let them pay thee*  
 their humble Reverence and Homage, before the *Vials of thy Wrath* Ver. 6,—8.  
*are poured out: Those Vials, which, terrible as their Contents are,*  
 the benevolent Spirits of Heaven *prepare themselves, at thy Com-* Chap. xvi. 1.  
*mand, to pour forth with Pleasure; applauding, in their responsive* Ver. 5, 7.  
*Hymns, thy righteous Judgments, even when the forest and most*  
 dreadful *Plagues, torment the Worshipers of the Beast, and his*  
*Image; even when their Seas, and their Rivers, are turned into* Ver. 3, 4.  
*Blood.* To whatever be the Calamities, whether past or future,  
 to which any of these Particulars may refer, surely they are big  
 with Terror to those Wretches, who, on any Pretence, are *pour-*  
*ing forth the Blood of thy Prophets, and thy Saints.* Ver. 6.  
*They are wor-*  
*thy of having Blood given them to drink, and, accordingly, thou*  
 hast a dreadful Draught in Reserve for them. And, though some  
 of them may have laid down their *boary Heads in Peace*, which,  
 we might rather have expected, would have been *brought to the*  
*Grave with Blood, the Day of thy Vengeance* will surely come: A  
 Vengeance so terrible, that nothing but a Zeal for thy violated  
 Law, and thine injured Gospel, would make the very Sight of it  
*supportable* to those whose Cause shall then be pleaded, and whose  
 Blood shall be visited on their *Tormenters and Murtherers.*

S E C T.

## S E C T. XIX.

*The pouring forth of the four last Vials, and the awful Events they produce ; with the incorrigible Obstinacy of the Sinners, on whom this Vengeance is executed. Rev. XVI. 8, to the End.*

## REVELATION XVI. 8.

Sect. 19.  
Rev. XVI.  
8.

9 **A**ND the three former Angels having thus poured forth their Vials on the Earth, and Sea, and the Rivers of Water, *the fourth Angel poured forth his Vial on the Sun (a) ; and, in Consequence of that, an extraordinary Power was given to it, to scorch Men with an intolerable Heat ; so that they seemed, as it were, to live in the very Fire itself. And Men were scorched with sudden Calentures, and with great and unsufferable Fierceness of Heat ; and yet, instead of giving Glory to the great Author of these awful Chastisements, which afforded them so lively an Idea of everlasting Burn-*

## REVELATION XVI. 8.

**A**ND the fourth Angel poured out his Vial upon the Sun ; and Power was given unto him to scorch Men with Fire.

9 And Men were scorched with great Heat, and blas-

(a) *Fourth Angel poured forth his Vial on the Sun.*] Some interpret this of the Quarrel between the Popes and Emperors, in the *fourteenth, fifteenth, and sixteenth* Centuries. See *Mr. Pyle in loc.* *Mr. Lowman*, with greater Probability, refers it to the long and bloody Wars in *Italy, France, Germany, and Spain*, occasioned by a Schism in the *Papacy* ; (from A. D. 1378, to A. D. 1530.) there being three *Popes*, in three Lines of Succession, at the same Time. During this Period the *Turks* took *Constantinople*, and put an End to the *Eastern Empire*. And some suppose there is a further Reference to hot and burning Seasons, which should destroy the Fruits of the Earth, and occasion pestilential Disorders ; and Historians inform us, that this was the Case in the Time supposed to be here referred to ; particularly by Means of the *Sweating Sickness*, which began in *England*, and spread wide into other Countries, particularly, *Germany*, A. D. 1517, and again A. D. 1529. But that *they repented not*, (*Ver. 9.*) is evident from the War commenced against the *Bobemians* ; the infamous Conduct of the Council of *Constance*, in burning *John Huss*, and *Jerom* of *Prague*, in Violation of the publick Faith, and establishing that scandalous Doctrine, *that Faith is not to be kept with Hereticks, &c. &c.*

(b) *Fifth*

blasphemed the Name of God, which hath Power over these Plagues : and they repented not, to give him Glory.

Burnings, as if they had already been Inhabitants of the World of Despair, they blasphemed the Name of GOD, who had Power over these Plagues. And the Continuance of their Torments did not subdue their Hearts, but they still persisted, as with a diabolical Obstinacy, and repented not, to give Glory to him, by a Confession of their Sins, by seeking his Mercy, and returning to his Obedience. (Compare Isa. xxiv. 6.)

Sect. 19.  
Rev. XVI.  
9.

10 And the fifth Angel poured out his Vial upon the Seat of the Beast; and his Kingdom was full of Darkness, and they gnawed their Tongues for Pain,

And as these Vials had greatly affected the Kingdom of the Beast, the next came still nearer to him; for, the fifth Angel poured forth his Vial upon the Throne of the Beast itself (b); and his Kingdom was darkened, so that his unhappy Subjects, from whom he had so long veiled the Light of God's Word, and of his Favour, had not the Benefit of the solar Rays, either to guide or cheer them. (Compare Ezek. xxxii. 8.) And yet at the same Time, the secret Fire kindled in their Veins by the former scorching Heat continued; and they gnawed their Tongues for the Extremity of the Pain and Anguish which they felt; And they still blasphemed the

10

11 And blasphemed the God of Heaven, because of their

great GOD, the tremendous Majesty of Heaven,

11

(b) Fifth Vial.] Mr. Pyle interprets this of the Perplexity occasioned to the See of Rome, by removing the Seat of it to Avignon, and the Schism between the Popes. But this Prophecy seems to refer to a later Period. Mr. Lowman's Interpretation is more probable, who refers it to the Protestant Reformation, and the Confirmation of it by the principal States of Europe, notwithstanding all the Attempts of the Pope, and in Opposition to the papal Authority: from A. D. 1560, to A. D. 1650. During this Period, several Nations renounced Subjection to the Pope, and have continued free to this Day; and, in other Nations, his Power has been greatly abridged and restrained. This Event gave great Vexation to the Popes, and their Adherents occasioned Invasions, Assassinations, Massacres, and bloody Wars; as the civil Wars, in France, the Wars in Germany about the Reformation, the War between Spain and the United Provinces, the Spanish Invasion of England, and the Powder-Plot; the Massacre of Paris, &c. Yet all proved unsuccessful to prevent the Establishment of the reformed Religion. And that they repented not of their Deeds, (Ver. 11.) is evident from the Instances of their Rage and Cruelty already mentioned, and which they take Care to repeat whenever they have Power; and especially from the Edicts of the Council of Trent, (from A. D. 1542, to A. D. 1562.) which, instead of diminishing or relaxing, increased and confirmed the Corruptions of Popery, and condemned all Doctrines tending to Reformation.

Sect. 19.  
 Rev. XVI.  
 11.

ven, as well as Earth, for their Pains and their Ulcers, which the scorching Heat had excited; and they repented not of their wicked Works, whereby they had awakened his just Indignation.

their Pains and their Sores, and repented not of their Deeds.

12 And the sixth Angel poured forth his Vial upon the great River Euphrates (c); and it's Water, wide and rapid as the Stream had been, was dried up immediately, that a Way might be prepared for the March of the Kings from the rising of the Sun, who appeared in Vision as coming to the Borders of it, with all their Armies, to pour forth Destruction upon the Beast and his Kingdom.

12 And the sixth Angel poured out his Vial upon the great River Euphrates; and the Water thereof was dried up, that the Way of the Kings of the East might be prepared.

13 And, as I saw the Dragon standing in my Presence, with the Beast and the false Prophet near him, as the great Abettors of his Kingdom, which was threatened by this Invasion, I had an Intimation given me of the various Efforts they should make for the Preservation of it: [And] out of the Mouth of the Dragon, and out of the Mouth of the Beast, and out of the Mouth of the false Prophet (d), [there came] evidently three Animals, which expressed unclean Spirits, being represented by Creatures like Frogs:

13 And I saw three unclean Spirits like Frogs come out of the Mouth of the Dragon, and out of the Mouth of the Beast, and out of the Mouth of the false Prophet.

14 For these are the Spirits of Demons, whose Design it is to impose upon Mankind by the most artful Stratagems, and Pretences of working Miracles, by which they attempted to support the Kingdom they had raised: And, indeed,

14 For they are the Spirits of Devils, working Miracles, which

(c) *River Euphrates.*] It appears to me, that this implies the Invasion of the Papal Kingdom from the East; but, as I believe the Vision not yet accomplished, I freely confess, that it is involved in those Clouds and Darkness, which I am not able to penetrate.—Mr. Pyle explains it of the Conquest of the Eastern Christians, by the growing Power of the Ottoman House, and the Contempt of Popery in some Parts of the West. But this Part of the Prophecy seems to refer to an Event much later; and, like the rest, to denote some Judgment on the Papal Kingdom, to happen, probably, between A. D. 1700, and A. D. 1900.

(d) *False Prophet.*] As the false Prophet is here joined with the Beast, and also in Chap. xix. 20. and there said to work Miracles before the Beast, he seems to be the same mentioned Chap. xiii. 11, 12. but there described as another Beast, and said to do great Miracles in the Sight of the Beast. See Sect. xvi. Notes (b) (i).

(e) *Keep-*

which go forth unto the Kings of the Earth, and of the whole World, to gather them to the Battle of that great Day of God Almighty.

indeed, it seemed they did even enchant whole Nations ; for they were permitted by **GOD**, to go forth to the Kings of that Part of the Earth, where the Seat of the Beast was ; and, indeed, his Territory was so extensive, that it might be said, they went through the whole World ; and they operated so powerfully, as to bring them together, to the Battle of that great Day of GOD the Almighty, in which he was secretly determined to pour forth his Vengeance upon them.

Sect. 19.  
Rev. XVI.  
14.

15 Behold, I come as a Thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his Garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his Shame.

And, as this last Effort of this infernal Agent, would be a signal Trial of the Faith and Constancy of the Saints, in order the better to fortify them against it, I heard a Voice, which I understood to be that of our Lord Jesus Christ, saying, *Behold I come suddenly and unexpectedly, as a Thief, that surprizes a sleeping Family : Blessed [is] he that watcheth, and keepeth his Garments (e), that they may not suddenly be snatched from him, and he may not be forced to walk naked, so that Men should see his Shame.* Let my Servants, therefore, guard against these sudden Surprizes, which, during this Time of Danger and Alarm, may frequently happen.

15

16 And he gathered them together

And the Army appearing against the Saints, as was observed above, *He*, that is, **GOD**, by the secret Conduct of his Providence, so disposed Things, that he gathered them together (f) into

16

(e) *Keepeth his Garments.*] Dr. Lightfoot thinks here is an Allusion to what that Jewish Officer called the Man of the Mountain, that is, of the House of the Lord, used to do, when taking his Round in the Temple to examine the Watch ; if he met with any asleep, he had a Liberty to set Fire to his Garments. Perhaps, in this Case, the Person might be obliged to appear in the Fragments of his burnt Garment the next Day, which would be a great Disgrace. See his Works, Vol. i. pag. 919. According to Ainsworth, (on Numb. xviii. 4, 5.) they were beaten by the Provost, and their Garments were taken away and burnt.

(f) *He gathered them.*] This seems a memorable Circumstance ; they were the Dragon's Army, yet **GOD** assembled them. Such oblique Intimations of the Interposition of Providence, are wonderfully instructive, and they are scattered up and down in many Places of the Sacred Writings.—That *Megiddo* had been a Place remarkable

Sect. 19. into a certain Place, [which is] called in the Hebrew Language, Armageddon, or the Mountain of Megiddo, because it was to be a Place more remarkable for Slaughter, than Megiddo had ever been.

Rev. XVI.  
16.

17 And when they were there assembled, the seventh Angel poured forth his Vial into the Air; and there came forth a great Voice from the Temple of Heaven, even from the very Throne of GOD himself, saying, "It is now done, the great Work is just compleat-

18 "ing." And there were Voices, and Thunders, and Lightenings; and there was also together with them a great Earthquake, to add new Horror to the Scene, such as there had not been from the Time that Men were upon the Earth; even such, and so great an Earthquake, quite unequalled in History, or Observation.

19 And the great City was immediately divided into three Parts, and the Cities of the Gentiles fell down. And thus it appeared, that Babylon the Great came into Remembrance before GOD, to give her the long threatened Cup of the Wine of his fiercest Wrath, in which all the most dreadful Ingredients of Vengeance were, as it were, mingled together, like poignant Poison in the strongest Wine, to give it the greater Power and Efficacy.

20 And the whole Face of Nature was thrown into such a Consternation by Means of this grand Event, that every Island fled away, and the Mountains were found no more.

21 And a great and violent Storm of Hail, the Stones of which were as of the Weight of a Talent, descended from Heaven upon Men, so as to dash in Pieces the stoutest Heroes, how well soever

together into a Place called in the Hebrew Tongue, Armageddon.

17 And the seventh Angel poured out his Vial into the Air; and there came a great Voice out of the Temple of Heaven, from the Throne, saying, It is done.

18 And there were Voices, and Thunders, and Lightenings; and there was a great Earthquake, such as was not since Men were upon the Earth, so mighty an Earthquake and so great.

19 And the great City was divided into three Parts, and the Cities of the Nations fell: and great Babylon came in Remembrance before God, to give unto her the Cup of the Wine of the Fierceness of his Wrath.

20 And every Island fled away, and the Mountains were not found.

21 And there fell upon Men a great Hail out of Heaven,

for Slaughter, See Judges v. 19. 2 Kings ix. 27. 2 Chron. xxxv. 22. Compare Zach. xii. 11. To express the certain Destruction, that should come upon these Antichristian Powers, they are described, as brought together to this Mountain.

(g) Seventh

Heaven, every Stone about the weight of a Talent: and men blasphemed God because of the Plague of the Hail; for the Plague thereof was exceeding great.

soever they might be armed and defended. Sect. 19.  
 And Men, instead of being reformed by it, <sup>Rev. XVI. 21.</sup> blasphemed GOD so much the more for the Plague of the Hail; for the Plague of it was very great, and brought along with it a very extensive Ruin and Defolation (g).

I M P R O V E M E N T.

Whatever particular Events these *Vials* might be respectively intended to represent, they all agree in giving us most awful Views of the *Divine Power* and *Agency* over the whole Universe. He is able to scorch and blast the Earth with insufferable Heat, to veil it in Midnight *Darkness*, to dry up its Rivers, or even shake its Foundations, so as to throw down, in a Moment, the strongest and the proudest Cities. From the Air he can cause even Rivers of Ice to descend, sufficient, not only to destroy our frail and tender Bodies, but those regular Fortifications, which are deemed impregnable; turning them into the Graves of those, who seek and expect Protection from them. How worthy is this tremendous Being of our *Homage*, and *Reverence*? And yet Men bear of his awful Judgments, and sometimes see and feel them, too, and continue unreformed. Even while they are gnawing their Tongues thro' the Extremity of Pain and Anguish, it is possible, that as well as their wounded Tongues will give them Leave, they may blaspheme the GOD of Heaven, and utter their impotent Rage and Malice against him. The infernal Regions resound with diabolical Language: And oh, that so many Parts of this Earth bore no Resemblance to them. But let the Outrage of the Wicked be what it may, God, when he enters into Judgment, will overcome. And, though the Rage of his Enemies engages them to gather themselves together, the Event will prove, that it is only as Sheep for the Slaughter. And, while they are acting in this with the utmost Freedom, they are indeed assembled by him, their own angry Passions subserving the Purposes of his righteous Providence.

Let

(g) *Seventh Vial.*] This is introductory to the Fall of the *Papal Kingdom*; and the Expressions, *Ver. 19.* may only signify, that great Numbers should fall by these awful Judgments, which were only introductory to the full and compleat Ruin afterwards described.



Sect. 19.

Ver. 15.

Let us confide in his Word, let us attend to his Voice; and, in Spite of all our Difficulties and, Dangers, let us do our Endeavour, to secure the *Blessedness* of that Man, who *watcheth, and keepeth his Garments*; who is always on his Guard against *every* Surprise, which might expose him to *Shame* in the Presence of his Master, though he should come in ever so unexpected a Manner, even *like a Thief in the Night*.

S E C T. XX.

*In order to let the Author into the Meaning of the seven Vials, he sees a Representation of the great Harlot sitting upon a mysterious Beast; and bears her doomed to Destruction by the divine Judgment. Rev. XVII. throughout.*

REVELATION XVII. I.

Sect. 20.

Rev. XVII. 1.

I.

**A**ND, when all this was done, *one of the seven Angels, who had been honoured with bearing the seven Vials, the pouring forth of which I have just described, came and spake with me, saying to me, Come, [and] I will shew thee, to what this prophetick Scene, which has passed before thy View, principally refers, even the Judgment of the great Harlot, that sitteth upon many Waters, whom thou shalt now see; and observe the terrible Vengeance, to which she is reserved, though so many People have been corrupted by her, and though she has tyrannized over them in so insolent and imperious a Manner:* Even of her, *with whom the Kings of the Earth have so long committed Fornication, (Compare Isai. xxiii. 17.) and their*

REVELATION XVII. I.

**A**ND there came one of the seven Angels which had the seven Vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither, I will shew unto thee the Judgment of the great Whore, that sitteth upon many Waters:

2 With whom the Kings of the Earth have committed Fornication

Fornication, and the Inhabiters of the Earth have been made drunk with the Wine of her Fornication.

their Subjects have been debauched with them; so that, in a Manner, all *the Inhabitants of the Earth have been drunk with the Wine of her Whoredom*, as if they had taken some powerful Provocative, to make them doat upon her, and sacrifice every Dictate of Religion, and Reason, and even common Sense, to those alluring Arts, with which she has been tempting them. Sect. 20.  
Rev. XVII.  
2.

3 So he carried me away in the Spirit into the Wilderness: and I saw a Woman sit upon a Scarlet-coloured Beast, full of Names of Blasphemy, having seven Heads and ten Horns.

*And he brought me in the Spirit into the Wilderness; and I saw a Woman, of an impudent Front, and a most imperious and cruel Appearance, sitting upon a scarlet Beast, fierce and savage; and the Beast had gawdy Trappings of Embroidery upon it, full of blasphemous Names, ascribing to itself, and the Harlot upon it, Properties and Glories which belong to God alone; and having also, like the Beast which I saw before, (Chap. xiii. 1.) seven Heads, and ten Horns; referring to the Hills on which the City, designed by this Harlot, stood, and the Number of Kingdoms subject to its Government.* 3

4 And the Woman was arrayed in Purple, and Scarlet Colour, and decked with Gold and precious Stone and Pearls, having a golden Cup in her Hand, full of Abominations and Filthiness of her Fornication.

*And the Charms of her Person, such as they were, were set off with all the gorgeous Ornaments of the most splendid Dress; for, the Woman was clothed with Purple, and Scarlet, and adorned with Gold, and precious Stones, and Pearls; having also a golden Cup in her Hand full of that inflaming Mixture, by which those who drank of it, were instigated to all the Abominations and Pollution of her dissolute and abandoned Whoredom; that is, those idolatrous Practices, which the Society of Men represented by this infamous Woman, had carried to so shameful a Height. (Compare Jer. li. 7.)* 4

5 And upon her Forehead was a Name written, **MYS.**

But, that she might appear in my Eyes as a Criminal, marked out by God for speedy and dreadful Execution, [*she had*] upon her Forehead [*her*] Name, her Titles and 5

Sect. 20. and Crimes, *written*; and the first Word was *MYSTERY*: The great Mystery of Iniquity, abetted by all the Fraud and Artifice which can be conceived, is represented by this Woman: After which followed these Words, *BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH*; the most impudent Strumpet, that ever appeared upon Earth, and the greatest Procurefs of Lewdness, that ever polluted the Face of

Rev. XVII.  
5.

- 6 it. *And I saw the Woman drunk*; and was informed, that it was *with the Blood of the Saints, and with the Blood of the Martyrs of Jesus*; of which she had gorged vast Quantities, and for which she still thirsted impatiently; and seemed to cast her greedy Eyes around, as longing for renewed Draughts of it. *And I wondered, when I saw her, with great Amazement (a)*, as I knew she represented a Society that would call itself Christian, and pretend a Regard for Jesus and his Saints, in the midst of all this cruel Persecution of them; and also, for the Honour of God, amidst all these unequalled Idolatry and Immoralities:
- 7 *And the Angel said unto me, Why dost thou wonder? Hast thou not thyself had Intimation of this Antichristian Sect, and this great Apostacy? I will tell thee the Secret of the whole Matter; the Mystery of the Woman, and of the Beast which carries her, which hath, as thou seest, the seven Heads, and the ten Horns.*
- 8 *The Beast which thou formerly sawest, was, and is not (b)*; that is, God will cut short  
it's

MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

6 And I saw the Woman drunken with the Blood of the Saints, and with the Blood of the Martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great Admiration.

7 And the Angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell the Mystery of the Woman, and of the Beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven Heads and ten Horns.

8 The Beast that thou sawest, was, and is not; and

(a) *Amazement.*] This seems a plain Argument, that the Society referred to, was *Christian*; for it had been no great *Wonder*, that a *Heathen Power* should *persecute*.

(b) *The Beast—was, and is not.*] This seems to intimate, that the persecuting Power

and shall ascend out of the bottomless Pit, and go into Perdition: and they that dwell on the Earth shall wonder (whose Names were not written in the Book of Life from the Foundation of the World) when they behold the Beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 And here is the Mind which hath Wisdom. The seven Heads are seven Mountains, on which the Woman sitteth.

10 And there are seven Kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short Space.

11 And the Beast that was, and is not, even he is the Eighth, and is of the Seven,

it's Reign, and he will indeed ascend, as has been represented, out of the bottomless Pit, and go suddenly into Destruction; and the Inhabitants of the Earth, (whose Names, as I said, are not written in the Book of Life from the Foundation of the World,) shall wonder, seeing the Beast, who, for a little while, was, and is not; that is, he shall quickly be overthrown, though he is to appear for a while, and perform such great Wonders.

Here [is] a Proof of the Understanding that hath Wisdom; for the utmost Sagacity may here be put to the Trial. But this I will observe, to guide the enquiring Mind, and I am commissioned by God to give this Key to the Mystery, that the seven Heads of the Beast are seven Mountains, on which that celebrated City is built, on which the infamous Woman I have been describing, sitteth.

And there are seven Kings, or Forms of Government (c), five of them are fallen, and one is, [and] the other is not yet come; and when he comes, he must endure for a little Time, but will soon be destroyed and swallowed up.

And the Beast, of whom I said, that he was, and is not, he is the eighth, and he is of the seven (d);

er of Pagan Rome, should for a while revive in Papal Rome, and, e'er long, be utterly destroyed.

(c) Seven—Forms of Government.] Some reckon these to be the Roman Kings, Consuls, Dictators, Decenvirs, military Tribunes, Emperors, and Popes. But I much question whether this be a right Solution.—Mr. Lowman supposes here is an Intimation, that the seventh Form of Government was not to begin, till the Imperial Power was destroyed. And this last may, on some Account, be called the Seventh, and for other Reasons, the Eighth Head of Government, as the Exarchate of Ravenna was, in some Sense, a new Form of Government, and yet hardly so distinct and proper a Form, as to be reckoned for a different Head. Compare Chap. xii. 6. Note (d).

(d) He is the eighth, &c.] Mr. Fleming understands this of the Government of the Ostrogoths in Rome; who, though they were the seventh Head in Number, yet were not of the Seven, that is, such as the six first, and the eighth, because they were Foreigners, whereas the others were Natives. Flem. on the first Ref. pag. 106, 107. This exact Prophecy, he says, is a great Confirmation of the divine Authority of this Book. Limborch understands it of the German Emperor, who was only titular King of Rome. See the preceding Note.

Sect. 20. he ariseth out of the Remainders of this People, *but at length goes into Destruction*, as the rest, though his Reign shall be so much longer than any of his Predecessors.

Rev. XVII.  
II.

12 *And the ten Horns, which thou sawest, are ten Kings, or Kingdoms, which shall arise out of the Ruin of the former State, and shall all, for a while, be dependent upon, and subject to, the Beast; they have not, indeed, yet received their Kingdom, but they shall receive Authority from the Beast as Kings, though greatly under his Limitation and Controul, to reign for one Hour, for a certain limited Time.*

13 *And, however, these Princes may be disunited in their political Interests, which may, in some Respects, contradict each other; yet, with respect to their unhappy Prejudices in Religion, and idolatrous Inclinations, there shall be a surprising Agreement between them; and they have one Mind and Sentiment in that Respect, and shall consent to deliver over their own Power and Authority to the Beast, to be employed by him for the Advancement of his Interest; so that they shall act but as his Viceroys, even in their own Territories.*

14 *These also shall presume to make War with the Lamb; and the Consequence may easily be conjectured; for the Lamb, who bears such magnificent Titles, and who hath already triumphed over all the Powers of Hell, shall undoubtedly overcome them, and triumph over them; for he is, indeed, (what some vain Mortals have impiously and arrogantly called themselves,) Lord of Lords, and King of Kings, the supreme Ruler of all Governors and Magistrates upon the Face of the Earth, to whom Dominion over them belongs, by the strictest and most unalienable Right; and those that are with him, and have the Honour to fight under his Banner, [are] not only called to arm themselves in this glorious*

Seven, and goeth into Perdition.

12 And the ten Horns which thou sawest, are ten Kings, which have received no Kingdom as yet; but receive Power as Kings one Hour with the Beast.

13 These have one Mind, and shall give their Power and Strength unto the Beast.

14 These shall make War with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of Lords, and King of Kings; and they that are with him, are called, and chosen, and faithful.

15 And he saith unto me, the Waters which thou sawest; where the Whore sitteth, are Peoples, and Multitudes, and Nations, and Tongues.

16 And the ten Horns which thou sawest upon the Beast, these shall hate the Whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with Fire.

glorious Cause, but *chosen (e)* to act in the Service, and they are *faithful* to the Engagements into which they enter. Sect. 20.  
Rev. XVII.

these were the Words of that Angel, who was commissioned to instruct me in the Meaning of an Appearance, which had thrown me into such Amazement. *And he proceeded, and said further unto me, The Waters which thou sawest, on which the specious, but abandoned, Harlot sate, are People, and Multitudes, and Nations, and Tongues, a vast Multitude of different Nations and Languages, who shall consent, for a long Time, to those degenerate Forms of Religion, which she shall introduce.* 15.  
16

*And the ten Horns, which thou sawest on the savage Beast, these are the Kingdoms subject to her. But the Princes of them shall at length turn against her, so that she shall, as it were, be thrown down, and gored by the Creature that has so long tamely and patiently carried her ; for they shall hate the Harlot, and make her desolate and naked ; they shall strip her of all those Ornaments, which they have profusely lavished away upon her ; and they shall be ready, as it were, in the Transport of their Indignation and Zeal, to eat her very Flesh, and shall burn her with Fire. They shall be bent upon destroying their stupid Idolatry, and all the Monuments of it, and turn their keenest Resentment upon the Abettors and Instruments of such*

[*e*] Called *chosen and faithful*.] Here may very possibly be, as the *ingenious Author of the Christian Warfare* has represented in his *learned and beautiful Remarks* on this *Text*, a Reference to the *military Custom* of the *Greeks* ; who used to call the People together, when any Expedition was designed, out of which there were some *selected* to serve in the Action intended, who swore *Fidelity* to their Leader. (Compare 2 *Pet.* i. 10. *Note (i)*). But I can by no Means suppose, that this is the *uniform* Idea to be annexed to the Word *chosen* in Scripture, any more than I can suppose the Term called, always to signify *invited to a Feast* ; which is an Idea another *ingenious Writer* has endeavoured to lead his *Readers* to affix to it. The Truth is, both signify something much more *general*, though both may be applied, in *particular Cases*, in the *limited* Sense contended for. Compare *Isa.* xxxiv. 2, 6, 7.

Sect. 20. such cruel Persecution as they have exercised ; *For GOD hath given it into their Hearts,* by a strong and powerful Impression, *to execute his Counsel and Sentence (f),* and they shall agree in it, *even to perform one Purpose.* And he hath left them under a fatal Infatuation, in Opposition to all true Policy, as well as Virtue and Religion, so as *to give their Kingdoms to the Beast, till the Words of GOD be fulfilled ;* and then their Minds shall be turned, and their Eyes opened, and they shall ruin this oppressive Society more eagerly, than they ever established it. *And the Woman which thou sawest, is the great imperial City, that ruleth over the Kings of the Earth,* and now disposes of their Crowns at her Pleasure, none daring to make War against her.

Rev. XVII.  
17.

17. For God hath put in their Hearts to fulfil his Will, and to agree, and give their Kingdom unto the Beast, until the Words of God shall be fulfilled.

18 And the Woman which thou sawest, is that great City, which reigneth over the Kings of the Earth.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Ver. 9. **E**ASILY might we have apprehended, that *Rome* had been here designed, though it had not been so particularly described by  
 Ver. 18. its Situation on *seven Hills*, or by the Empire it then possessed *over all the Kingdoms of the World.* The *Harlot* might be sufficiently distinguished by her *Names of Blasphemy*, by her *Cup of Enchantment*, by her *Titles, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE*  
 Ver. 3. *MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE*  
 Ver. 4, 5. *EARTH.* Yea, she might be known by this *single Character*, of having *made herself drunk with the Blood of the Saints, and with the Blood of the Martyrs of Jesus.* And is it *heathen Rome*, to whom these Characters are most remarkably applicable? The *Apostle* would not then have *wondered with so great Admiration*, that *Idolatry and*  
 Ver. 6. *Perfe-*

(f) *Execute his Sentence.*] We render it *to fulfil his Will.* Hence some have inferred, that it is the *Will of GOD*, that *Hereticks* should be *cut off.* But it is sufficiently known to what Extremities People are driven to find any Thing that looks like an Argument for *Persecution* in the *New Testament*, when they are forced to have Recourse to a *Text* for this Purpose, which only proves that God had, in his wise and holy Counsel, determined that the *idolatrous and persecuting Antichristian Power* should be *destroyed.*

Persecution should prevail, where the former had raged for so many Ages, and the latter almost from the very Beginning of *Christianity*; and to such a Degree, in the Days of *NERO*, who, as their own *Historian* tells us, had, *thirty Years* before this, added *Mockeries* and *Insults* to Torment; that *Christians* were dressed up in the *Skins of wild Beasts*, and so exposed to be worried on the *Theatre*: A Method which hath, indeed, *figuratively* speaking, been every where practised, and must be practised, if *Christianity* is to be made *ridiculous*, or odious. But, the true Occasion of the Apostles Astonishment was, that *Rome* professing *Christianity*, *Rome* setting up for the *Head of the Christian World*, should have emulated and exceeded any *Pagan City*, and even itself in it's *Pagan State*, in it's *Idolatries*, and in it's *Cruelties*. And this is a Fact indeed *wonderful*. But these are the secret *Counsels of GOD*, even those Counsels which are to us unsearchable. Nevertheless, the Beauty and Glory of them shall, at length, be apparent. *The Kings of the Earth*, though, like *Nebuchadnezzar*, (*Isa. x. 7.*) they meant it not, are now fulfilling the Plan of divine Providence; a Plan that shall at length appear wise and harmonious, though the Permission of all these Absurdities and Horrors make a Part of it. And when the *Words of GOD* are fulfilled, they who with one Mind, have given their *Power and Strength to the Beast*, in order to support the *Harlot*, shall be as unanimous in *bating her*, and making her desolate and naked, shall be ready to devour her *Flesh*, and consume her in her own *Fires*. Fierce and savage as the *Beast* may at present appear, it's *War with the Lamb* shall be utterly in vain; for the *Lamb* is always *victorious*, and will assert his grand and imperial Titles, *LORD OF LORDS, AND KING OF KINGS*. May we all lift under his Banner; may we not only be called, but chosen and faithful, faithful even to *Death*; since all the Rage of Men, and *Multitudes*, and *Nations*, and *Tongues*, if it were united against us, could not prevent his giving us a *Crown of Victory*, and a Part in his *everlasting Triumphs*.

Sect. 20.

Ver. 17.

Ver. 16.

Ver. 14.

Ver. 15.

S E C T.



## S E C T. XXI.

*A sublime Description of the Fall of Babylon, and an Account of the Lamentation of her Friends and Merchants over her. Rev. XVIII. throughout.*

## REVELATION XVIII. I.

Sect. 21.  
Rev. XVIII.  
1.

AND after this I saw an Angel descending from Heaven, who had in his Countenance and Appearance, the Signatures of great Power; and the Earth was enlightened with his Glory, which spread a vivid Lustre all around him, reflected from every neighbouring Object. And he cried with great Might, [and] a loud Voice, of triumphant Joy, in the Words of Isaiah, (Chap. xxi. 9.) saying, *It is fallen, it is fallen (a), [even] Babylon the Great; and what was prophesied concerning the celebrated Seat of the Chaldean Empire, shall presently be verified in this detested City; so that we may already say, It is become the Habitation of Demons, (as desolate Places were reputed to be) and the Hold of every unclean Spirit, and a Cage of every unclean and hateful Bird; (Isaiah xiii. 21. Jerem. l. 39. li. 37.)*

2

3 Because she hath caused all the Nations to drink of the intoxicating and inflaming Wine of her raging and insatiable Whoredom; and all the Kings of the Earth have committed Whoredom with her, and the Merchants of the Earth have traded with her, and been enriched

## REVELATION XVIII. I.

AND after these Things I saw another Angel come down from Heaven, having great Power; and the Earth was lightened with his Glory.

2 And he cried mightily with a strong Voice, saying, Babylon the Great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the Habitation of Devils, and the Hold of every foul Spirit, and a Cage of every unclean and hateful Bird.

3 For all Nations have drunk of the Wine of the Wrath of her Fornication, and the Kings of the Earth have committed Fornication with her, and the Merchants of the Earth are waxed

(a) *Is fallen.*] This is still the Language of Prophecy, expressing what shall certainly and speedily come to pass; for Verse the fourth shews, that, in Strictness of Speech, Babylon was yet to be considered as *standing*.

(b) *Luxuries.*

waxed rich through the Abundance of her Delicacies.

4 And I heard another Voice from Heaven, saying, Come out of her, my People, that ye be not Partakers of her Sins, and that ye receive not of her Plagues;

5 For her Sins have reached unto Heaven, and God hath remembered her Iniquities.

6 Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double, according to her Works: in the Cup which she hath filled, fill to her double.

7 How much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so much Torment and Sorrow give her: for the faith in her Heart, I fit a Queen, and am no Widow, and shall see no Sorrow.

*riched by the Abundance of her Luxuries (b). Sect. 21.*  
*And I then heard another Voice from Heaven, saying to the Remainder of faithful Souls, which were yet in Babylon, Come ye out from the midst of her, O my People, separate yourselves from this accursed Society, that ye may not be Partakers with her in her Sins, which are so polluting and ensnaring; and that ye may not, by a fatal Consequence, partake of her Plagues too, which those who share her Sins must expect to share, whatever their former Profession may have been; Because her Sins have followed up to Heaven with their Clamours, and her unrighteous Actions are come up in Remembrance before that GOD, who will not fail severely to visit her for them. And now, O my People, give her, as she also has given to you, and recompence to her double, according to her Works; for God will plead your Cause for you: In the Cup of Terror, which she has mingled for those, whom she was not able to seduce and debauch, mingle her a double Quantity of those poisonous Ingredients: In full Proportion to the Degree in which she hath, for so many Ages, made Ostentation of her Glory, and lived in Luxury, inflict upon her Torment and Grief, and Vengeance; because she has audaciously said in her Heart, while the divine Threatenings have been sounding in her very Ears, I fit as a Queen, enthroned above the Reach of Adversity, and I am not a desolate Widow, as it hath been pretended I should be; and I shall not see Sorrow. (Compare Isa.*

Rev. XVIII.  
4.

(b) *Luxuries.*] The Word *επιθυμια*, seems to signify such *Luxury* of Diet, as cherishes *Wantonness*, and disposes to Acts of *Unchastity*; and may well represent the Manner in which the *Roman Clergy* have pampered themselves, and the Effects it has produced, to the Scandal of the *Christian Profession*, in the Eyes of all the World, as well as the *Idolatries*, which have been established and maintained to support that *Luxury*. Compare *1 Tim. v. 11.* and the *Note* there.

(c) *Slaves.*

Sect. 21. Isa. xlvii. 7, 8.)

*Therefore, in one Day shall her Plagues come upon her, even upon this impious and abominable City, Death, and Mourning, and Famine, which shall all unite their Efforts against her; and she shall be burnt with Fire; for strong [is] the Lord God who judges her; and all her boasted Strength will, in his Presence, be Weakness*

Rev. XVIII.  
8.

- 9 and Confusion. *And the other Kings of the Earth, who shall not be active in the Execution before described, but still retain their Affection for her, even the Remainder of those, who have committed Fornication, and lived in Luxury with her, shall mourn over her, and lament for her, when they shall see the Flames of Wrath kindle about her, and the Smoke of her Burning, like that of Sodom in the Day of it's Conflagration, ascending up to Heaven. They shall see it, standing afar off for Fear of her Torment, saying, Woe, Woe, and alas, O thou great City, Babylon, the strong City! well may we lament over thee; for in one Hour thy Judgment is come, and thy Desolation is as sudden, as it is dreadful and entire.*
- 10 *And the Merchants of the Earth, those who enriched themselves by her expensive Magnificence, shall wail and lament over her, out of a Regard to their own Interest, if not to hers; because no one any longer shall buy their Wares, with which they had loaded so many gallant Vessels, that carried on a Traffick with her: They shall lament that so noble a Vent for all the Delicacies of a pompous and luxurious Life, is lost, and that they can no longer thus dispose of the Ladings of Gold and Silver, and every precious Stone, and Pearls, and of the fine Linen of Egypt, and the Purple of Sidon, and the Silk of the Eastern Countries, and the Scarlet, and every odoriferous Wood, that the Plantations*

8 Therefore shall her Plagues come in one Day, Death, and Mourning, and Famine; and she shall be utterly burnt with Fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her.

9 And the Kings of the Earth, who have committed Fornication, and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the Smoke of her Burning,

10 Standing afar off, for the Fear of her Torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great City Babylon, that mighty City! for in one Hour is thy Judgement come.

11 And the Merchants of the Earth shall weep and mourn over her, for no Man buyeth her Merchandise any more:

12 The Merchandise of Gold, and Silver, and precious Stones, and of Pearls, and fine Linen, and Purple, and Silk, and Scarlet, and all thyine Wood, and all Manner

ner Vessels of Ivory, and all Manner Vessels of most precious Wood, and of Brasses, and Iron, and Marble,

tations of Arabia, or the Coasts of India, Sect. 21. could boast; and every curiously wrought *Vessel of Ivory, and every Vessel of most precious Wood*, in Value exceeding even that, Rev. XVIII. 12.

13 And Cinnamon, and Odors, and Ointments, and Frankincense, and Wine, and Oil, and fine Flour, and Wheat, and Beasts, and Sheep, and Horses, and Chariots, and Slaves, and Souls of Men.

No longer shall they there 13

find a Market for rich and fragrant Commodities; for *Cinnamon, and Perfume, and Myrrh, and Incense*, nor for the more necessary and important Supplies of *Wine, and Oil, and fine Flour, and Wheat, and Kine, and Sheep, and Horses, and Chariots, and Slaves (c)*: and their yet more infamous Traffick for the Lives, and the very *Souls of Men*, which they sacrificed to their Avarice, and their Treachery, shall cease.

14 And the Fruits that thy Soul lusted after, are departed from thee, and all Things which were dainty and goodly, are departed from thee, and thou shalt find them no more at all.

And thou, O Babylon, shalt join thy Cry 14

with theirs; for all *the Fruits, which thy Soul desired*, and for which alone thy degenerate Nature had any remaining Relish, *are gone from thee, and all thy delicious and splendid Things are departed from thee*; and the Loss is final, as well as entire; for *thou shalt never find them any more.*

15 The Merchants of these Things which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off, for the Fear of her Torment, weeping and wailing.

I repeat it again, *the Merchants of all these* 15

*[Commodities]*, who were enriched by her, shall stand afar off, in a Mixture of Terror and Grief, for Fear of her Torment, weeping and mourning (d), but absolutely incapable of

(c) *Slaves.*] The Greek Word *συνετα*, has plainly this Signification. Compare *Tobit x. 9.*

(d) *Weeping and Mourning.*] There is in all this so evident a Reference to the Lamentation over Tyre, described by Ezekiel, (*Chap. xxvii.*) that I suppose few Readers can fail to take Notice of it. Compare *Isai. xxiii. 1, 7, 14. & sm.* Some have interpreted many of these Passages, as referring to the Circumstances of *Popish Worship*, and the Trade of their *Priests*; as *Ver. 11.* to Relicks, Pardons, and Indulgencies: *Ver. 12.* to their Images, and the Furniture of their Churches and Chapels, and the Variety of rich Dresses for their Images, and Priests: *Ver. 13.* to the Incense used at their Altars: *Ver. 22.* to the musical Instruments used in their Worship: and *Ver. 23.* to the vast Numbers of Lamps burning before their idolatrous Altars; and the like.

570 *The Apostles and Prophets are exhorted to rejoice over her.*

Sect. 21. of giving her any Relief; smiting on their  
 'Breasts, *And saying, Alas, Alas, for*  
 Rev. XVIII. *the great, elegant and magnificent City, that*  
 16. *was clothed with fine Linnen, and Purple,*

17 *and Scarlet, and adorned with Gold, and pre-  
 cious Stones, and Pearls. For, who  
 can sufficiently lament this sad Instance of  
 the Uncertainty of all human Things, when  
 he sees, that, in one Hour, all these great  
 Riches are laid waste, and made desolate?  
 And this sad Scene was represented to me  
 in a lively Vision; and every Pilot, and every  
 one of the Ship's Company, and the Mariners,  
 and all that bestow their Labour upon the Sea,  
 stood afar off from the Flames of the burn-*

18 *ing City, And cried, when they saw  
 the Smoke of her Burning ascend in such  
 thick Columns to Heaven, What [City is]  
 like to the great City, so long unequalled in  
 it's Glory, and now in it's Ruin? And*

19 *they seemed like Men in the greatest Agony  
 of Distress, and cast Dust upon their Heads,  
 and cried, weeping, and mourning, saying,  
 Alas, Alas, for the great City, by whose mag-  
 nificent Expences, arising from her Profusion,  
 and Elegance, and Grandeur, all that had Ships  
 in the Sea were enriched, so that she alone was  
 sufficient, as it were, to maintain the Mer-  
 chandize of the World; for she is made deso-  
 late, in one Hour, to a Degree, that we should  
 have imagined utterly impossible.*

20 *But, while they were thus lamenting their  
 own Loss, and hers, I was affected in ano-  
 ther Manner, and could not forbear crying  
 out in my own Heart, Rejoice over her, O  
 thou just avenging Heaven, and ye holy Apo-  
 stles and Prophets (e), who look down from  
 your*

16 *And saying, Alas, a-  
 las, that great City, that  
 was clothed in fine Linnen,  
 and Purple, and Scarlet,  
 and decked with Gold, and  
 precious Stones, and Pearls!*

17 *For in one Hour so  
 great Riches is come to  
 nought. And every Ship-  
 master, and all the Compa-  
 ny in Ships, and Sailors, and  
 as many as trade by Sea,  
 stood afar off,*

18 *And cried, when they  
 saw the Smoke of her Burn-  
 ing, saying, What City is  
 like unto this great City?*

19 *And they cast Dust on  
 their Heads, and cried, weep-  
 ing and wailing, saying, A-  
 las, alas, that great City  
 wherein were made rich all  
 that had Ships in the Sea,  
 by reason of her Costliness!  
 for in one Hour is she made  
 desolate.*

20 *Rejoice over her, thou  
 Heaven, and ye holy Apo-  
 stles*

—But it seems rather to centre in one View, the Loss of every Thing valuable and desirable, and the utter Ruin of this magnificent City.

(e) *Apostles.*] Nothing can be more *lively* than this *Apostrophe*; in which the *Apostles*,

files and Prophets, for God hath avenged you on her.

your Abodes of Glory, on so wonderful and interesting a Scene. Take your Part in the sacred Triumph; for on your Account GOD hath pronounced Sentence upon her; he hath adjudged her to righteous Destruction, for her Opposition to his Kingdom, and for the Injuries done to you, who, with ardent and unwearied Zeal, endeavoured to establish and promote it.

Rev. XVIII. 20.

21 And a mighty Angel took up a Stone like a great Millstone, and cast it into the Sea, saying, Thus with Violence shall that great City Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all,

And, as soon as I had uttered this, in Correspondence to the Scene which had been represented of old, with Relation to the great Seat of the Chaldean Empire, (Jerem. li. 64.) a strong Angel took a Stone, like a great Millstone; and, with a vigorous and rapid Motion, hurled it into the Sea, saying, Thus shall Babylon the great City, unequal as the Production of this Event may seem to any human Power, be violently hurled away (f), by the Almighty Arm of an avenging God, and sink into the Depths of Destruction; so that it shall never be found any more.

22 And the Voice of Harpers, and Musicians, and of Pipers, and Trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee; and no Craftman, of whatsoever Craft he be, shall be found any more in thee; and the Sound of a Millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee;

And the harmonious Sound of Harpers, and other Musicians, and those who sound the Flute, and the Trumpet, shall no more be heard in thee; and every Artificer of every curious Trade, employed for the Accommodations and Ornaments of Life, shall no more be found in thee, O Babylon, nor shall the Noise of the Millstone be heard in thee any more, even to prepare Bread for the meanest Inhabitant.

23 And the Light of a Candle shall shine no more at

And the Light of a Lamp shall no more be seen in thee, to gild thy dark Night with its chearful Rays; and the

posses, though honoured in Rome by so many superstitious and idolatrous Rites, are, nevertheless, called upon to rejoice in her Destruction.

(f) Hurl'd away.] This the original Words ορμηματι βληθησεται, import; as if falling by its own Weight, it's Fall would not have been rapid enough. From hence Dr. Tho. Burnet infers, in his Theory of the Earth, that Rome, being first fired, (compare Dan. vii. 11.) will be swallowed up in a Lake of Fire and Brimstone, as Sodom and Gomorrah were. Burn. Theo. Vol. ii. pag. 123. Compare Rev. xix. 20.

Sect. 21. *the Voice of the Bridegroom and the Bride, rejoicing in their new Relation, and celebrating the nuptial Feast, shall be heard in thee no more (g); because thy Merchants were Grandees of the Earth, and maintained so shameful a Traffick by every dishonest Art, and because all the Nations were deceived by thy Sorceries, and poisoned by thy pernicious Practices.*

Rev. XVIII.  
23.

24 *And, to compleat her Guilt, as Babylon's of old had grown great by the Slaughter of Israel, so in her, who has been here represented, was found the Blood of the Prophets, and of the Saints of God, even of all those who were slain upon the Earth; for this wicked City exceeded all the rest of the World in Cruelties, and might boast in the Multitudes of the Martyrs she had slain, beyond all that had ever gone before her, in such detestable Persecutions: And this hath filled up the Measure of her Iniquities, and plunged her into this irrecoverable Ruin.*

at all in thee; and the Voice of the Bridegroom, and of the Bride, shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy Merchants were the great Men of the Earth; for by thy Sorceries were all Nations deceived:

24 And in her was found the Blood of Prophets, and of Saints, and of all that were slain upon the Earth.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Ver. 12, 13. **F**ROM the particular Detail which is here given us, of the various Commodities in which Babylon traded with it's Merchants, we may surely take an incidental Occasion to reflect upon the rich Bounty of Divine Providence to the Children of Men, in giving them such a Variety of good Things, which tend not only to their necessary Support, but their Ornament and Delight. To whatever pernicious Purposes Vanity and Luxury may abuse the Silver and the Gold, the Gems and the Pearls, the fine Linen and Silk, the Purple and Scarlet, the Ivory and the Marble, the Cinnamon and the Myrrh, as well as the more important Blessings of Wheat and Oil, of Kine, and Sheep, and Horses, all are the Gifts of God; and, if wisely and properly used, may justly excite our Thankfulness to him; and it is on ourselves, and not on him, that we are to charge it, if what should have been for our Welfare, becomes a Trap, and our Treasures

(g) Verse 22, 23.] Compare Jer. xxv. 10. xxxiii. 11. Ezek. xxvi. 13. & sm.

*tures* be turned into *Idols*. Nor is the wise Disposition of Providence to be disregarded, in causing many of these Things to be the peculiar *Products* of *different* Countries, denying to some what he has given to the rest, that so *Traffick* and *Commerce* may be encouraged, and, by it, *Society* and *Intercourse* *extended* among different Nations, and Provision made for that Spread of *Divine* Knowledge, which had, in many Instances, been impossible, if human Industry, quickened by Necessity, and the Prospect of Gain, had not invented those *Arts of Navigation*, to which *Great-Britain*, above all other Nations, is so much indebted; and without which, indeed, our beautiful and fruitful Island had been a Desert, inaccessible to Men.

But, though this *oblique* Reflection may profitably be made, the *great Object* to which we are directed by *this Chapter*, is the certain and final *Ruin of Babylon*, which, how highly soever exalted, how superbly soever adorned, how *luxuriously* soever regaled, *shall fall, shall fall as a Millstone cast into the Sea. Strong is the Lord God who judgeth her*; and it is impossible she can withstand the Force of his omnipotent Arm. Long has she, in a metaphorical Sense, been *the Hold of every foul Spirit, and the Cage of every unclean and hateful Bird*; and God will make her so in *another*, even in a literal Sense, when he shall appear to *remember* and punish those *Iniquities, which have reached unto Heaven*; among which, various and detestable as they have been, shedding *the Blood of the Prophets and the Saints*, must be reckoned as most *enormous*. Let no Triumph of the *Antichristian* Powers, for the present, shake our Faith in these most certain and indubitable Prophecies; and let that Charge never be forgotten, "*Come forth from her, O my People, and be separate.*" Blessed be God, that a *Separation* has been *begun*, that it has been so long *supported*, and that so many Attempts, to bring back God's *Israel* into Captivity, have been *defeated*. May the Boundaries of the *Reformation* be extended; may the *Purity* of the *reformed Churches* be more and more advanced, and all *Remainders of Superstition, Persecution, and Imposition*, be taken away. And, to conclude all, let those who are now *living deliciously, and glorifying themselves* in the Forgetfulness of God, abusing the various Gifts of his Bounty to his Dishonour, and saying in their Hearts, that *they shall see no Sorrow*, remember how suddenly their State may be changed; how quickly they may sink into the Depths of Misery, proportionable to the Height of their abused Prosperity; and experience a *Torment and Sorrow*, which will be *doubly bitter* in the Remembrance of their former Condition. Let such, therefore, in

Ver. 21.  
Ver. 8.  
Ver. 2.  
Ver. 5.  
Ver. 24.  
Ver. 4.  
Ver. 7.  
Ver. 6.  
what-



Sect. 21. whatever Rank of Life they are, according to the Words of *Daniel*, to the most illustrious *King of Babylon*, (*Daniel* iv. 27.) *Break off their Sins by Righteousness, and their Iniquities by shewing Mercy to the Poor, if it may be a lengthening out of their Tranquility*; and give  
 Ver. 23. Glory to GOD, before all their chearful *Light* be exchanged for  
 V. 9.—15. *Darkness*, and all the *Harmony* of their *Musick* for *weeping and wailing*, *Groaning* and *Lamentation for ever*.

## S E C T. XXII.

*The Triumphs of the heavenly Host in the Fall of Babylon are described; and further illustrated, by the View of an Attack made by Christ and his Army, on the Beast, which ended in an entire Victory over him. Rev. XIX. throughout.*

## REVELATION XIX. I.

Sect. 22.  
 Rev. XIX.  
 1.

AND after these Things, this affecting Representation of the certain Destruction of Babylon, as the Seat of the Antichristian Kingdom, *I heard the Voice as of a great Multitude in Heaven*, who seemed to be triumphing on this Occasion, *saying, Hallelujah*; let the Name of Jehovah, the most high GOD, be ever praised and exalted. Let this great *Salvation*, and all the *Glory and Honour*, which can arise from this, and all his other wonderful Works and the *Power* so amazingly displayed in them, be ascribed  
 2 to the Lord our GOD. For his Judgements [are] true and righteous, and we have lately seen a most glorious Illustration of them; for he has judged the great Harlot, who corrupted the whole Earth with the Contagion of her Fornication; and he has awfully avenged the Blood of his faithful  
 Ser-

## REVELATION XIX. I.

AND after these Things I heard a great Voice of much People in Heaven, saying, Alleluia; Salvation, and Glory, and Honour, and Power unto the Lord our God:

2 For true and righteous are his Judgements; for he hath judged the great Whore, which did corrupt the Earth with her Fornication, and hath avenged the Blood of his Servants at her Hand.

3 And again they said, Alleluia. And her Smoke rose up for ever and ever.

4 And the four and twenty Elders and the four Beasts fell down and worshipped God that sat on the Throne, saying, Amen; Alleluia.

5 And a Voice came out of the Throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye his Servants, and ye that fear him, both small and great.

6 And I heard as it were the Voice of a great Multitude, and as the Voice of many Waters, and as the Voice of mighty Thunderings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

7 Let us be glad: and rejoice, and give Honour to him: for the Marriage of the Lamb is come, and his Wife hath made herself ready.

Servants and Martyrs, which hath been Sect. 21. [shed] so profusely by her cruel Hand. Rev. XIX. 3  
 And a second Time, at the Conclusion of the Hymn, they said, Hallelujah: And, looking down upon her Ruins, they added, The Smoke of her [Torment] ascends for ever and ever; and GOD is pursuing the impenitent Sinners he has destroyed in her, with far more terrible Vengeance in a future State, than any they could endure while they continued in the Body. (Isa. xxxiv. 10.) And 4  
 the twenty four Elders, and the four Animals, so often mentioned before, who still appeared present, fell down and worshipped GOD, who was represented sitting upon the Throne, saying, Amen, Hallelujah, so let it be; let universal Hallelujahs, and everlasting Praises, rise to thee, O thou ever adorable Jehovah, who art most worthy to receive them. And a Voice came out from the 5  
 Throne, which said, in my Hearing, Now praise our GOD in the most exalted Strains of rapturous Devotion, all ye his Servants, and ye that fear him, both small and great, in your various Ranks and Circumstances of Life. Adore his great and magnificent Name, so highly exalted, and, in these Scenes of Wonder, so gloriously displayed. And 6  
 I heard [a Sound], which was as the Voice of a great Multitude, and loud as the Voice of many Waters, when the Waves of the Sea are in a violent Agitation, and like the Voice of mighty Thunderings, saying, Hallelujah, for the Lord GOD Almighty, the omnipotent Jehovah, who is the Author and Support of universal Nature, reigneth, and is about to exalt his Kingdom among Men to more visible Splendour, than it has ever yet worn. And we will now, in an especial Manner, 7  
 rejoice and exult in the greatest Transport of holy Joy, and we will give Glory to him, because the Marriage of the Lamb is come, and his

Sect. 22. *his Wife has prepared herself* to meet him, being adorned with all those Ornaments, which are most graceful in themselves, and most agreeable to him. And he is going to espouse his Church with Circumstances of the highest Festivity and Solemnity.

Rev. XIX.

7.

8 *And it was given to her, that, in Token of her Virgin Innocence and Sanctity, she should be clothed in fine Linnen, pure and resplendent; and the fine Linnen, that I speak of, is intended to signify the righteous Acts of the Saints (a),* whereby they are adorned in the Sight of GOD, and an Evidence given of the Sincerity of that Faith, which interests them in the Merit of what their Lord has performed, to which they ultimately owe their Acceptance before him.

9 *And he said unto me, Write this down, as an important Truth, in which all that read this Book in future Ages, will be greatly concerned, Happy [are] they who are invited to be Guests at the splendid Marriage-Supper of the Lamb, which is now prepared, and shall accept the Invitation, so as to partake of it's Blessings. And he said unto me, These are the true Words of GOD, and are to be regarded by thee, and all that read them, as an Oracle which he hath inspired. (Compare 2 Cor. xi. 2.)*

10 *And, while he was speaking to me in this Manner, over-awed by his majestick Appearance, I fell before his Feet, to pay Homage*

8 And to her was granted, that she should be arrayed in fine Linen clean and white: for the fine Linen is the Righteousness of Saints.

9 And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the Marriage-Supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true Sayings of God.

10 And I fell at his Feet to

(a) *The righteous Acts of the Saints.*] So *δικαιοματια* evidently signifies; and, therefore, though I make no Doubt but it is with Regard to the *Obedience* and *Righteousness* of the Son of GOD, that *all our righteous Acts* are accepted before GOD, and have accordingly referred to this Doctrine in the Paraphrase; yet I cannot suppose, that these Words have that Reference which some have imagined, to the *Imputation* of his *Righteousness* to us. And I hope *Christian Divines* will have the Courage to speak with the *Scripture*, even though it should be at the Expence of their Reputation for *Orthodoxy* with some, who profess, nevertheless, to make *Scripture* their *Standard*.

(b) Of

to worship him: And he said unto me, See thou do it not: I am thy Fellow-Servant, and of thy Brethren that have the Testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the Testimony of Jesus is the Spirit of Prophecy.

mage to him. And he immediately interposed to prevent it, and said unto me, See [thou do it] not; for I am not worthy of such Regard from thee, being a Fellow-Servant with thee, and with the rest of thy Brethren (b), who resolutely and faithfully keep the Testimony of Jesus. Pay thine Homage, in such Expressions of it, to GOD alone. I am now sent for the Service of that Religion, to which you and your Brethren are making such considerable Sacrifices; for the Spirit of Prophecy is the Testimony of Jesus, and serves, in a glorious Manner, to confirm his divine Mission, to all that know and duly observe the Circumstances of it; and that which I now reveal to thee, makes a considerable Article of the Proof.

Sect. 22.  
Rev. XIX.  
10.

11 And I saw Heaven opened, and behold, a white Horse; and he that sat upon him was called faithful and true, and in Righteousness he doth judge and make War.

And a glorious Vision immediately followed this; for I saw Heaven opened; and behold, and observe it with due Attention, a white Horse appeared, and he that sat upon it, [was] called faithful and true, being indeed no other, than the Person speaking of himself elsewhere, as the Amen, the faithful and true Witness; and he judges, and makes War, in Righteousness, and not like the unjust Conquerors of the Earth, who are so ready to use their superior Power to oppress all that fall under it.

11

12 His Eyes were as a Flame of Fire, and on his Head were many Crowns; and he had a Name written that no Man knew but he himself:

This was the glorious Prince, whose Eyes [are] piercing as a Flame of Fire; and many Diadems were upon his Head, having also a mysterious Name written upon them, which no Man knows but himself; to signify, that there are

12

(b) With thy Brethren.] The Expression in the Greek obliges me to give the Word this Turn: συνδελος σε εἰ Ἰωη ἀδελφωω σε. But Mr. Fleming understands it, I am one of thy Brethren, which he thinks intimates, that this was the departed Spirit of an Apostle; perhaps of St. Peter, or St. Paul, or his own Brother James, though not in a Form to be known. And, on the same mistaken Principle, he thinks the Person speaking, Chap. xxii. 9. might be the Spirit of one of the Prophets, perhaps Isaiah, or Ezekiel, or Daniel. Flem. Christol. Vol. i. pag. 81.

Sect. 22. are Myſteries in his Nature, and in the Administration of his Kingdom, which it is impoſſible for Men to find out.

Rev. XIX.

13.

And, to expreſs the irrefiſtible Power with which he triumphs over his Enemies, and brings Deſtruction upon them according to his Pleaſure, *he [was] cloathed in a Garment dipped in Blood; and his Name is called the Word of GOD,* the glorious and divine Perſon, whom I have elſewhere ſpoken of, as in the Beginning with GOD, and himſelf GOD, and the great Medium of divine Revelation in all

14 Ages. *And the Armies, which are in Heaven, followed him, in Token of being moſt willingly and entirely under his Command, and they appeared [riding] on white Horſes, and themſelves cloathed in fine Linnen, white, and perfectly clean and pure, to denote their perfect Innocence and Righteouſneſs.*

15 *And he ſtill retains this Circumſtance in the Viſion I at firſt ſaw of him, that there went out of his Mouth a ſharp Sword, that with it he might ſmite the Heathen; to ſignify the Power of his Word; and he ſhall govern them with a Rod of Iron; and he treadeth the Wine-Preſs of the Indignation and Wrath of Almighty GOD, which was ſignified by the Blood ſtaining his Garments; to intimate, that he ſhall ſubdue the proudeſt Enemies with as much Eaſe, as Men burſt Grapes, by treading them under their Feet. (Compare Iſai. lxiii. 2, 3.)*

16 *And he bath upon his Garment, and his Thigh, that is, upon the Sword, which hangs upon his Thigh, a magnificent and exalted Name written, even KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS; to ſignify his univerſal Empire over all the Princes and Potentates on Earth, and in Heaven.*

17 *And I ſaw a ſingle Angel, but one of great Majeſty and Strength, detaching himſelf, as it were, from the Army in Heaven, who*

13 And he *was* clothed with a Veſture dipt in Blood; and his Name is called, The Word of God.

14 And the Armies which were in Heaven followed him upon white Horſes, clothed in fine Linnen, white and clean.

15 And out of his Mouth goeth a ſharp Sword, that with it he ſhould ſmite the Nations: and he ſhall rule them with a Rod of Iron: and he treadeth the Wine-Preſs of the Fierceneſs and Wrath of Almighty God.

16 And he hath on his Veſture and on his Thigh a Name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

17 And I ſaw an Angel ſtanding.

standing in the Sun; and he cried with a loud Voice, saying to all the Fowls that fly in the Midst of Heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the Supper of the great God;

18 That ye may eat the Flesh of Kings, and the Flesh of Captains, and the Flesh of mighty Men, and the Flesh of Horses, and of them that sit on them, and the Flesh of all Men, both free and bond, both small and great.

19 And I saw the Beast, and the Kings of the Earth, and their Armies gathered together to make War against him that sat on the Horse, and against his Army.

who followed the great Leader of the Lord's Host on their white Horses; and he was seen by me *standing in the Sun*; and to intimate the approaching Slaughter and Desolation which was so soon to come upon the Enemies of the Church, *he cried with a loud Voice, saying to the Eagles, and Vultures, and all the other Birds of Prey, which were flying in the midst of Heaven, Come and assemble yourselves to the Supper of the great GOD*; for he is about to make a splendid

Entertainment for you, *That ye may eat the Flesh of mighty Kings, and the Flesh of famous Commanders, who have led on their Thousands to Battle; and the Flesh of the mighty Soldiers, who have fought so courageously under their Banners; and the Flesh of warlike Horses, that were advancing with so much Intrepidity and Rage to the Battle; and the Flesh of those, who sate thereon, and were so ready to trust to their Strength, or their Speed; and the Flesh of all the promiscuous Multitude, Freemen and Slaves, both small and great, who shall fall down together in the Dust, and pour out their Souls in Blood, leaving their mangled Carcases for your Prey.* (Compare Ezek. xxxix. 17, 18.)

*And, to fulfil this awful Decree of the great GOD, whose Influence over all human Affairs is supreme, and who knows how to work his own Purposes, even by the greatest Malice and Rage of his Enemies, I saw the Beast appearing again, as at the Head of the Antichristian Interest; and the Kings of the Earth, who supported him, and gave their Power unto him; and I saw all their Armies gathered together, to make War with him who sitteth upon the white Horse, and with all his Army, even the Host of Heaven, which I mentioned as with him: insensible of his superior Power, and madly borne on to their own Destruction, they*

Sect. 22. marched their feeble Forces against him, and all his celestial Legions. *And the*

Rev. XIX.  
20.

Issue was such as might be expected; for *the Beast was taken Captive (c), and with him also the false Prophet, who had wrought so many fallacious Signs before him, by which he had deceived those who received the Mark of the Beast, and those who worshipped his Image; and they were bound fast in Chains of divine Vengeance, and both of them were cast alive (d) into the Lake of Fire, which burnt so fiercely, enraged with Stores of Brimstone, to make the Flames more durable, and more*

21 tormenting. *And the rest, who had so insolently and foolishly followed the Banners of these accursed Leaders, were slain with the Sword, that came out of the Mouth of the great Leader of the Heavenly Army, even him, who sat on the white Horse described before, robed with Light, and crowned with Glory. And their Carcases were left unburied on the Field of Battle; and all the Birds of the Air, according to the Invitation which the Angel had given them, were satiated with their Flesh.*

20 And the Beast was taken, and with him the false Prophet that wrought Miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the Mark of the Beast, and them that worshipped his Image. These both were cast alive into a Lake of Fire burning with Brimstone.

21 And the Remnant were slain with the Sword of him that sat upon the Horse, which Sword proceeded out of his Mouth: and all the Fowls were filled with their Flesh.

(c) *Beast was taken.*] What Brandt tells us, of the Interpretation given by a Divine of Heidelberg to this Text, as promising Frederick, King of Bobemia, that he should take the Emperor Prisoner, and that all the other Potentates of Europe should be subjected to his sovereign Will, appears too ridiculous to be canvassed; but I mention it, to engage Men to be cautious, how they apply any of these Prophecies to Events which may happen to themselves, or those for whom they are immediately concerned. Brandt's *Hist. of the Reform.* Vol. 4. pag. 202.—Compare Chap. xvi. 13. and Sect. xvi. Note (b) and (i).

(d) *Cast alive.*] See the Note on Chap. xx. 14. Doctor Clarke observes, it is only said of other Sinners, *they were cast into the Lake*; and this he supposes intimates a Distinction of Punishment, severe in Proportion to the Faults of the punished; and he thinks it is illustrated by the Words of Moses, concerning Korah and his Company, Numb. xvi. 29. *If these Men die the common Death of all Men, or if they be visited after the Visitation of all Men, then the Lord hath not sent me*: intimating, that there would be as much Difference in their Punishment, as between being executed in the common Way, and swallowed up with an Earthquake. Clark's *Posth. Sermon.* Vol. i. pag. 400, 401.

**IMPROVE-**

I M P R O V E M E N T.

LET us learn, by what we have here been reading, to adore Sect. 22.  
the Lord GOD omnipotent, who reigneth over all, and who Ver. 1,—3.  
displays the Truth and Righteousness of his Judgments, in his Ven-  
geance on the Enemies of his Church, even when he inflicts on  
them a Torment, the Smoke of which rises up for ever and ever. In  
the certain Assurance, that, in due Time, he will plead his own  
Cause, and rescue and exalt his People, let all his Servants and People Ver. 5, 6.  
praise him, even all that fear him, both small and great, and labour  
to live that divine Life of Gratitude, and joyful Thanksgiving on  
Earth, which may anticipate the Pleasures and Employments of the  
Heavenly World. The Time will at length come, when all of such  
a Character shall celebrate the Marriage-Supper of the Lamb; yea,  
when the whole Society shall appear in his Presence as one chaste Vir-  
gin, whom he has espoused to himself; and whom, with unutter-  
able Delight, he places in his more immediate View, not only as  
arrayed in Robes of pure and shining Linnen, which is the Righteous-  
ness of the Saints, but as perfectly free from Spot, or Blemish, or any  
such Thing. He will admit them all to feast in his own Presence;  
yea, to dwell for ever with him: So shall we ever be with the Lord.  
These are the true Sayings of GOD. And though a Consciousness of Ver. 7, 8.  
our own utter Unworthiness of such Honours, might be ready to de-  
tract from the Credibility of these divine Assurances, or at least pre-  
vent us from giving so clear an Assent to them, as we might other-  
wise do, yet let GOD be true, and every Man a Liar. Ver. 9.

And, in the mean Time, in the mingled Scenes of Adversity and  
Prosperity, which attend the Israel of GOD, let us direct our be-  
lieving Eyes to him, who is faithful and true; to him, who both Ver. 11.  
administers Justice, and wages War in Righteousness. Let us reve-  
rence his penetrating Eyes, which are like a Flame of Fire. Let us  
rejoice in the Diadems, placed upon his Head, to signify the Extent Ver. 12.  
of his Dominion; and read with Awe the Inscription upon his Ves-  
ture, and his Thigh, The Word of GOD, The King of Kings, and V. 13, 16.  
the Lord of Lords, As such let us pay our Homage to him; and  
let the Favour of Lords, and Kings, be as nothing to us, where  
his Favour, or his Honour, is concerned. The proudest of earthly  
Potentates oppose his Dominion in vain; in vain do they marshal  
their



Sect. 22. their Captains, and their mighty Men ; vain is the Strength of Horses, and of them that sit thereon, and the Combinations of Bond and V. 17,—21. Free, though Satan himself abet their Rebellion, and inspire them with Subtilty, and arm them with Rage : Their Subtilty shall be defeated, their Rage shall be repelled. *The Sword of the Lord* shall devour them. *The Birds of Prey* shall, at his Pleasure, be feasted with their Carcases ; and the sad Catastrophe of their Bodies shall be only an imperfect Emblem of the Anguish and Misery of their Spirits, when plunged with the *evil Spirit that deceived them*, they sink deep into the *Lake that burns for ever*, and feel the Terrors of the *second Death*. *Be wise now therefore, O ye Kings, and be instructed, ye Judges of the Earth, serve the Lord with Fear ;* and, sensible of his uncontrollable Dominion, and your own Weakness and Imperfection, even while ye rejoice before him, *rejoice with Trembling.* (Psal. ii. 10, 11.)

## S E C T. XXIII.

*The binding of Satan for a thousand Years, during which the Gospel is greatly to prevail ; with a View of the Destruction of the Enemies of Christ, upon their making their last Attempt against his Church ; and of the universal Judgment. Rev. XX. throughout.*

## REVELATION XX. I.

Sect. 23. **T**HUS the Beast was conquered and taken ; but the Dragon yet remained at Liberty. *And, that I might also be informed as to his Doom, I saw an Angel descending from Heaven, who had the Key of the bottomless Pit, and he had also a great*  
 2 *Chain in his Hand ; And he advanced with the Intrepidity of one who feared no Resistance, and laid hold on the Dragon, dreadful*

## REVELATION XX. I.

**A**ND I saw an Angel come down from Heaven, having the Key of the bottomless Pit, and a great Chain in his Hand.

2 And he laid hold on the  
the

the Dragon that old Serpent, which is the Devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand Years,

3 And cast him into the bottomless Pit, and shut him up, and set a Seal upon him, that he should deceive the Nations no more, till the thousand Years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little Season.

4 And I saw Thrones, and they sat upon them, and Judgement was given unto them: and I saw the Souls of them that were beheaded for the Witness of Jesus, and for the Word of God, and which had not worshipped the Beast, neither

dreadful as he was; even *that old Serpent*, Sect. 23. *who is called the Devil*, from being the great false Accuser; and *Satan*, as being the great Adversary both of God and Man; and he bound him for the Space of a thousand Years (a). *And*, having opened the

Door with the Key that he bore, he cast him into the Abyss, and shut him down, and set a Seal upon him, to signify, that none should break open the Door; that he might not deceive the Nations any more, for the Time above mentioned, that is, 'till a thousand Years were accomplished; and then he must be loosed again for a little Time, and make his last Effort against the Cause of God, and the Kingdom of his Son Jesus Christ.

*And*, after this, I saw Thrones placed, and they sate upon them, and a Power of Judgement was given to them; and the Souls of them who had been beheaded (b) for the Testimony of Jesus, and for the Word of GOD, and who had not worshipped the Beast, nor his Image, when his Cause was so triumphant, and who bravely

(a) *A thousand Years.*] I think we must despair of being able to interpret any Passage of Scripture upon the plainest Principle of Reason, if this does not signify, that there shall be such a Period as this, in which Satan shall be remarkably restrained, and the Christian Interest shall prevail. But whether the thousand Years are here to be taken literally, as is most probable; or whether here, as elsewhere, each Day is put for a Year, and, consequently, the whole Period be 360,000 Years, I will not pretend to determine. This Thought has been very lately started by an ingenious and worthy Person, who hath, I doubt not, intended the Service of Christianity; though I am very apprehensive, he has failed in some of the Mediums, by which he has endeavoured to prove this Point. See Dr. Whitby's Treatise on the Millennium, where he shows at large, that this whole Passage is figurative, agreeable to the Prophetic Style, especially in this Book. And Verse 4. may only intimate, that the Spirits of the Martyrs seemed to live again, in those, whom God should then raise up. Compare Exek. xxxvii. 1. 14. Rev. xi. 11, 12. Rom. xi. 15. This Interpretation is illustrated and confirmed also by Mr. Lowman. So that the seventh Chiliad, or 1000 Years, from the Creation of the World, is to be a kind of Sabbath. Compare Ainsworth on Gen. i. 31. and Worthington on Redemption, pag. 211,—213.

(b) *The Souls of them who had been beheaded.*] Dr. Whitby, not unjustly, thinks this a strange Expression, to signify the Resurrection of their Bodies. (See his Treatise on the Millennium, Chap. iii.) Mr. Fleming observes, it is said elsewhere, that their Souls were actually living before; and living, he thinks, must be put for rising from the Dead, because it is said, the rest of the Dead lived not till a thousand Years. Flem. Christol. Vol. ii. pag. 57.

(c) They

Sect. 23. bravely opposed the Torrent of prevailing Degeneracy, so that they *had not received his Mark in their Foreheads, and upon their Hands*, when it was so furiously urged upon all; these appeared to rise in Triumph, *and they lived and reigned with Christ (c)*, whose Cause, during this Time, was prosperous and flourishing, even for *a whole thousand Years*: But this was peculiar to this holy Remnant; for, as to *the rest of the Dead*, they revived *not till the thousand Years were accomplished (d)*; so that *this [was] the first Resurrection*. Eminently *happy and holy [is] he, who has a Part in the first Resurrection* I have been describing; it is a singular Felicity, and high Token of the Degree, in which GOD, the supreme Standard and Judge of moral Rectitude and Holiness, approves his Character; *on such the second Death*, we before described with so many dreadful Circumstances, as the Portion of the Wicked, *shall have no Degree of Power (e)*, nor shall any of its terrible Forerunners, in the Execution of divine Wrath upon his Enemies; *but they shall be the Priests of GOD,*  
and

their his Image, neither had received his Mark upon their Foreheads, or in their Hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand Years.

5 But the rest of the Dead lived not again until the thousand Years were finished. This is the first Resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he that hath Part in the first Resurrection: on such the second Death hath no Power, but they shall be Priests of

(c) *They lived and reigned with Christ.*] This is the *chief Text*, on which Mr. Fleming builds his Doctrine of the *first Resurrection*; when, he supposes, those who have died for the Testimony of Jesus, and other most excellent Saints, shall be raised from the Dead; not, (he imagines,) to live upon Earth, but to live *a thousand Years* with Christ in Heaven; enjoying a Blessedness nearly *approaching*, if not altogether *equal*, to that, which good Men are to enjoy after the *general Resurrection*; while the rest have only the *common Blessing* of the separate State, during this Period; and, even after the Resurrection, shall have only inferior Degrees of Glory, to what these *First-fruits* of the Resurrection shall for ever possess. *Flem. Christol. Vol. ii. pag. 42.*

(d) *The rest of the Dead, &c.*] This has been urged to prove, that a *proper Resurrection* is here spoken of; but I much doubt the Justness of the Conclusion. Such Expressions may, sometimes, be thrown in to promote that *Obscurity*, which seemed, upon the whole, convenient in such a Series of Prophecy. Compare *Chap. xxi. 17.*

(e) *On such the second Death shall have no Power.*] Mr. Fleming considers this as an Intimation, that *the second Death* will have *some Power to terrify*, though only for a little while, those good Men, who shall not have their Share in the *first Resurrection*. See his *Christol. Vol. ii. pag. 45.* But the Notion appears to me very absurd, and ill to agree with the Representation, which Scripture gives of the universal Judgment, as a Day of *unmingled Joy and Triumph* to all the righteous.

(f) *The*

of God, and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand Years.

7 And when the thousand Years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his Prison,

8 And shall go out to deceive the Nations, which are in the four Quarters of the Earth, Gog, and Magog, to gather them together to Battle: the Number of whom is as the Sand of the Sea,

9 And they went up on the Breadth of the Earth, and compassed the Camp of the Saints about, and the beloved City: and Fire came down from God out of Heaven, and devoured them.

and of Christ; and they shall not only be afterwards admitted to a Kingdom of eternal Glory, but shall reign with him a thousand Years, partaking in the Triumph of his Kingdom upon Earth. *And when the*

*thousand Years, before described, shall be accomplished, then Satan shall, for a certain Time, be loosed from his Confinement, to give the last Proof of his Malice against Christ and his Saints. And he shall go forth*

*to deceive the Nations, who are in the four distant Corners of the Earth (f), and shall prevail against them; so that they shall engage in a vain and fatal Enterprize, for the Overthrow of what God has determined for ever to establish: Even Gog and Magog, as the Prophecy of Ezekiel, (Chapters xxxviii, xxxix.) stiles the Enemies of God's People: And Satan shall succeed in his Attempts to gather them together in War; even an Army, whose Number [is] like the Sand of the Sea.*

Accordingly I beheld them in Vision, as drawn forth in Order of Battle; and saw, that they went ~~up~~ over the Breadth of the Earth; so that they seemed to cover the Face of it from North to South, and then surrounded the Camp of the Saints, and Jerusalem; the beloved City, in which they dwelt; and it seemed at first in imminent Danger, but it was not long before it was remarkably delivered; for Fire came down from GOD out of Heaven at once, and devoured them; so that there were no more Remainders of them

(f) *The four Corners of the Earth.*] As it is most certainly known, from the most convincing Arguments, and from repeated Experience, that the Earth is of a spherical Form, it is certain, that by the four Corners of the Earth, we are to understand the Nations which lay at the greatest Distance from the City of the Saints; which, I suppose, does here especially, signify Jerusalem. And we may suppose, that those who live in that Situation, shall be last instructed in the Gospel, and so capable of being most easily engaged to rise up against it. Compare Chap. vii. 1. and Paraphrase.—By Gog and Magog, many understand the Scythians, and other Northern Nations, whom the Devil will stir up to assault the People of God.

Sect. 23. them to be seen; but they, and all their dreadful Artillery, perished and disappeared, as if they had never existed. (Compare Ezek. xxxviii. 22.)

Rev. XX.  
10.

And then the Devil, who had deceived them, came in for his Share of that Punishment, which had long before been inflicted upon many of his Accomplices, and was cast into the Lake of Fire and Brimstone, where, as I before said, the Beast and the false Prophet [were]; and there they shall be tormented together Day and Night, for Ages of Ages, for ever and ever (g), without any Hope of Release, or Respite.

11 And, after this, I saw a great white and resplendent Throne (h), which shone with a Glory scarce to be supported; and yet, mine Eye being divinely strengthened for that Purpose, I beheld him who sat thereon, from whose majestick Face, when he came on this solemn and tremendous Occasion, Earth and Heaven fled away (i); and there was found no Place for them, in which they might continue (k). And I saw the Dead, of all Ranks and Orders, Small and Great, Rich and

10 And the Devil that deceived them, was cast into the Lake of Fire and Brimstone, where the Beast and the False Prophet are, and shall be tormented Day and Night for ever and ever.

11 And I saw a great white Throne, and him that sat on it, from whose Face the Earth and the Heaven fled away, and there was found no Place for them.

12 And I saw the Dead, Small and Great, stand before

(g) For Ages of Ages: *eis tus aiwnas tau aiwnon.*] This is the most literal rendering of these Words: but it is certain, that no Argument can be drawn from hence, against the Eternity of future Punishment; for no Phrase can more strongly express a proper Eternity, than this.

(h) A great white Throne.] It hath been observed, that this Judgment-Seat has been represented by a Throne, to shew that there can be no Appeal from it; a white Throne, to signify the bright Glory, the unspotted Purity, and inflexible Justice of him who sits upon it.

(i) From whose Face Earth and Heaven fled away, &c.] Mr. Blackwall compares this Description with a celebrated Passage in Homer, in which Jupiter is described as sitting on his Throne, and asserts it's great Superiority, though it's Plainness renders the Majesty less observable to common Readers. "It is so plain, says he, that it does not need, so majestick and grand, that it exceeds Commentary and Paraphrase." See his Sacred Class. Vol. i. pag. 329.

(k) There was found no Place for them.] Hence Mr. Whiston infers, that at the Consummation of all Things, and the final Judgment, the Earth will desert it's present Station, and be no more found among the planetary Chorus. Whist. Theor. pag. 282. But I cannot think this Description intended to teach us any Astronomical Niceties; it seems only to intimate, that all Nature was thrown into strong Commotion, as if it were incapable of sustaining the majestick Presence that appeared.

(l) Death

fore God; and the Books were opened: and another Book was opened, which is *the Book of Life*: and the Dead were judged out of those Things which were written in the Books, according to their Works.

and Poor, Princes and People, in one grand Assembly, which knew no more of those Distinctions, once so much regarded, *standing before GOD*, to receive their final Doom from him; to intimate, that the last Judgment should quickly follow the wonderful Events, which had been represented to me before. *And the Books were opened*, which contained the Records of the divine Omniscience on the one Hand, and, on the other, the Law and the Gospel, which were the Rule whereby those, who stood before him, were to be judged. *And another Book was opened*, distinct from these, *which is [the Book] of Life*, in which were registered the Names of all those happy Persons, who, according to the Tenor of the divine Declarations to Men, should be the Inhabitants of the heavenly Jerusalem, and live with GOD for ever, in the Enjoyment of Felicity and Glory. *And the Dead were all impartially judged out of the Things, written in the Books*, and in a Manner agreeable to the Tenor of them, according to their Works, as they had been agreeable or disagreeable to the Discoveries, which GOD had made to them of his Will, for the Rule of their Actions.

Sect. 23:  
Rev. XX.  
12,

13 And the Sea gave up the Dead which were in it; and Death and Hell delivered up the Dead which were in them: and they were judged every Man according to their Works.

*And*, that none might be exempt from coming into Judgment, I perceived that the Resurrection extended also to *the Sea*, which gave up the Dead that were in it; and *Death, and the unseen World*, and separate State, in all their extensive Domains, gave up the Dead that were in them, all that Death had swallowed up, and Hades received; and they were judged, as I said before every one according to their Works.

13

14 And Death and Hell were

*And I saw*, in the Vision, emblematical Persons, who seemed to preside over the Regions of *Death, and Hades*, or the separate State; and, to signify that human Souls should be no more separated from the Bodies, to

14

Sect. 23.  
 Rev. XX.  
 14.

which they were now united, these Persons, as it appeared, *were cast into the Lake of Fire*, which I have before described, and of which I said, that *this is the second Death* (1).

were cast into the Lake of Fire: This is the second Death.

15

And as the Register, which GOD, in Pursuance of his Counsels of everlasting Love, had kept of those, whom it was his gracious Purpose, agreeably to the Tenor of his Gospel, to save, was compleat; I saw, that *if any one were not found written in the Book of Life, he was cast into the Lake of Fire*: So that this was the awful End of the whole human Race, to be plunged into that flaming and eternal Ruin, or to be received into those Abodes of Glory, which I am next to describe, under the Figure of a new Heaven, and a new Earth. (Compare Rev. xxi. 1. Note (a)).

15 And whosoever was not found written in the Book of Life, was cast into the Lake of Fire,

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

WE have here a most affecting View before us, of that *important Event* in which we are *all* so intimately concerned. Whatever *the first Resurrection* may import, or that glorious *Reign of a thousand Years*, (which probably intimates a signal Revival of the *Christian Cause* in the World, and a Display of its Influence beyond what hath yet been known,) I say, whatever these Events may particularly intend, *the illustrious Day*, in which *Heaven and Earth is to pass away*, demands the Attention of all Mankind. For *the Dead, both Small and Great*, whether buried *in the Earth or the Sea*,

(1) *Death and Hades were cast into the Lake of Fire.*] It is no Wonder, a Man of Mr. Hobbes's Disposition and Principles should be ready to catch at any Argument, to prove the *Annihilation of the Wicked*. But, that which he insinuates from this Passage, (see his *Leviathan*, pag. 335.) seems to be very precarious. For, as *Archbishop Dawes* observes, (see his *Sermons*, Numb. 7. pag. 100.) to talk of *Hell* being cast into a *Part of itself*, is downright Nonsense. The plain Meaning is, there shall be *no more separate State*. And this, I think, clearly overthrows that *Hypothesis*, which supposes this last *Fire* will *kill* those that are thrown into it, and that their *separate Spirits* will for ever remain in that Misery, which must be the Consequence of having lost Happiness and Hope, while they retain their thinking Powers: A Doctrine, which *Dr. Whitby* has strangely taught in his *Append. to 2 Thess. Ch. i.*

Sea, must then stand before GOD: Therefore let all the Living, both Small and Great, seriously weigh the Solemnity, and the Importance of that Appearance. Let them often look forward to the awful Period, when the glorious Throne shall be set, the important Volumes opened, which contain the Records of our Lives and Actions, and of GOD's gracious and merciful Transactions with us. We must be judged according to our Works: That GOD, before whom all our Ways are, and who searches all our Hearts, will bring every Work into Judgment, and every secret Thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil. Let us judge ourselves impartially, that we be not condemned of the Lord; and, conscious how unable we should be to stand in that Judgment, if GOD were rigorous to lay Justice to the Line, and Righteousness to the Plummets, let us humbly apply to the Throne of Mercy, to the Blood of his Son, to the Grace of his Gospel-Covenant. So shall we find Mercy of the Lord in that Day, and be the Priests of GOD, and of Christ, and reign with him, not a thousand Years alone, but for everlasting Ages.

Seet. 23.

Ver. 13.

Ver. 6.

In the mean Time, let those who have no Reverence for his Majesty, who have no Esteem for his Gospel, who have never taken this awful Alarm, who have never fled for Refuge to lay hold on the Hope set before them, tremble at these awakening Views. Let them all, of every Condition, both Small and Great, say in their Hearts, who shall dwell with devouring Flames, and lie down in everlasting Burnings, even in this Lake of Fire, into which every one who is not found written in the Book of Life, shall be cast, and where the wretched Victims of divine Justice shall be tormented for ever and ever?

Ver. 15

How melancholy does the Face of our Earth appear, when we reflect on the Reign of Satan on it, on the Influence of the Dragon, and the Beast, and the false Prophet! O Lord, cut short their Power; send down the Angel, that has the Key of the bottomless Pit, to bind this Destroyer; yea, when he shall be loosed for a Season, moderate his Rage; support thy Saints under the Terror of every Assault, till thou appear to the last Confusion of their Enemies, till thou appear to close this perplexing Scene, by the wise and glorious Catastrophe of all Things; when it shall be seen, that the Souls of them who were beheaded for the Testimony of Jesus, were not lost, and that it was Wisdom strenuously to refuse the Mark of the Beast, and the Homage so generally paid to his Image, though Men might neither buy nor sell, nor enjoy their Liberty, nor their Lives, without making an entire Submission to it.

Ver. 1, 2, 3.

Ver. 7, 8.

Ver. 4, 5.

S E C T.



## S E C T. XXIV.

*The solemn Introduction to the glorious Vision of the new Heaven and the new Earth; with a Declaration of the Blessing to attend the faithful and couragious Conqueror, and the Misery to be inflicted on impious and wicked Offenders. Rev. XXI. 1,—8.*

## REVELATION XXI. 1.

Sect. 24.  
Rev. XXI.  
1.

AND when this Scene of Things was passed away, another most glorious and delightful one opened upon me; for *I saw a new Heaven, and new Earth*, wherein I knew Righteousness was ever to dwell, for *the former Heaven, and the former Earth, was passed away*, as I said before; and *the Sea was no more (a)*: the whole terraqueous Globe

## REVELATION XXI. 1.

AND I saw a new Heaven, and a new Earth: for the first Heaven and the first Earth were passed away; and there was no more Sea.

(a) *The Sea was no more.*] The Consequence which *Dr. Thomas Burnet* hath drawn from hence, in *his Theory*, to prove there was *no Sea* in the Paradisaical State, is so manifestly absurd, that I need urge nothing against it. For it is certain, were God to cover the whole Sea with dry Land, the Earth must quickly *perish*, as well as much of it's Commerce be destroyed. But a World more populous, than this can be, while the Sea takes up so large a Part of it's Surface, might well be expressed by such a *figurative Vision*. As for this Account of *the new Heaven and new Earth* in general, *Commentators* have been divided. Some have thought it represents the happy State of the *Church upon Earth*, during the *Millennium*. A very *ingenious Writer*, I mean, *Mr. Worthington*, in his *Treatise of the Extent and Progress of Redemption*, endeavours to prove, that it is intended to represent a yet more perfect and durable Period of Prosperity, which shall be enjoyed upon this Earth, *after the Millennium*; and when the *Paradisaical State* shall be yet more fully restored, by the more abundant progressive Influence of the Gospel. But, on weighing the whole Matter, I must declare myself of the Opinion of those Divines, who understand it as an *emblematical Description* of the Happiness, which the Saints are to enjoy in *Heaven* after the *Resurrection*, and to enjoy for ever; when, according to the preceding Descriptions, *the Dead shall be judged according to their Works*, when this *Heaven and Earth shall have passed away with a great Noise*, and the *Elements shall have melted with fervent Heat*, as *St. John* and *St. Peter* concur to describe it; and, when *Death and Hell shall be cast into the Lake of Fire*, with all that are not written in the *Book of Life*: *Phrases*, which, I think, cannot be explained properly of any Event, but those of the Day

Globe was changed for another kind of Sect. 24.  
World, wherein every Thing was incom-  
parably more beautiful and excellent, than Rev. XXI.  
the Face of Nature had ever been, and  
1.  
room was made for a vastly greater Number

2 And I John saw the  
holy City, new Jerusalem,  
coming down from God  
out of Heaven, prepared as  
a Bride adorned for her  
Husband.

of Inhabitants; And as an Emblem 2  
of the eminent Holiness and Felicity, which  
should there reign, I John saw the holy City,  
that is, the new Jerusalem descending from  
GOD out of Heaven (b); and it was pre-  
pared with all imaginable Ornaments and  
Decorations, like a Bride adorned for her  
Husband, and preparing to meet him with  
all her Charms set out to the greatest Advan-  
tage. And I heard a great Voice out of 3

3 And I heard a great  
Voice out of Heaven, say-  
ing, Behold, the Taberna-  
cle of God is with Men,  
and he will dwell with them,  
and they shall be his People,  
and God himself shall be  
with them, and be their God.

Heaven, saying aloud, Behold the Tabernacle 3  
of the living GOD [is] now with Men; and  
he shall pitch his Tent among them, in Token  
of his Favour and Friendship, and they shall  
be owned by him as his People, and GOD  
himself shall be with and among them [as] their  
GOD, their Protector and Friend, their  
Guardian and Father, their supreme good  
and final Portion. And GOD shall, 4  
with parental Tenderness, wipe away every  
Tear from their Eyes; though here their  
Tears have plentifully flowed, not one shall  
now be left on any of their Faces. And  
Death

4 And God shall wipe  
away all Tears from their  
Eyes;

Day of universal Judgment. And it is certain, that if we do not go into this Inter-  
pretation of them, there is no View given us of the final Catastrophe of Things on  
this Earth of ours, in this comprehensive Prophecy, though intended to represent the  
Triumph of Christianity; which seems in Theory a very improbable Supposition.

(b) Descending from GOD out of Heaven.] I apprehend, he saw in the Vision an Appear-  
ance of a City, which seemed, like the Sheet which Peter saw, to be let down from Hea-  
ven, and appeared pendent, as it were, in the Air, in such a View, that the Foun-  
dations were visibly distinguishable from the Superstructure; and this he considered not  
as actually the Abode of the Blessed, but as a figurative Representation of the Holi-  
ness and Felicity in which they were to dwell; so that it was a Type of what the  
Church itself should be. To interpret it therefore, as if there were now such a City  
made in Heaven, and by Angelick Power to be brought down to Earth, and settled  
upon some Spot of it, is so wild, and romantick a Thought, that one would wonder,  
any one Person of Learning and Understanding, should ever have embraced it. Com-  
pare Hallett's Notes and Discourses, Vol. i. pag. 200. See Isai. liv. 11, 12.

(c) He

Sect. 24.

Rev. XXI.

4.

*Death shall be no more*; he shall be for ever banished those blisful Regions, and with him all his melancholy Train, nor shall there be *Grief, nor Crying, nor shall there be any more Pain, or Labour*; for all the former Things are passed away, all the mournful Scenes which were on Earth so familiar to their Eyes.

5 *And he that sat upon the Throne (c) then spake himself, and said with his own awful and gracious Voice, which through the whole Vision I had not before heard, Behold I make all Things new, I exert my Power in producing a new Creation, whence every Trace of seeming Imperfection and Irregularity shall be banished. And he then condescended to take Notice of me; and, singling me out by his Eye, and directing his Voice to me, he said unto me, while all my Soul was awed into Reverence and Attention, Write what thou hearest, for these are true and faithful Words; and, as their Contents are important, so they are, beyond all Controversy, certain.*

6 *And he said unto me, Wonderful as the Prediction is, doubt not of it's Accomplishment; It is done, it is, as it were, already present with me; I am the Alpha, and the Omega, the Beginning, and the End; too great and excellent to need to use any Artifice with my Creatures; and, far above the Temptation of raising in them any false Hopes and Expectations, I will give to him that is athirst, of the Fountain of the Water of Life freely; I open the Springs, and they shall flow in Abundance; and let every humble Soul*

Eyes; and there shall be no more Death, neither Sorrow, nor Crying, neither shall there be any more Pain: for the former Things are passed away.

5 And he that sat upon the Throne, said, Behold, I make all Things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these Words are true and faithful.

6 And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End: I will give unto him that is athirst, of the Fountain of the Water of Life freely.

(c) *He that sat upon the Throne.*] As the Lamb, and He that sat upon the Throne, have been mentioned, as *distinct*, through the whole Book; and, as the Lamb is mentioned here as the *Spouse of the Church*, I am ready to understand the Father, as the Person here spoken of. But I will not absolutely insist upon this, because in Chap. xx. 11, 12. it seems to be Christ who is represented as *sitting upon the Throne*; since we know it is he who is to appear as *universal Judge*, under which Character the Person who *sate upon the Throne* is there spoken of.

(d) *All*

7 He that overcometh shall inherit all Things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my Son.

Soul that desires it, freely come and quench his Thirst. Sect. 24.

I have already made many gracious Promises to him who overcometh; and I will now comprize them all in one; *the Conqueror shall inherit all Things*; the whole new Creation shall be his, he shall possess it's Blessings to the utmost of his most enlarged Desires. *And I will be to him a GOD*, a Source of compleat and everlasting Blessedness; *and he shall be my Son*, and, as my Son, inherit my Kingdom, and dwell with me in it through eternal Ages.

Rev. XXI.

7.

8 But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and Murderers, and Whoremongers, and Sorcerers, and Idolaters, and all Liars, shall have their Part in the Lake which burneth with Fire and Brimstone: which is the second Death.

*But as for the fearful and unbelieving*, who dare not face the Difficulties which a courageous Profession of my Religion requires; *and the Abominable*, who have devoted themselves to sensual Affections and Pursuits; *and Murtherers, and Whoremongers, and Sorcerers, and Idolaters, and all Liars (d)*, all who allow themselves, in their Words, or in their Actions, to violate the eternal and invariable Law of Truth, by which I have governed myself, and by which I have required all my rational Creatures to be governed; *their Part [shall be] in the Lake, which burns for ever with Fire and Brimstone; which is the second Death.* Let this, therefore, be recorded by thy Pen, that every future Generation of Men may carefully peruse, and seriously consider it; that every sincere Believer, however weak, may be encouraged, and that every obstinate Sinner may be terrified, and, if possible, awakened; and that none, in the Day of my final Judgment, may complain, that they have not been

8

(d) *All Liars.*] Some think this refers to the general Notion, which is so largely inculcated by the well-known Author of *the Religion of Nature delineated*, that there is a *Language in Actions*, as well as Words; and that the Malignity of every vicious and immoral Action, consists in it's Contradiction to the great *Rule of Truth*. But, in this View, it must comprehend the Case of *express Lying*; against which, in the most obvious Sense, the Terrors of this Clause are most *directly* levelled.

Sect. 24. been warned and cautioned with the greatest Plainness, and with the greatest Solemnity.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

LET us pause a little, before we proceed to the more particular Description of this glorious Scene; and let our Hearts rejoice in this general View of the *new Heaven, and the new Earth*, and of the *holy City descending out of Heaven from GOD*. Will GOD in very Deed dwell with Men? Will he dwell with them for ever? Will he fix his *Tabernacle* with them, and condescend to avow them for his *People*, and to make himself known unto them as their GOD?

Let our Souls then be awakened, to pay a due Attention to such glorious and important Promises. Let us hearken to the Voice of him *who sitteth upon the Throne*, whose *Words* are undoubtedly *true and faithful*. Lord, dost thou *make all Things new*? Verify the Word first, we implore thee, in our Hearts, that it may be verified at length in our State and Condition. O thou *Alpha and Omega*, who art *the Beginning and the End*, thou who hast done so much to introduce this divine Scheme of Salvation, perfect it we intreat thee, with respect to us; exciting *our Thirst* after the *Water of Life*; and may we come and take it as *freely* as it is offered in the Gospel.

In what Part of the holy Scripture is *Life and Death, the Blessing and the Curse*, set before us, if not in these awful Passages? Let those who are too timorous resolutely to adhere to their Duty, be recovered, and, as it were, driven back to it, by the Fear of divine Vengeance. And let all habitual and obstinate Sinners, and especially *all Liars, who bring up the Rear of a Catalogue, in which Murtherers, and Whoremongers, and Sorcerers, and Idolaters, make a Part*, be awakened by this awful Threatening. Oh, desperate and inexcusable Folly, to be afraid of the *Displeasure of Men*, and the Inconveniencies which may possibly attend an Adherence to the Truth, and not to fear *the Lake, which burns for ever with Fire and Brimstone!*

But let us courageously encounter, and then we shall conquer, all our Enemies, animated by these glorious Promises, in which

all

all the Encouragements contained in the facred Volume, are comprized, that *he, who overcomes, fhall inherit all Things,* while GOD owns himfelf his GOD, and acknowledges him as *his Son; and if a Son, then an Heir, an Heir of GOD, and Joint-Heir with Chrift;* and if fo, *all Things are indeed ours.* Let thofe Tears, that will now fometimes filently steal down our Cheeks, be fhed as Tears, which we expect quickly to have *wiped away,* even by the foft and compaffionate *Hand of our heavenly Father.* Let us bear our *Sorrows,* and our *Pains,* as thofe that know we fhall, through divine Grace, foon be out of the Reach of them; and let us meet *Death*.itfelf, if we are fincere Believers in *Chrift,* as thofe that know it's *Reign* will foon come to a *Period;* and that when once we are recovered from it, by the Almighty Power of our great *General,* we fhall never more be fubject to it's *Invaſion,* or any of it's *Terrors;* even then, *when all former Things fhall have paſſed away.*

Sect. 24.  
Ver. 7.

Ver. 4.

S E C T. XXV.

*A ſublime and particular Deſcription of the Splendor, Glory, Purity and Happineſs of the heavenly Jeruſalem. Rev. XXI. 9, to the End.*

REVELATION XXI. 9.

AND there came unto me one of the ſeven Angels, which had the ſeven Vials full of the ſeven laſt Plagues, and talked with me, ſaying, Come hither, I will ſhew thee the Bride, the Lambs Wife.

10 And he carried me away in the Spirit to a great and high Mountain, and ſhewed me that great City, the ho- ly

REVELATION XXI. 9.

AND after he, who ſat on the Throne, had condeſcended to ſpeak to me, in the Words I have juſt now mentioned, *there came to me one of the ſeven Angels, who had the ſeven Vials full of the ſeven laſt Plagues* which had lately been poured out; and he ſpake with me, ſaying, Come, and I will ſhew thee the Bride, the Wife of the Lamb, and thou ſhalt obſerve how beautiful and glorious ſhe is.

Sect. 25.  
Rev. XXI.  
9

And he brought me, in a Viſion of the Spirit, to a great and high Mountain, and he ſhewed me that great City,

10

Sect. 25.

*the holy Jerusalem, coming down out of Heaven from GOD ; which I understood to be an Emblem of the Church of Christ, in it's most happy and glorious State.*

Rev. XXI.

11.

And it was indeed a most delightful Object to behold; *having the Glory of GOD shining round about it; and it's Lustre [was] like to that of a most precious Gem, bright as a Jasper Stone, and clear as Chrystal ; for the whole City, as it was represented to me pendant in the Air, shone with an elegant and amazing Lustre.*

12

And it appeared *having a great and high Wall, for ever to secure it from all the Attacks of it's Enemies ; having also twelve Gates, and over the Gates there appeared twelve Angels, as a celestial Guard posted there ; and there were Names written upon them, which were [the Names] of the twelve Tribes of the Sons of Israel (a) ; to signify, that it was the Dwelling of the Israel of God.*

13

And the City made a compleat Square, *having on the East Side, which I first viewed, three Gates ; on the North, three Gates ; on the South, three*

14

*Gates ; and on the West, three Gates.* And as I saw the City suspended, as it were, in the Air, I had an Opportunity of observing, *that the Wall of the City had twelve Foundations ; and in them, the Names of the twelve Apostles of the Lamb were engraven ; to signify, how great a Dependance the Church had on their Testimony, and what an Influence the Gospel, which they preached, had upon raising this noble and divine Structure.*

15

And he that spake with me had, as the Angel who appeared in Vision to Ezekiel (Chap. xl. 3.) a measuring Rod, but with this

ly Jerusalem, descending out of Heaven from God,

11 Having the Glory of God: and her Light was like unto a Stone most precious, even like a Jasper Stone, clear as Crystal ;

12 And had a Wall great and high, and had twelve Gates, and at the Gates twelve Angels, and Names written thereon, which are the Names of the twelve Tribes of the Children of Israel.

13 On the East, three Gates ; on the North, three Gates ; on the South, three Gates ; and on the West, three Gates

14 And the Wall of the City had twelve Foundations, and in them the Names of the twelve Apostles of the Lamb.

15 And he that talked with

(a) *The twelve Tribes of the Sons of Israel.]* Such a Regard continually maintained to the Jews, and their Manners, and their Temple-Worship, might have a great Tendency to conciliate their Regards ; and may also afford some Hints for the Interpretations of many Passages of the Old Testament, in which Expressions, taken from the Jewish Church are used in describing that of the Messiah.

(b) *It's*

with me, had a golden Reed to measure the City, and the Gates thereof, and the Wall thereof.

16 And the City lieth four-square, and the Length is as large as the Breadth: and he measured the City with the Reed, twelve thousand Furlongs: the Length, and the Breadth, and the Height of it are equal.

17 And he measured the Wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four Cubits, according to the Measure of a Man, that is, of the Angel.

18 And the Building of the Wall of it was of Jasper; and the City was pure Gold, like unto clear Glass.

19 And the Foundations of the Wall of the City were garnished with all Manner of precious Stones. The first Foundation was Jasper; the second Sapphire; the third a Chalcedony; the fourth, an Emerald;

Circumstance of illustrious Distinction, that it was a golden Reed; and it was given him, that he might measure the City, and it's Gates, and it's Wall. Sect. 25.

And the City was a compleat Square; and it's Length was exactly equal to it's Breadth; and he measured the City with the Reed, and each Side was twelve thousand Stadia, or Furlongs. And, which was most extraordinary of all, it appeared to me, in this Vision, as a perfect Cube, so that it's Length, and it's Breadth, and it's Height, were equal (b); which was an Intimation, how impossible it was for any of it's Enemies to scale the Bulwarks that defended it.

And he measured the Thickness of it's Wall, and found it one hundred forty four Cubits, the Square of twelve; and this was according to the Measure of a Man, that is, of the Angel who had the Measuring-Rod in his Hand, and accurately took the Dimensions of it. 16.

And the Building of it's Wall was like a compleat Rock of Jasper, and the City [was] pure Gold, and it was bright and clear, like refined Glass. 17

And to signify, how firm the Foundations of the Walls of the City, which were the Emblem of the Apostles and their Doctrine, [were], they appeared adorned with every precious Stone, like so many vast and solid Rocks of Gems, lying under the Gates, and appearing radiant and glorious, while the City hung, as I said before, suspended in my Sight. The first Foundation [was] Jasper, the second Sapphire, the third Chalcedony; these were on the East Side; 18

(b) It's Length, it's Breadth, and it's Height, were equal.] As this is quite inconceivable, with Regard to any cubical Structure, which can be supposed, of this Bigness, I look upon it as a wise and well-judged Intimation, that all these Descriptions are figurative. The like Intimation is given in the Vision of Ezekiel; according to which, if it were to be taken literally, the Building described must be a Mile high.

(c) On



Sect. 25.  
 Rev. XXI.  
 20.

Side (c); *the fourth Emerald, The fifth Sardonyx; the sixth, Sardius; these were on the North; the seventh, Chrysolite, or a Stone of the Colour of pure Gold; the eighth, Beryl; the ninth, Topaz; these were on the South; and, to compleat the Square, the tenth was Chrysoloprasus, or a beautiful Mixture of Gold and Green; the eleventh, Hyacinth; and the twelfth Amethyst, which appeared on the West Side: Thus were they agreeably variegated and decorated, with all the Elegance and Magnificence that can be imagined.*

21

*And the twelve Gates [were] twelve Pearls; each of the Gates was of one entire undivided Pearl, with all the beautiful Pillars and Arches, Mouldings and Cornishes. And the Street of the City, instead of being paved with common Stones, [was] pure Gold, the Substance being transparent as Glass, and reflecting the Light that shone upon it, with a Lustre equal to that of polished Gold.*

22

*And whereas the Temple made so considerable a Part of the View of Jerusalem, the holy City, which I had been used to visit; as for this heavenly Jerusalem, I saw no Temple in it, for the Lord GOD Almighty, and the Lamb, are the Temple of it: GOD was present in Christ his Son, by a more intimate Presence than had ever been known upon Earth, and by that Presence, he made even the whole of the City most holy.*

23

*And the City had no need of the Sun, neither of the Moon, to shine therein; for the Glory of the Lord enlightened it (d)*  
 on

20 The fifth, Sardonyx; the sixth, Sardius; the seventh, Chrysolite; the eighth, Beryl; the ninth, a Topaz; the tenth, a Chrysoloprasus; the eleventh, a Jacinct; the twelfth, an Amethyst.

21 And the twelve Gates were twelve Pearls; every several Gate was of one Pearl: and the Street of the City was pure Gold, as it were transparent Glass.

22 And I saw no Temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty, and the Lamb, are the Temple of it.

23 And the City had no need of the Sun, neither of the Moon to shine in it: for the Glory of God did lighten

(c) On the East Side.] As the Temple of Jerusalem was beheld in it's greatest Glory, when viewed from the East, towards which the beautiful Gate looked; I think it is probable, that the like was observable in this visionary City, which was all as one Temple in which GOD dwelt.

(d) Glory of the Lord, &c.] Some have thought, this was an extraordinary Lustre, which seemed always to hover over it, like a Sun never going down. I rather think, that the whole City appeared to him like a luminous Object, sending out Rays on every

lighten it, and the Lamb is the Light thereof.

24 And the Nations of them which are saved, shall walk in the Light of it: and the Kings of the Earth do bring their Glory and Honour into it.

25 And the Gates of it shall not be shut at all by Day: for there shall be no Night there.

26 And they shall bring the Glory and Honour of the Nations into it.

on all Sides, and the Lamb [was] the Light thereof, and the illustrious Manifestation of this Presence rendered, not only artificial, but all natural Light, unnecessary. *And* Rev. XXI. 24.

*the Nations of the saved shall walk continually in it's Light: happy Nations, consisting of Myriads and Millions, shall expatiate in, and enjoy the delightful Scene; and the Kings of the Earth do bring their Glory and their Honour into it (e).* If you were to conceive all the Monarchs upon Earth, uniting all their Treasures to adorn one single Place, they could produce nothing comparable to what I then saw. *And the* 25

*Gates of it shall not be shut by Day; and that is equivalent to saying, they shall never be shut at all; for there shall be no Night there (f).*

*And they shall bring the Glory and Honour of the Nations into it; whatever is most desirable among* 26

ry Side, which he apprehended to be in Consequence of GOD's dwelling there; and that these Rays might have much of the Lustre of the Shechinah. Mr. Fleming argues from this Text, that the Lamb is the Shechinah in the heavenly World.

(e) *The Kings of the Earth.*] This is the Clause upon which Mr. Worthington insists very much, to prove, that we are to understand this Description, not of the heavenly World, but of some glorious State of the Christian Church, which is to pass upon Earth; and it must be acknowledged a plausible Argument. The Reader must consider, whether it is sufficient to outweigh those on the other Side; and if it be not, I suppose he will find no Solution preferable to that which I have here given: For I cannot suppose, that the Kings of the Earth are those who are to reign in this new Earth, whose Glory shall be reflected from, and so adorn the blissful City which they shall then inhabit. (Compare Isa. lx, 3, 11, 20. lxvi. 12.)

(f) *There shall be no Night there.*] Mr. Whiston supposes, that a Comet, meeting the Earth at the Conflagration, (for to such a Concurrence he ascribes that awful Phenomenon,) shall give it such a Blow, as to destroy it's diurnal Motion, leaving only such a Degree of it, that, like the Moon with respect to us, it shall move round it's Axis, while it performs it's periodical Revolution round the central Body; and so as to turn always the same Face towards it; so that one Hemisphere shall be always enlightened by the Sun, and the want of it in the other, shall be supplied by a supernatural Light. But the four dark Corners, (which where they are it is difficult to say,) shall be the Habitation of Gog and Magog. It is hard to determine, whether this agrees less with the Description here given, or the Principles of good Philosophy. See Whist. Theory, pag. 447. But this is not a Place to canvass such an Hypothesis, nor is it necessary, after what his Antagonist Keil has said concerning it. This Gentleman also, thinks a Comet shall remove the Moon from it's Orbit, so that it shall be converted into a primary Planet, as he thinks it would have been at the Flood, had it not been prevented by a peculiar Providence.

(g) Bks

Sect. 25. among all Nations, seemed to meet together, to adorn that Place, where good Men of all Nations shall dwell and reign with  
 Rev. XXI. GOD for ever.

27.

*And nothing unclean shall enter into it, nor [any Thing which] practises Abomination and Falsehood of any Kind, but only those who are written in the Lamb's Book of Life (g), in which none of such a detestable Character can possibly have any Place.*

27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither *whatsoever* worketh Abomination, or maketh a Lye: but they which are written in the Lambs Book of Life.

### I M P R O V E M E N T \*.

**G**LORIOUS Things are indeed spoken of thee, O thou City of GOD. (Psal. lxxxvii. 3.) Thus does the divine Being condescend to aid our feeble Faith, by such sensible Representations. But none of these Things, which are spoken, can give us an Idea grand and magnificent enough. The Pearls and the Gems, the Gold and the Chrystal, the Honours of Kings, and all the Nations they govern, all fall inconceivably short of that Glory; for *Eye hath not seen, nor Ear heard, nor, active and boundless as the human Imagination may seem, has it entered into the Heart of Man to conceive, what GOD has prepared for them that love him, in these Regions of perpetual Day, of everlasting Security, in this grand Temple, the whole of which shall be replenished with the most sensible Tokens of his Presence.* (1 Cor. ii. 9.)

Ver. 23. And who shall abide in this thy Tabernacle? Who shall dwell in this thy holy Hill? They who are written in the Lamb's Book of Life, they whom GOD has, from the Beginning, chosen to Salvation through Sanctification of the Spirit, and Belief of the Truth, being predestinated to the Adoption of Children, through Jesus Christ unto himself. And who are these? None that are unclean and profane; none that work Abomination and a Lie; but the Pure and Pious, the Humble and the

(g) *But only those, &c.*] As it is certain, that nothing profane, abominable, and false, can here be considered as written in the Book of Life, this is another Text to be added to the large Catalogue I have given on John xvii. 12. where *eiun* is to be considered, not as an *exceptive*, but *adversitive Particle*. See Vol. ii. Sect. 179. Note (f).

\* There are many beautiful Ideas in the Description, which I have not collected together in this *Improvement*; as some of them have been taken Notice of before, and some occur in the next Chapter.

the Holy. Form us, O Lord, to this Character by thy Grace; and never let the gawdy Glare of sensual Enjoyments, and worldly Possessions; turn our Eyes from contemplating this glorious Sight, or alienate our Hearts from the Pursuit of this Blessedness; till, having heard of it by the hearing of the Ear, and believed the faithful Report, our Eyes shall behold those *divine substantial* Glories, which these *Emblems*, resplendent as they are, can but imperfectly represent. In the mean Time, O Lord, lead us onward, through what *dark* and gloomy Path thou pleasest, to these Abodes of *Light* and *Glory*; determine for us in what *Cottages* we shall lodge, though ever so mean and obscure, while we are pursuing our Journey to this *royal*, this *imperial Palace*.

Sect. 25.

S E C T. XXVI.

*The Apostle hath a further Vision of the River of Life, and of the Tree of Life; describes the Happiness of the Inhabitants of the new Jerusalem, and receives a further Message from GOD by an Angel, before whom he is about to renew his Prostration; but is forbidden. Rev. XXII. 1,—9.*

REVELATION XXII. I.

AND he shewed me a pure River of Water of Life, clear as Crystal, proceeding out of the Throne of God, and of the Lamb.

REVELATION XXII. I.

AND having given me this View of the holy City, *he*, that is, the Angel who condescended to be my Guide on this Occasion, shewed me the pure River of the Water of Life, which was clear as Crystal, issuing out of the Throne of GOD, and of the Lamb; an Emblem of that perpetual Life, and overflowing Joy, which shall be the Portion of all the blissful Inhabitants of the new Jerusalem. And in the *Midst of the Street of it, and on the one Side and the other of the River, [was] the Tree of Life, (Gen. iii. 3. 22.)*

Sect. 26.  
Rev. XXII.  
1.

<sup>2</sup> In the Midst of the Street of it, and of either Side of the River, was there the Tree of

2

Sect. 26. producing twelve different [Kinds of] Fruits, every Month producing one [Kind of] Fruit ;  
 Rev. XXII. 2. to signify the Permanency and Variety of those Delights, which spring up there.

of Life, which bare twelve manner of Fruits, and yielded her Fruit every Month : and the Leaves of the Tree were for the Healing of the Nations.

And the Leaves of the Tree are for the Healing of the Nations ; beneath their salutary Shade no Disease shall ever invade the Nations of the saved, but perpetual Health shall flourish among them ; (Zach. xiv. 11.)

3 And whereas in the Earthly Paradise Satan insinuated himself into the Minds of the first Parents of the human Race, and the newborn Glories of the Creation were blasted by the Curse which he introduced ; in the heavenly Paradise every fatal Effect of the former Curse shall cease (a), and no new Evil shall ever arise ; and the Throne of GOD and the Lamb, upon which the Father and the Son sit together, shall be in it ; and his Servants shall serve him, in the sacred Offices of his Temple, with far greater Advantage than they have ever before done ;

3 And there shall be no more Curse : but the Throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it ; and his Servants shall serve him.

4 And they shall see his Face shining with unclouded Lustre ; and, in Token of their perpetual Devotedness to him, his Name [shall be borne] upon their Foreheads (b), as the Name of GOD was, on that golden Plate which the Jewish High-Priest wore on his. And, to compleat their Happiness, there shall be

4 And they shall see his Face ; and his Name shall be in their Foreheads.

5 And there shall be no Night

5 And there shall be no Night

(a) Every Curse shall cease.] So the present learned Bishop of London, I think very justly, renders these Words, which are plainly limited to the Inhabitants of the new Jerusalem, and must certainly, therefore, refer to the final State of Happiness after the Resurrection ; 'till which Time, all the Saints of preceding Ages will remain under the Power of Death, as to their Body, and the Effect of the first Curse be written in their Dust.

(b) Name upon their Forehead.] It hath elsewhere been observed, (Sect. xvi. Note (1)), that there was a Custom prevailing among many of the Heathen, to inscribe on the Foreheads the Names, or symbolical Marks, of the Deity they worshipped ; but the near Connection between this Clause, and that which related to their serving God in the Offices of Devotion, (for that λατρευω signifies) makes me think it more natural, to refer this to the Inscription of Holiness to Jehovah, written on the Mitre of the High-Priest ; and so it naturally leads us to reflect upon that intimate Approach to the blessed GOD, with which all these happy Souls shall be honoured.

(s) Has

Night there, and they need no Candle, neither Light of the Sun; for the Lord God giveth them Light: and they shall reign for ever and ever.

*no Night there; and so they can have no need of a Lamp, nor indeed of the Light of the Sun itself, that glorious Fountain of Lustre to this lower World, because the Lord GOD shall enlighten them with the Light of his own Holiness and Glory; and they shall reign as Kings for ever and ever, and enjoy an immortal Life, far more delightful, splendid and magnificent, than any Monarch on Earth has ever known.*

Sect. 26.  
Rev. XXII.

6 And he said unto me, These Sayings are faithful and true. And the Lord God of the holy Prophets sent his Angel to shew unto his Servants the Things which must shortly be done.

*And when he had said this to me, he added, Though these Words which I have spoken, betoken such glorious Things, that they may seem in a Manner incredible, yet is not the divine Bounty and Munificence to be estimated by any human Standard; they [are] therefore to be received, and depended upon, as faithful and true. And these Things, O John, are intended not merely for thy own Instruction and Consolation, and much less for the Gratification of thy Curiosity; but the Lord GOD of the holy Prophets has sent his Angel (c), to shew to his Servants what must quickly be done, and to represent Scenes, which it shall not be long e'er they begin to open, though it may be long before they close.*

7 Behold I come quickly: Blessed is he that keepeth the Sayings of the Prophecy of this Book.

*Yet, on the whole, I may in his Name declare, Behold I come quickly to call my Servants to an Account: And blessed [is] he who keeps, and strictly observes, the Words of the Prophecy of this Book; for they will in such a Manner direct his Course, as that he shall escape many dangerous Rocks, on which Multitudes shall suffer Shipwreck, to their eternal Ruin.*

8 And I John saw these Things, and heard them. And

*And I John, who wrote this Book, am the Person who saw and heard these Things; and*

(c) *Has sent his Angel.*] Perhaps the *Apostle* might think *this Angel* to be *Christ*, and that he speaks of *his own* coming in the following Verse. But *Dr. Calamy* argues the *Deity of Christ* from these Words, which he thinks the *Context* proves to be applicable to him. Compare *Ver. 16. Cal. on Trin. Serm. ii. pag. 41.*

604 *And offered to worship the Angel who shewed them to him.*

Sect. 26. *and when I heard and saw [them], I was so powerfully affected, that I fell down to worship before the Feet of the Angel, who shewed these Things to me, forgetting the Manner in which the same Kind of Homage had lately been refused; upon a like Occasion. And he also said to me, as the Angel had before done, (Chap. xix. 10.) See [thou do it] not, for I am a Fellow-Servant with thee, I am subject to the same Lord, and share in the Duty and Service of thy Brethren the Prophets, and of those who keep the Words of this Book (d), which thou art now commanded to write: Worship GOD alone, and divide not thy religious Homage, between him and any Creature, how exalted and excellent forever.*

And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the Feet of the Angel, which shewed me these Things.

9 Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not: for I am thy Fellow-Servant, and of thy Brethren the Prophets, and of them which keep the Sayings of this Book: worship God.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

Ver. 8, 9. **W**E will not now employ our Time in reviewing the *Infirmity* of this *holy Apostle*, who seems again to have fallen into the same Danger of *Idolatry*, from which he had so lately been recovered. Nor will we stay to examine, whether he took *this Angel* for our *Lord Jesus Christ*, as some have imagined; or to determine *what Homage* it was, he attempted to pay. Let us content ourselves, for the present, with reflecting, how necessary it is we should be on our Guard, against *exceeding* in our Esteem and Affection for Creatures, who have been the Means of conveying to us signal Advantages, and especially assisting our Views of *the new Jerusalem*:—To the Contemplation of which, may we now return with new and growing Delight.

Ver. 1, 2. Let us raise our Eyes to *the Water of Life, which issues from the Throne of GOD and the Lamb; to the Tree of Life, which grows on it's Banks, and produces such a Variety of Fruit, both for Food*

(d) *Keep the Words of this Book.*] There are indeed a Multitude of Things contained in *this Book*, which are of such a Nature, that whoever pays a *due Regard* to them, must necessarily be a *true Christian*, and intitled to all the Blessings and Promises of the Gospel.

Food and Refreshment, for the Healing of the Nations; to that more excellent Paradise, in which there shall be no Curse, where, from the Throne of GOD and of the Lamb, shall be scattered ten thousand Blessings, on all his Servants; who shall there serve him, with everlasting, with increasing Delight, being admitted to see his Face, and exulting in their having the Name of GOD written upon their Foreheads; which they reckon a brighter and nobler Ornament, than the most glorious Crown, or Diadem, without such an Inscription, could be. These are the Words of Truth and Faithfulness: And, as such, may our Faith embrace them, and our Souls ever rest upon them.

Sect. 26.

Ver. 3.

Ver. 4.

Ver. 6.

Oh that we may feel our Thirst after this Water of Life, our Hunger after this Fruit of the Tree of Life, more powerfully excited. We shall, in both Respects, be satisfied in the proper Season; and, in the mean Time, God will send us some Refreshments, during our Continuance in the Wilderness. Already are we, if we are true Believers, delivered from the Curse; and those Things, which were the original Effects and Consequences of it, shall be over-ruled by our gracious God, and converted into a Blessing. And oh, may divine Love, and every genuine Regard to GOD and to the Lamb, prevail and govern in our Hearts; and may our Lives be devoted to that Service, in which we hope our Eternity will be employed. Have we not already, as it were, received the Mark of GOD in our Foreheads? Have we not solemnly enlisted ourselves to fight under the Banner of Christ? Have we not, in repeated and most affecting Solemnities and Ordinances of his own Institution, declared our Desire of being for ever devoted to him? Oh let us ever remember the sacred Engagement. Let Holiness to the Lord be written on our Hearts, as well as on our Foreheads. Let all our Affections, and all our Faculties, all our Possessions, and all our Pursuits be consecrated to GOD. To bear this Name and Inscription, will now, even in this dark and benighted World, shed a Glory around us. It will be as a sacred Guide to our Ways, it will cheer and animate our Hearts, it will bring down to us many a delightful Foretaste of that World, where, in his Light, we shall see Light, and where we shall reign with him for ever and ever. Amen.

Ver. 3.

S E C T.



## S E C T. XXVII.

*Our Lord Jesus Christ admonishes the Apostle, to discover to the Churches what had been revealed to him; and solemnly declares his speedy Approach, to fix the eternal State of Men according to their Characters and Works. Rev. XXII. 10,—15.*

## REVELATION XXII. 10.

Sect. 27.  
Rev. XXII.  
10.

*AND* he, that is, our Lord Jesus Christ (a), from whom I received this Revelation, said unto me, Seal not up the Words of the Prophecy of this Book, so that they should not be immediately perused; for the Time is near, in which the Accomplishment of these Things shall begin. Yea, the Time is just approaching, when the last Seal shall be set upon the Characters of Men, and when it shall be said on the one Hand, *Let him that is unjust, be unjust still; and let him that is polluted, be polluted still*; for no more Opportunities shall ever be granted for reforming what hath been amiss, and recovering the unrighteous and polluted Soul to Rectitude and Purity. *And*, on the other Hand, it shall be said, *Let him that is righteous, be righteous still; and let him that is holy, be holy still*: Nothing shall ever happen to bring the Virtues and Graces of good Men into any future Danger, or under any Cloud; but their Righteousness and their Holiness shall

## REVELATION XXII. 10.

*AND* he saith unto me, Seal not the Sayings of the Prophecy of this Book: for the Time is at Hand.

II He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he that is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

(a) *And he*, that is, the Lord Jesus Christ.] Many following Words, and especially Verse 12, prove that our Lord is here meant. But it is a remarkable Instance of the Reference of a Relative to a remoter Antecedent: A Figure of Speech, which I have taken Notice of upon many former Occasions. Heb. vii. 2. Note (a).

(b) *Who*

12 And behold, I come quickly; and my Reward is with me, to give every Man according as his Work shall be.

shall for ever shine; yea, shine with an increasing Lustre. *And, to confirm this,* Sect. 27.

*Behold I come quickly; I shall be manifest e'er it be long; and my Reward, both of Grace and Vengeance, [is] with me; and I will recompence to every Man according as his Works shall be, whether it shall appear, on an impartial Examination, to have been Good, or Evil.* *And, to confirm it further, I* 13

13 I am Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End, the First and the Last.

repeat it again, *I am the Alpha, and the Omega, the Beginning and the End, the First and the Last; and what I say may be depended upon, as the Words of invariable Fidelity. Hear them therefore with Attention and Regard. And, since my Nature and Perfections are immutable, see that the necessary Change be made in yourselves, in order to your obtaining that Happiness, of which your Sins may now render you incapable.*

14 Blessed are they that do his Commandments, that they may have Right to the Tree of Life, and may enter in through the Gates into the City.

*Happy [are] they, and they alone, who do his Commandments, and so prepare for his important Appearance; that they may have the Privilege [to eat] of the Tree of Life; and they shall freely enter by the Gates into the glorious City (b) I have described, and have their perpetual Abode there.* 14

15 For without are Dogs, and Sorcerers, and Whoremongers, and Murderers, and Idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a Lie.

*But, without, [are] the Unclean, who merit no better a Name than that of Dogs, as they debase their rational Faculties to the Service of detestable Lusts; and Sorcerers, and Fornicators, and Murderers, and Idolaters, who may justly be ranked together as the most abominable of Sinners; and with them, must be ranked too, every one who loveth and maketh a Lye (c), who* 15

(b) *Who do his Commandments, &c.] This Promise to all that do his Commandments, that they shall enter into the Gate of the City here described, evidently proves it to refer to that State of future Happiness, which all good Men shall finally enjoy. Compare Ver. 18, 19.*

(c) *Whosoever loves and makes a Lye.] Though Idols are called Lyes, yet as Idolaters had been mentioned before as excluded out of this new Jerusalem, I think it most natural to understand this Clause in the Sense given in the Paraphrase.*

Sect. 27. who forges Falshood, and practises it, or acts in any allowed Contradiction to the great eternal Rule of Truth and Rectitude.

## I M P R O V E M E N T.

- Ver. 10. **L**ET us be very thankful, that *the Words of this Prophecy* are not sealed from us; but that Truths, in which we have so important a Concern, are so plainly published and proclaimed. *The Time is near*, when a Seal will be set on the Characters of Men:
- Ver. 11. Blessed be GOD, he who is *now unrighteous and polluted*, may be purified and reformed, justified and saved. Adored be that Grace, that waits so long upon Sinners; but the divine Long-suffering towards them will have it's Period: Yet a little while, and *Jesus* comes, to *render to every Man according to his Works*. May we then be fixed in a World of immutable Holiness and Happiness.
- Ver. 12.
- Ver. 13. *The Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last*, has discovered to us many *evangelical Truths* in this *mysterious Book*. He hath directed our Eyes to *the Lamb that was slain, to redeem us to GOD by his Blood*; and hath shewed us the Saints in Glory, *laying down their Crowns* in his Presence, and ascribing the Praise of all their Salvation to him: But he has shewn us nothing, that is inconsistent with the Necessity of real and universal Holiness. Yea,
- Ver. 14. he himself proclaims *them alone* to be intitled to *enter the Gates of the new Jerusalem*, and to *eat of the Fruit of the Tree of Life*, who *do GOD's Commandments*. Let us not, therefore, deceive ourselves with vain Words, nor attend to any who would *sophisticate* the Word of GOD, and, fixing their View only on some detached Passages of it, enervate, by their unguarded Interpretations, it's general Scope and Meaning. Let us, in reviewing *Scripture*, observe what GOD commands and requires, and compare it with what he forbids, that we may thereby impartially judge and try ourselves. And how free soever we may be from any of the grosser Crimes here enumerated, such as *Fornication, Murther and Idolatry*, let us not allow ourselves in the Love and Practice of any Thing, inconsistent with the *immutable Rule of Righteousness and Truth*; as well knowing every allowed and continued Indulgence of that Kind, to be utterly irreconcilable with a well-grounded Hope of inheriting eternal
- Ver. 15.

eternal Life. May it please thee, O Lord, to *inscribe* all these Laws upon our Hearts; that our Joy, in the Hope and Prospect of the promised Blessedness, may rise in Proportion to our Acquaintance with thy unerring Word, and the Impartiality and Diligence with which we trace the Actions of our Lives, and the Affections of our Hearts, in Comparison with it, and reduce them to a holy Conformity to it's Precepts. Sect. 27.

---

S E C T. XXVIII.

*Our Lord Jesus Christ repeats his august Titles, and gracious Invitation, warns us of the dreadful Doom of him, who should add to, or take from his Words, and declares his Purpose of coming quickly; to which St. John adds his hearty Assent, and concludes with his Apostolical Benediction. Rev. XXII. 16. to the End.*

REVELATION XXII. 16.

I Jesus have sent mine Angel to testify unto you these Things in the Churches. I am the Root and the Offspring

REVELATION XXII. 16.

AND now to conclude the whole; Sect. 28.  
**A** be it known to every one, who reads Rev. XXII.  
these Words, and let it be seriously considered by him, that *I Jesus*, the Son of GOD, 16.  
the Alpha and Omega, the First and the Last, *have sent* my beloved Disciple and Apostle John, as my Messenger, to testify these Things to you, in the several Churches, into whose Hands this may come. And let it also be remembered, in order to add a due Weight to the Testimony, that *I am the Root and the Offspring of David*, by whose divine Power David himself was made, though, as to my human Nature, I have condescended to ally myself to him, and be born from

610 *If any one add to them, GOD will severely punish him :*

Sect. 28. from his House: I am *the bright and the Morning Star*, who wear a Glory exceeding that of the most brilliant celestial Luminary, and usher in a glorious and eternal Day. *Rev. XXII. 16.*

17 And the great Substance and Design of the Message, is, to awaken in the Minds of all to whom it comes, an earnest Desire of those Blessings, which from this Throne of my Glory I am to dispense. *And accordingly I do now anew publish the Invitation: The Spirit, with which I inspire my Servants, and the Bride, the Church to whom I am espoused, concur to say, Come; and let him, even every one that heareth, say, Come. Let every one eccho the Invitation, and let my People, in all Ages, consider it as their Duty to do it. And let him that is thirsty, come; and whosoever will, let him apply to me in my appointed Way, and receive of the Water of Life freely (a): Behold it flows in a full Current from my Throne; and, if any Man do not receive a Part and Share of it, without Money, and without Price, the Fault is only chargeable upon himself.*

18 This important Testimony I commission my Servant to bear: *And I also testify to every one that heareth the Words of the Prophecy of this Book, If any Man add unto these Things, GOD shall add unto him, and bring upon him, the most terrible of those Plagues, which are written in this Book (b):*

He

17 And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let him that heareth, say, Come. And let him that is athirst, come: And whosoever will, let him take the Water of Life freely.

18 For I testify unto every Man that heareth the Words of the Prophecy of this Book, If any Man shall add unto these Things, God shall add unto him the Plagues that are written in this Book:

(a) *Whosoever will, let him receive, &c.]* Such a Declaration of *free Grace* seems to have been wisely inserted just in the *Close* of the *sacred Canon*, to encourage the Hope of every humble Soul, that is truly desirous of the Blessings of the Gospel; and to guard against those Suspicions of divine Goodness, which some have so unhappily abetted. The Word λαμβανειω, which we render *take*, does often signify *receive*; and the Word δωρεαν, is as much as *Gratis*, which implies the *Freedom* of the Gift; and I think it may probably refer to that *celebrated Invitation, Isa. lv. 1. HO, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the Waters, and he that hath no Money; come ye, buy and eat, buy Wine and Milk without Money, and without Price.*

(b) *If any Man add to, &c.]* It is true, this particularly refers to the *Book of the*

19 And if any Man shall take away from the Words of the Book of this Prophecy, God shall take away his Part out of the Book of Life, and out of the holy City, and from the Things which are written in this Book.

He will, by any designed Addition to them, or Corruption of them, make himself highly criminal, and eternally miserable. *And* Sect. 28. Rev. XXII.

*if any one take away from the Words of the Book of this Prophecy, with a Design thereby to diminish it in any Degree, by the Omiffion of what is disagreeable to him, or others whom he may desire to please and favour, GOD will severely punish such a Sacrilege, and take away his Part out of the Book of Life, and out of the holy City, and the glorious Things, even the invaluable Blessings, which are written and described in the preceding Passages of this Book (c).* 19.

20 He which testifieth these Things, saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus.

*He who testifies these important Things, says, and leaves it as his parting Warning with all that read them, Surely I come quickly. My Soul, while I write it, replies, and let every Reader reply with me, from his Heart, Amen, even so, come, Lord Jesus; come surely, and quickly, as thou hast said; for all our highest and* 20

*the Revelation; but the Parity of Reason extending to other Books, I doubt not the Terror of the Threatening does so too. GOD forbid, we should imagine every honestly mistaken Criticism, where there is a Question of receiving or excluding any particular Verse, should affect a Man's Salvation, in Consequence of what is here said. But I think such a Passage should make Men very cautious, that they may not rashly incur any Censure on this Account; though undoubtedly the Terror of the Threatening is planted against any designed Erasure or Addition. I shall conclude this Note with declaring, that I have endeavoured to carry on my Commentary on the sacred Books with this Thought in my View, and that I have neither designedly attempted to establish any Thing, which did not appear to me to be a Doctrine of Scripture, nor drop any Thing which did appear so. And whereinaever, through human Infirmary, and the want of a closer and more accurate Attention, I have failed either Way, I commit myself to the Mercy of that Redeemer, whose Word it is, and whose Interest I have faithfully endeavoured to serve.*

(c) *GOD will take away his Part, &c.] Since GOD threatens the Plagues written in this Book, and the Loss of a Part in the holy City, as what might be the Portion of those who should presume to corrupt it, and such Corruption might happen in any Age of the Church; I think it very evident, that the holy City, spoken of in the preceding Chapter, is a Representation of the Heavenly State to be enjoyed by all good Men, how applicable soever it may seem to any glorious Scene preceding the final Judgment: And that Rev. xx. 11, &c. refers to the universal Judgment.*

Sect. 28. and sublimest Hopes depend upon the blessed and glorious Day of thy Appearance.

Rev. XXII. In the mean Time, let the Churches to whom these Messages are especially directed and inscribed, receive my most affectionate Wishes, my most solemn Benediction, which I express in this one ardent Prayer: *May the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, even all the invaluable Effects of his Favour, and above all, the abundant Communications of his Spirit, [be] with you all, and with all Christians, to whom these Words may come, unto the End of the World. Amen.*

21 The Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

### I M P R O V E M E N T.

Ver. 16.

**H**OW sweetly and delightfully does the *Canon of Scripture* conclude, leaving, as it were, the *Musick of Heaven* upon the attentive Ear. "O thou blessed *Root and Offspring of David*, O thou *bright and Morning Star*, impress on all our Hearts these thy gracious Words, which thou hast condescended to speak from the *Throne of thy Glory*; thereby, as it were, to aid the Weakness of our Faith, in those, which thou didst deliver, while dwelling in mortal Flesh." Then did the compassionate Saviour proclaim, from an Eminence in the *Temple*, to a crowded Assembly on a Day of peculiar Solemnity, *If any Man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink: (John vii. 37.)* And now behold he makes the same Proclamation from his *celestial Temple*; He points, as it were, to the Fountain-Head of Happiness, to the *Springs of the Water of Life*, near the Throne of God, and says, *Whoever will, let him come, let him take, let him freely take of this living Water: Yea, and not content with speaking this Language by his Spirit only, he calls on his Bride, to lift up her melodious Voice, to publish this kind Invitation; He calls on every one that hears it, to echo it back, as if the Excess of his Goodness overcame him, as if it were necessary to his own Happiness, that Men should accept of their own Salvation.*

Ver. 17.

With

With what sacred Observance should *these Books* be guarded, Sect. 28.  
 which contain a Message of such infinite Importance! Of what Ver. 18.  
 dreadful *Curses* are they worthy, who presume to *add* to what is al-  
 ready *perfect*, or to *take away* from that which is, in every Part, *di-*  
*vine*. I trust none of us shall ever *presumptuously* attempt to do it:  
 And may we be preserved from those *mistaken* Interpretations, in  
 Consequence of which we should teach the World, as by his Au-  
 thority, any Thing which *he* has not dictated, or deny any Thing Ver. 19.  
 which carries along with it the Stamp of such an Authority. "Have  
 Pity, O Lord, upon our *Weakness*; impute not *Prejudices*, which  
 thou knowest we do not allow; and give us a greater *Penetration of*  
*Mind*, to understand the true Sense of thy Word; a *Simplicity of*  
*Heart*, to receive it; an *Integrity*, so far as the Duty of our Places  
 require, to declare it; and a *Zeal* to inculcate and defend it."

And while we are thus employed, or employed in any *other Ser-*  
*vices* which Providence has assigned us, in our respective Stations  
 and Circumstances of Life; whatever Labours may exercise us, what-  
 ever Difficulties may surround us, whatever Sorrows may depress  
 us, let us with Pleasure hear our Lord proclaiming, *Behold I come* Ver. 20.  
*quickly*; I come, to put a Period to the Labour and Suffering of my  
 Servants; I come, and *my Reward of Grace is with me, to recompense*  
 with royal Bounty, *every Work of Faith and Labour of Love*; I  
 come, to receive my faithful persevering People to myself, to dwell  
 for ever in that blissful World, where the sacred Volume, which con-  
 tains the important Discoveries of my Will, shall be no more neces-  
 sary; but Knowledge, and Holiness, and Joy, shall be poured in up-  
 on their Souls in a more immediate, in a nobler and more effectual  
 Manner. *Amen, Even so come Lord Jesus*. Hasten the blessed Hour  
 to us, and to *all thy Churches*, as far as it may consist with thy wise  
 and holy Counsels. And, in the mean Time, may thy *Grace be* Ver. 21.  
*with us*, to keep alive the Remembrance of thy Love, and the Ex-  
 pectation of thy coming, in our Hearts, and to animate us to a Tem-  
 per and Conduct which may suit the Blessings we have already re-  
 ceived, and the nobler Felicity, after which thou hast taught us to as-  
 pire. *Amen and Amen*.

The END of the FAMILY EXPOSITOR.





# A N I N D E X

## O F T H E

### GREEK Words and Phrases explained in the NOTES of the three last Volumes.

#### A

- Εἰ τις αγαθος. Eph. 4. 29. *Vol. v. pag. 182. note p.*  
 ἀγαπή. 1 Cor. 13. 1. iv. 354. *b.*  
 ἀγαπᾷς. Jud. 12. vi. 410. *a.*  
 ἀγωνά. Col. 3. 8. v. 326. *b.*  
 τρεχέει ἀδῆλως. 1 Cor. 9. 26. iv. 309. *k.*  
 ἀδῆς. Rev. 1. 18. vi. 438. *b.*  
 ἀδοκίμοι. 2 Cor. 13. 5. iv. 534. *d.*  
 ἀδοκίμος. 1 Cor. 9. 27. iv. 311. *n.*  
 εἰς ἀβηθῶσιν ἀμαρτίας. Heb. 9. 26. vi. 82. *b.*  
 ἀδελφός. Heb. 10. 32. vi. 98. *b.*  
 αἰρεσις. 1 Cor. 11. 19. iv. 334. *b.*  
 αἰδησεῖ. Phil. 1. 10. v. 335. *g.*  
 αἰχρολογία. Col. 3. 8. v. 326. *b.*  
 αἰώνιος. 1 Cor. 2. 6. iv. 229. *f.* — Gal. 1. 4. v. 11. *d.*  
 εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα. 1 Cor. 8. 13. iv. 297. *f.*  
 εἰς τὰς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰῶνων. Rev. 20. 10. vi. 586. *g.*  
 ἀκαρπός. Eph. 5. 11. v. 190. *k.*  
 ἀκαταστάσις. 2 Cor. 6. 5. iv. 471. *c.*  
 ἀλαζονεία τε β.ε. 1 John 2. 16. vi. 534. *e.*  
 σὺ τῇ ἀληθείᾳ. 3 John 3. vi. 392. *c.*  
 ἀλλα, *sc.* Rom. 6. 5. iv. 72. *e.*  
 — *nevertheless.* Phil. 2. 6. v. 249. *b.*  
 εἰτίνα εἰς ἀλληγορημένα. Gal. 4. 24. v. 72. *c.*  
 ἀλλοτριοεπισκόπος. 1 Pet. 4. 15. vi. 265. *e.*  
 ἀμαρτία. Rom. 8. 3. iv. 91. *uv.*  
 ἀμεταμέλητος. Rom. 8. 19. iv. 100. *a.*  
 ἀταρῆνωσκα. 2 Cor. 1. 13. iv. 428. *a.* — Eph. 3. 4. v. 152. *c.*  
 ἀναγνῆ. 2 Cor. 6. 4. iv. 471. *b.*  
 ἀναγνῆ φερεδαί. Heb. 9. 16. vi. 79. *c.*  
 ἀναζωπυρέει. 2 Tim. 1. 6. v. 510. *a.*  
 ἀναθεμα μαρνανάδα. 1 Cor. 16. 22. iv. 409. *e.*  
 ἀνακεφαλαιωσάδαί. Eph. 1. 10. v. 125. *i.*  
 ἀναλογία πίστεως. Rom. 12. 6. iv. 151. *f.*  
 ἀναλογισάδε. Heb. 12. 3. vi. 119. *a.*  
 ἀναλυσαι. Phil. 1. 23. v. 242. *b.*  
 ἀνανηλάσιν. 2 Tim. 2. 26. v. 528. *c.*  
 ἀναπαυσον. Philem. 20. v. 596. *e.*  
 ἐξ ἀναστάσεως νεκρῶν. Rom. 1. 4. iv. 11. *d.*  
 ἀνδρίζεθε. 1 Cor. 16. 13. iv. 406. *a.*  
 ἀνεκοίε. Gal. 5. 7. v. 80. *c.*  
 ἀνδρωπίνος. 1 Cor. 10. 13. iv. 316. *i.*  
 κατὰ ἀνδρωπῶν. 1 Cor. 15. 32. iv. 390. *k.*  
 ἀνοητοί. Rom. 1. 14. iv. 15. *c.*  
 ἀνομία. 1 John 3. 4. vi. 345. *e.*  
 ἀνοχη. Rom. 2. 4. iv. 27. *c.*  
 ἀνίτατε, *answerably to this.* Eph. 5. 31. v. 204. *d.*  
 ἀνίκημενοι. 1 Cor. 16. 9. iv. 403. *f.*  
 ἀνίτασάμενος. Rom. 13. 2. iv. 161. *b.*  
 ἀπειπαμέθα. 2 Cor. 4. 2. iv. 450. *b.*  
 ἀπερίσπασως. 1 Cor. 3. 35. iv. 290. *i.*  
 εἰ ἀπίστειμεν. 2 Tim. 2. 13. v. 522. *d.*  
 ἀπο, *after the Example of.* Rom. 9. 3. iv. 112. *b.*  
 ταῖς ἀμαρτίαις ἀπογενομενοί. 1 Pet. 2. 24. vi. 243. *b.*  
 ἀποκαρδοκία. Rom. 8. 19. iv. 100. *a.*  
 ἀποτελεθεῖσα. Jam. 1. 15. vi. 170. *i.*  
 ἀπορρητα. Eph. 5. 12. v. 291. *l.*  
 ἀποτομῶς. Tit. 1. 13. v. 565. *c.*  
 ἀρα, *indeed.* Rom. 10. 19. iv. 132. *c.*  
 ἀρα εν & ἀρα νυν. Rom. 7. 25. 8. 1. iv. 89. *p.*  
 ἀρετής. 2 Pet. 1. 3. vi. 284. *c.*  
 ἀρπασμον ἠγησάτο. Phil. 2. 6. v. 249. *b.*  
 υἱὸν ἀρρενα. Rev. 12. 5. vi. 524. *b.*  
 ἀρχὴν εαυτῶν. Jud. 6. vi. 406. *d.*  
 ἀσπονδοί. 2 Tim. 3. 3. v. 631. *b.*  
 ἀσῶτια. Eph. 5. 18. v. 106. *c.*  
 ἀτακτοί. 1 Theff. 4. 15. v. 387. *b.*  
 ἀυθαδῆ. Tit. 1. 7. v. 562. *f.*  
 ἀφθαρσία. Eph. 6. 24. v. 221. *n.*

*αφθαρσιαν.*

αφορᾶσαν. 2 Tim. 1. 10. v. 512. *c.*  
αφορῶντες. Heb. 12. 2. vi. 116. *p.*

δοκιμη. Rom. 5. 4. iv. 60. *d.*  
δοκω εχεν. 1 Cor. 7. 40. iv. 291. *b.*  
δωρεαν. Rev. 22. 17. vi. 610. *a.*

## B.

βλεται. 1 Cor. 12. 11. iv. 346. *i.*  
βραβειον. Phil. 3. 14. v. 269. *m.*  
βραβευετω. Col. 3. 15. v. 328. *d.*  
βροχον υμιν επιβαλω. 1 Cor. 7. 35. iv. 289. *g.*  
βρωσεως μιας. Heb. 12. 16. vi. 135. *c.*  
βυθος. 2 Cor. 11. 25. iv. 516. *d.*

## Γ.

γαρ, *a* Copulative. 1 Cor. 15. 44. iv. 394. *d.*  
— *an Expletive.* Rom. 2. 25. iv. 35. *f.* —  
Rom. 6. 19. iv. 77. *b.*  
— *indeed.* Gal. 1. 10. v. 14. *k.*  
— *Isay.* Gal. 4. 25. v. 72. *a.*  
— *nevertbeless.* 2 Cor. 12. 1. iv. 522. *a.*  
— *moreover.* Rom. 9. 17. iv. 118. *a.*  
— *που.* Rom. 8. 6. iv. 94. *a.* — Rom. 5.  
7. iv. 62. *f.* — Gal. 2. 18. v. 35. *d.*  
— *therefore.* 1 Cor. 11. 26. iv. 337. *b.*  
εις πασας τας γενεας τε αιωνος των αιωνων. Eph.  
3. 21. v. 163. *c.*  
γινωσκω. Rom. 6. 15. iv. 87. *i.* — 1 Cor. 2. 2.  
iv. 228. *b.*  
γνωσεως της δοξης Ιησου. 2 Cor. 4. 6. iv. 452. *f.*  
πηλικους γραμμασι. Gal. 6. 11. v. 102. *a.*  
γυμνασια. 1 Tim. 4. 8. v. 469. *c.*

## Δ.

δαμαζεται. Jam. 3. 7. vi. 192. *g.*  
δεδικαιωται. Rom. 6. 7. iv. 72. *g.*  
δεισει. Phil. 4. 6. v. 278. *d.*  
δια, *by.* 2 Pet. 1. 3. vi. 284. *c.*  
δια δοξης. 2 Cor. 3. 11. iv. 446. *b.*  
δια πυρος. 1 Cor. 3. 15. iv. 242. *d.*  
δια τω, *therefore.* Rom. 5. 12. iv. 65. *b.*  
δια τε Ιησου κοιμηθεις. 1 Theff. 4. 14. v. 377. *c.*  
διαβολη. 1 Tim. 3. 6. v. 458. *g.*  
τε διαθεμεν. Heb. 9. 16. vi. 79. *c.*  
διαθηκη. Heb. 9. 15. vi. 78. *a.*  
διακονια. Rom. 12. 7. iv. 152. *g.*  
διακρινομεν. 1 Cor. 11. 31. iv. 339. *o.*  
διαλογισμοις. Rom. 1. 21. iv. 20. *k.*  
διανοια. Eph. 4. 18. v. 177. *b.*  
διανοιων. Eph. 2. 3. v. 136. *f.*  
διδασκαλος. Jam. 3. 1. vi. 190. *a.*  
μακεδονια γαρ διερχομαι. 1 Cor. 16. 5. iv. 402. *r.*  
δικαιωματια. Rev. 19. 8. vi. 576. *a.*  
διχοσασια. Gal. 5. 20. v. 89. *d.*  
δικαίει. 1 Cor. 14. 1. iv. 361. *a.*  
δογμα. Col. 2. 14. v. 315. *g.*  
δοκιμαζεις τα διαφορονηα. Rom. 2. 18. iv. 33. *b.*  
δοκιμαζειτε. 2 Cor. 13. 5. iv. 534. *d.*

## E.

εβασκαυε. Gal. 3. 1. v. 39. *a.*  
εδειγματισεν. Col. 2. 15. v. 316. *b.*  
εδοκιμασαν. Rom. 1. 28. iv. 23. *p.*  
εδραιωμα. 1 Tim. 3. 15. v. 463. *b.*  
εθεοσαμεθα. 1 John 1. 1. vi. 324. *a.*  
ει με. Rev. 9. 4. vi. 501. *b.* — 21. 27. vi.  
600. *g.*  
ειγε, *since.* Eph. 3. 2. v. 152. *b.* — 4. 21. v.  
178. *d.*  
εικονα. Heb. 10. 1. vi. 85. *a.*  
ειπερ, *since.* 1 Pet. 2. 3. vi. 235. *b.*  
εις το, *as.* Heb. 11. 3. vi. 103. *d.*  
εις τον καιρον τον ενεσηκοτα. Heb. 9. 9. vi. 73. *e.*  
ειτα, *now if.* Heb. 12. 9. vi. 129. *f.*  
ει πισεως, *by.* Rom. 1. 17. iv. 18. *c.* — 3. 30.  
iv. 48. *i.*  
εκ τε θηρικ. Rev. 15. 2. vi. 546. *b.*  
εγκαιεν. 2 Cor. 4. 1. iv. 450. *a.*  
εκλος ει μη. 1 Cor. 15. 2. iv. 379. *c.*  
εκλενωσ. 1 Pet. 1. 22. vi. 232. *d.*  
το ελαφρον της θλιψεως. 2 Cor. 4. 17. iv. 458. *a.*  
ελαχιστοτερω. Eph. 3. 8. v. 154. *f.*  
ελεγχος. Heb. 11. 1. vi. 102. *b.*  
εμφυτον λογον. Jam. 1. 21. vi. 175. *f.*  
εν υμιν, *among you.* Rom. 1. 12. iv. 14. *a.*  
εν τοις επυρανιοις. Eph. 1. 3. v. 121. *d.*  
εν τω λεγεσθαι. Heb. 3. 15. vi. 30. *a.*  
ενδειγμα. 2 Theff. 1. 5. v. 402. *a.*  
ενδημιβεις. 2 Cor. 5. 6. iv. 461. *f.*  
ενεργηματα δυναμεων. 1 Cor. 12. 10. iv. 345. *g.*  
ενεργημενη. Jam. 5. 16. vi. 211. *g.*  
ενεργηβιος εν τοις υιοις της απειθειας. Eph. 2. 2.  
v. 135. *d.*  
δι αγαπης ενεργημενη. Gal. 5. 6. v. 80. *b.*  
ενοικισω εν αιλοις. 2 Cor. 6. 16. iv. 477. *c.*  
εντυγχανεν υπερ αγιων. Rom. 8. 27. iv. 65. *d.*  
εξαγοραζομαι. Eph. 5. 16. v. 195. *a.*  
εξελομενος η δελεαζομενος. Jam. 1. 14. vi. 170. *b.*  
εξηλθον μηδεν λαμβανουεις απο των εθνων. 3 John  
7. vi. 393. *f.*  
εξον. 2 Cor. 12. 4. iv. 523. *c.*  
εξουσια. Rom. 13. 2. iv. 161. *c.*  
εξουσιας υμων. 1 Cor. 9. 12. iv. 303. *g.*  
επερχομεναις. Jam. 5. 1. vi. 204. *b.*  
επερωτημα. 1 Pet. 3. 21. vi. 257. *c.*  
επι, *upon.* Eph. 6. 16. v. 218. *f.*  
επιλυσεως. 2 Pet. 1. 20. vi. 292. *c.*  
επισκεπεισθαι. Jam. 1. 25. vi. 177. *m.*  
επισκηναση. 2 Cor. 12. 9. iv. 525. *g.*  
επισπαδω. 1 Cor. 7. 18. iv. 282. *e.*  
επισυσασις. 2 Cor. 11. 28. iv. 518. *i.*  
επιχορηγησατε. 2 Pet. 1. 5. vi. 285. *g.*  
επλευνησησμεν. 2 Cor. 7. 2. iv. 479. *a.*  
ως επος ειπειν. Heb. 7. 8. vi. 57. *f.*

ΕΠΟΤΙΣΘΑ.

ἐπόρτια. 1 Cor. 3. 2. iv. 236. *b.*  
 δι' εσοπτρῶν. 1 Cor. 13. 12. iv. 359. *i.*  
 τὰς ἀγγελίας—οἱ ἐσηκασί. Rev. 8. 2. vi. 494. *b.*  
 ἐχάτοι. 1 Cor. 4. 9. iv. 252. *b.*  
 ἐτυμπαυδιῶσαν. Heb. 11. 35. vi. 120. *d.*  
 εὐδοκία. 2 Theff. 1. 11. v. 405. *c.*  
 μετ' εὐδοκίας. Phil. 2. 13. v. 253. *b.*  
 οἱ τῆς εὐεργεσίας ἀντιλαμβανόμενοι. 1 Tim. vi.  
 1. v. 487. *i.*  
 εὐηγγελισμένοι. Heb. 4. 2. vi. 32. *f.*  
 ὄρη τῆς εὐθυνησῆος. Jam. 3. 4. vi. 191. *d.*  
 εὐλογία. Rom. 16. 18. iv. 197. *a.*  
 ἐπερίσταν ἀμαρτιῶν. Heb. 12. 1. vi. 116. *o.*  
 εὐρισκῶ. Rom. 4. 1. iv. 50. *a.*  
 εὐχρημονῶς. Rom. 13. 13. iv. 165. *i.*  
 εὐτραπέλια. Eph. 5. 4. v. 188. *g.*  
 ἐφ' ᾧ πάντες ἠμαρτον, unto which. Rom. 5. 12.  
 iv. 65. *d.*

Z.

ζῆλεῖτε τὰ χαρίσματα τὰ κρείττονα. 1 Cor. 12.  
 31. iv. 352. *b.*  
 ζῶα. Rev. 4. 6. vi. 467. *e.*  
 ζῶγραυ. 2 Tim. 2. 26. v. 528. *c.*

H.

ἠδῆ, εὐεη. 1 Cor. 6. 7. iv. 268. *e.*  
 ἠκυσάτε τὴν οἰκονομίαν. Eph. 3. 2. v. 152. *b.*

Θ.

θειότης. Rom. 1. 20. iv. 20. *g.*  
 το θελεν. 2 Cor. 8. 10. iv. 488. *d.*  
 θεληματῆα. Eph. 2. 3. v. 136. *f.*  
 θελων. Col. 2. 18. v. 317. *k.*  
 τὰ πρὸς τὸν θεον. Rom. 15. 17. iv. 184. *e.*  
 θλιψίς. 2 Cor. 6. 4. iv. 471. *b.*  
 θρησκεία. Jam. 1. 27. vi. 177. *b.*  
 θριαμβευσῆσι. 2 Cor. 2. 14. iv. 440. *a.*  
 θυμος. Rom. 2. 9. iv. 29. *e.*

I.

ιδιωτης. 2 Cor. 11. 6. iv. 509. *e.*  
 ἰσα θεω. Phil. 2. 6. v. 249. *c.*

K.

κἀγὼ ὡς υμεῖς. Gal. 4. 12. v. 64. *g.*

καθαρά καὶ ἀμικτός. Jam. 1. 27. vi. 177. *k.*  
 καθαρματῆα. 1 Cor. 4. 13. iv. 355. *e.*  
 κατ' ἑν. 1 Cor. 6. 4. iv. 267. *c.*  
 καθίστασαι. Jam. 4. 4. vi. 199. *f.*  
 και, particularly. Eph. 6. 19. v. 219. *i.*  
 κακία. } Rom. 1. 29. iv. 23. *r.*  
 κακοηθία. }  
 καλεν. 1 Cor. 10. 27. iv. 323. *b.*  
 καπηλευσῆες. 2 Cor. 3. 17. iv. 440. *b.*  
 καρδία. Eph. 4. 18. v. 177. *b.*  
 κατα, after the example of. Rom. 15. 5. iv.  
 181. *b.*

— for. Tit. 1. 1. v. 559. *a.*  
 — θεον. Rom. 8. 27. iv. 103. *g.*  
 — καιρον, seasonably. Rom. 5. 6. iv. 60. *e.*  
 καταλεγεσθω. 1 Tim. 5. 9. v. 477. *b.*  
 καταλλαγη. Rom. 5. 11. iv. 64. *a.*  
 εἰ πως κατανήσω. Phil. 3. 11. v. 267. *h.*  
 καταπιη. 1 Pet. 5. 8. vi. 272. *b.*  
 καταργεομαι. 1 Cor. 15. 24. iv. 386. *f.*  
 καταργηθη. Rom. 6. 6. iv. 72. *f.*  
 καταργηση. Heb. 2. 14. v. 21. *h.*  
 καταρτισιν. 2 Cor. 13. 9. iv. 535. *d.*  
 κατασφηνισσῶσι. 1 Tim. 5. 9. v. 498. *k.*  
 καταχθονιοι. Phil. 2. 10. v. 251. *e.*  
 κατευαῖνι, like. Rom. 4. 17. iv. 56. *c.*  
 οὐ κατεναρῆσα ἕδενος. 2 Cor. 11. 9. iv. 510. *f.*  
 κατεργαζομαι. Rom. 7. 8. iv. 85. *d.*  
 κατεχετε. 1 Cor. 15. 2. iv. 379. *b.*  
 κατοπριζόμενοι. 2 Cor. 3. 18. iv. 448. *e.*  
 καυχημα. Gal. 6. 4. v. 97. *c.*  
 κείται. 1 Tim. 1. 9. v. 440. *e.*  
 ο κοσμος ολος εν ποιηρω κεται. 1 John 5. 19. vi.  
 375. *e.*  
 κηρξας. 1 Cor. 9. 27. iv. 310. *n.*  
 κοινωνια εις το ευαγγελιον. Phil. 1. 5. v. 233. *d.*  
 κραταιαδε. 1 Cor. 16. 13. iv. 406. *a.*  
 κρείττονος αναστασεως. Heb. 11. 35. vi. 113. *f.*  
 κριμα. 1 Cor. 11. 29. iv. 339. *n.* — Jam. 3.  
 1. vi. 190. *a.*  
 κτηνων. Cor. 15. 39. iv. 393. *c.*  
 κτισις. Rom. 8. 19. iv. 100. *a.*  
 κυβεια. Eph. 4. 14. v. 173. *n.*  
 κωμοι. Gal. 5. 21. v. 90. *f.*

Λ.

λαμβάνετω. Rev. 22. 17. vi. 610. *a.*  
 λαμβανω. Rom. 5. 17. iv. 67. *b.*  
 λατρευω. Rev. 22. 3. vi. 602. *b.*  
 λεγεν. Rom. 12. 3. iv. 150. *d.*  
 λειτουργια. 2 Cor. 9. 10. iv. 497. *c.*  
 λιμος. Rom. 8. 35. iv. 109. *b.*  
 λογισασθαι τι ως εξ εαυτων. 2 Cor. 3. 5. iv.  
 442. *d.*  
 λυτρον. Tit. 3. 5. v. 577. *d.*  
 λυση. 1 John 3. 8. vi. 346. *i.*

4 I

M.

## M.

μακαρισμός υμῶν. Gal. 4. 15. v. 66. *i.*  
μακροθυμία. Rom. 2. 4. iv. 27. *c.*  
τὴ μεγάλη θεὸς ἡ σωτήριος ἡμῶν. Tit. 2. 13. v. 572. *b.*  
μεθεύει. 1 Cor. 11. 21. iv. 335. *e.*  
τὴ μελλοντος. Rom. v. 14. iv. 66. *g.*  
μεμνημαί. Phil. 4. 12. v. 283. *b.*  
μεριδία κληρῶν. Col. 1. 12. v. 299. *k.*  
μεριμνῶν. 1 Pet. 5. 7. vi. 272. *f.*  
μετὰ τὸν νόμον. *beyon'd.* Heb. 7. 28. vi. 64. *e.*  
εἰ ἢ μετεμέλομέν. 2 Cor. 7. 8. iv. 481. *c.*  
μετριοπαθεῖν. Heb. 5. 2. vi. 38. *f.*  
κατὰ μίαν σαββάτων. 1 Cor. 16. 2. iv. 401. *a.*  
μίδου. Rom. 4. 4. iv. 51. *c.*  
μορφῶσις. Rom. 2. 20. iv. 33. *d.*  
μυκᾶται. Rev. 10. 3. vi. 509. *b.*

## N.

νηπιάζετε. 1 Cor. 14. 20. iv. 269. *a.*  
ἐξ ἔργων νόμου. Rom. 3. 20. iv. 45. *b.*  
νοσμενα. Rom. 1. 20. iv. 19. *f.*  
νοσφίζεν. Tit. 2. 10. v. 571. *a.*  
νοσῶν. 1 Tim. 6. 4. v. 490. *c.*  
νῆς. Eph. 4. 18. v. 177. *b.*—*ib. ver.* 23. 179. *b.*

## Ξ.

ξενίζονται. 1 Pet. 4. 4. vi. 259. *i.*

## O.

οἰκμοί τῆς θεῶν. Eph. 2. 19. v. 148. *k.*  
οἰκῆρος. Tit. 2. 5. v. 568. *d.*  
ολοκληρῶν. Theff. 5. 23. v. 390. *g.*  
τὸν ὁμοῖον τῆς τρεῶν. Jud. 7. vi. 406. *e.*  
ὁ ὁμολογεῖ Ἰησοῦ χριστοῦ ἐν σαρκὶ ἐληλυθότα. 1 John 4. 2. vi. 355. *b.*  
ὄπλα. Rom. 6. 13. iv. 74. *k.*  
ὄργη. Rom. 2. 9. iv. 29. *e.*  
ὄρει ἡπλαφωμένῳ. Heb. 12. 18. vi. 136. *f.*  
ὄρδοτομνία. 2 Tim. 2. 15. v. 523. *f.*  
ὄριδένιος. Rom. 1. 4. iv. 10. *b.*  
ὄρμηματι βληθήσεται. Rev. 18. 21. vi. 571. *f.*  
οσιοτῆς τῆς ἀληθείας. Eph. 4. 24. v. 180. *i.*  
οὐκ ἀν, not by any means. 1 Cor. 2. 8. iv. 230. *i.*

## Π.

παιδαγωγός. Gal. 3. 25. v. 56. *i.*  
παιδεία ἢ γένησια. Eph. 6. 4. v. 209. *c.*  
πανοπλία. Eph. 6. 11. v. 215. *a.*  
πανηγυρεῖ. Heb. 12. 23. vi. 137. *i.*  
ἐν πανουργίᾳ πρὸς τῆς μεθοδεῖαν τῆς πλάτης. Eph. 4. 14. v. 173. *n.*  
παντοκράτωρ. Rev. 1. 7. vi. 431. *e.*  
πανῶν, on the whole. 1 Cor. 9. 10. iv. 302. *f.*  
παραβολή. Heb. 11. 19. vi. 112. *b.*  
παραθήκη. 2 Tim. 1. 12. v. 513. *f.*  
παρακληθῶσιν. Col. 2. 2. v. 309. *e.*  
παρακλύψαι. 1 Pet. 1. 12. vi. 226. *b.*  
παρακλύψας. Jam. 1. 25. vi. 176. *b.*  
παραλογίζομενοι. Jam. 1. 22. vi. 175. *g.*  
παρασησαι. Rom. 12. 1. iv. 150. *b.*  
παρασηληθε. Rom. 5. 20. iv. 68. *l.*  
πατριδία. Heb. 11. 16. vi. 109. *n.*  
πειθῶ. Gal. 1. 10. v. 14. *i.*  
πεποιημένων. Heb. 12. 27. vi. 140. *g.*  
περὶ πάντων. 3 John 2. vi. 392. *b.*  
περιεπειραν. 1 Tim. 6. 10. v. 492. *e.*  
περιπατεῖ. 1 Pet. 5. 8. vi. 272. *b.*  
περιποισεως. Eph. 1. 14. v. 127. *o.*  
περιφρηματα. 1 Cor. 4. 13. iv. 255. *e.*  
περπερος. 1 Cor. 13. 4. iv. 356. *f.*  
διὰ τῆς ἐνεργείας τῆς ἐνεργείας. Col. 2. 12. v. 315. *f.*  
πίσις. Gal. 5. 22. v. 91. *g.*  
πλεονα θυσιαν. Heb. 11. 4. vi. 104. *e.*  
πλεονεξία. Eph. 5. 3. v. 188. *f.*—2 Cor. 9. 5. iv. 496. *a.*  
πληροφορεῖσθαι. Rom. 14. 5. iv. 170. *e.*  
πληροφορηθῆ. 2 Tim. 4. 17. v. 545. *g.*  
πληρωμα. Eph. 1. 23. v. 132. *d.*  
ἐν αὐτῷ παν τὸ πληρωμα κατοικησαι. Col. 1. 19. v. 303. *e.*  
εἰς πάντα πλετον τῆς πληροφορίας τῆς συνεσεως. Col. 2. 2. v. 310. *f.*  
πνευμα. Eph. 4. 23. v. 179. *b.*  
τὰ πνευματικὰ τῆς ποιησίας ἐν τοῖς ἐπυρανοῖς. Eph. 6. 12. v. 216. *c.*  
κατὰ τὸν ἀρχοῦν — τὴ πνευματικός. Eph. 2. 2. v. 135. *d.*  
ποιεῖν. 1 Cor. 11. 24. iv. 337. *g.*  
πολιτευσθε. Phil. 1. 27. v. 243. *f.*  
πολλῶ μαλλον κρείων. Phil. 1. 23. v. 243. *c.*  
πονηρία. Rom. 1. 29. iv. 23. *r.*  
πορνεία. 1 Cor. 4. 18. iv. 274. *b.*  
πορνοί. 1 Cor. 5. 9. iv. 262. *g.*  
ποταμων. 2 Cor. 11. 26. iv. 516. *e.*  
πρεσβύτερος. 1 Tim. 5. 1. v. 475. *a.*  
προγεγραμμένοι. Jud. 4. vi. 405. *b.*  
προεθετο. Rom. 3. 25. iv. 46. *f.*  
προεφητευσσε τῆσις. Jud. 14. vi. 412. *f.*

πρωγυμενοι

προηγουμένοι ἀλλήλους τῆ τιμῆ. Rom. 12. 10.  
iv. 153. *k.*  
οἷς προητοιμάσεν. Eph. 2. 10. v. 140. *l.*  
προθυμον. Rom. 1. 15. iv. 15. *d.*  
προκατηγγελημένον. 2 Cor. 9. 5. iv. 496. *a.*  
προϊσταμένους. 1 Theff. 5. 12. v. 386. *a.*  
προσαγωγή. Rom. 5. 2. iv. 60. *b.* — Eph. 2.  
18. v. 148. *i.*  
προσερχεται. 1 Tim. 6. 3. v. 490. *a.*  
προσερχομενον. Heb. 11. 6. vi. 105. *b.*  
προσφιλι. Phil. 4. 8. v. 279. *f.*  
προσφορα. Eph. 5. 2. v. 187. *d.*  
προσώπω. 2 Cor. 4. 6. iv. 452. *g.*  
προστοχος πασης κτισεως. Col. 1. 15. v.  
302. *b.*  
ψαιομεν. Jam. 3. 2. vi. 190. *b.*  
πυρεμαι. 2 Cor. 11. 29. iv. 519. *k.*  
πυρωσις. 1 Pet. 4. 12. vi. 264. *c.*

Σ.

σαλευομένων. Heb. 12. 27. vi. 140. *p.*  
σαπρος. Eph. 4. 29. v. 182. *o.*  
κατα σαρκά κ' κατα πνευμα. Rom. 1. 3, 4.  
iv. 11. *c.*  
σεβασμα. 2 Theff. 2. 4. v. 409. *d.*  
σιγατω. 1 Cor. 14. 30. iv. 373. *b.*  
σκαιδαλον. Rom. 14. 13. iv. 174. *b.*  
σκιαν. Heb. 10. 1. vi. 85. *a.*  
σκιωμαχια. 1 Cor. 9. 26. iv. 310. *b.*  
σκοπησιων. 2 Cor. 4. 18. iv. 459. *b.*  
σοφοι. Rom. 1. 14. iv. 15. *c.*  
σπαταλωσα. 1 Tim. 5. 6. v. 476. *d.*  
σπενδομαι. Phil. 2. 17. v. 256. *a.*  
στεναζετε. Jam. 5. 9. vi. 208. *a.*  
στενοχωρια. Rom. 2. 9. iv. 29. *e.* — 2 Cor.  
6. 4. iv. 471. *b.*  
στενοχωρημενοι. 2 Cor. 4. 8. iv. 454. *c.*  
στιγματα. Gal. 6. 17. v. 105. *e.*  
στριψις. Rev. 18. 3. vi. 567. *b.*  
συγκρινοεις. 1 Cor. 2. 15. iv. 232. *n.*  
συζυγε γησιε. Phil. 4. 3. v. 276. *a.*  
συμφυτοι. Rom. 6. 5. iv. 72. *e.*  
συμφυχοι, το εν φρονεσις. Phil. 2. 2. v. 248. *a.*  
συναγωνισαδαι. Rom. 15. 30. iv. 189. *f.*  
συναντιλαμβανεται. Rom. 8. 26. iv. 103. *e.*  
συνδελος σε κ' των αδελφων σε. Rev. 19. 10. vi.  
577. *b.*  
συνεργοι θεου. 1 Cor. 3. 9. iv. 238. *f.*  
συνεσλημενοι. 1 Cor. 7. 29. iv. 287. *c.*  
συνεχει. 2 Cor. 5. 14. iv. 465. *c.*  
συνεχομαι εκ των δυο. Phil. 1. 23. v. 242. *b.*  
συνοχη. 2 Cor. 2. 4. iv. 435. *d.*  
συμβουλεια αιωνων. Heb. 9. 26. vi. 82. *g.*  
σφραγισ. 2 Tim. 2. 19. v. 526. *a.*  
σχημα παραχει. 1 Cor. 7. 31. iv. 288. *d.*  
σωματα. Rev. 18. 13. vi. 569. *c.*

Τ.

ταπεινοφροσυνη. Col. 2. 18. v. 317. *k.*  
ταπεινωσις. Jam. 1. 10. vi. 169. *f.*  
ταρταρωσας. 2 Pet. 2. 4. vi. 296. *e.*  
ταχεως. 1 Tim. v. 22. v. 485. *g.*  
τελειοις. 1 Cor. 14. 20. iv. 369. *a.*  
τελη αιωνων. 1 Cor. 10. 11. iv. 316. *b.*  
τελος. Rom. 10. 4. iv. 128. *b.*  
τεταγμεναι. Rom. 13. 1. iv. 160. *a.*  
τετραχηλισμενος. Heb. 4. 13. vi. 37. *d.*  
τιμη. Rom. 13. 7. iv. 163. *b.* — Col. 2. 23.  
v. 322. *c.*  
το πνευμα το αγιον τε θεου. Eph. 4. 30. v.  
383. *q.*  
τισο. Eph. 2. 8. v. 139. *k.*  
τροπις αποσκιασμα. Jam. 1. 17. vi. 173. *b.*  
τροχον. Jam. 3. 6. vi. 192. *f.*  
τυπος. Rom. v. 14. iv. 66. *f.* — Rom. 6.  
17. v. 77. *a.*

Υ.

υβρισης. Rom. 1. 30. iv. 23. *i.*  
υπερ, instead of. Rom. 5. 6. iv. 61. *e.* — 1 Cor.  
15. 29. iv. 388. *b.* — 2 Cor. 5. 20. iv.  
467. *e.*  
— with respect to. 2 Theff. 2. 1. v. 407. *a.*  
καθ' υπερβολην εις υπερβολην. 2 Cor. 4. 17. iv.  
458. *a.*  
υπερπεριλαενομαι. 2 Cor. 7. 4. iv. 480. *b.*  
υπερηγνα. Jud. 16. vi. 413. *g.*  
υπερυψωσε. Phil. 2. 9. v. 251. *d.*  
υπερφρονειν. Rom. 12. 3. iv. 150. *e.*  
υποδευγμα των επερανιων. Heb. 8. 5. vi. 66. *b.*  
υποδικος τω θεω. Rom. 3. 19. iv. 42. *k.*  
υπομονη τε χριστου. 2 Theff. 3. 5. v. 417. *d.*  
υποσασις. Heb. 11. 1. vi. 102. *a.*  
υποσειληται. Heb. 10. 38. vi. 100. *k.*  
επι τη υποταγη της ομολογιας υμων, &c. 2 Cor.  
9. 13. iv. 498. *e.*  
υποταγησε. Jam. 4. 7. iv. 199. *k.*  
υποτιθεμενος. 1 Tim. 4. 6. v. 468. *a.*  
υποπιαζω. 1 Cor. 9. 27. iv. 310. *m.*

Φ.

φαρμακεια. Gal. 5. 20. v. 89. *c.*  
φαρμακειων. Rev. 9. 21. vi. 506. *i.*  
φελονη. 2 Tim. 4. 13. v. 543. *b.*  
φθινοπαρινα. Jud. 12. vi. 411. *b.*

φιλοσοφει.

φιλοσοφοι. Rom. 12. 10. iv. 153. *i.*  
 φιλοτιμεν. Rom. 15. 20. iv. 186. *b.*  
 φλυαροι. 1 Tim. 5. 13. v. 479. *l.*  
 φροσν. Rom. 13. 7. iv. 163. *b.*  
 φρονειν. 1 Cor. 4. 6. iv. 249. *e.*  
 αυλο φρονειν. Rom. 15. 5. iv. 181. *b.*—2 Cor.  
 13. 11. iv. 536. *b.*  
 φρονηματα πνευματος. Rom. 18. 27. iv. 103. *f.*  
 Το αυλο φρονητε, την αυλην αγαπην εχουτες. Phil.  
 2. 2. v. 248. *a.*  
 Το αυλο εις αλληλους φρονευτες. Rom. 12. 16. iv.  
 156. *b.*  
 φρενουμενυς. 1 Pet. 1. 5. vi. 223. *c.*  
 φωσηρ. Phil. 2. 15. v. 254. *i.*

## X.

παντοτε χαιρετε. 1 Theff. 5. 16. v. 388. *c.*  
 χαρακτηρ. Heb. 1. 3. vi. 10. *f.*

χαρις. 2 Cor. 8. 1. iv. 485. *a.*—2 Cor. 8.  
 6. 487. *c.*—ib. 9. 8. 496. *b.*—ib. 13.  
 14. 537. *i.*  
 χειρογραφειν. Col. 2. 14. v. 314. *g.*  
 χηρα. 1 Tim. 5. 3. v. 475. *b.*  
 χρησης. Rom. 2. 4. iv. 27. *c.*  
 χρονος. Rev. 10. 6. vi. 509. *c.*  
 χρυσοδακτυλιος. Jam. 2. 2. vi. 180. *c.*

Ψ.

Το ψευδος. Eph. 4. 25. v. 180. *k.*

## Ω.

προς καιρον ωρας. 1 Theff. 2. 17. v. 363. *c.*



A G E-

A

## GENERAL INDEX

T O T H E

Three last V O L U M E S.

*N. B.* This Index chiefly refers to Articles treated of in the Notes. For the Author, Date, Design and Plan of each Book the Reader is referred to the Introductions: the Text will generally serve as a kind of Index to the Paraphrase: where both the Paraphrase and Notes are referred to, *and* is inserted between the Page and the Letter of the Note.

The Notes on the prophetick Part of the Revelation contain many things to which it was not easy to refer: but, several of them being mentioned no more than once, the Text will readily point to them; and therefore the Reader is desired to excuse the Omission of them in this Index.

A.

*ABBA*, the meaning of the Word, IV. 97. *d.* a Title which Slaves might not use. V. 61. *b.*

*Abel*, Mr. *Kennicot's* Opinion about his Sacrifice. VI. 104. *e.* what is meant by his Blood. 138. *m.*

*Abraham*, the Promise made to him 130 Years before the Law. V. 50. *b.*— how he knew that *Jacob* was an Heir of it. VI. 107. *l.*— was justified by Faith, IV. 51. which was imputed to him for Righteousness, 52. *e.* before he was circumcised. 53. *f.*— in one Sense he was justified by Works, VI. 187. & *d.* in another he was not. IV. 50. & *a.* In what Sense he was the Heir of the World. IV. 54. *a.*— how the Gospel was preached to him. V. 43. & *f.* all Nations blessed in his Seed, *ib.* not his Seeds. 50. *a.* received *Isaac* from the dead in a Figure. VI. 112. *b.* his Faith on this Occasion remarkable. *ib.* *a.*

*Acceptance* of Persons, what. IV. 29. *g.*

*Access* to God, what the Expression alludes to, V. 148. *i.*— by Faith. IV. 60. *b.*

VOL. VI.

*Acts of the Apostles*, Allusion in the Epistles to Facts not mention'd there, IV. 186.

*a.* 437. *g.*— to Facts that are, proves the Truth of both. V. 349.

*Accursed*, who call Christ accursed. IV. 343. *b.*

*Adam* formed first, V. 451. *l.* the Duty of Wives to submit to their Husbands argued thence, *ib.* his Sin subjected the Creation to Vanity, IV. 100. and brought Death on all Men. 65. he was the Figure of him that was to come. 66. *g.*

*Adoption*, what. IV. 113. *d.* Allusion to different Forms of it among the *Romans*. 102. *c.*

*Adulteress*, She that is married to another while her first Husband lives, IV. 81. yet Divorce for Adultery not forbid. *ib.* *b.*

*Advocate*, what the Name signifies. VI. 329. *a.*

*Afflictions*, their Lightness and Benefit strongly expressed. IV. 458. *a.*

*Age*, *αιωνος*, what. IV. 229. *f.* 230. *g.*

*Air*, the Jews thought it inhabited by evil Spirits. V. 135. *c.*

4 K

Alexander,



- Alexander*, the Apostles Imprecation on him vindicated. V. 543. *e*.
- Allegory of Sarah and Hagar*. V. 71. *&c*.
- All things work together for good*, in what extent the Phrase is to be taken. IV. 105. *a*.
- Alpha and Omega*, who calls himself so. VI. 431. *e*. 434. *d*.
- Altars*, more than one under the Law. IV. 135. *a*.
- Anathema*. The Apostle's Meaning when he wishes to be made an Anathema. IV. 112, *& b*. Anathema-maranatha, what, 409. *e*.
- Angel*, the Name of an Officer in the Jewish Synagogue. VI. 439. *d*. quickly after Christianity Heathens spoke of Angels. V. 317. *l*.
- Angels of the Churches*, not diocesan Bishops. VI. 439. *d*. what is said to them is intended of the Churches under their Care. VI. 440. *f*. 444. *a*.
- Angels (good)* are charged with the Government of particular Countries, VI. 13. *p*. concerned in limiting the Power of Devils. 407. *b*. Christians forbid to worship them. V. 317. *l*. who that Angel that offers Incense with the Prayers of Saints. VI. 495. *c*. what the Angels desired to look into. VI. 226. *& b*.
- Angels (evil)*, how they kept not their first State. VI. 406. *d*. are reserved in Chains of Darkness. VI. 296. *f* cast down to Hell. *ib. e*. shall be judged by Christians. IV. 266. *b*. vide *Devil* and *Satan*.
- Anger*, 'tis possible to be angry without Sin. V. 181. *l*. why we must not let the Sun go down upon it. *ib. m*. Variety of Phrases used in prohibiting it. V. 185. *& a*. —worketh not the Righteousness of God. VI. 174. *e*. —to be especially avoided in Prayer. V. 450. *g*.
- Animals*, the four mentioned in Revelation, what. VI. 468. *f*.
- Animal Man*, who. IV. 232. *& o*.
- Antichrist*, in what Sense he was come in the Apostles Days. VI. 355. *c*.
- Antioch*, the Church there directed by Revelation to fend out *Paul*. V. 24. *c*. *Paul's* Contest with *Peter* there, 31. *&c*.
- Antipas*, who, and the Notice taken of him. VI. 446. *f*.
- Antisthenes*, an Expression of his about being reproached for doing good. VI. 242. *e*.
- Antoninus*, remarkable Expression of his about God. IV. 147. *f*.
- Apollos*, *Locke* thinks him the false Prophet at *Corinth*. IV. 236. *d*. Why unwilling to go to *Corinth*. IV. 404.
- Apologies* that *Paul* makes consistent with his Inspiration. IV. 513. *a*.
- Apostacy* from Christianity fatal in the first Age, though perhaps not so in those that follow. VI. 46. *b*. — meant by finning wilfully, *&c*. 95. *a*. why expressed in such general Terms. *ib. b*. — among the Christians from *Nero* to *Tragan*. V. 530. *a*. — before the second coming of Christ. 408. *& c*.
- Apostates*, the Apostles reproving them with great Freedom shews they fear'd no discovery they could make. V. 446. *b*.
- Apostle*, a Witness of Christ's Resurrection. IV. 299. *a*. *The Apostles* had been peculiarly criminal and wretched, if their Testimony had been false, IV. 385. *c*. —preached not themselves, 457. were Embassadors for Christ, 466. *a*. how proved to be the Ministers of Christ, 470. *&c*. had Power to punish disobedience, 502, 503. *d*. fear'd no Discoveries that Apostates could make, V. 446. *b*. or factious Persons. IV. 533. *b*. had not Power to work Miracles when they pleased. V. 546. *k*. what meant by their being set forth last. IV. 252. *b*. called *the twelve* when some were absent. IV. 380. *f, b*. their Writings perspicuous in all matters of Importance. 451. *c*. Christians in general concerned in them. VI. 312. *k*.
- Apostolick Rod*. IV. 257. *f*. 500. *&c*. *Paul's* threatening to use it proves it was well known he had it. 533. *b, c*.
- Araspas*, his complaining of two Souls illustrates Rom. 7. 19. IV. 88. *l*.
- Archangel* that shall shout at Christ's coming, not Christ himself. V. 379. *f*.
- Armour* of Righteousness on the right hand and the left. IV. 472. *e*.
- of the Christian described. V. 214, *&c*. *& a*.
- Atheists*, the Heathens called so by *St. Paul*. V. 144. *d*.
- Athenian*, remarkable account given by one of the Victory at *Marathon*. V. 257. *b*.
- Atonement* as well as Reformation. necessary to Deliverance from Sin. IV. 384. *b*. of *Christ* shews that God is just when he justifies Sinners. 47. *g*.
- For what Sins the Sacrifices of the *Day of Atonement* availed. VI. 86. *& d*. those Sacrifices alluded to with great Propriety. 85. *b*.

*Aven gelon*, a Term of Contempt by which the Jews called the Gospel instead of *εὐαγγέλιον*. IV. 223. *f.*  
*Authorities*, Bishop *Hopkins* thinks *ἐξουσία* means only such as are lawful. IV. 161. *c.* disposed by God, 160. *a.* yet not so as to establish unlimited passive Obedience. 161. *d.* *Jude's* Argument against speaking Evil of them. VI. 407, 408. *℥ k.*

B.

*Babylon*, probably *Peter* near it when he wrote his first Epistle. VI. 274. *l.* *mystical*, what, 560. its Fall. 566. what is meant by the several articles of it. 569. *d.*  
*Bacchanalia*, what. V. 196. *b.*  
*Balaam*, why called the Son of *Bosor*. VI. 302. *f.*  
*Balaamites*, who. VI. 447. *g.*  
*Baptism*, its Perpetuity, V. 314. *e.* No Objection against Water Baptism when it is said there is *one Baptism*. 168. *d.* commonly administer'd by Immersion, IV. 217. *g.* Allusion to that Mode. 71. *d.* — of Infants refer'd to when Children are said to be holy, 281. *c.* a considerable Objection against it removed. 53. *g.* administer'd to Children whose Parents were Christians at the Time of their Birth. 71. *c.* the Answer of a good Conscience in it. VI. 257. *e.* obliges us to die to Sin. 75. Persons baptized not meant by *enlightened*. VI. 45. *d.* No extraordinary Illumination to be expected on its Administration. VI. 98. *g.*  
*Baptismal* Regeneration. V. 577. *d.*  
*Baptized* for the dead. IV. 388. *b.*  
*Beasts*, (vide *Animals*) with seven Heads *℥c.* what, VI. 530. *a.* what meant by its seven Heads, 561. *℥ c, d.* — its Mark, 535. *m.* its number, *ib. n.* The Punishment of its Worshippers, 540. *℥ g.* approved by Angels and Christ. *ib. e, f.* the other Beast that ascended out of the Earth, 534. *b, i.* is the false Prophet. VI. 554. *d.*  
*Believers* have the Witness in themselves. VI. 370. *g.*  
*Believing* that Christ is the Son of God, thought by Mr. *Locke* the only Fundamental of the Gospel. VI. 365. *a.* Christians exhorted to believe. VI. 373. *a.*

*Benevolent* Temper and Carriage, its Fruits, VI. 250, 251. *℥ a.*  
*Bishop*, his Character and Duty, V. 455. *℥c.* and Notes. yet not fully enumerated. 456. *c.* how he was in Danger of undertaking his Office by Constraint, VI. 270. *b.* of falling into Condemnation and the Snare of the Devil. V. 458. *f, g.* — the Husband of one Wife, V. 455. *a.* explained by a Deaconesse's being the Wife of one Man. 477. *i.* Bishops and Presbyters the same. V. 562. *e.* VI. 269. *a.* Several Bishops at *Philippi*, V. 232. *c.* No Direction given to Presbyters to obey Bishops. 456. *c.* No Reason to believe the Messengers of the Churches were *Diocessans*, IV. 493. *c.* V. 259. *d.* nor the Angels of the seven Churches in *Asia*. VI. 439. *d.* not mentioned in the Epistle to the *Corinthians*, though so natural an Occasion offer'd. IV. 372. *e.* nor in *Paul's* List of Ecclesiasticks. V. 171. *k.*  
*Bless*. How we are said to bless the sacramental Elements. IV. 318. *a.*  
*Blood of Abel*, what, VI. 138. *m.* — of the Lamb, not the Blood shed in his Cause. VI. 491. *c.*  
*Body* put for the whole Man. IV. 150. *℥ b.* — spoken of as a Tabernacle. IV. 459. *℥c.* our Care of it an Emblem of Christ's Regard to his Church. V. 204. — Dead because of Sin. IV. 95. *b.* Christians represented under the Image of a Body. IV. 348. *℥c.*  
*Book*, of Life, what. V. 277. VI. 455. *g.* 533. *g.* — in the Hand of him that sat on the Throne. VI. 472. *a.* Mr. *Lowman's* Notion of the opening its Seals. 480. *d.*  
*Boxers*, Allusion to their manner of exercising. IV. 310. *l, m.*  
*Bramins*, a Notion of theirs, and a Conjecture about the Occasion of it. VI. 143. *b.*  
*Bread-offering*, vide *Mincha*.  
*Busy-bodies*, who, VI. 265. *e.* — discouraged, V. 374. *℥ e.*

C.

*Calling* and Election, Mr. *Brekel's* Notion what the Phrase alludes to. VI. 287. *i.* Called and faithful. 563. *e.*  
*Canaan*, why Entrance into it called Rest. VI. 27. *b.*

*Candour*

*Candour* and Forbearance. IV. 218. Imp. 250. Imp.

*Carcass* sometimes tied to Captives as a Punishment. IV. 89. *n.*

*Carpocratians*, some think they are the *Mockers* mentioned 2 *Pet.* iii. 3. VI. 307. *c.*

*Celibacy* of the Clergy. IV. 300. *b, c.*

*Cenchrea*, the Church there distinct from *Corinth*, though in its Suburbs. IV. 191. *b.*

*Cerintus* said to have contended with *Paul* for Circumcision. V. 26. *f.* What his Doctrine. VI. 338. *e.*

*Chain*, the way in which the *Romans* chained their Prisoners. V. 220. *l.*

*Chambering*, interpreted by some of lying long in Bed. IV. 165. *k.*

*Chapters* sometimes ill divided. IV. 89. *p.* V. 275. *f.*

*Charity*, an Act of Religion and not merely of Humanity. IV. 497. *d.* no kind of religious Service acceptable without it. VI. 177. *l.* People apt to make evasive Excuses for neglecting it. V. 98. *d.* —urged, IV. 485. especially from the Example of Christ, 487. and the peculiar Blessing of God which may be expected upon it. 497.

*Chel*, or Wall of Separation. V. 146. *g.*

*Cherubim* of Glory, why called so. VI. 72. *d.* The living Creatures mentioned in Revelation were Cherubim. VI. 468. *f.*

*Children* ought to be taught the Scriptures. V. 537. *a.* Their Irregularities reflect a Dishonour on their Parents. V. 561. *d.* All Men by Nature *Children of Wrath*. V. 136. *g.*

*Chosen Generation*, how applied to Christians, VI. 236. *c.*

*Christ* sometimes signifies his Word, VI. 146. *g.* but not when it is said, he is *the same Yesterday, to Day and for ever.* *ib.*

*He*, is the beginning of the Creation, VI. 460. & *e.* the first born of the whole Creation, V. 302. *b.* created all Things, *ib. c.* the whole Family in Earth and Heaven named of him, 159. *a.* — all Fulness resided in him. 303. *e.* how the Fulness of the Godhead dwelt in him. 313. *d.* was in the Form of God. 249. *b.* thought it no Robbery to be as God. *ib. c.* called the Lord the Spirit, IV. 448. & *g.* Alpha and Omega, VI. 431. *e.* 434. *d.* *He* that searches the Heart, 452. *c.* the holy one, 457. *a.* the true God, 376.

*f.* Jehovah, IV. 130. *d.* God over all blessed for ever. 114. & *f.* why his Superiority to Angels is so particularly insisted on. VI. 11. *i.* The Apostle takes it for granted that Christians would pray to him. IV. 212. *e.*

*He* is the unutterable Gift of God. IV. 498. *g.* *Adam* a Figure of him. 66. *f, g.* How the Salvation by him exceeds the Loss by *Adam*. 67. How he preached to the Spirits in Prison. VI. 256. & *c.* How *Moses* esteemed the Reproach of Christ, &c. 115. *g.* Christ laid the Plan of the Mosaic Dispensation. 25. and notes. and was present with the Church in the Wilderness, IV. 315. *f.* an Objection to this answer'd. VI. 10. *e.* 143. *b.* his Spirit in the old Testament Prophets. 225. *f.* —Called the Comer, 99. *i.* his *emptying himself*, refers to a proper Change in his State. V. 251. *d.*

*His Love* to the Church a Mystery. V. 205. *f.* He was manifested to destroy the Works of the Devil. VI. 346. *i.* was a Minister of the Circumcision. IV. 181. — the Reproach of those that reproached God fell on him. 180. *a.* — was an Example of that Affection Christians should maintain, 181. *b.* distinguished by his loving Righteousness. VI. 13. *o.* He witnessed a good Confession. V. 495. *b.* discharged the Office of a Mediator in his human Nature. V. 448. *e.*

*He*, was an high Priest before his Resurrection, VI. 39. *b.* 66. *a.* is our Passover, IV. 261. *f.* the end of the Law for Righteousness, IV. 128. & *b.* gave himself an Offering and a Sacrifice, V. 187. *d.* by the eternal Spirit. VI. 76. *b.* was made a Sin-Offering, IV. 467. died in the stead of the Ungodly, IV. 61. *e.* The Value of his Sacrifice compared with the Levitical. VI. 76. & *i.* what the Joy set before him. 117. *g.* he learnt Obedience by the Things he suffer'd, VI. 40. *k.* abolished Sin by the Sacrifice of himself, VI. 82. *b.* we are healed by his Stripes, VI. 243. & *i.* a living way is consecrated through the Vail. VI. 91. *b, c.* by his Obedience many are constituted Righteous. IV. 68. & *k.* Things in Heaven and Earth are reconciled by him. V. 304. & *f.*

*He* is the first born from the Dead, V. 303. *d.* spoyl'd Principalities and Powers,

- Powers. 316. *b.* led Captivity captive. 169. *g.* enter'd into the holy Place, *but once.* VI. 75. *b.* The World to come made subject to him. 17. *d.* He is the Head of the Church. V. 174. the Author and Finisher of our Faith. VI. 116. *p.* his Life was manifested in the Sufferings of his Apostles. IV. 455. the Promises are Yea and Amen in him. IV. 430. *c.* He is an Advocate. VI. 329. *a.* for whom. *ib.* *b.* His Intercession emphatically represented. 496. *c.* his Message to the seven Churches proves his Condescension and exact Knowledge. 439. *c.*
- His second Appearance called the last Time and last Day. VI. 224. *d.* some understand his coming in the Clouds, of the Destruction of *Jerusalem.* 430. *c.* The manner of his Descent to Judgment. V. 379. Reflections on it. 381. the Suddenness of it. 382. *a.* Allusion to the Office of the high Priest in the Account given of his final Appearance. VI. 82. *i.* his giving up the Kingdom to the Father. IV. 387. *g.*
- what it is to confess him. VI. 355. *b.* who are the Enemies of his Cross. V. 273. *d.* what it is to crucify him afresh. VI. 46. *b.* what it is to put on Christ. IV. 166. *m.* Mr. *Locke's* Notion of it. V. 56. *k.* what is meant by being in him. IV. 90. *q.* Christians quicken'd with him. V. 137. *i.* His love bears them away. IV. 465. *c.*
- Christians,* are dead to the Law. IV. 81. *Et c.* quicken'd with Christ. V. 137. *i.* delivered into the Mould of the Gospel. IV. 77. *a.* made the Righteousness of God. 467. *f.* already justified and glorified. 107. *d.* their Lives hid with Christ. V. 323. *e.* they are one Body. IV. 151. 348. *Et c.* knit together in the same Mind. 216. *Et b.* shall be caught up to meet the Lord in the Air. V. 379. *b.*
- Christianity* in effect asserts that all are in a degenerate State. VI. 526. *e.* the Plan and Design of it grand. V. 203. *c.* a Test by which other Doctrines may be tried. VI. 356. *e.* the last Dispensation. VI. 336. *b.*
- Chrysoptom,* a Remark of his on watching for Souls. VI. 151. *b.*
- Church,* thought by some to mean a Building for religious Worship in 1 *Cor.* xi. 18. IV. 334. *a.* how the Church is the Fulness of Christ. V. 132. *d.* the
- manifold Wisdom of God made known by it. *Et c.* 156. *i.* why whole Churches are spoken of as *chosen, Saints, Believers, Et c.* V. 121. *e.* 296. *b.* Churches in *Asia,* vide *Seven.*
- Cicero,* a remarkable Expression of his concerning the Death of Friends. V. 377. *b.*
- Circumcision,* a Seal of the Righteousness of Faith. IV. 53. obviates a considerable Objection against Infant-baptism. *ib.* *g.* those that are circumcised become Debtors to keep the whole Law. V. 79. and Christ profits them nothing. 78. *Et a.* circumcised Christians were sometimes spared when others were persecuted. V. 103. *d.*
- Circus,* Allusion to the Races there. IV. 403. *f.*
- Civil* Inconveniences attending ecclesiastical Censures. VI. 440. *e.*
- Collection* for the Churches in *Judea.* IV. 401. *Et c.*
- Colosse,* why the Christians there called holy and faithful Brethren. V. 296. *b.* the Design of the Epistle to them briefly proposed. 298. *b.* written about the same Time as that to the *Ephesians.* 336. *a.*
- Comet,* Mr. *Whiston* thinks the Conflagration will be occasioned by one. VI. 599. *f.*
- Communion* with Idols maintained by Sacrifice. IV. 319. *b.*
- Community* of Goods, not general among Christians. V. 497. *d.*
- Comparative* Degree sometimes used for the positive. VI. 291. *a.*
- Complacency* in others Vices the last Degree of Degeneracy. IV. 24. *u.*
- Condemnation,* how any may be said to be register'd to it. VI. 405. *b.* 412. *f.*
- Condescension* of *St. Paul* to his Hearers. IV. 307, 308, 325.
- Confessing* Christ, why so much Stress laid on it in Scripture. VI. 355. *b.* 361. *a.* — *our Faults one to another,* no Foundation for auricular Confession. 211. *f.* 1 *John* i. 7. absurdly produced to prove it. 326. *d.*
- Conflagration,* Mr. *Whiston* thinks it will be occasioned by a Comet. VI. 599. *f.* Mr. *Fleming* thinks some Saints will rise while it continues. IV. 242. *d.*
- Confucius,* a remarkable Saying of his about Princes governing their Families. V. 457. *e.*
- Conquerors,* an Allusion to their giving Largeesses to their Soldiers. V. 170. *b.* — in the Christian Warfare shall have

- Power over the Nations. VI. 453. *e.* shall walk in white. 455. *f.* and be made Pillars in the House of God. 460. *d.*
- Contentions* that rose early in the Church were wisely permitted. V. 42. *e.*
- Contentment*, the Attendant and Fruit of Godliness. V. 491. *d.*
- Controversies* about little Things, the Danger of them. V. 522. *e.*
- Conversation*, Rules for conducting it. V. 182. *p.*
- Conviction* of Sin by the Law. IV. 45. *c.* — of Sin and Duty insufficient without Reformation. IV. 92, 93.
- Corinthians* much addicted to Lewdness. IV. 315. *e.* what their Fault about the Lord's Supper. 334. *c. d. e.*
- Corn*, the Eastern manner of threshing it alluded to. IV. 301. *e.*
- Corners* of the Earth, what. VI. 585. *f.*
- Covenant*, Abrahamic, why called *Covenants*. V. 143. *b.* — at *Sinai* made no express Provision for the Pardon of wilful Sin. IV. 128. *c.* How a Covenant imports the Death of that by which it is confirmed. VI. 79. & *c.*
- Covetousness*, the Precept that forbids it relates to the Heart, and proves the Spirituality of the Law. IV. 84. *b.* how it is Idolatry. V. 189. *b.* and pierces Persons through with many Sorrows. 492. *e.*
- Crates*, a remarkable Saying of his about Ornaments of Dress. VI. 246. *a.*
- Creation* made subject to Vanity. IV. 100. & *a.* earnestly expects the Revelation of the Sons of God. *ib.*
- Cretans*, their Character. V. 565. *b.*
- Crowns* bestowed in the Games, their different kinds. IV. 309. *i.*
- Curse*, how Christ made a Curse for us. V. 46. & *i.* How all that are of the Works of the Law are under a Curse. V. 44 & *g.* what it is to call Christ cursed. IV. 343. *b.*
- Cymbal*, what, and how fitly mentioned by the Apostle. IV. 354. *c.*
- Cyrus*, a Robe of his put on by succeeding *Persian* Kings at their Coronations. IV. 166. *m.*
- Day with the Lord a thousand Years*, a Proverb, what it signifies. VI. 309. *f.* *Day of Judgment*, 1 *John* iv. 17. thought by some to refer to Trials before Persecutors. VI. 361. *c.*
- of *Wrath*, sometimes means temporal Judgment. VI. 485. *n.*
- of the *Lord*, 2 *Pet.* iii. 10. the final Judgment. VI. 310. *g.*
- Deacon*, his Character. V. 459. what that good Degree which a good Deacon procures. 460. *b.*
- Deaconesses*: there were such Officers in the primitive Church. IV. 191. *a.* their Character. V. 477. *b.*
- Death* introduced by *Adam's* Sin. IV. 65. & *d.* — eternal the Wages of Sin. IV. 78. *c.* which does not mean being cast out of Existence. *ib.* All Men born in the Territories of Death. VI. 350. *a.*
- Debates* about doubtful Matters. IV. 168. *a.*
- Delight* in the Law of God, a sure trace of real Piety. IV. 88. *m.*
- Demons* supposed by Heathens to be present at their Sacrifices. IV. 320. *c.* Demon-Worship, what. VI. 506. *b.*
- Demosthenes*, Rom. viii. 33, 34. in his grand manner. IV. 108. *f.* vid. 486. *b.*
- Devil*, what his Condemnation or first Instance of Pride. V. 458. *f.* Snare of the Devil, what. *ib.* *g.* How Devils in Chains, yet wander on Earth. VI. 296. *f.*
- Diocesan*, vid. *Bishop*.
- Disobedience*, how God shut up all under it. IV. 146. *e.* The Apostles had Power to punish Disobedience. 257. *f.* 500, & *c.* vid. *Apostolick Rod*.
- Dividing* the Word aright, what it alludes to. V. 523. *f.*
- Divinity*, *θεολογια* distinguished from *θεολογια*, divine Nature. IV. 20. *g.*
- Divorce*. IV. 276—278. Women had Power to divorce. 280. *a.*
- Door* great and effectual, what the Phrase alludes to. IV. 403. *f.*
- Dragon*, a Serpent of enormous Bulk. VI. 523. *a.* proper Emblem of Satan. *ib.* — Gave its Power to the Beast. VI. 530. *a.*

## D.

- Dan*, not mentioned among the Tribes that were sealed. VI. 488. *a.*
- Darkness*, Christians in general, and not merely Converts from Heathenism, are rescued from it. V. 299. *l.*

## E.

- Early-rising*, a Remark on the Advantage of it. IV. 165. *k.*

Earth,

- Earth*, who meant by those under it. V. 251. *e.*  
*Ecclesiastical* Censures attended with civil Inconveniences, their Effects. VI. 440. *e.*  
*Egyptian* Christians, the Manner in which some of them partook of the Lord's Supper. IV. 334. *c.*  
*Elders*, some presided well who did not labour in the Word, &c. V. 482, 483. and Notes. what the double Honour of which they are worthy. *ib. b.* the Term sometimes only means aged Persons. V. 474. *a.*  
*Elect* Angels. V. 484. *f.*  
*Election* of Grace. IV. 136. *b.*  
*Elements* of the World, what. V. 313. & *c.*  
*Elijah* pleads against *Israel*. IV. 135. the Success of his Prayer for a Drought. VI. 211.  
*Ellipsis*, a very bold one. V. 465. *g.*  
*Embassadors* for Christ, Ministers may be called so. IV. 466. *d.* St. Paul discharged the Office in a Chain. V. 220. *l.*  
*End* of the World, the concluding Dispensation of God to it. IV. 316. *b.* — of all Things, how St. Peter says it is at Hand VI. 262. *a.*  
*Enemies* of the Cross of Christ, who. V. 273. *d.*  
*Enoch's* Prophecy, a foolish Book, not quoted by *Jude*. VI. 412. *e.* — his Prophecy of the Lord's coming. *ib. f.* why not recorded by *Moses*. *ib.*  
*Entertainments* often made in the Idols Temple. IV. 296. *e.* hereby Communion with the Idol maintained. 319. *b.* 320. *c.*  
*Ephesus*, the People there remarkable for Learning and abandon'd Characters. V. 135. *b.* How St. Paul fought with Beasts there. IV. 389. *k.* fewer Irregularities in that Church than in most to which St. Paul wrote. IV. 403. *f.* they seem to have reformed. what he blamed. VI. 440. *e.*  
*Epistles*. How the *Corinthian* Converts were St. Paul's Epistles. IV. 441. & *c.*  
*Esau*, God said to hate him, refers to his Posterity, not his final State. IV. 115. *g.* why said to be rejected. VI. 135. *d, e.* and charged with Profaneness. 134. *b.*  
*Essences* obtained from Flesh, and even Fruits. IV. 169. *b.*  
*Evil speaking* forbid, what. V. 326. *a.*  
*Examination* of ourselves urged in a View of the final Retribution. V. 97.  
*Excommunication* in the Power of particular Churches. IV. 264. *i.* the ill Effects of annexing civil Inconveniences to it. VI. 440. *e.*  
*Execution* of Malefactors among the *Romans*, the Manner of it alluded to. IV. 264. *i.*
- F.
- Faith* of God, what. IV. 38. & *b.*  
*Faith*, an Assent to the Truth of Christianity. V. 446. *a.* — Fidelity. V. 91. *g.* — miraculous. IV. 345. *f.* unprofitable without Love. 354. *a.* 355. *e.* St. Paul's and St. James's Notion of Faith reconciled. IV. 48. *b.* VI. 185. *a. b.* 187. *d.* — as used 1 *Cor.* xiii. 2. different from that spoken of in *Romans*. IV. 355. *d.* St. Paul's Definition of it. VI. 102. and Notes. *Saurin* thinks we cannot conclude that all who are mentioned, *Heb.* xi. as Instances of it, were entitled to God's final Favour. 116. *k.* — the Gift of God. V. 139. *k.* the Work of his Spirit. IV. 343. *c.* but this not meant, *Col.* ii. 2. when it is called *Faith* of the Operation of God. V. 315. *f.* — the Way to enter into Rest. VI. 32. *g.* — Works by Love. V. 80. & *b.* is the Christians Shield. V. 218. *f, g.* the Just shall live by it. 45. & *b.* it is imputed to Righteousness. IV. 51. yet to be understood consistent with our Justification by Christ's Righteousness. 52. *e.* what the Proportion of Faith. 151. *f.* and the Prayer of Faith. VI. 210. *a.*  
*Family-Prayer*, its Tendency to preserve Family-Peace. V. 181. *m.* VI. 249. *e.*  
*Fiery Darts*, &c. what the Expression refers to. V. 218. *g.* fiery Trial. VI. 264. *c.*  
*Filth* of the World, *καθαρισμα*, what. IV. 255. *e.*  
*Fire*, what it is to heap Coals of Fire on the Head of an Enemy. IV. 158. *e.* what to be saved thro' it. 242. *d.*  
*First-born*, why Saints called so. VI. 137. *k.*  
*first-Fruits*. VI. 173. *c.* 539. *b.*  
*Flesh*, the Mosaic Law. IV. 81. Flesh and Spirit, what. V. 87. *a.* Works of the Flesh, what. 88. include Errors and evil Dispositions of the Mind. *ib. b.* who are after the Flesh. IV. 94. what it is to mind the Flesh. *ib.* those that do it cannot please God. 95. of sowing to

- to the Flesh and Spirit, and the different Effects. V. 99.
- Folly of God*, what the Phrase means. IV. 224. *b*.
- Foot-Races* alluded to. IV. 308. &c.
- Foppery* in Men or Women reproved. V. 450. *k*.
- For*, γαρ in St. Paul's Writings often has not the Force of an illative Particle. IV. 62. *f*. V. 35. *d*. is sometimes an expletive. IV. 77. *b*. sometimes introduces a co-ordinate Proof of something at a Distance. 118. *a*. is a Copulative. 394. *d*. or might be rendered. *I say*, V. 72. *a*. vide γαρ in the Greek Index.
- Forgiveness* of Injuries urged from the Freedom of divine Forgiveness. V. 186. and Notes.
- Form of God*, what. V. 249. & *b*.
- Fornication*. IV. 271. . . 274. eating Things offered to Idols probably called so. VI. 451. *b*.
- Foundation of God* and its Inscriptions. V. 526. *a*.
- Friendly Carriage*, its happy Effects. VI. 250, 251. & *a*.

## G.

- Gaius*, to whom St. John writes, who. VI. 391. *a*.
- Galatians* were a Colony of the Gauls. V. 12. *g*.
- Games*, Olympick, Circensian, &c. Allusions to them. IV. 308. . . 311. and Notes. 403. *f*. V. 80. *c*. 268. *k*, *l*, *m*, *n*, 328. *d*. 415. *a*. 469. *c*. 493. *f*. 518. VI. 116. Notes. 120. *b*. 130. *k*. 131. *m*. 137. *i*.
- Garments* spotted with the Flesh, what. VI. 415. *k*. to what the Expression, *blessed is he that watcheth and keepeth his Garments*, alludes. VI. 555. *e*.
- Genealogies*, the Fondness of the Jews for them. V. 578. *f*. the Tables made at the Taxation refer'd to by several early Christian Writers. VI. 59. *i*.
- General Expressions* used in a confined Sense. VI. 191. *c*. 341. *i*. 345. *f*. 347. *k*.
- Gentiles*, vide *Heathens*, addicted to Uncleanness. V. 371. *b*. their Admission to the Privileges of the Gospel foretold in the old Testament. IV. 123. & *a*. and in the Promise to Abraham. V. 43. *f*. in what Sense this was a Mystery. 124. *b*. their Riches and Fulness distinguished. IV. 146. *a*. how the Offering of them sanctified by the Spirit. 184. *d*. Partakers of the spiritual Things of the Jews. 188.
- Gifts*, vide *Spiritual*. The unutterable Gift of God. IV. 498. *g*.
- Girdle*, the Form of those worn by the Jewish Priests. VI. 435. *f*. military Girdle, a proper Metaphor to express Truth. V. 216. *d*.
- Gladiators*. IV. 252. *b*.
- Glory of God*, Rom. iii. 23. thought by some to be a lucid Resemblance of the Shechinah worn by our first Parents. IV. 46. *e*. 91. *u*. Christ's appearing without Sin interpreted of his wearing this. VI. 83. *k*. Glory beheld by Moses, an Emblem of that which Christians behold. IV. 448. *f*. Heavenly Happiness meant by that Phrase. IV. 60. a strong Expression to describe it. IV. 458. *a*.
- Gnosticks*, when the Sect rose. V. 439. *c*.
- God* of this World, who. VI. 451. *d*. The heathen Philosophers knew and yet denied the Unity of God. IV. 20. *b*. He calls the Things that are not as though they were. 56. *d*. is Light. VI. 325. *c*. the Father of Lights. 172. *a*. works all Things agreeably to the Counsel of his own Will. V. 125. *l*. his Sovereignty in many Respects consistent with Reason and Scripture. IV. 117. &c. his Providence is concerned in Events owing to the Wickedness of Men. VI. 271. *e*. and exercised over evil Spirits, VI. 555. *f*. his Goodness strongly expressed. V. 405. *e*. VI. 173. *b*. He endures with great long Suffering the Vessels of Wrath. IV. 120. *d*. is called the God of Peace. IV. 198. will have all Men be saved. V. 448. *d*. is the Saviour of all Men. 470. *e*. The Father called the Saviour. V. 576. *c*. Sight put for the Knowledge of him. why. VI. 344. *d*.
- Godliness*, how it has the Promise of this Life and that to come. V. 469. *d*.
- Godly in Christ Jesus*, what the Phrase intimates. V. 534. *f*.
- Gog and Magog*, who. VI. 585. *f*.
- Good* to be returned for Evil. IV. 158. how it heaps up Coals of Fire. &c. *ib*. *e*.
- Gospel*, not a Rule by which all Men shall be judged. IV. 31. *l*. established by means that seemed weak. IV. 220. 227. 254. *d*. its Plan and Design grand. V. 203. & *c*. preached to the dead. VI. 259. *l*. the last Dispensation. IV. 316. *b*. VI. 82. *g*. some think it

it is called the Power of an endless Life. VI. 59. *l.*  
*Governments*, perhaps those who presided in Charities. IV. 152. *b.* 351. *f.*  
*Grace*, χάρις, sometimes signifies, a Gift. IV. 487. *c.*  
 — of God bestowed on the Churches of Macedonia, what. 485. *a.* — opposed to Works. IV. 136. *c.* how given us in Christ. V. 512. *d.* how the difference in moral Characters owing to it. IV. 249. *f.* the Reality and Sovereignty of its Operations. V. 253. *b.* freely given. VI. 140. *r.*  
*Grafting*, a beautiful Allusion to it. IV. 143. *c.*  
*Gratitude* to God, put for the whole of Religion. IV. 20. *i.*  
*Grieving* a Brother, signifies to lead him to commit Sin. IV. 175. *c.*

H.

*Hand-writing*, Col. ii. 14. what, and how against us. V. 315. & *g.*  
*Hate*, often means no more than that something else is greatly preferred. IV. 115. *g.*  
*Hay and Stubble*, what. IV. 240, 241. *c.*  
*Hades*, an unseen place. VI. 438. *b.* what meant by its being cast into the Lake of Fire. VI. 588. *l.*  
*Heads*, Mens to be uncover'd, and Womens cover'd. IV. 328. *a.*  
*Heathens*, (vid. *Gentiles*) had only a precarious Hope of a future State. V. 144. *c.* in what Sense they were Atheists. *ib.* their Moralists thought lying in some Cases justifiable. 180. *k.* — if virtuous, may be accepted thro' the Atonement of Christ. VI. 329. *b.*  
*Heaven* and Earth, things in both united under Christ. V. 125. *i.* Heavenly happiness described as an House not made with Hands. IV. 459. *c.* heavenly things purified with Blood. VI. 81. *f.*  
*Hebrews*, the epistle to them written before the destruction of Jerusalem. VI. 147. *b.* about A. D. 63. 161. Hebrew of the Hebrews, what. V. 265. & *c.*  
*Hell*, the meaning of the Word Hades. VI. 438. *b.* and of Tartarus. 296. *e.*  
*Helpers* and Governments, who. IV. 351. *f.*  
*Herald* in the publick Games, Paul compares himself to one. IV. 310. *n.*

*Heresy* something worse than Schism. IV. 334. *b.* one of the works of the Flesh. V. 90. *e.*  
*Hereticks*, who. V. 579. *g.* Jews kept at a great distance from those they reckon'd such. VI. 386. *d.* some infer from Rev. xvii. 17. that it is the Will of God such should be cut off. 564. *f.*  
*Holy*, how Children called so. IV. 281. *c.*  
*Homer's* Description of Tartarus illustrates, 2 Pet. ii. 4. VI. 296. *e.*  
*Hope*, how the Gentiles without it. V. 144. *c.*  
*Hospitality*, peculiar Occasion for practising it in the Apostles time. IV. 156. & *a.*  
*Humiliation*, ταπεινωσις, expresses the Disposition of a Man's Mind, ταπεινωσις his Condition. VI. 169. *f.*  
*Hymenæus* and *Alexander*, who. V. 446. *b.* the Freedom with which Paul censures them proves his Cause good, *ib.* their Conduct no Objection against the Doctrine of Perseverance. *ib.* *a.*  
*Hymns* and spiritual Songs, what, V. 328. *e.*

I.

*Jacob*, God's loving him refers to his favours bestowed on his Posterity, not to his final State. IV. 115. *g.*  
 — worshiped, leaning on the top of his Staff. VI. 113. *e.* The Apostle's Account reconciled with the old Testament. *ib.*  
*James*, perhaps Christ appeared to him alone. IV. 380. *b.* how the Brother of our Lord. V. 20. *e.* James the less, the Author of the Epistle. VI. 161. why said to be Bishop of Jerusalem. 165. *a.*  
*Jannes* and *Jambres*. V. 533. *d.*  
*Idol*, a Jewish Aphorism that an Idol is nothing. IV. 294. *c.* vide *Entertainment*.  
*Idolaters*, how they changed the truth of God into a Lye. IV. 2.  
*Idolatries* of the Romish Church. VI. 506. *b.*  
*Jealousy*. The ground of the Phrase, "voking the Lord to Jealousy." IV. 321. *d.*  
*Jerusalem*, how it seem'd to come down from God out of Heaven. VI. 591. *b.*  
*Jesuits*, remarkable dishonesty in their Translation. IV. 278. *c.* their Missionaries said to have denied that Christ was crucified. IV. 223. *g.*  
*Jew*, one of God's peculiar People. IV. 36. VI. 444. *b.*



- Jews.* The Gospel to be preached first to them: a Remark on the Frankness of the Apostle in declaring this. IV. 17. *a.* Tribulation and Wrath first render'd to them. 29. *f.* they thought no *Israelite* could be deprived of Heaven but by Apostacy, Idolatry, &c. 29. *g.* unconverted *Jews* often addressed in Epistles directed to Christians, why. 33. *a.* held the Merit of their Observances. 50: *b.* How their Rejection the Riches of the World. 141. — to be restored to their own Land. 142. *a.* this will convince many of the Truth of the Gospel. *ib.* the Prophecies of their Conversion not fulfilled in the Apostles Time. 146. *a.* How they were Enemies to the Gospel for the Sake of the Gentiles. 147. *b.* their Notion of the Unlawfulness of paying Tribute to Cæsar opposed by St. Paul. 163. *g.* some of them in heathen Countries eat nothing but Herbs. 169. *b.* the Cross of Christ a stumbling Block to them. 223. *f.* were permitted to try all but criminal Causes in their Courts. 267. *d.* which made the Conduct of the *Corinthians* more inexcusable. *ib.* Paul became as a *Jew* to them. 307. *b.* in what Sense, and how reconciled with his reproving *Peter.* *ib.* *c.* they called Jesus *ישו*, by way of Contempt, instead of *ישוע*. 343. *b.* called *Satan* “the God who blinds.” 451. *d.* their wise men taught without Pay. 511. *g.* Jews and Gentiles reconciled to one another by Christ. V. 145. &c. most of the Persecutions against Christians came from the Jews. 244. *i.* some Intercourse between them and the heathen Philosophers. 313. *b.* — had a Notion that Angels were Intercessors. 317. *b.* how they were contrary to all Men. 362. & *a.* many of them destroyed not only in *Jerusalem*, but elsewhere. 363. *b.* fond of Fables. 578. *f.* 438. *b.* their Genealogies, what. *ib.* their Traditions justly called *old Wives Fables.* 468. *b.* a remarkable Proverb of theirs about the Inefficacy of hearing the Law. VI. 175. *g.*
- Jewish*, Nation, Mr. Locke thinks St. Paul speaks in their Name, *Rom.* vii. 7. &c. IV. 85. *e.* *Jewish*. Ritual, why called worldly Elements. V. 60. *a.* weak and poor Elements. 63. *d.* a Shadow of celestial Things. VI. 66. *b.* a Figure of them, 73. & *e.* not so much as the Image of them. 85: *a.*
- Jezabel*, who. VI. 451. *a.*
- Illyricum*, St. Paul preached to the Western Shores of it. IV. 186. *a.*
- Immortality* of the Soul, the natural Arguments for it compared with that which arises from the Resurrection of Christ. IV. 390. *l.*
- Imposition*, of Hands, V. 471. *b.* 485. *g.* VI. 44. *c.* — of indifferent things. IV. 168. *a.* — as to Matters of Sentiment. IV. 170. *e.*
- Incest* condemned by Heathens. IV. 259. *a.*
- Initiation* of the Ancients. vid. *Mysteries.*
- Inscription* on the Foundation, &c. what it alludes to. V. 526. *a.*
- Inspiration*, of the old Testament believed by St. Paul. IV. 38. & *a.* V. 537. & *b.* — of St. Paul. IV. 231—234. 277. *a.* 291. *l.* 375. V. 373. & *d.* 378. & *d.* 490. *b.* not inconsistent with the Uncertainty, with which he speaks of some Facts. IV. 217. *g.*
- Interpretation* of Tongues, how distinguished from speaking with Tongues. IV. 372. *g.*
- John*, a remarkable Story of his exhorting to Love, when he was not able to preach. VI. 357. *f.* Author of the three Epistles, though his Name to none of them. 383. *a.* probably wrote them before the Revelation. 344. *b.* who the Lady to whom he writes. 384. *b.* a Peculiarity of his Style remarked. 392. *d.* Remark on the Style of his Gospel and the Revelation. 433. *a.* the Story of his being put into a Chaldron of Oyl. *ib.* what is meant by his being in the Spirit, and in what manner the Revelations were made to him. 466. *a.* had a Vision of those Scenes that are represented as succeeding on opening the Seals. 480: *d.* 481. *f.*
- Josephus*, some remarkable Circumstances concerning *Moses* mentioned by him. VI. 114. *f.*
- Isaiab*, the *Jews* say he was sawn asunder. VI. 114. *b.*
- Judah*, the Signification of the Word (*Praise*) referred to. *Rom.* ii. 29. IV. 36. *g.*
- Judaizing* Teachers, why so solicitous to prevail on Christians to be circumcised, V. 97. *c.* 103. *c.* *d.* — had peculiar Spleen against *Paul* and *Barnabas*, IV. 301. *d.* imposed Ceremonies on converted *Gentiles*. V. 62. *c.* why the Apostle so strenuously opposed them. V. 40. *c.* 41. *d.* 56. *i.* 63: *f.*

*Jude*, remarkable Resemblance between some Passages in his Epistle and St. Peter's. VI. 413. *b*.

*Judgment*, Christ's Descent to it described. V. 379. Reflections upon it. 381. its Suddenness beautifully expressed. 382. *a*. — beginning at the House of God. VI. 266. *f*.

*Just* shall live by Faith, V. 45. *Et b*. how the Phrase is accommodated to the Gospel Salvation. IV. 18. *Et d*.

*Justification*, the Import of the Word, IV. 44. *a*. — refers not merely to external Privileges. 59. *a*. but generally to the Transactions of the last Day. 107. *d*. yet Believers are sometimes said to be justified now. *ib*. it sometimes signifies Freedom from the Bondage of Sin. 72. *g*. — by Faith and the Imputation of Christ's Righteousness reconciled. IV. 52. *e*.

K.

*Kingdom of Christ*, given up to the Father. IV. 387. *g*.

*Kiss*, a religious Rite borrowed from the Jews, why laid aside. IV. 194. *k*.

*Knowledge*, of Sin by the Law. IV. 45. *c*. — what kind shall be abolished. 358. *k*. — the Word of Knowledge, what. 344. *e*. 471. *d*. Knowledge, Wisdom and Understanding distinguished. V. 298. *g*.

L.

*Lacedemonian Law* about stealing, wrong. V. 181. *n*.

*Laconic Style*, a fine Instance of it. VI. 241. *d*. *Lady* to whom St. John wrote, who. VI. 384. *b*.

*Lancet* in a Sponge. IV. 356. *g*.

*Laodiceans*, the Epistle from them, what. V. 339. *f*.

*Last Time*, the last Dispensation to the World. V. 464. *d*. VI. 336. *b*.

*Law of God*, some of his Laws not to be disobeyed, though a greater Quantity of Good might arise thereby to our Fellow-creatures. IV. 40. *f*.

*Law*, without any Limitation, often means the Mosaic, IV. 30. *b*. sometimes the whole old Testament, 42. *i*. sometimes the ceremonial, moral, natural and revealed. 44. *b*. a Law being once broken must for ever condemn. V. 45.

*Et b*, — is not made for a righteous Man. 440. *e*.

*Mosaic Law* was given 430 Years after the Promise to Abraham. V. 50. *b*. — enter'd that the Offence might abound. IV. 65. — was added because of Transgression. V. 51. *e*. by the Ministry of Angels. 52. *d*. in the Hand of a Mediator. *ib*. *e*. — was a Covenant of Works, yet contained Intimations of the Covenant of Grace. IV. 128. *c*. — was attended with a Curse, as well as that given to Adam. V. 44. *g*. — is called worldly Elements, V. 60. *a*. weak and poor Elements. 63. *d*. yet restrained from Sin more powerfully than the mere Light of Nature. IV. 90. *s*. nevertheless, the heights of Virtue attained under it, were not by it; but by evangelical Promises. 91. *t*. — Tho' not adapted in it's own Nature to lead Men into Sin, IV. 83. sinful Passions operated by it so as to bring forth Death. 84, 85. thro' the Despair it introduced. 84. *c*. 86. which discovers the exceeding Sinfulness of Sin. *ib*.

*The Mosaic Law* was intended for Life. IV. 85. *f*. and would have justified, if any Law would have done it. V. 54. *Et g*. yet is called the ministration of Death. IV. 445. and those that were justified under it, were not justified by it. 55. *b*. — that *by it is the Knowledge of Sin*, proves the broken State of human Nature. 45. *c*.

*It*, is good if it be used lawfully. V. 439. *d*. — leads to Christ. V. 55. — is established by the Gospel. IV. 49. yet it has Dominion only while it lives. 80. *a*. and Christians are dead to it by the Body of Christ. 81. *Et c*.

*Lewd*, Persons, Πορνοι, IV. 262. *g*. — Conversation, properly called corrupt. V. 182. *o*. forbid, 326. *b*. and all kinds of Lewdness. V. 188. and Notes.

*Letter kills*, the Spirit gives Life, how. IV. 443. *e*.

*Libations*, Allusion to them. V. 256. *a*. 540. *Liberality*, Caution against those Evasions by which Persons excuse the Neglect of it. V. 98. *d*.

*Liberty*, the Right of private Judgment strongly asserted. IV. 170. *e*.

*Life*, how secured by mortifying the Deeds of the Body. IV. 96. *Life of God*, what. V. 177. *Et a*. *Life and Immortality* brought to Light by the Gospel. V. 512. *e*.

Light-

- Light Houses*, Christians compared to them. V. 254. *i.*
- Liturgy*, some understand, 1 *Tim.* ii. 1. as a Direction to draw one up. V. 447. *c.*
- Long Life* promised to those that honour their Parents. V. 208. *℞ b.*
- Lord's-Day*. IV. 401. *b.* VI. 434. *c.*
- Lord's-Supper*, vide *Sacrament*.
- Love* and hate often signifie only to prefer greatly. IV. 116. *g.* — Love of Christ bears us away. 465. *c.* — Love preferable to Gifts. 354. the Properties of it. 356, *℞c.* the Exhortation to pursue it explained. 361. *a.* how it covers a multitude of Sins. VI. 263. *b.* the common Priviledges of Christians should excite it. IV. 245. *f.* — Love of God, its Heights, Breadths, *℞c.* an emphatical Expression. V. 161. *b.* — Love to God, more difficult than to our Brother. VI. 363. *d.* yet may perhaps be more certainly discerned. 366. *b.*
- Love-Fests*, alluded to. VI. 410. *a.* — confounded by the *Corinthians* with the Lord's Supper. IV. 334. *c.* — why laid aside. VI. 301. *c.* 410. *a.*
- Lucretius* is a remarkable Illustration of *Rom.* i. 21. IV. 20. *k.*
- Luke*, the anonymous Brother mention'd 2 *Cor.* viii. 18. IV. 491. *a.* — high Character of him. *ib.* — not a *Jew*. V. 338. *e.*
- Luther* questioned the Authority of *St. James's* Epistle, but changed his Opinion. VI. 160. Note.
- Lyars* have their Portion in the Lake of Fire. VI. 593. *d.*
- Lying* forbid to Christians. V. 180. *k.* some of the best heathen Moralists allow'd it in some Cases. *ib.* *Mr. Wollaston's* Notion of it. VI. 593. *d.*
- M.
- Macedonian Churches* made a Collection for the Christians at *Jerusalem*. IV. 188. *d.*
- Magistrates*; (vide *Authorities*) Christians required to honour the Emperor, tho' a Persecutor. VI. 241. *d.*
- Malabarian Converts*, the poorest of the People. IV. 225. *k.* a Remark of one of them on the Phrase *Children of God*. VI. 343. *a.*
- Malta*, *St. Paul's* Shipwerck there, at least the fourth he suffer'd. IV. 516. *c.*
- Man*, the old and new. V. 179. *f.* — of *Sin*, understood by some of the unbelieving *Jews*. V. 409. *e.*
- of the *Mountain*, Allusion to his Office in the Blessing pronounced on him that watcheth, and keepeth his Garments. VI. 555. *e.*
- Maanna*, a surprizing Circumstance relating to its Descent. IV. 489. *f.*
- Mark* the Evangelist, not *John Mark*, the Companion of *St. Peter*. VI. 274. *m.*
- Mark*, of the Lord Jesus Christ, what. V. 105. *e.* — of the Beast, what, and what it alludes to. V. 535. *m.*
- Marriage*, its Inconveniencies, IV. 289. *e, f.* yet not discouraged in general. 277. *b.* 286. *b.* nor second Marriages. V. 455. *a.* 477. *i.* but with Unbelievers. IV. 476, 280, and Notes. A Mystery relating to Christ and his Church exhibited by it. V. 205. *f.*
- Measure* of Wheat for a Penny, denotes a Scarcity. VI. 481. *e.*
- Measuring ourselves by ourselves*, one of the greatest Sources of Pride. IV. 504. *f.*
- Mediator* is not the Mediator of one. V. 52. *f.* vide *Moses* and *Christ*.
- Melchisedec*, a Type of Christ. VI. 54, *℞c.* how without Father and Mother. 55. *b.* The Account in *Hebrews* of his receiving Tythes of *Abraham*, reconciled with that in *Genesis*, 54. *a.*
- Menandrians*, who. VI. 324. *b.*
- Messengers of the Churches*, not *Diocesan Bishops*. IV. 493. *c.* V. 259. *d.*
- Michael*, disputed with the Devil about *Moses's* Body. VI. 407. *i, k.*
- Millenium*, VI. 583, *℞c.* and Notes.
- Mincha*, what. V. 187. *d.* some think *Cain* only presented this. VI. 104. *e.*
- Ministers* (vide *Bishop*) their Maintenance. IV. 299, *℞c.* an amiable Pattern for them. V. 360. are to preside over the Church. V. 386. *a.* VI. 151. *a.* how they may give their Account with groaning. *ib.* *c.* what Loss they may sustain if their Work be burnt. IV. 241. *c.* ought to be holy Men. V. 172. *l.* grave and venerable. V. 279. *g.* to preserve Peace and Charity, as well as Orthodoxy. V. 173. *a.* should rebuke with Severity, yet long Suffering. V. 565. *c.* some think they are forbid second Marriages. V. 455. *a.* 477. *i.* The Salvation of their Hearers may have an Influence on their own. 472. *i.* — the Right of People to choose their Ministers vindicated from some Objections. 517. *e.* 539. *c.*
- Miraculous Powers* (vide *spiritual Gifts* and *apostolick Rod*) not confined to the apostolick

lick Age. VI. 210. *e.* — might be lost, 535. *f.*  
*Mirror*, the proper Import of *εσθητορ*. IV. 359. *i.* fine Allusion to one. I *Cor.* iii. 17. 448. & *e.*  
*Misfortunes* befall the best of Mankind. IV. 516. *c.*  
*Model* of Doctrine, into which Christians are delivered. IV. 77. *a.*  
*Mortality* swallowed up of Life. IV. 460. *d.*  
*Mosaic* Sacrifices, their Use. VI. 74. *f.* — Dispensation refers to the Gospel, 73. *e.* is a Shadow of it, 85. *a.* doomed to Death those that wilfully violated it. 96. *e.*  
*Moses*, a fine Allusion to the shining of his Face. IV. 448. *f.* — the Mediator of the *Sinai* Covenant. V. 52. *e.* which could not set aside the *Abrahamick*, because he was not the Mediator of it. *ib.* *f.* — some remarkable Stories told of him by *Josephus*. VI. 114. *f.* — what is meant by the Reproach of Christ which he prefer'd. 115. *g.* what the Recompence of Reward, to which he had Respect. *ib.* *b.* — *Michael's* Dispute about his Body. 407. *b.*  
*Muscovites*, their Notion about a Bishop's Marriage. V. 455. *a.*  
*Mystery*, how far the Calling of the Gentiles was a Mystery. V. 153. *e.* how hid in God. 155. *g.*  
*Mysteries*, or heathen Rites of Initiation alluded to. V. 191. *l.* 272. *a.* 283. *b.*

N.

*Nations*, what that Power over them which is promised *Rev.* ii. 26. VI. 453. *e.*  
*Natural*, *i. e.* Animal, Man, what. IV. 232. & *o.*  
*Nature*, the untaught Dictates of the Mind. IV. 30. *k.* how we are by Nature Children of Wrath. V. 136. *g.*  
*Nichelaitans*, who. VI. 441. *b.* 447. *g.* perhaps the followers of *Jezebel*. 451. *a.*  
*Noah*, condemned the old World by furnishing Matter for its Condemnation. VI. 106. *i.* what is meant by his becoming the Heir of Righteousness. *ib.* & *k.* How he was the *eighth* Person. VI. 297. *g.*  
*Notes* at the End of the Epistles, of no Authority. IV. 200 Note. 403. *e.* V. 2.

VOL. VI.

*Nurture and Admonition of the Lord*, what. V. 209. *c.*

O.

*Oaths* used by *St. Paul* vindicated. IV. 432. *g.* V. 449. *f.* Christ constituted a Priest by an Oath. VI. 62. what that implies. *ib.* *b.*  
*Obedience* to Magistrates. VI. 240, 241, and Notes. Vide *Authorities* and *Magistrates*.  
*Obscene* Talk, properly called corrupt, and forbidden. V. 182. *o.* Many Rites of the heathen Worship were obscene. IV. 315. *e.*  
*Old Man*, the Meaning and Propriety of the Phrase. V. 179. *f.*  
*Old Testament*, a hint given for improving its Promises. VI. 145. *e.*  
*Onesimus*, the Meaning of the Word. V. 594. *c.*  
*Ornaments* of Dress, the Prohibition of them not absolute. VI. 246. *b.* a remarkable Saying of *Crates* concerning them. *ib.* *a.*  
*Orobio* unjustly charges *St. Paul* with Artifice. V. 378 *e.* his Objection against the Account of calling the *Gentiles*, answered. IV. 146. *a.*

P.

*Papacy*, its Rise foretold, 2 *Theff.* 2. V. 407, & *c.* and Notes. with several important Circumstances of it, 464, & *c.* and *e, f, g.* these Predictions a Proof of the divine Original of that Epistle. 399. — when it began, and how long it shall continue. VI. 525. *d.* 535. *n.* — represented by the Beast with seven Horns. VI. 530. & *a.* by the Harlot, 558, & *c.* and by *Babylon*, 560. and its Fall, by the Desolation of that City, 566, & *c.* and Notes.  
*Papists*, have consecrated Days in honour of many of the Saints mentioned in the Epistle to the *Romans*, IV. 193. *g.* and of *Aristobulus*, though it is not certain he was a Christian, *ib.* — their Argument against the continued Obligation of the second Commandment. V. 208. *a.*  
*Paradise* and Heaven distinguish'd. IV. 523. *d.*  
*Parenteses*, some remarkable Instances of them in *St. Paul's* Writings, *Rom.* ii. 4 N

13. 16.

13. 16. IV. 31. *l.* — *Rom.* v. 12 - - 18. IV. 68. *i.* — *I Cor.* viii. 1 - - 4. IV. 293. *a.* — *I Cor.* x. 29, 30. IV. 324. *d.* — *2 Cor.* viii. 19. IV. 492. *b.* — *2 Cor.* ix. 9, 10. IV. 497. — *Eph.* 2. begin: V. 134. *a.* yet perhaps not in *Gal.* 3. begin: V. 151. *a.*
- Partiality to the Rich, censured. VI. 179, &c. and the Notes.
- Pastors and Teachers, whether distinct or not. V. 171. *k.* vide *Bishops* and *Ministers*.
- Paul. A Conjecture as to his Age. V. 593. *a.* how he opposed the Gospel ignorantly. 443. *b.* His Character of himself before Conversion. 576. *b.* probably, upon it, his Goods were confiscated. 266. *g.* he considered the Supply his Friends sent him as an Interposition of Providence. 282. *a.* and spoke of himself as possessing all Things. IV. 473. (a sublime Expression. *ib.* *f.*) why he changed his Name from *Saul* to *Paul*. V. 295. *a.*
- His Inspiration, vide *Inspiration*. why he prayed that Utterance might be given him. V. 219. *k.* and was called *Idians*, unskilful in Speech, though he spoke with Tongues. IV. 509. *e.* — He had the same Rights as *St. Peter*. 300. *c.* had Power to punish Disobedience. 257. *f.* 500. &c. his not sparing the *Corinthian* Faction a Proof of his Veracity. 533. *b.* Some think he discerned what was done in his Absence. 260. *c.* The Revelation mentioned *2 Cor.* xii. was made to him. 522. *b.*
- He began to preach immediately on his Conversion. V. 16. *a.* 18. *d.* (this Account reconciled with that in *Acts.* *ib.*) though the Apostle of the *Gentiles*, he preached first to the *Jews*. 18. *c.* and chiefly where Christ was not named, why. IV. 186. *b.* 505. *b.*
- He went up from *Antioch* to *Jerusalem*, by Revelation. V. 24. *c.* what it was he communicated privately to those that were of Note. 25. *d.* his Conduct, in not permitting *Titus* to be circumcised, reconciled with his circumcising *Timothy*. 26. *e.*
- His great Fidelity and Zeal. IV. 518. *b.* — Concern for the *Corinthians*. 410. *f.* 480. & *b.* — Tenderness for the offending Member. 436. *f.* — Regard for the *Thessalonians* affectionate as a Nurse or a Father. V. 358, 359.
- Paul.] He acquainted himself very particularly with the State of foreign Churches. IV. 193. *g.* wished to be an Anathema after Christ. 112. *b.* rejoiced in the View of being offered as a Libation, V. 256. *a.* and demanded Congratulation on the Account. 257. *b.*
- His Labours and Sufferings enumerated. IV. 513. &c. He pleaded the Cause of the Gospel under great Disadvantages, yet successfully, 254. *d.* at *Rome*, tho' all Men forsook him. V. 544. *f.* *g.* — wrought with his own Hands to maintain himself, IV. 254. sometimes even by Night, V. 358. 419. *a.* though he might have claimed a Maintenance of the People. 358. *a.* — fought with Beasts at *Ephesus*. IV. 389. *k.* — was shipwrecked at least four Times. 516. *c.* How he filled up what was wanting of the Afflictions of Christ. V. 307. *a.*
- In his Epistles, he employed an Emaunensis. IV. 198. *c.* why, and what Effect this would have on his Style. V. 421. *d.* but commonly put his Name to them, *ib.* and he wrote the whole Epistle to the *Galatians* with his own Hand. 102. *b.* probably he was inaccurate in forming the *Greek* Characters. *ib.* *a.*
- He writes to whole Societies on a Supposition that they were in general true Christians. IV. 59. *a.* 211 - - 215. and Notes. V. 296. *b.* — often addresses unconverted *Jews* in his Letters to Christians. IV. 33. *a.* — speaks in a borrowed Person, *Rom.* vii. 7. &c. IV. 84. *a.* but not of a wicked Man. 87. *b.* — speaks of Christians in general in his Confidence that nothing should separate from the Love of God. 110. *k.* what kind of Unity he recommends to Christians. 216. *b.*
- Most of his Epistles begin with Exclamations of Joy. IV. 422. *b.* he wrote with peculiar Savour of the Things of God when in Prison. V. 165. *a.* Allusions in his Epistles to Facts mentioned in the *Acts*, confirm the Truth of both. 349. his Writings discover an excellent Spirit, and are a strong Proof of his Veracity. *ib.* the Manner in which he writes to *Timothy*, in the Circumstances in which he then was, is a Proof of his Sincerity, and that the Christian Cause was good. V. 506, 507. a like Remark on his Epistle to *Titus*.

*Paul.] Titus.* 556. He wrote some Things hard to be understood. VI. 312. *l.* to whom, especially, they are so. *ib.*

*His Language* is often very emphatical and proper. V. 310. *f.* 382. *a.* 405. *c.* VI. 63. *d.* 130. *b.* yet his Words are not always used with the most critical Exactness, IV. 277. *b.* and he often repeats the same Word, though in somewhat of a different Sense. 174. *a.* 252. *a.* He has many beautiful compound Words, V. 210. *d.* uses long Sentences, 120. *b.* and long Parentheses, vide *Parentheses.* has many Allusions to Architecture in his Epistle to the *Ephesians*, who were fond of it. 148. *l.* — writes with great Address, yet not in an artful Manner. IV. 423. *c.* 426. & *b.*

Instances of fine *Address*, in beginning his Epistle to the *Romans*, with asserting his Apostleship. IV. 10. *a.* in the Reason he gives why he desired to communicate spiritual Gifts to them. 15. *b.* in the Manner in which he passes from mentioning the Vices of Heathens, to those of the *Jews*. 26. *a.* in his frequent discoursing on the Benefit of Afflictions. 60. *c.* in his enumerating the Privileges of the *Jews*, before he mentions their Rejection. 113. *c.* in giving his Solicitude for *them*, as a Reason for his Zeal to convert the *Gentiles*. 142. *b.* in the oblique Manner in which he opposes their Prejudices about paying Tribute. 163. *g.* in the Manner in which he attempts to establish his apostolical Authority among the *Corinthians*, 233. *q.* and opposes the Faction there. 248. *a, b, c.* and in speaking of himself and *Apollos*, when he means to insinuate how little *any* Ministers are, in themselves. 249. *d.* in his reproving the Disorders among them that arose from the want of Love, by describing the amiable Effects of that Disposition. 356. *g.* and insinuating that the things, on which they prided themselves, were childish. 369. *a.* in the Satisfaction and Confidence he expresses in them. 484. *f.* in his glancing at the Notions which the judaizing Teachers might probably have of Christ, V. 178. *c.* and proposing heavenly Objects to Christians, to take them off from their bigotted Attachments. 322. *d.* an awful Insinuation as to the Consequences of rebelling against the Father of our Spirits. VI. 130. *b.*

*Paul.] He did not expect to live till the Judgment Day.* IV. 398. *i.* V. 378. *d, e.* 407. & *b.* The Struggle in his Mind whether he should choose Life or Death. 241, 242. *a, b.*

*Peace of God*, what. V. 278. *e.* — presiding in the Heart, to what it alludes. 328. *d.* The happy Effects of cultivating a peaceable Temper. VI. 196. *b.* Penny for a Measure of Wheat, a Sign of Scarcity. VI. 481. *e.*

*People*, an Objection against their choosing their own Ministers, answered. V. 517. *e.* 539. *c.*

*Perfect Man*, has often a very limited Sense. VI. 191. *c.*

*Perfumes*, their Effects on different Persons alluded to. IV. 440. *a.*

*Perish*, signifies eternal Punishments, not Annihilation. IV. 30. *i.*

*Perseverance*, the Conduct of *Hymenæus*, &c. no Objection to it. V. 446. *a.* nor *Demas*. 542. *a.*

*Peter*, had a Wife after he was an Apostle. IV. 300. *c.* — had no Rights but what were common to St. Paul. *ib.* That *Peter*, whom St. Paul reproved, was the Apostle. V. 31. *a.* why reproved in publick. 32. *b.* the Contention proves there was no Imposture carried on between them. *ib.* The Strain of his Epistles agrees with that of St. Paul's. VI. 220. which he appears to have seen. 312. *i.* — He had some peculiar Reason for recommending Watchfulness. 272. *g.* probably wrote his first Epistle from the Neighbourhood of *Babylon*. 274. *l.* The Difference of Style in some Parts of his second Epistle accounted for. 294. *a.* not saluted in *Paul's* Epistles to the *Romans*. IV. 194. *i.*

*Pharisees*, their Righteousness, what. IV. 127. *a.*

*Pharaoh*, what is meant by his being raised up. IV. 118. *b.* how his Heart was hardened. 119.

*Pharos*, the Tower in it built for a Light-house. V. 254. *i.*

*Philadelphia*, the last of the seven Churches that fell into the Hands of the *Turks*. VI. 458. *c.*

*Philippians*, persecuted when the Apostle wrote to them. V. 244. *g.*

*Philo* calls the Logos the Image of God. V. 302. *a.* — speaks of Angels as presenting Prayers to God. V. 317. *l.*

*Philosophers.*

- Philosophers*, heathen, knew the Unity of God. IV. 20. *b.* — became vain in their Reasonings. *ib.* *k.*
- Phocylides* uses the same Expression as *St. Paul*, about Contentment. VI. 144. *d.* was probably acquainted both with the old and new Testament. *ib.*
- Pillar* and ground of Truth, what. V. 463. *b.* Christians made *Pillars in the House of God*, what the Phrase imports, and to what it alludes. VI. 460. *d.*
- Plato* uses *ο εἶλος ἀνθρώπου* for the rational Part of our Nature, agreeable to *Rom.* vii. 21. IV. 88. *m.* and has an Expression nearly parallel to Ch. viii. 28. 105. *a.*
- Pliny*, one of his Epistles resembles that to *Philemon*. V. 587. — seems ashamed of the Laws against Christians. VI. 253. *e.*
- Polygamy* discouraged. IV. 276. V. 455. *a.*
- Popery*, vide *Papacy*.
- Potter*, God compared to a Potter. IV. 120. *&c.*
- Power*, on a Persons Head, a Vail. IV. 330. *a.* — of the World to come, what. VI. 46. *f.* — over the Nations, given to him that conquers. VI. 453. *e.*
- Prayer*, incessant, what. V. 388. *d.* — lifting up holy Hands without Wrath or doubting. 450. *g, h.* without wavering. VI. 167, *&c.* a Promise of its Success. 373. *b, c.* — not to be made for some Sinners. 375. *d.* — of Faith, what. 210. *e.* Social Prayer a Guard upon Persons general Behaviour. 249. *e.*
- Preaching* ourselves and Christ, what. IV. 451. *e.*
- Preparation* of the Gospel of Peace, what. V. 217. *e.*
- Pride*, comparing ourselves with ourselves, one great Source of it. IV. 504. *f.* — of Life, what. VI. 334. *e.*
- Priests*, Jewish, guilty of great Vices. IV. 34. *e.*
- Principalities* and Powers, how spoiled by Christ. V. 316. *b.* how the manifold Wisdom of God made known by the Church to Principalities, *&c.* V. 156. *i.*
- Principles*, what those first Principles that are to be dismissed. VI. 43. *a.*
- Priscilla*, her Character. IV. 192. *c.*
- Private Judgment*, the Right of it strongly asserted. *Rom.* xiv. 5. IV. 170. *e.*
- Promises*, yea and Amen in Christ. IV. 430. *c.* — oblige us to Purity, *&c.* 478. — of the old Testament, a Hint given for their Improvement. VI. 145. *e.* — to Conquerors, vide *Conquerors*.
- Prophecy*, why called a Lamp. VI. 292. *b.* no Prophecy of private Impulse. *ib.* *c.* what the Meaning of the Expression, a more sure Word of Prophecy. 291. *a.*
- Prophet*, large Sense of the Word. V. 565. *a.* Prophets and Apostles the Foundation of the Christian Church. 149. *m.* Prophets often speak of Things future, as past. VI. 409. *m.* — of the old Testament, the Spirit of Christ in them. 225. *f.* apprehended that their Prophecies refer'd to the Messiah, but did not fully understand them. 226. *g.*
- Profelytes*, Lord Barrington thinks *St. Peter* wrote only to them. VI. 221. *a.* — newly made, called by the Jews, *new born Babes*. 234. *a.*
- Prostitution*, practised by the Priestesses of Venus as a Part of Devotion. IV. 315. *e.*
- Punishments*, vide *apostolick Rod*. — future, some think a Difference in them intimated, *Rev.* xix. 20. VI. 580. *d.* — strong Expression of their Eternity. 586. *g.*
- Purgatory*, the Notion of it not favoured by *1 Cor.* iii. 15. IV. 242. *d.* — inconsistent with *Rev.* xiv. 13. VI. 541. *i.*
- Pythagoreans*, taught that Men should not let the Sun go down on their Wrath. V. 181. *m.* Mr. *Baxter* thinks *eating Herbs*, *Rom.* xiv. 2. refers to Converts from that Sect. IV. 169. *b.*

## Q.

- Quenching* the Spirit, what. V. 389. *e.*
- Questions*, raving about them, remarkably translated by Bishop *Wilkins*. V. 490. *c.*
- Quotations* from the old Testament or Allusions to it.
- Gen.* ii. 7. IV. 395.  
ii. 23, 24. V. 204.  
iii. 16. IV. 374.  
xii. 2, 3. VI. 512.  
xv. 6. VI. 187.  
xvii. 1 - - 6. VI. 51.  
xxii. 16, 17. VI. 51, & *b.*  
xlix. 9, 10. VI. 473.
- Exod.* ix. 16. IV. 118, & *b.*  
xvi. 18. IV. 489, & *f.*  
xx. 12. V. 208. *a, b.*  
xxxii. 6, 19. IV. 314.
- Lev.* xi. 44. VI. 229.  
xix. 2. VI. 229.  
xx. 7. VI. 229.  
xxvi. 12. IV. 477.

Deut.

*Deut.* xxi. 23. V. 46. & i.  
 xxv. 4. IV. 301.  
 xxv. 24. V. 483.  
 xxvii. 26. V. 44. & g.  
 xxix. 4. IV. 139.  
 xxx. 11 - - 14. IV. 128.  
 xxxii. 21. IV. 133.  
 xxxiii. 35, 36. VI. 97:  
 xxxiii. 43. IV. 182.  
*Joshua* i. 5. VI. 145.  
*2 Sam.* vii. 14. VI. 12.  
*1 Kings* xix. 14. IV. 135. a.  
*Job.* v. 13. IV. 243.  
*Psal.* ii. 7. VI. 12. k.  
 ii. 9. VI. 453.  
 viii. 4. VI. 18. & e.  
 xvi. 10. IV. 379.  
 xviii. 49. IV. 182.  
 xix. 4. IV. 133.  
 xxii. 22, 26. VI. 20.  
 xxiv. 1. IV. 323.  
 xxxiv. 12, 13. VI. 251.  
 xl. 7. VI. 86, 87. e, f.  
 xlv. 6, 7. VI. 13. n, o, p.  
 li. 4. IV. 39.  
 lxviii. 18. V. 169. f.  
 lxix. 9. IV. 180. & a.  
 xciv. 11. IV. 243.  
 xcv. 7. VI. 27.  
 xcvi. 7. VI. 12.  
 cii. 26. VI. 14.  
 civ. 4. VI. 12.  
 cx. 4. VI. 39. b.  
 cxii. 9. IV. 497.  
 cxvi. 10. IV. 456. & d.  
 cxvii. 1. IV. 182.  
 cxviii. 22. VI. 236.  
*Prov.* iii. 11. VI. 120. d.  
 iii. 34. VI. 199.  
 xxvi. 11. VI. 304.  
*Isaiah* i. 9. IV. 124.  
 vi. 2, 3. VI. 469.  
 vi. 10. IV. 139.  
 viii. 18. VI. 21.  
 x. 22, 23. IV. 124.  
 xi. 10. IV. 183.  
 xxv. 8. IV. 398.  
 xxviii. 11. IV. 369. & b.  
 xxviii. 16. IV. 125. VI. 235.  
 xxix. 14. IV. 221.  
 xxxiii. 18. IV. 121. & c.  
 xl. 6. VI. 232.  
 xli. 8. VI. 187.  
 xlix. 8. IV. 468. & g.  
 lii. 7. IV. 132.  
 lii. 11. IV. 477.  
 lii. 15. IV. 187.

*Isaiah* liii. 1. IV. 132.  
 liii. 4, 5, 6. VI. 244.  
 liv. 1. V. 73. & c.  
 lix. 20. IV. 145. & b.  
 lx. 1. V. 192. m.  
 lxiv. 4. IV. 230. & k.  
 lxv. 1, 2. IV. 133.  
 lxv. 16. IV. 226.  
*Jer.* ix. 23. IV. 226.  
 xxxi. 31. VI. 68. c, d.  
 xxxi. 33. VI. 90.  
*Hosea* i. 10. IV. 123. & a.  
*Jael* ii. 32. IV. 130.  
*Habak.* ii. 4. IV. 18. d. V. 45. & b.  
*Hag.* ii. 6. VI. 139. o.  
 — Sometimes rather the Sense than  
 Words refered to. IV. 41. g.

R.

*Rabbinical* Writings abound with incredible  
 and insipid Tales. V. 468. b.  
*Rainbow* of Emerald, what it signifies. VI.  
 466. b.  
*Rashness* and Inconsideration, prevented by  
 Charity. IV. 356. f.  
*Rebuking* with Severity, consistent with long  
 Suffering. V. 565. c.  
*Redeeming* the Time, what. V. 195. & a.  
*Redemption*, sometimes signifies Deliverance.  
 IV. 102. d. — of the purchased Inheri-  
 tance, what. V. 127. o. Dr. *Whitby*  
 thinks there are two Redemptions. *ib.*  
 — The Day of it, what. 183. q. —  
 sometimes signifies the Resurrection. *ib.*  
*Relative* Duties expressed by being subject  
 one to another. V. 198. e. some Par-  
 ticulars of them stated. 201, &c. 331,  
 &c. 567, &c.  
*Religion*, pure and undefiled, what. VI.  
 177. k. — of no Avail without Charity.  
*ib.* l.  
*Repentance*, the Fruits of it in different  
 Persons. IV. 482. d.  
*Reprobate*, what. IV. 534. d, e.  
*Resistance* to Magistrates. IV. 161. c, d, e.  
*Respect* of Persons in religious Assemblies,  
 what kind forbidden. VI. 179. b.  
*Resurrection of Christ*, many Witnesses of  
 it. IV. 380. — on the third Day, how  
 foretold in Scripture. 379. e. — appears  
 to have been a joyful Idea to the Apostles.  
 V. 10. a. — an Evidence of the Refur-  
 rection of Christians. 383. & a.  
 — of *Christians*, some said it was al-  
 ready past. V. 523. g. — *1 Cor.* xv.  
 not wholly employed in *proving* a Refur-  
 rection.



- rection. IV. 385. *d.* nor in proving a Resurrection of the *dead* in general. *ib.* *e.* 394. *e.* *Fleming's* Notion of the first Resurrection. V. 267. *i.* 272. *b.* — of good Men shall precede that of others, IV. 386. and the Change of living Saints. V. 379. *g.* What that Resurrection, than which the Martyrs and Confessors expected a better. VI. 113. *f.* — Christians were often insulted for the hope of it. IV. 378. *a.*
- Revelation mentioned, 2 *Cor.* xii. was made to St. *Paul.* IV. 522. *b.* — to St. *John* made by certain Images in his Mind, without Architypes. VI. 466. *a.* The great Moral which the Book of Revelation was designed to illustrate. 430. *d.* Mr. *Lowman's* Scheme of that Book. VI. 479. *a.* vide *Introduction* to Revelation.
- Revellings, *καμοι*, what. V. 90. *f.*
- Revenge forbidden. IV. 158. *Et e.*
- Reverence, the inward Disposition *φοβος*, the outward Conduct *τιμη*. IV. 163. *b.*
- Rhemish, Jesuits understand *αναλογια πισεως* of a Confession of Faith. IV. 151. *f.*
- Rich People exhorted to Liberality in very strong Terms. V. 497. *d.* — *Rich in this World*, what is insinuated by the Phrase. V. 496. *e.*
- Righteous and good Man, how distinguished. IV. 62. *g.* To be constituted Righteous, what. 68. *k.* the Righteous scarcely saved. VI. 266. *g.*
- Righteousness of God often signifies the Manner of becoming Righteous which he has appointed. IV. 18. *b.* sometimes his Righteousness in appointing that Method. 39. *Et d.* and sometimes the Purity of his Nature. 127. — of the Pharisees, what. IV. 127. *a.* a perfect Righteousness necessary to Justification by the Law. 128. *Et c.* — of Saints, what. VI. 576. *a.*
- Rock, how that in the Wilderness was Christ. IV. 314.
- Rod, apostolick, vide *Apostolick.*
- Rome, some think it will be swallowed up in the Lake of Fire. VI. 571. *f.*
- Rulers of the Darkness of this World, who. V. 215. *Et b.*
- S.
- Sabbath, Jewish, abrogated. V. 317. *i.* the Christian Sabbath, the first Day of the Week. IV. 401. *b.* VI. 434. *c.*
- Sacrament, (vide *Baptism*) of the Lord's Supper. IV. 333. *Et c.* what the *Corinthian* Fault about it. 334. *c.* The Perpetuity of it argued from the Revelation of it to St. *Paul.* 336. *f.* and from the Expression, *till the Lord come.* 338. *Et k.* The Elements after Consecration called Bread and Wine. 337. *i.* unworthy Attendance expressed by *eating Judgment, Et c.* 339. *n.* Christians early mingled Water with the Wine, why. VI. 80. *d.*
- Sacrifices, heathen, were Tokens of Communion with their Deities. IV. 319. *b.* some Part of them were often sold in the Shambles. 323. *a.* — Mosaick, their Use. VI. 74. *f.* God will not pardon Sin without a Sacrifice. 95. *b.* their divine Institution insinuated. 104. *e.* vide *Sin-offering.*
- Saints, why called the *first-born.* VI. 137. *k.* — first Fruits. 173. *c.* 174. 539. *b.*
- Salvation of others may influence that of a Minister. V. 472. *i.*
- Salutations to many Persons in St. *Paul's* Epistles, a Testimony of their Genuineness. IV. 193. *e.*
- Sanctification, sometimes refers to being externally set apart. VI. 96. *e.*
- Sarah and Hagar, their Story allegorized. V. 71. *Et c.*
- Satan, what it is to deliver a Person to him. IV. 260. *d.* V. 446. *Et b.*
- Satisfaction to divine Justice, what. IV. 57. *e.* consistent with our Obligation to Holiness. *ib.*
- Scriptures, known to Children, therefore not forbidden to the Laity. V. 537. *a.* Scripture Expressions sometimes used in a restrained Sense. VI. 191. *c.* 341. *i.* 345. *f.* 347. *k.*
- Sea of Glass and Fire, what. VI. 545. *Et a.* what is meant when 'tis said, *the Sea was no more.* 590. *a.*
- Seals, the Scenes that followed on opening them, how exhibited to St. *John.* VI. 480. *d.* *Sealing to the Day of Redemption*, to what it alludes. V. 183. *g.*
- Secrets of the Heart, how made manifest in preaching. IV. 370. *c.*
- Seducing Teachers, Christians forbidden to receive them into their Houses. VI. 386. *d.*
- Seed of Abraham, not Seeds. V. 50. *a.*
- Seeing God, why put for the Knowledge of him. VI. 344. *d.*
- Seemed to be, *οι δοκουντες*, those that were. V. 27. *g.*

Separate

- Separate Spirits* exist. VI. 138. *l.* do not sleep. 50. *a.* IV. 461. *g.* are happy. V. 384. *b.* an Objection against it answered. 540. *e.* are with Christ. 242. *c.*
- Separation*, without the Guilt of Schism. IV. 168. *a.*
- Septuagint*, some think an Attempt was made to alter some Copies, and render them more agreeable to the new Testament. IV. 41. *g.*
- Serpent*, how he deceived *Eve* through Subtilty. IV. 508. *c.*
- Seven Angels* before the Throne, who. VI. 494. *b.* — *Churches*, why so many mentioned. 435. *e.* addressed in what is said to each Angel. 440. *f.* 444. *a.* the Epistles to them not prophetick. 461. *g.* their present State. 441. *g.* — *Lamps*, what. 467. *d.* — *Spirits before the Throne*, who. 429. *b.* and who those sent into the Earth. 474. *b.*
- Shaking* the Earth and Heaven, what it refers to. VI. 139. *n, o, p, q.*
- Simplicity*, what. IV. 426. *b.*
- Sin*, how it took Occasion from the Law, &c. IV. 84. *c.* What it is to be sold under Sin. 87. *b.* *Sin* sometimes means a *Sin-offering*. 91. *w.* St. *John's* Definition of it as a *Violation of the Law*. VI. 345. *e.* How it is said the Children of God cannot commit it. 345. *f.* 347. *k.*
- Sinai*, how it might be touched. VI. 135. *f.* Christians not come to *Sinai*, but to *Sion*. 136, 137. *b.*
- Singing*, not confined to the Psalms. V. 328. *e.*
- Sinners* taken captive by Satan. V. 528. *c.* We are not to pray for some Sinners. VI. 374. *d.* all Mankind represented in the Gospel as Sinners, and condemned. IV. 61. *e.*
- Sinning wilfully*, why Apostacy from Christianity expressed by so general a Phrase. VI. 95. *a.*
- Sin-offering*, the Consideration on which Pardon was granted. VI. 80. *e.* — for what Offences they were allowed. VI. 96. *e.*
- Slavery*, why Christians should avoid becoming Slaves. IV. 283. *f.*
- Sleeping in Christ*, what. V. 377. & *c.*
- Social Affections*, to be cultivated. IV. 159. Social Prayer, a Guard on a Person's whole Behaviour. VI. 249. *e.*
- Sodom and Egypt*, fit Emblems of the Church of Rome. VI. 516. *b.* How Christ crucified there. *ib.*
- Sold under Sin, what. IV. 87. *b.*
- Song of Moses* and the Lamb. VI. 546. *c.*
- Sorrow*, Godly, what, and its Effects. IV. 482. How the Sorrow of the World worketh Death. *ib.*
- Sovereignty* of God vindicated. IV. 117. &c. improved. 121. yet does not extend to the Punishment of innocent Creatures. 118. *a.* — of divine Influences a Motive to Diligence. V. 253. *b.*
- Soul* and Spirit spoken of as distinct. IV. 522. *c.* V. 177. *b.* 179. *b.* 390. *g.* VI. 36. *c.* — vide *separate* Spirits.
- Spain*, probably no Church planted there when St. *Paul* wrote to the *Romans*. IV. 187. *c.*
- Spirit* of Holiness, what. IV. 11. *c.* what it is to mind the Spirit. IV. 94. — of Bondage and Adoption, what. IV. 97. & *c.* Christians obliged to live after the Spirit. IV. 98. Imp. the Mind of the Spirit, is the Disposition of the human Mind, as under the Influence of the divine Spirit. 103. *f.* what is meant by St. *John's* being in the Spirit. VI. 466. *a.*
- The Spirit manages Affairs for the Saints. IV. 103. *g.* — lends his helping Hand. *ib. e.* what the Love of it. 189. *e.* — his Deity. 231. his Influence on the Mind. 249. *f.* his anointing, sealing and earnest, how distinguished. IV. 431. *e, f.* his miraculous Gifts bestowed to confirm the Christian Faith. V. 40. *c.* why the Spirit is called the Blessing of *Abraham*. 47. *k.* what his sealing alludes to, 183. *q.* how he is grieved. *ib.* he teaches to know the Things that differ. 235. & *g.* is eternal. VI. 76. *k.* How Christ offered himself by the Spirit. *ib.* why he is spoken of as the Spirit of Christ. 225. *f.* and is spoken of as an *Unction*. 340. *b.*
- Spirit that operates in the Children of Disobedience, who. V. 135. *d.* Spirits in Prison, how Christ preached to them. VI. 256. *c.* Spirits of Wickedness in heavenly Places, who. V. 216. *c.* — Spirit of Glory resting on persecuted Christians, what. VI. 265. *d.*
- Spiritual Blessings*, the Phrase chiefly refers to the Graces of the Christian Life. V. 121. why said to be in heavenly Things. *ib.*
- Gifts, were miraculous. IV. 14. *a.* 342. — afforded Comfort to him that bestowed, as well as those that received

- received them. 15. *b.* — might be left. 535. *℞ f.* — were inferior to Love. 354. *℞ c.* were abused by the *Corinthians*. 371, *℞ c.* the Gift of Tongues and the Interpretation of Tongues distinguished. IV. 372. *g.* were to be estimated according to their Usefulness. IV. 363. *d.*
- Spiritual Persons*, not only those who had received miraculous Gifts but Graces too. V. 95. *a.*
- Stars*, the *Jews* call their Teachers Stars. VI. 411. *d.* wandering Stars a proper Emblem of Teachers of unsettled Principles. *ib.*
- Struggle* between the good and evil Principles, how consistent with having received the Gospel. IV. 88. *k.*
- Stumbling-block*, *σκανδαλον*, what. IV. 174. *b.*
- Suffered*, how they that have suffered in the Flesh are ceased from Sin. VI. 258. *g.*
- Suffering*, the Conscioufness of it confirms our Motives to Obedience. VI. 258. *g.*
- Swearing*, the *Jews* addicted to it. VI. 209. *d.*
- Syriac Version*, when made and for whom. VI. 160.
- T.
- Temperance*, used by Combatants. IV. 309. *b.*
- Temple*, Christians are the Temples of God. IV. 242. *e.* the Temple alluded to in the Scenery of the Revelation. VI. 435. *f.* 545. *a, c.* why. 596. *a.*
- Temporizing* to avoid Persecution, the Danger of it. VI. 447. *g.* 540. *g.*
- Temptation*, the Word probably once used in a good Sense. VI. 169. *g.*
- Testament*. *διαθνη*, *Heb.* ix. 15. should be render'd Covenant, not Testament. VI. 78, 79. and Notes.
- Things of God*, *τα προς τον θεον*, a Phrase that refers to sacerdotal Affairs. IV. 184. *e.*
- Thorn* in the Flesh, what. IV. 524. *f.* probably the same that is called by St. Paul, his Temptation, *℞ c.* V. 65. *b.*
- Thousand Years* as one Day. VI. 309. *f.*
- Threatenings*, not to be used to Servants. V. 212. *e.*
- Timothy*, why called St. Paul's Son. V. 437. *a.* How he received the Spirit, and what Care necessary not to neglect it. 471. *b.* — directed not to lay Hands suddenly on any Man. 485. *g.* why directions were given to *him* about ordaining Elders. *ib.* — his great Temperance. 486. *b.* — exhorted to be instant in preaching, notwithstanding his Infirmities. *ib.* to stir up the Gift, what that Expression alludes to. 510. *a.* — exhorted to remember Christ. 520. *a.*
- Titus*, first mentioned in the Epistle to the *Galatians*. V. 24. *b.* who he was. *ib.* St. Paul's refusing to let him be circumcised, reconciled with his circumcising *Timothy*. V. 26. *e.* his Testimony to his Character. IV. 491. *℞ c.*
- Toleration* vainly opposed from the Conduct of the *Ephesian Church*, and the Commendation it received. VI. 440. *e.*
- Tolvi*, the *Jews* called Christ so by way of Contempt. IV. 223. *f.*
- Tongue*, the Necessity of bridling it. VI. 176. *℞ i.* the Difficulty of doing it. 191. *℞ c.* how the Gift of Tongues might be abused, IV. 365. *f.* and how distinguished, from the Interpretation of Tongues. 372. *g.*
- Tortured*, vide *Tympanum*.
- Transposition of Words*, some remarkable Instances of it. V. 518. *f.* 590. *b.*
- Tribulation*, why St. Paul so often treats of the Benefits of it. IV. 60. *c.*
- Tribute*, the *Jews* thought themselves exempted from paying it to *Gentiles*. IV. 163. *g.*
- Trifles*, mentioned by a very proper Name. V. 479. *l.*
- Triumphs*, eastern, the Success of the Gospel Ministry described in Terms that alluded to them. IV. 440. *a.* and the Gifts which Christ bestowed when he ascended. V. 170. *b.*
- Twelve*, a Name by which the Assembly of the Apostles was called, tho' some were absent. IV. 380. *f, b.*
- Twelve Tribes*, the Epistle of St. James addressed to them. VI. 166. *b.* — supposed by *Josephus* to be still in being. *ib. b.* — are greatly dispersed. *ib. c.*
- Twenty-four Elders*, what that Number imports. VI. 467. *c.*
- Tympanum*, a kind of Torture refered to, *Heb.* xi. 35. VI. 120. *d.*
- V.
- Vail* on the *Jews* when the old Testament is read. IV. 447. the Gospel vailed in like Manner to those that perish. 451. *c.* Vail of the Temple, how Christ's Flesh resembles it. VI. 91. *c.*

- Venerable*, Christians should endeavour to make themselves so. V. 279. g.
- Version*, our own in the main a good one. V. 487. i.
- Vessels* of Wrath and Mercy, spoken of in very different Terms. IV. 120. e.
- Vials*, mentioned in the Revelation what. VI. 475. c. — what they refer to. VI. 548. &c. and Notes.
- Virgins*, the Case relating to them, 1 Cor. vii. 25 - - 40. IV. 286. &c. — an Officer among the *Greeks* to educate them. 507. a. — The Manner in which the eastern Virgins were purified for the royal Embrace, alluded to. V. 203. b.
- Virtue*, in the new Testament, often means Courage. VI. 284. c. 285. b. — would not generally make Men more unhappy, though there were no future State. IV. 385. c.
- W.
- Walking*, Metaphor taken from it expresses several Things in respect to Religion. VI. 190. b.
- Wall* of Separation, or Chel. V. 146. g.
- Washing of Water*, to what it alludes. V. 203. b.
- White Raiment*, what the Promise of it imports. VI. 455. f. — *Stone*, with a new Name, &c. what. 448. b, i. — *Throne*, why the Judgment Seat so represented. 586. b.
- Whole World* and whole Creation, all those Parts which had not received Christianity. VI. 375. e.
- Widows*, made Deaconesses. V. 477. b. How the younger Widows were in Danger of growing wanton against Christ. 478. k.
- Wine*, Excess said to be in it. V. 196. c.
- Wisdom* of Words, what kind of Writing the Apostle disclaimed under that Notion. IV. 227. & a. 229. e. 236. c. how it would render the Cross of Christ vain. 220. b. — Word of Wisdom and Knowledge, what. IV. 344. e. 471. d. — Wisdom of God made known to Principalities by the Church. V. 156. i. — Wisdom, Knowledge and Understanding distinguished. 298. g.
- Witchcraft*, one of the Works of the Flesh. V. 89. c.
- Witnesses*, the two mentioned in the Revelation, who. VI. 514. b. what is meant by their Revival after three Days and a half. 517. i.
- Wives*, an honourable Subsistence is to be allowed them. VI. 248. d.
- Women*, ought to have Power on their Heads. IV. 330. b. — employed in some Office in the Church. V. 477. b. laboured in the Gospel. 277. b. and sometimes spake in public, by Inspiration. IV. 328. &c. but were not in common allowed to speak in the Church. 374. i. V. 451. — shall be saved by Child-birth. 452. n.
- Word*, of Wisdom and Knowledge, what. IV. 344. e. 471. d. — of God, living and efficacious, what. VI. 36. a.
- Words*, used in the same Connexion in different Senses. IV. 174. a. 352. a. 328. a. 339. o. 504.
- Works*, of the Law, some would render ἐξ ἔργων *Notus*, Rom. iii. 20. by the Law of Works. IV. 44. b. — and Grace opposed to one another. 136. c.
- World*, this, αἰὼν ὅλος, IV. 229, 230. f. g. αἰὼν ἐνεσῶς. V. 11. d. — what is meant by the World being crucified to us, &c. 104. — The Friendship of the World Enmity against God. VI. 198, 199. & f. what Love of it forbidden. 333. & d. — Worlds adjusted by the Word of God. 103. c. World to come made subject to Christ. 17. d.
- Worldly Elements*, why the Jewish Ritual called so. V. 60. a.
- Wrangling* discouraged. V. 490. c. 522. e.
- Wrath*, what it is to give Place to it. IV. 157. d. — of Men does not promote the Cause of Religion. VI. 174. & o. — to be guarded against in Prayer. V. 450. g.
- Y.
- Youthful Passions*, what. V. 527. & b.
- Z.
- Zeal* is good, in a good Thing. V. 67. l.

## To be corrected.

**P**AGE 4. at the Bottom insert the following Paragraph; As for the *Date* of the Epistle, I am of Opinion it was about the Year 63, while St. Paul was imprisoned at Rome, or quickly after it. See Vol. III. Sect. IX. Note (g) and compare Heb. xiii. 23. P. 7. l. 2. 13 r. 15. *Ibid.* l. 22. r. Chap. XI. 1.—16. p. 13. l. 23. them r. thee. *Ibid.* Note (p) l. 1. r. μετοχοι. p. 32. Note (f) l. 5. r. and Gravity. p. 33. l. 31. r. barden. *Ibid.* l. 39. of, Roman. *Ibid.* Note (i) Appellative r. proper Name. p. 34. Imp. l. 9. r. Entrance. p. 35. l. 18. after God insert *did.* p. 39. l. 19. *and*, Italic. p. 40. r. before we. p. 53. l. 25. r. reigns there. p. 74. l. 19. *indifferent* r. *in different.* p. 79. l. 17 *that* r. *he.* *Ibid.* l. 18. *which* r. *whom.* *Ibid.* Note (c) l. 6. *that* r. *he.* *which* r. *whom.* p. 82. Note (i) l. 3. r. full Stop after over. and r. And. p. 85. l. 23. *Sin* r. *Sins.* p. 90. Contents, l. 3. *judicial* r. *fiducial.* p. 92. l. 12. And, Roman. p. 95. Par. l. 1. r. Steadiness. *Ibid.* l. 7. include r. inculcate. p. 96. l. 23. *a*, Italic. p. 97. l. 16. expected r. expressed. p. 99. l. 35. *But*, Italic. p. 102. Note (b) των r. ε. p. 117. l. 26. r. places us. p. 119. l. 9. *and*, Italic. p. 120. Number the following Pages, instead of 113, &c. 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128. p. 126. l. 1. material r. martial. p. 132. l. 5. Cares r. Care. 139. l. 1. r. *from him.* p. 143. l. 15. by, Roman. p. 149. Impr. l. 26. in r. is. p. 150. Par. l. 4. those r. their. p. 169. Text. v. 11. risen, Roman. p. 172. Par. l. 1. forfeited r. fortified. p. 182. l. 16. particular r. partial. p. 188. l. 24. Persecutors r. Pursuers. p. 192. l. 17. *and* Italic. p. 203. l. 34. please, Roman. p. 205. l. 23. *as*, Italic. p. 210. l. 16. *him*, Italic. p. 220. l. 13, 14. *Ver.* 20. &c. r. *Chap.* V. *throughout.* p. 222. l. 1. *thro'*, Italic. *Ibid.* l. 6. of, Roman. p. 234. Par. l. 8. after Design put a Semi-colon, and the same after Evil-speaking in the Text. p. 243. l. 28. *we*, Italic. p. 248. l. 8. *and*, Roman. p. 249. Impr. l. 8. *and* r. or. p. 259. l. 2. *and*, Italic. p. 270. Note (b) l. 14. pertinent r. important. p. 272. l. 1. fo, Roman. *Ibid.* l. 19. *and* r. *be.* p. 274. l. 22. after Hopes insert *Amen.* p. 284. l. penult. *that*, Roman. p. 301. l. 3. r. *taken, and destroyed.* p. 303. l. 10. *quite*, Italic. p. 304. Note. l. 2. *Apostle* r. *Apostles.* p. 325. l. 12. possible r. possible. *Ibid.* l. 22. And, Roman. p. 333. l. 32. for, Roman. p. 341. l. 13. Dele fo. p. 344. l. 14, 15. r. Expectation. p. 345. l. 10. *Hence* r. *And.* p. 350. l. 21. *and*, Roman. p. 352. l. 17. *that*, Roman. p. 364. l. 23. as r. as that. p. 368. Note (d) l. 6. Authority r. Authenticity. p. 369. l. penult. *distinct* r. *difficult.* p. 395. l. 26. them, Roman. *Ibid.* 22. *and* Italic. p. 413. l. 19. Word r. Words. p. 515. l. 20. which r. who. p. 428. l. 24. *at Hand*, Italic. p. 439. Note (d) l. ult. r.  $\text{¶}$ . p. 440. l. 27. extraordinary r. exemplary. p. 448. l. 9. *any* r. *an.* p. 451. l. 17. I, Roman. p. 452. l. 28. Dele always. p. 465. Text. v. 1. l. 8. the r. thee. p. 467. Note (d) l. 2. *Ver.* 6. r. *Chap.* V. 6. p. 503. l. 33. their r. those. p. 505. l. 11. twenty Millions r. two hundred Millions. p. 535. l. 14, 15. religiously r. rigorously. p. 546. l. 20. Trumpets r. Triumph. p. 602. Note (b) l. 5. r. λαλειω. p. 605. l. 1. After Refreshment insert *and.*

**BOOKS** Published by the late Reverend P. DODDRIDGE, D. D. which may be had of Mrs. DODDRIDGE at Northampton; J. WAUGH, and W. FENNER, at the Turk's-Head in Lombard-Street; and J. BUCKLAND, at the Buck in Pater-noster-row.

N. B. Those mark'd with (\*) are out of print, but will be shortly reprinted in an uniform Manner.

I. **T**EN Sermons on the Power and Grace of Christ, and on the Evidences of his glorious Gospel; preached at *Northampton*. The third Edition. Price 2 s. 6 d. N. B. The three last on the Evidences of the Gospel may be had separate. Price 1 s.

II. Sermons to young Persons on the following Subjects; viz. 1. The Importance of the Rising Generation. 2. Christ formed in the Soul the Foundation of Hope. 3. A Dissuasive from keeping Wicked Company. 4. The Young Christian invited to an early Attendance on the Lord's-Table. 5. The Orphan's Hope. 6. The Reflections of a Pious Parent on the Death of a Wicked Child. 7. Youth reminded of approaching Judgment. The fourth Edition. Price 1 s. 6 d.

III. Sermons on the Religious Education of Children. The third Edition. Price 1 s.

IV. Free thoughts on the most probable Means of reviving the dissenting Interest. \*

V. The Care of the Soul, the one thing needful, third Edition. 4 d. \*

VI. The Absurdity and Iniquity of Persecution for Conscience sake, in all its Kinds and Degrees. Price 6 d.

VII. Submission to Divine Providence in the Death of Children, recommended and enforced, in a Sermon preached at *Northampton, October 3, 1736*, on the Death of a very amiable and hopeful Child about Five Years old. The second Edition. Price 6 d.

VIII. The Temper and Conduct of the primitive Ministers of the Gospel illustrated and recommended. \*

IX. Practical Reflections on the Character and Translation of *Enoch*, in a Sermon on the Death of the Reverend Mr. *John Norris*. \*

X. A Sermon preached at *Wellingborough, Nov. 9. 1748*, on account of the late dreadful Fire there, with an Hymn proper to the Occasion. Price 6 d.

XI. The Necessity of a general Reformation, in order to a well-grounded Hope of Success in War. Price 6 d. \*

XII. Oration at the Grave of the Reverend Mr. *John Newman*, July 31. 1741. \*

XIII. The Scripture-doctrine of Salvation by Grace through Faith, illustrated and improved in two Sermons. \*

XIV. Practical Discourses on Regeneration, in Ten Sermons preached at *Northampton*, on the following Subjects; 1. The Character of the Unregenerate. 2, 3. The Nature of Regeneration. 4, 5, 6. The Necessity and Importance of it. 7. The Divine Influences necessary to produce it. 8. The various Methods in which those Influences operate. 9. Directions to the awakened Sinner. 10. An Address to the Regenerate. The second Edition, in 12mo. Price 2 s. 6 d.

XV. The

XV. The Evil and Danger of neglecting the Souls of Men, plainly and seriously represented, in a Sermon preached at a Meeting of Ministers at *Kettering in Northamptonshire, October 15, 1741.* Price 6 d.

XVI. A Charge delivered at the Ordination of the Reverend Mr. *John Jennings*, at *St. Ives in Huntingdonshire*, with the Sermon delivered on the same Occasion, by *Dr. D. Jennings.* Price 1 s.

XVII. An Answer to a late Pamphlet, entituled, *Christianity not founded on Argument, &c.* In three Letters to the Author. Price 2 s. stitched. \*

XVIII. The Rise and Progress of Religion in the Soul: illustrated in a Course of serious and practical Addresses, suited to Persons of every Character and Circumstance: With a devout Meditation or Prayer added to each Chapter. The 7th Edition, price 3 s.

XIX. The Principles of the Christian Religion, expressed in plain and easy Verse, and divided into short Lessons for the Use of little Children. The second Edition. Price 4 d.

XX. Compassion to the Sick, recommended and urged in a Sermon preached at *Northampton, September 4, 1743.* In Favour of a design then opening to erect a Country Infirmary there. Price 6 d.

XXI. A Funeral Sermon, occasioned by the Death of the Reverend Mr. *James Shepherd*; preached at *Northampton, May 25, 1746.*

XXII. A Charge delivered at the Ordination of Mr. *Abraham Tozer*, at *Norwich, June 20, 1745.*

XXIII. A Sermon on the heroick Death of *Colonel Gardiner*, preached at *Northampton, October 13, 1745.* Price 6d.

XXIV. Some remarkable Passages in the Life of the Honourable Colonel *James Gardiner*, who was slain at the Battle of *Preston-Pans, September 21, 1745.* With an Appendix relating to the antient Family of the *Munro's of Fowlis.* The third Edition. Price 2 s. 6 d.

XXV. A Plain and Serious Address to the Master of a Family, on the important Subject of Family-Religion. The third Edition. Price 4 d.

XXVI. A Sermon, preached at *Northampton, April 25, 1749*; being the day appointed by his Majesty for a general Thanksgiving, on account of the Peace concluded with *France and Spain.*

XXVII. *Christ's Invitation to thirsty Souls.* A Sermon preached at *Northampton*, in the Year 1748. And now published chiefly for the Benefit of the Poor, at the earnest Request of a Gentleman of the Established Church of *England.* Price 6 d.

XXVIII. *The Doom of Capernaum:* A Sermon preached at *Salter's Hall, August 20, 1749.* Published on Occasion of the Alarm by the second Shock of an Earthquake, *March 8, 1749-50.* With a Preface relating to that awful Event.

XXIX. *Christian Candour and Unanimity stated, illustrated, and urged.* A Sermon preached at a Meeting of Ministers at *Creaton in Northamptonshire, Jan. 12, 1750.* Price 6d.

XXX. A Funeral Sermon, preached at *St. Albans, Dec. 16, 1750.* On Occasion of the much lamented Death of the late Rev. *Samuel Clark, D. D.*

N. B. At the above Places may be had the preceding Volumes of the FAMILY EXPOSITOR, to make compleat Setts.













